

WUTHERING HEIGHTS

A NOVEL,

BY

ELLIS BELL,

IN THREE VOLUMES.

VOL. I.

LONDON:

THOMAS CAUTLEY NEWBY, PUBLISHER,
72, MORTIMER ST., CAVENDISH SQ.

1847.

Chapter I

1801—I have just returned from a visit to my landlord—the solitary neighbour that I shall be troubled¹ with. This is certainly a beautiful country! In all England, I do not believe that I could have fixed on a situation so completely removed from the stir of society. A perfect misanthropist's² Heaven—and Mr Heathcliff and I are such a suitable pair to divide³ the desolation⁴ between us. A capital⁵ fellow! He little imagined how my heart warmed towards him when I beheld his black eyes withdraw so suspiciously under their brows, as I rode up, and when his fingers sheltered themselves, with a jealous resolution⁶, still further in his waistcoat, as I announced my name.

‘Mr Heathcliff?’ I said.

A nod was the answer.

‘Mr Lockwood, your new tenant, sir—I do myself the honour of calling as soon as possible after my arrival, to express the hope that I have not inconvenienced you by my perseverance⁷ in soliciting the occupation of Thrushcross Grange: I heard, yesterday, you had had some thoughts⁸—’

‘Thrushcross Grange is my own, sir,’ he interrupted, wincing⁹. ‘I should not allow any one to inconvenience me, if I could hinder¹⁰ it¹¹—walk in!’

¹ trouble: to distress *with* something disagreeable and unwelcome; to worry, bother. わずらわせる。‘the solitary neighbour that I shall be troubled with’、これからつきあわねばならぬただ一人の隣人。

² misanthropist: [mɪsænθrəpɪst] (= misanthrope) a hater of mankind; a man-hater; one who distrusts men and avoids their society.

³ divide: to share.

⁴ desolation: deprivation of companionship; the condition or sense of being forsaken; solitariness, loneliness.

⁵ capital: (often as an exclamation of approval.) excellent, ‘first-rate’.

⁶ with a jealous resolution: 決して用心を怠るまいとして、油断すまいとして。 *jealous*: suspiciously careful or watchful.

⁷ perseverance: [pəːsɪvɪərəns] constant persistence in a course of action, purpose, or state; steadfast pursuit of an aim. ‘my perseverance ...’ は、ぜひ Thrushcross Grange をお借りしたいとご無理なお願いをしたこと。

⁸ some thoughts: なにか (ほかの) お考え。

⁹ wince: to start or make an involuntary shrinking movement in consequence of or in order to avoid pain, or when alarmed or suddenly affected. (不意を突かれて) たじろぐ。

¹⁰ hinder: to keep back, delay, or stop in action; to impede, deter, obstruct, prevent.

¹¹ if I could hinder it: 「もし迷惑をかけさせぬことができるのなら (黙ってかけさせはしない)」とは、事実と反する仮定。すなわち実際には迷惑を阻止したくともできぬだけの事情 (たぶん家賃収入) があることをいう。つまり、ひねくれた言い方で「自分の持ち家なんだから、こっちにその気がなければ、だれにも貸したりはしませんよ」という意味のことをいっている。

The ‘walk in’ was uttered with closed teeth, and expressed the sentiment, ‘Go to the Deuce!’ Even the gate over which he leant manifested¹ no sympathizing movement to the words²; and I think that circumstance determined me to accept the invitation: I felt interested in a man who seemed more exaggeratedly reserved³ than myself.

When he saw my horse's breast fairly⁴ pushing the barrier, he did put out his hand to unchain it, and then sullenly preceded me up the causeway⁵, calling, as we entered the court⁶:

‘Joseph, take Mr Lockwood's horse; and bring up some wine.’

‘Here we have the whole establishment⁷ of domestics⁸, I suppose,’ was the reflection⁹, suggested by this compound order¹⁰. ‘No wonder the grass grows up between the flags, and cattle are the only hedge-cutters.’

Joseph was an elderly, nay, an old man, very old, perhaps, though hale¹¹ and sinewy¹².

‘The Lord help us!’ he soliloquised¹³ in an undertone of peevish¹⁴ displeasure, while relieving me of my horse: looking, meantime, in my face so sourly¹⁵ that I charitably conjectured¹⁶ he must have need of divine aid to digest his dinner¹⁷, and his pious

¹ manifest: to show plainly, disclose, reveal.

² Even the gate ... the words.: ‘walk in’ ということばとは裏腹に、その門さえ開く気配を見せなかった。

³ reserved: averse to showing familiarity, or to open expression of thought or feeling; cold or distant; reticent, uncommunicative. Lockwood の自己評価があてにならぬことはすぐにわかる。

⁴ fairly: actually, positively, really.

⁵ causeway: (= causey) a paved way; the paved part of a way. 第2章には ‘the flagged causeway’ とあるから、平たい石を敷いた道。

⁶ court: a clear space enclosed by walls or surrounded by buildings; a yard, a court-yard. 中庭。

⁷ establishment: an organized staff of employés or servants.

⁸ domestic: a household servant or attendant.

⁹ reflection: a thought expressed in words. ここは、「Here we ... I suppose’ そして ‘No wonder ... hedge-cutters’ と私は思った」。

¹⁰ this compound order: 二つの用事をいっぺんにいいつけたこと。

¹¹ hale: (Sc. & N.) healthy.

¹² sinewy: having strong, well-developed, or prominent sinews. (Usually implying strength, but sometimes leanness.) (ときとして細身で) 筋骨たくましい

¹³ soliloquise (= soliloquize): [səlɪləkwàɪz] to talk to oneself.

¹⁴ peevish: morose, querulous, irritable, ill-tempered.

¹⁵ sourly: in a sour, peevish, or disagreeable manner. 不機嫌そうに、むっつりとして。

¹⁶ conjecture: to form an opinion or supposition as to facts on grounds admittedly insufficient; to guess, surmise. (根拠・証拠不十分のまま) 推測する。

¹⁷ dinner: この土地では昼食 (第2章に ‘I dine between twelve and one o'clock.’ とある)。

ejaculation had no reference to my unexpected advent¹.

Wuthering Heights is the name of Mr Heathcliff's dwelling, 'Wuthering'² being a significant provincial adjective, descriptive of the atmospheric tumult³ to which its station is exposed in stormy weather. Pure, bracing⁴ ventilation they must have up there, at all times, indeed: one may guess the power of the north wind, blowing over the edge, by the excessive slant⁵ of a few, stunted⁶ firs at the end of the house; and by a range of gaunt⁷ thorns⁸ all stretching their limbs one way, as if craving⁹ alms¹⁰ of the sun. Happily, the architect had foresight to build it strong: the narrow windows are deeply set in the wall, and the corners defended with large jutting stones.

Before passing the threshold, I paused to admire a quantity of grotesque carving lavished¹¹ over the front, and especially about the principal door, above which, among a wilderness of crumbling¹² griffins, and shameless¹³ little boys, I detected the date '1500,' and the name 'Hareton Earnshaw.' I would have made a few comments, and requested a short history of the place from the surly owner, but his attitude at the door appeared to demand my speedy entrance, or complete departure, and I had no desire to aggravate¹⁴ his impatience, previous to inspecting the penetralium¹⁵.

One step brought us into the family sitting-room, without any introductory lobby, or passage: they call it here 'the house' pre-eminently¹⁶. It includes kitchen and parlour,

¹ advent: [ædvənt] any important or epoch-making arrival; (in modern usage applied poetically or grandiloquently to) any arrival. 本来はキリストの降臨だから、ややおおげさにいつている。

² Wuthering: 'weathering' の方言であろう。 *weathering*: that wears away or disintegrates through the action of the weather. (風雨の作用によって摩滅する、崩壊する)

³ atmospheric tumult: 大気のすさまじい乱れ、つまり強風。 *tumult*: commotion, agitation, disturbance; disorderly or noisy movement or action.

⁴ bracing: that braces, girds, etc. 心身を引き締める。

⁵ slant: slope, inclination, obliquity. 傾き。

⁶ stunted: checked in growth or development; diminutive, dwarf.

⁷ gaunt: tall, thin, and angular in appearance. ひよろ長く角ばった。

⁸ thorn: a plant which bears thorns or prickles; a thorn-tree or thorn-bush; esp. any species of the genus *Crataegus*; in England, spec. the Hawthorn or White-thorn (*C. Oxyacantha*). サンザシまたはセイヨウサンザシ (どちらも *Crataegus* バラ科サンザシ属)

⁹ crave: to ask earnestly, to beg for (a thing), esp. as a gift or favour.

¹⁰ alms: (pl.) charity.

¹¹ lavish: to bestow, deal out, distribute, or spend profusely and recklessly.

¹² crumbling: breaking into small particles. 細かく砕けかかった、崩れかかった。

¹³ shameless: 「裸の (naked)」ということ。

¹⁴ aggravate: (of things evil) to increase the gravity of; to make worse, intensify, exacerbate.

¹⁵ penetralium: [pɛ̃nɛ̃trɛ̃liəm] the interior of a building.

¹⁶ pre-eminently: in a pre-eminent (= eminent before or above others; distinguished beyond others in respect of some quality) manner or degree. 別格扱いして。この 'the house' は頻出し、まぎらわしいので注意。

generally, but I believe at Wuthering Heights the kitchen is forced to retreat altogether into another quarter, at least I distinguished a chatter of tongues¹, and a clatter of culinary utensils² deep within; and I observed no signs of roasting, boiling, or baking about the huge fire-place; nor any glitter of copper saucepans and tin cullenders³ on the walls. One end, indeed, reflected splendidly both light and heat from ranks of immense pewter⁴ dishes, interspersed⁵ with silver jugs and tankards⁶, towering row after row, in a vast oak dresser, to the very roof. The latter had never been underdrawn⁷: its entire anatomy lay bare to an inquiring eye, except where a frame of wood laden with oatcakes⁸, and clusters of legs of beef, mutton, and ham concealed it. Above the chimney were sundry villainous⁹ old guns, and a couple of horse-pistols¹⁰, and, by way of¹¹ ornament, three gaudily painted canisters¹² disposed¹³ along its ledge. The floor was of smooth, white stone: the chairs, high-backed, primitive structures, painted green: one or two heavy black ones lurking¹⁴ in the shade. In an arch, under the dresser, reposed¹⁵ a huge, liver-coloured bitch pointer surrounded by a swarm of squealing puppies, and other dogs haunted¹⁶ other recesses.

The apartment and furniture would have been nothing extraordinary as belonging to a homely¹⁷, northern farmer with a stubborn countenance, and stalwart¹⁸ limbs set out to

¹ tongue: the action of speaking; speech, talking, utterance, voice; also, what is spoken or uttered; words, talk, discourse. ‘chatter of tongues’ は、(複数の人の) 話し声。

² culinary utensils: 台所用品。

³ cullender: (= colander) [káləndə] a vessel, usually of metal, closely perforated at the bottom with small holes, and used as a sieve or strainer in cookery. 底に細かい穴の開いた水切り容器。

⁴ pewter: [pjú:tə] grey alloy of tin and lead, usually containing one fifth of its weight of lead, for which other metals are sometimes substituted, partly or entirely, in the composition of different varieties. 白鉛 (しろめ)。

⁵ intersperse: to furnish, adorn, or diversify (a thing) with other things scattered about, placed here and there, or mingled at intervals. 別のものをそこここに入れまぜる、散在させる。

⁶ tankard: a drinking-vessel, formerly made of wooden staves and hooped; now *esp.* a tall one-handed jug or mug, usually of pewter, sometimes with a lid: used chiefly for drinking beer.

⁷ underdrawn: (PENGUIN 版注:) covered on the inside of the roof with boards or lath and plaster.

⁸ oatcake: (= oat-cake) a cake, usually thin and brittle, made of oatmeal. もろいビスケット状のもの。p. 334 には ‘large pieces of toasted *oat cake*’ として登場する。

⁹ villainous: [vɪlənəs] extremely bad or objectionable; atrocious, detestable. 怖気立つような。

¹⁰ horse-pistol: a large pistol carried at the pommel of the saddle when on horseback.

¹¹ by way of: in the capacity or with the function of; as something equivalent to. ～として。

¹² gaudily painted canisters: 派手な色を塗った (茶やコーヒーなどの) 缶。

¹³ dispose: to place (things) at proper distances apart and in proper positions with regard to each other, to place suitably, adjust; to place or arrange in a particular order. (整然と) 並べる、配置する。

¹⁴ lurk: (now only with indication of place.) to hide oneself; to remain furtively or unobserved about one spot.

¹⁵ repose: to remain still; to lie in quiet.

¹⁶ haunt: to linger in the vicinity of (a place).

¹⁷ homely: unsophisticated, simple; plain, unadorned, not fine.

¹⁸ stalwart: [stɔ:lwət] (of persons) strongly and stoutly built, sturdy, robust.

advantage¹ in knee-breeches and gaiters. Such an individual, seated in his armchair, his mug of ale frothing on the round table before him, is to be seen in any circuit of five or six miles among these hills, if you go at the right time, after dinner. But, Mr Heathcliff forms a singular contrast to his abode and style of living. He is a dark-skinned gipsy in aspect, in dress and manners a gentleman—that is, as much a gentleman as many a country squire: rather slovenly², perhaps, yet not looking amiss³, with his negligence, because he has an erect and handsome figure—and rather morose—possibly some people might suspect him of a degree⁴ of under-bred⁵ pride—I have a sympathetic chord within⁶ that tells me it is nothing of the sort; I know, by instinct, his reserve springs from an aversion to showy displays of feeling—to manifestations of mutual kindness. He'll love and hate, equally under cover, and esteem it a species of impertinence⁷ to be loved or hated again⁸—No, I'm running on too fast—I bestow my own attributes over liberally on him. Mr Heathcliff may have entirely dissimilar reasons for keeping his hand out of the way⁹, when he meets a would-be acquaintance¹⁰, to those which actuate me¹¹. Let me hope my constitution¹² is almost peculiar: my dear mother used to say I should never have a comfortable home, and only last summer, I proved myself perfectly unworthy of one.

While enjoying a month of fine weather at the sea-coast, I was thrown into the company of a most fascinating creature, a real goddess, in my eyes, as long as she took no notice of me. I 'never told my love'¹³ vocally; still, if looks have language, the merest idiot might have guessed I was over head and ears¹⁴: she understood me, at last, and looked a return—

¹ set out to advantage: set off (= to show to advantage)とほぼ同じ。'to advantage'は「美点を引き立たせて」。ここでは、両脚のたくましさを半ズボンとゲートルが引き立てて見せること。

² slovenly: [slʌv(ə)nli] habitually or naturally careless in dress or personal appearance; untidy.

³ amiss: deficient, faulty,

⁴ a degree: a considerable measure or amount of.

⁵ under-bred: of inferior breeding or upbringing; wanting in polish or refinement; vulgar. ふつうは 'underbred'.

⁶ a sympathetic chord within: 内心共鳴するところ。

⁷ impertinence: interference with what lies beyond one's province; unmannerly and offensive intrusion or taking of liberty. 出すぎた(余計な)こと。

⁸ again: in return, in reply, in response, back.

⁹ keeping his hand out of the way: 手を差し出そうとしない、愛想がわるい。

¹⁰ a would-be acquaintance: 近づきになろうとする人。

¹¹ to those which actuate me: 'to'は'reasons dissimilar to those which actuate me'と考え、「私を交際嫌いにさせる理由(とはちがった理由が Heathcliff氏にはあるのかもしれない)」。actuate: to act upon, or move, the will, as motives do. (動力を伝えて機械を動かすように)人の意志を発動させる、人を動かす。

¹² constitution: nature, character, or condition of mind; mind, disposition, temperament, temper.

¹³ never told my love: (PENGUIN版注:) cf. *Twelfth Night*, II, iv, 114-16 (Violaのセリフ)

She never told her love,

あれは恋心をもらさず、

But let concealment, like a worm i' the bud, 蕾の中の虫のように胸にひそめて、

Feed on her damask cheek.

バラ色の頬を食い荒らすに任せていたのです。

¹⁴ over head and ears: deeply immersed or involved (e.g. in love, in debt).

the sweetest of all imaginable looks—and what did I do? I confess it with shame—shrank icily into myself, like a snail, at every glance retired colder and farther; till, finally, the poor innocent was led to doubt her own senses, and, overwhelmed with confusion at her supposed mistake, persuaded her mamma to decamp¹.

By this curious turn² of disposition I have gained the reputation of deliberate³ heartlessness, how undeserved I alone can appreciate.

I took a seat at the end of the hearthstone⁴ opposite that towards which my landlord advanced, and filled up an interval of silence by attempting to caress⁵ the canine⁶ mother, who had left her nursery⁷, and was sneaking⁸ wolfishly to the back of my legs, her lip curled up, and her white teeth watering for a snatch⁹.

My caress provoked¹⁰ a long, guttural gnarl.¹¹

‘You'd better let the dog alone,’ growled Mr Heathcliff, in unison¹², checking¹³ fiercer demonstrations¹⁴ with a punch of his foot. ‘She's not accustomed to be spoiled—not kept for a pet.

‘Then, striding to a side door, he shouted again.

‘Joseph!’

¹ decamp: to go away promptly or suddenly.

² turn: natural inclination, disposition, bent.

³ deliberate: well weighed or considered; carefully thought out; formed, carried out, etc. with careful consideration and full intention; done of set purpose; studied; not hasty or rash. 考え抜かれた、計画的な、計算ずくの。

⁴ hearthstone: the flat stone forming the hearth. ‘hearth’ は ‘the floor of a fireplace’ だから暖炉の床石だが、ここでは暖炉そのものと取っていいだろう。

⁵ caress: [kəˈrés] to treat affectionately or blandishingly, to touch, stroke, or pat endearingly. なでなで（ぽんぽん）などをする。

⁶ canine: [kəˈnɪn, ˈkæn-, kənám] of, belonging to, or characteristic of, a dog.

⁷ nursery: a room or place set apart for young children.

⁸ sneak: to move, go, walk, etc., in a stealthy or slinking manner.

⁹ snatch: a hasty catch or grasp; a sudden grab or snap at something. 不意につかむ（飛びつく）こと。

¹⁰ provoke: to excite, stir up, arouse (feeling, action, etc.); to give rise to, call forth. 呼び起こす。

¹¹ guttural gnarl: ノドを鳴らしてうなること。guttural produced in the throat. gnarl [ˈnɑːl] (rare) a snarl.

¹² unison: identity in pitch of two or more sounds or notes. ここは、犬のうなり声に合わせて。

¹³ check: to arrest, stop, or retard the onward motion or course of (a person or thing). 行く手をはばむ、食い止める。

¹⁴ demonstration: a display, show, manifestation, exhibition, expression.

Joseph mumbled¹ indistinctly in the depths of the cellar, but gave no intimation² of ascending; so his master dived down to him, leaving me *vis-a-vis*³ the ruffianly bitch, and a pair of grim, shaggy⁴ sheep dogs, who shared with her a jealous⁵ guardianship over all my movements.

Not anxious to⁶ come in contact with their fangs⁷, I sat still—but, imagining they would scarcely understand tacit insults⁸, I unfortunately indulged in winking and making faces⁹ at the trio, and some turn¹⁰ of my physiognomy¹¹ so irritated madam, that she suddenly broke into a fury, and leapt on my knees. I flung her back, and hastened to interpose¹² the table between us. This proceeding roused the whole hive¹³. Half-a-dozen four-footed fiends, of various sizes, and ages, issued from hidden dens¹⁴ to the common centre. I felt my heels and coat-laps¹⁵ peculiar¹⁶ subjects of assault; and, parrying¹⁷ off the larger combatants, as effectually as I could, with the poker, I was constrained¹⁸ to demand, aloud, assistance from some of the household in re-establishing peace.

Mr Heathcliff and his man climbed the cellar steps with vexatious¹⁹ phlegm²⁰. I don't think they moved one second faster than usual, though the hearth was an absolute

¹ mumble: to speak indistinctly, or with the lips partly closed; to mutter. もぐもぐ (ぶつぶつ) いう。

² intimation: an expression by sign or token, an indication; a suggestion, a hint.

³ vis-a-vis: [vɪzəˈviː, vɪːz] facing, face to face with. ～と差し向かいで。

⁴ shaggy: covered with or having long coarse or bushy hair.

⁵ jealous: vigilant or careful in guarding; suspiciously careful or watchful. (p. 2 注 6 参照)

⁶ anxious to: earnestly desirous (to effect some purpose).

⁷ fang: a canine tooth; a tusk; (in pl.) the teeth of dogs, wolves, or other animals.

⁸ imagining ... insults: 無言でバカにする分には犬どもにはわかるまいと思って。

⁹ make faces (= make a face): to distort the features; to make grimaces.

¹⁰ turn: form, make, mould, cast (of a material object).

¹¹ physiognomy: [fɪzɪn'(g)nəmi] the face or countenance, especially viewed as an index to the mind and character; expression of face. 顔つき、表情。

¹² interpose: to place between (in space or time); to put or set between or in an intermediate position; to cause to intervene. ここでは、自分と犬との間にテーブルを置いた。状況からして、とっさに自分がテーブルの反対側に回ったようにも思えるが、あとに 'restoring the displaced table' と見えるから、やはりテーブルを動かしたのである。

¹³ hive: a swarming or teeming multitude.

¹⁴ den: the lair or habitation of a wild beast. ここでは飼犬を野獣扱いして、「巣、ねぐら」。

¹⁵ coat-laps: 'lap' はここでは '(arch.) the skirt of a coat or dress' (上着の裾) だが、ほかにも衣服のいろいろな部分を指す。

¹⁶ peculiar: distinguished in nature, character, or attributes from others; particular, special. ここでは、特別の (攻撃対象)。

¹⁷ parry: to ward off or turn aside a weapon or blow by opposing to it one's own weapon or other means of protection. 武器 (に代わるもの) を手にして攻撃をかわす。

¹⁸ constrain: to force, compel, oblige a person to do anything.

¹⁹ vexatious: [vɛksəɪʃəs] causing, tending or disposed to cause, vexation. いらいらさせる、(わざと) じれったがらせる。

²⁰ phlegm: coldness, apathy.

tempest of worrying¹ and yelping.

Happily, an inhabitant of the kitchen made more dispatch²; a lusty³ dame, with tucked-up gown, bare arms, and fire-flushed cheeks, rushed into the midst of us flourishing⁴ a frying-pan; and used that weapon, and her tongue, to such purpose⁵, that the storm subsided magically, and she only remained, heaving like a sea after a high wind, when her master entered on the scene.

‘What the devil is the matter?’ he asked, eyeing me in a manner that I could ill⁶ endure after this inhospitable treatment.

‘What the devil, indeed!’ I muttered. ‘The herd of possessed⁷ swine could have had no worse spirits in them than those animals of yours, sir. You might as well⁸ leave a stranger with a brood of tigers!’

‘They won’t meddle with persons who touch nothing,’ he remarked, putting the bottle before me, and restoring the displaced table. ‘The dogs do right to be vigilant. Take a glass of wine?’

‘No, thank you.’

‘Not bitten, are you?’

‘If I had been, I would have set my signet⁹ on the biter.’

Heathcliff’s countenance relaxed into a grin.

¹ worry: to pull or tear at (an object) with the teeth. 噛んで引きちぎる。

² dispatch: (= despatch) prompt settlement or speedy accomplishment of an affair; speed, expedition, haste, rapid progress. ここは、急いで駆けつけてきた。

³ lusty: healthy, strong, vigorous.

⁴ flourish: [flaɪrɪʃ] to brandish (a weapon, etc.); to wave about by way of show or triumph. (これ見よがしに武器などを) 振り回す。

⁵ to such purpose: so effectively.

⁶ ill: hardly, scarcely.

⁷ possessed: inhabited and controlled by a demon or spirit; lunatic, mad, crazy. [Luke 8:33] Then went the devils out of the man, and entered into the swine: and the herd ran violently down a steep place into the lake, and were choked. (悪鬼、人を出でて豚に入りたれば、その群、崖より湖水に駆け下りて溺れたりー以下聖書よりの引用文は King James Version に、その訳は『文語訳新約聖書』による。)

⁸ might as well: いっそ〜するがいい。‘might as well A as B’ の ‘as B’ (as leave him with these dogs) が省略されたかたち。(詳しくは p. 217 注 3 参照)

⁹ my signet: 犬を撃退するのに使った poker を signet (認印) にたとえたもの (殴れば印が残る)。

‘Come, come,’ he said; ‘you are flurried¹, Mr Lockwood. Here, take a little wine. Guests are so exceedingly rare in this house that I and my dogs, I am willing to own², hardly know how to receive them. Your health, sir!’

I bowed and returned the pledge³, beginning to perceive that it would be foolish to sit sulking⁴ for the misbehaviour of a pack of curs⁵: besides, I felt loath⁶ to yield⁷ the fellow further amusement, at my expense⁸; since his humour took that turn⁹.

He—probably swayed¹⁰ by prudential consideration of the folly of offending a good tenant—relaxed, a little, in the laconic¹¹ style of chipping off his pronouns, and auxiliary verbs¹²; and introduced, what he supposed would be a subject of interest to me, a discourse¹³ on the advantages and disadvantages of my present place of retirement.

I found him very intelligent on the topics we touched; and, before I went home, I was encouraged so far as to volunteer another visit, to-morrow.¹⁴

He evidently wished no repetition of my intrusion¹⁵. I shall go, notwithstanding¹⁶. It is astonishing how sociable I feel myself compared with him.

¹ flurry: to bewilder or confuse as by haste or noise; to agitate, ‘put out’.

² own: to acknowledge (a thing) to be what is claimed, or to be the fact; to confess to be valid, true, or actual; to admit. 事実と認める。(以下頻出)

³ pledge: the drinking of a health to a person, party, etc.; a toast. 乾杯。

⁴ sit sulking: ここでは ‘continue (or remain) sulking’ (いつまでもふくれている) ほどの意味。

⁵ cur: a dog: now always depreciative or contemptuous; a worthless, low-bred, or snappish dog.

⁶ loath: averse, disinclined, reluctant, unwilling.

⁷ yield: to give as a favour, or as an act of grace; to grant, accord, allow, let (one) have, bestow.

⁸ at a person’s expense: so that he suffers consequent loss, injury, or diminution. 人を犠牲 (ダシ) にして。

⁹ turn: direction, tendency.

¹⁰ sway: to cause (a person) to be directed one way or another; to have weight or influence with (a person) in his decisions, etc. ~する気にさせる。

¹¹ laconic: in speech and writing; brief, concise, sententious. そっけない、ぶっきらぼうな。

¹² chipping off his pronouns, and auxiliary verbs: 代名詞や助動詞を削ると、たとえば ‘Take a glass of wine? (Would you take a glass of wine?)’ のようになる。

¹³ discourse: (arch.) a talk, conversation.

¹⁴ I was ... to-morrow: すっかり勢いがついて、自分のほうからまた明日おじゃましましょうといった。volunteer: to offer of one’s own accord to do something. (自分から~しようと申し出る)

¹⁵ intrusion: つまり ‘an unwelcome visit’ のこと。

¹⁶ notwithstanding: Nevertheless, still, yet.

Chapter II

Yesterday afternoon set in¹ misty and cold. I had half a mind² to spend it by my study fire, instead of wading through heath and mud to Wuthering Heights.

On coming up from dinner, however, (N.B.³ I dine between twelve and one o'clock; the housekeeper, a matronly lady taken as a fixture⁴ along with the house, could not, or would not comprehend⁵ my request that I might be served at five),—on mounting the stairs with this lazy intention, and stepping into the room, I saw a servant-girl on her knees, surrounded by brushes and coal-scuttles⁶, and raising an infernal dust as she extinguished the flames with heaps of cinders⁷. This spectacle drove me back immediately; I took my hat, and, after a four miles walk, arrived at Heathcliff's garden gate just in time to escape the first feathery flakes of a snow shower.

On that bleak hill top the earth was hard with a black frost⁸, and the air made me shiver through every limb. Being unable to remove the chain, I jumped over, and, running up the flagged causeway bordered with straggling gooseberry bushes, knocked vainly for admittance, till my knuckles tingled⁹, and the dogs howled.

'Wretched¹⁰ inmates!' I ejaculated, mentally¹¹, 'you deserve perpetual isolation from your species for your churlish¹² inhospitality. At least, I would not keep my doors barred in the day time—I don't care—I will get in!'

So resolved, I grasped the latch, and shook it vehemently¹³. Vinegar-faced Joseph

¹ set in: to begin, become prevalent: chiefly of the weather entering upon a particular state.

² have half a mind (to do): よほど (いっそ) ~しようかと思う。

³ N.B.: (= NB, nb, n.b.) nota bene: [nəʊ'tə bɪːni, -béni] mark well, observe particularly.

⁴ fixture: anything fixed or securely fastened in position; a person or thing permanently confined to or established in a particular place or position. 居着いた人。

⁵ comprehend: (fig.) to include in a measurement or estimate; to take into account. 勘定に入れる、考慮する。

⁶ coal-scuttle: a receptacle for holding a supply of coal for a fire; a coal-box, coal-scoop.

⁷ cinders: *pl.* vaguely used for: Residue of combustion; ashes. ついでながら、Cinderella はこの灰にまみれた女中さんみたいな女性 (a cinder-woman, scullery-maid, etc.) のこと。

⁸ black frost: frost not accompanied by rime. 'rime' とは hoar-frost または white frost。つまりみかけは黒いままだが、凍った水分が融けると土はぬかるむ。

⁹ tingle: to be thrilled by a peculiar stinging or smarting sensation, physical or emotional; to smart, thrill, vibrate. ヒリヒリ (チクチク、ジンジン) する。

¹⁰ wretched: contemptible in character or quality; despicable, reprehensible; hateful.

¹¹ mentally: in the mind, by a mental operation; often with reference to unuttered thoughts, resolves, judgements, etc. 胸の内で。

¹² churlish: rustic, vulgar.

¹³ vehemently: with violence or impetuosity. 乱暴に、激しく。

projected his head from a round window of the barn.

‘What are ye for?’¹ he shouted. ‘T’ maister’s dahn i’ t’ fowld². Goa rahnd by th’ end ut’ laith, if yah went tuh spake tull him.’³

‘Is there nobody inside to open the door?’ I hallooed⁴, responsively⁵.

‘They’s nobbut t’ missis; and shoo’ll nut oppen’t an ye mak yer flaysome dins till neeght.’⁶

‘Why? Cannot you tell her who I am, eh, Joseph?’

‘Nor-ne me! Aw’ll hae noa hend wi’t’⁷,’ muttered the head, vanishing.

The snow began to drive⁸ thickly. I seized the handle to essay⁹ another trial; when a young man, without coat, and shouldering a pitchfork¹⁰, appeared in the yard behind. He hailed me to follow him, and, after marching through a wash-house, and a paved area containing a coal-shed¹¹, pump, and pigeon cote¹², we at length arrived in the large, warm, cheerful apartment, where I was formerly received.

It glowed delightfully in the radiance¹³ of an immense fire, compounded of coal, peat, and wood: and near the table, laid for a plentiful evening meal, I was pleased to observe

¹ What are ye for?: What are you for? (= What do you want?) 何の用だ?

² dahn i’ t’fowld: down in the fold (= a pen or enclosure for domestic animals, esp. sheep).

³ Go ... him.: Go round by the end of the lathe (= *dial.* barn), if you want to speak till (= *dial.* to) him.

⁴ halloo: to shout in order to attract attention; to holla.

⁵ responsively: in a responsive manner. ‘hallooed, responsively’ は、(Joseph が大声でいったから) それに答えてこちらも大きな声を出した、どなり返した。

⁶ They’s ... neeght.: There’s only the missis, and she’ll not open it and (= if) you make your flaysome (= fearful) dins (= noises) till night.

⁷ Nor-ne ... wi’t: Nor not me (? = (probably) Me, neither). I’ll have no hand with it (= have nothing to do with it). ‘Nor-ne me!’ はよくわからないが、たぶん「おらもまっぴらだ」ほどの意味だろう。

⁸ drive: to move along, impelled by wind, current, or other natural agency; to float along, drift. ここでは、雪がしきりに舞い降りる、降りしきる。

⁹ essay: [eséi] to attempt, to try to do.

¹⁰ pitchfork: a long-handled fork with two sharp prongs, for lifting and pitching hay, straw, or sheaves; sometimes applied to a short-handled fork for lifting dung, breaking clods, etc. わが国の一般的な「熊手」とは少しイメージがちがうから、「フォーク」とするほうがよい。

¹¹ coal-shed: 石炭小屋。Yorkshire は有数の炭田地帯であった。屋根付きの石炭小屋（炭小屋）はかつて北海道にはいくらかでもあったから、ここも野積みの置き場ではなく小屋を指すのだろう。

¹² cote: a slight building for sheltering small animals, as sheep, pigs, fowls, or for the storage of anything; a shed, stall

¹³ radiance: brilliant light.

the ‘missis,’ an individual whose existence I had never previously suspected.

I bowed and waited, thinking she would bid me take a seat. She looked at me, leaning back in her chair, and remained motionless and mute.

‘Rough weather!’ I remarked. ‘I’m afraid, Mrs Heathcliff, the door must bear the consequence of your servants’ leisure attendance¹. I had hard work to make them hear me!’

She never opened her mouth. I stared—she stared also. At any rate², she kept her eyes on me, in a cool, regardless manner, exceedingly embarrassing³ and disagreeable.

‘Sit down,’ said the young man, gruffly⁴. ‘He’ll be in soon.’

I obeyed; and hemmed⁵, and called the villain Juno, who deigned⁶, at this second interview, to move the extreme tip of her tail, in token of owning my acquaintance.

‘A beautiful animal!’ I commenced again. ‘Do you intend parting with⁷ the little ones, madam?’

‘They are not mine,’ said the amiable⁸ hostess more repellingly than Heathcliff himself could have replied.

‘Ah, your favourites are among these!’ I continued, turning to an obscure⁹ cushion full of something like cats.

‘A strange choice of favourites,’ she observed¹⁰ scornfully.

¹ I’m afraid ... attendance: 使用人の怠慢のつけをドアが負わねばなりません。つまりすぐ中に入れてくれぬので、力任せにドンドン叩いたため、ドアが痛い思いに耐えるはめになること。

PENGUIN 版では ‘door’ が ‘floor’ になっているけれど、すぐあとの文章から見て誤植であろう。

² at any rate: whatever may be the circumstances; at all events. 事情はどうあれ、とにかく。

³ embarrassing: ばつ (きまり) の悪い、人を困惑させる。‘uncomfortable; perplexing’ に近い。

⁴ gruffly: in a gruff (= surly) manner. 無愛想に、ぶっきらぼうに、つつけんどんに。

⁵ hem: to clear the throat. 咳払いする。(エヘン! の ‘hem’)

⁶ deign: to vouchsafe, condescend. かたじけなくも～してくださる。

⁷ part with: to give up, surrender. (大切なものをやむなく) 手放す。

⁸ amiable: [éimɪəb(ə)l] friendly and pleasant in temperament. 人あたり (愛想) のよい。

⁹ obscure: without clearness of form or outline; indistinct; undefined; hardly perceptible to the eye. ‘an obscure cushion full of something like cats’ しかとは見えぬがクッションの上いっぱいにいる猫らしきもの。

¹⁰ observe: to say by way of remark; to remark or mention in speech or writing. (感想を) 述べる。

Unluckily, it was a heap of dead rabbits—I hemmed once more, and drew closer to the hearth, repeating my comment on the wildness of the evening.

‘You should not have come out,’ she said, rising and reaching¹ from the chimney-piece two of the painted canisters.

Her position before was sheltered from the light: now, I had a distinct view of her whole figure and countenance. She was slender, and apparently scarcely past girlhood: an admirable form, and the most exquisite little face that I have ever had the pleasure of beholding: small features², very fair³; flaxen⁴ ringlets, or rather golden, hanging loose on her delicate neck; and eyes—had they been agreeable in expression, that would have been irresistible—fortunately for my susceptible heart, the only sentiment they evinced⁵ hovered⁶ between scorn and a kind of desperation, singularly unnatural to be detected there.

The canisters were almost out of her reach; I made a motion to aid her; she turned upon me as a miser might turn, if any one attempted to assist him in counting his gold.

‘I don't want your help,’ she snapped. ‘I can get them for myself.’

‘I beg your pardon,’ I hastened to reply.

‘Were you asked to tea?’ she demanded⁷, tying an apron over her neat black frock, and standing with a spoonful of the leaf poised over the pot.

‘I shall be glad to have a cup,’ I answered.

‘Were you asked?’ she repeated.

¹ reaching ...: (実際には届かなかったが) ~を取ろうと手を伸ばし。この意味では自動詞だから、‘reaching *for* the canisters’ とするのがふつうかと思う。(他動詞としての用例は p. 32 注 11 参照) ‘two of the canisters’ というのは、‘chimney-piece’ (= mantleshef 暖炉の上の棚、炉棚) には ‘three gaudily painted canisters’ が置かれていたから (p. 5 参照)。

² features: (pl.) the lineaments of the face, the form or mould of its various parts. 顔立ち、目や鼻など顔の各部のつくり。

³ fair: (of complexion and hair) light as opposed to dark. (肌が) 白い

⁴ flaxen: of the colour of dressed flax (亜麻糸): chiefly in reference to the hair. 亜麻色の。

⁵ evince: to give tokens of possessing; to reveal the presence of (a quality, condition, feeling); to display, exhibit, manifest. (どんな状態・気持にあるかを) 示す、見せる。

⁶ hover: move to and fro near or around, as if waiting to land or alight; also said of things intangible. (ここでは比喩的に) ~の間を行ったり来たりする。「その目にただひとつ現れていたのは、美しさにはまるでそぐわぬ、軽蔑とも一種の絶望ともつかぬ感情であった」。

⁷ demand: to ask, inquire.

‘No,’ I said, half smiling. ‘You are the proper person to ask me.’

She flung the tea back, spoon and all; and resumed her chair in a pet¹, her forehead corrugated², and her red under-lip pushed out, like a child's ready to cry.

Meanwhile, the young man had slung onto his person³ a decidedly shabby upper garment, and, erecting himself before the blaze, looked down on me, from the corner of his eyes, for all the world⁴ as if there were some mortal feud unavenged between us. I began to doubt whether he were a servant or not; his dress and speech were both rude, entirely devoid of the superiority observable in Mr and Mrs Heathcliff; his thick, brown curls were rough and uncultivated⁵, his whiskers encroached bearishly⁶ over his cheeks, and his hands were embrowned like those of a common⁷ labourer: still his bearing⁸ was free, almost haughty⁹, and he showed none of a domestic's assiduity¹⁰ in attending on the lady of the house.

In the absence of clear proofs of his condition¹¹, I deemed¹² it best to abstain¹³ from noticing his curious conduct, and, five minutes afterwards, the entrance of Heathcliff relieved me, in some measure¹⁴, from my uncomfortable state.

‘You see, sir, I am come, according to promise!’ I exclaimed, assuming the cheerful¹⁵;

¹ in a pet: (こどものように) ふくれて、すねて。 *pet*: a fit of ill humour or peevishness from this cause: now usually implying one of a slight or childish kind.

² corrugate: [kɒˈrʊɡət] to wrinkle (the skin), contract into wrinkles; hence gen. to draw, contract, or bend into parallel folds or ridges. (波形の) しわを寄せる。

³ person: the body with its clothing and adornment as presented to the sight of others; bodily frame or figure.

⁴ for all the world: precisely. まさしく。

⁵ uncultivated: ここでは比喩的に ‘(of plants) growing without tillage or care’ (植物が手入れされずに伸び放題の)。櫛を入れたり、ブラシをかけたりしていなかったこと。

⁶ bearishly: ‘bear’ (熊) のように。

⁷ common: lacking rank, station, distinction, etc.; ordinary. 並の、ただの。

⁸ bearing: carriage, deportment; behaviour, demeanour. 態度、ふるまい。

⁹ haughty: (of persons, their action, speech, etc.) high in one's own estimation; lofty and disdainful in feeling or demeanour; proud, arrogant, supercilious.

¹⁰ assiduity: persistent endeavour, diligence. かいがいしさ。

¹¹ condition: state in regard to wealth, circumstances; hence, position with reference to the grades of society; social position, estate, rank. 身分。

¹² deem: to judge, conclude, think, consider, hold.

¹³ abstain: to keep or withhold oneself, to refrain (*from*). (～を) 控える、慎む (*from*)。

¹⁴ in some measure: to a certain extent, in some degree, somewhat. いくぶん。

¹⁵ assuming the cheerful: この ‘the cheerful’ は ‘*the poor* = those who or such as are poor’ とも ‘*the beautiful* = that which is beautiful’ ともちがうようだが、とりあえず ‘assuming (an air of) cheerfulness’ (陽気なふうを装って) と考えておく。 *assume*: to take to oneself in appearance only, to pretend to possess; to pretend, simulate, feign.

‘and I fear I shall be weather-bound for half an hour¹, if you can afford me shelter during that space.’

‘Half an hour?’ he said, shaking the white flakes from his clothes; ‘I wonder you should select the thick² of a snowstorm to ramble³ about in. Do you know that you run a risk of being lost in the marshes? People familiar with these moors often miss their road on such evenings, and, I can tell you, there is no chance of a change at present.’

‘Perhaps I can get a guide among your lads, and he might stay at the Grange till morning—could you spare⁴ me one?’

‘No, I could not.’⁵

‘Oh, indeed! Well, then, I must trust to my own sagacity.’⁶

‘Umph!’

‘Are you going to mak th’ tea?’ demanded he of the shabby coat, shifting his ferocious gaze from me to the young lady.

‘Is *he* to have any?’ she asked, appealing to Heathcliff.

‘Get it ready, will you?’ was the answer, uttered so savagely that I started. The tone in which the words were said revealed a genuine bad nature. I no longer felt inclined to call Heathcliff a capital fellow.

When the preparations were finished, he invited me with—

‘Now, sir, bring forward your chair.’ And we all, including the rustic youth, drew round the table, an austere⁷ silence prevailing while we discussed¹ our meal.

¹ I shall be weather-bound for half an hour: この悪天候だから半時ほどこちらのご厄介になる、ということ。

² thick: the position, time, stage, or state in which activity is most intense.

³ ramble: to wander, travel, make one's way about (now usually to walk) in a free unrestrained manner and without definite aim or direction. ここは ‘to ramble about *in the thick of a snowstorm*’ (吹雪の最中に歩き回る) ということ。

⁴ spare: to part with, to give or grant, lend, etc., to another or others, esp. without inconvenience or loss to oneself. ここは「(何人もいるはずだから困らないでしょうし) 一人お貸してください」。

⁵ No, I could not.: (若い者はほかにいないから) 貸したくても貸せない、ということ。

⁶ sagacity: acuteness of mental discernment. もとの意味は、鋭い嗅覚。

⁷ austere: [ɔːstɪə] harsh to the feelings generally; rigorous, judicially severe.

I thought, if I had caused the cloud², it was my duty to make an effort to dispel³ it. They could not every day sit so grim and taciturn⁴, and it was impossible, however ill-tempered they might be, that the universal⁵ scowl they wore was their everyday countenance.

‘It is strange,’ I began, in the interval of swallowing one cup of tea and receiving another, ‘it is strange how custom can mould our tastes and ideas; many could not imagine the existence of happiness in a life of such complete exile from the world as you spend, Mr Heathcliff; yet, I’ll venture to say, that, surrounded by your family, and with your amiable lady as the presiding genius⁶ over your home and heart—’

‘My amiable lady!’ he interrupted, with an almost diabolical⁷ sneer on his face. ‘Where is she—my amiable lady?’

‘Mrs Heathcliff, your wife, I mean.’

‘Well, yes—Oh! you would intimate⁸ that her spirit⁹ has taken the post of ministering angel, and guards the fortunes of Wuthering Heights, even when her body is gone. Is that it?’

Perceiving myself in a blunder, I attempted to correct it. I might have seen there was too great a disparity¹⁰ between the ages of the parties to make it likely that they were man and wife. One was about forty; a period of mental vigour at which men seldom cherish the delusion of being married for love, by girls: that dream is reserved for the solace¹¹ of our

¹ discuss: to investigate or try the quality of (food or drink); (somewhat humorous.) to consume, make away with. 賞味する、片づける。

² cloud: anything that darkens or overshadows with gloom, trouble, affliction, suspicion; a state of gloom, etc. ここでは、気まずい雰囲気。

³ dispel: to drive away in different directions or in scattered order; to disperse by force, dissipate (e.g. clouds, darkness, doubts, fears, etc.)

⁴ taciturn: characterized by silence or disinclination to conversation; reserved in speech; saying little; uncommunicative. 無口な。

⁵ universal: committed, given, made, etc., by all without exception of the persons to whom there is reference or allusion. ‘the universal scowl they wore’ は、一同がそろってしかめっ面をしていたこと。

⁶ genius: the tutelary and controlling spirit connected with a place, an institution, etc. 守り神、守護霊。

⁷ diabolical: [dàrəbɒˈlɪkəl] characteristic of or befitting the devil; devilish, fiendish, atrociously wicked or malevolent.

⁸ intimate: to signify, indicate; to imply, to suggest, to hint at.

⁹ her spirit: 死んだ女房の霊。Heathcliff 自身の妻は死んだからこういう。

¹⁰ disparity: inequality or dissimilarity in respect of age, amount, number, or quality.

¹¹ solace: comfort, consolation; alleviation of sorrow, distress, or discomfort.

declining years. The other did not look seventeen.

Then it flashed¹ upon me—'The clown² at my elbow, who is drinking his tea out of a basin³, and eating his bread with unwashed hands, may be her husband. Heathcliff, junior, of course. Here is the consequence of being buried alive: she has thrown herself away upon that boor⁴, from sheer ignorance that better individuals existed! A sad pity—I must beware how I cause her to regret her choice⁵.'

The last reflection may seem conceited⁶; it was not. My neighbour struck me as⁷ bordering on repulsive. I knew, through experience, that I was tolerably⁸ attractive.

'Mrs Heathcliff is my daughter-in-law,' said Heathcliff, corroborating⁹ my surmise¹⁰. He turned, as he spoke, a peculiar look in her direction, a look of hatred unless he has a most perverse set of facial muscles that will not, like those of other people, interpret the language of his soul.

'Ah, certainly—I see now; you are the favoured possessor of the beneficent fairy,' I remarked, turning to my neighbour.

This was worse than before: the youth grew crimson, and clenched his fist with every appearance of a meditated assault¹¹. But he seemed to recollect himself,¹ presently; and

¹ flash: to come like a flash of light; to burst suddenly into view or perception. (考えなどが) いきなりひらめく、突然見えてくる。'it flashed upon me' は 'The crown ...' という考えが私にぱつとひらめいた。

² clown: a man without refinement or culture; an ignorant, rude, uncouth, ill-bred man. 田舎者。

³ basin: a circular vessel of greater width than depth, with sloping or curving sides, used for holding water and other liquids, especially for washing purposes. ここでは鉢のような容器で。ふつうはそれからカップに移して飲むのだろう。

⁴ she has ... boor: あんな 'boor' (田舎者、田舎作) にむざむざわが身をくれてやった、投げ出した。

⁵ how I cause ... her choice.: 私のようにあか抜けした好男子を見て、彼女はヤボな田舎者を選んだ自分を悔やむはず、ということ。

⁶ conceited: having an overweening opinion of oneself, or one's own qualities, etc.; vain. うぬぼれの強い。

⁷ strike one as ...: to appear to one as ..., to give one the impression of being 誰々には～と見える、誰々に～だという印象を与える。

⁸ tolerably: in a moderate or passable degree; passably, moderately, fairly, pretty well. 人並みに、まずは。

⁹ corroborate: [kəɹə'bəreɪt] to strengthen (an opinion, statement, argument, etc.) by concurrent or agreeing statements or evidence; to make more sure or certain; to support, confirm. 裏づけとなる発言をして人の発言 (など) を補強する、裏づける。

¹⁰ surmise: [sə:'máɪz, sɜ:'màɪz] an idea formed in the mind (and, often, expressed) that something may be true, but without certainty and on very slight evidence, or with no evidence; a conjecture. 根拠薄弱な推測。

¹¹ meditated assault: 襲いかかるつもり。

smothered² the storm in a brutal curse, muttered on my behalf³, which, however, I took care not to notice.

‘Unhappy in your conjectures⁴, sir!’ observed my host; ‘we neither of us have the privilege of owning your good fairy; her mate is dead. I said she was my daughter-in-law, therefore, she must have married my son.’

‘And this young man is—’

‘Not my son, assuredly!’

Heathcliff smiled again, as if it were rather too bold a jest to attribute the paternity⁵ of that bear to him.

‘My name is Hareton Earnshaw,’ growled the other; ‘and I’d counsel⁶ you to respect it!’

‘I’ve shown no disrespect,’ was my reply, laughing internally at the dignity with which he announced himself.

He fixed his eye on me longer than I cared to return the stare, for fear I might be tempted either to box⁷ his ears, or render⁸ my hilarity⁹ audible, I began to feel unmistakably out of place in that pleasant family circle. The dismal¹⁰ spiritual¹¹ atmosphere overcame, and more than neutralized¹² the glowing physical comforts round me; and I resolved to be cautious how I ventured under those rafters a third time.

¹ recollect: (*now rare*, refl.) to bring (oneself) back to a state of composure; to compose, recover (oneself).

² smother: to repress, retain from displaying, (feeling, etc.) by the exercise of self-control.

³ on my behalf: = in my behalf (‘speak in my behalf’ = in my interest, say a good word for me, intercede for me.) 「私のために」(ふつうは、弁護する、忠告するなど) というのは皮肉だろう。せっかくなつくしてくれた悪態を聞こえないふりをしたのである。なお ‘with regard to’ (～について) という意味もあるが、‘obs. (= obsolete)’ (廃用) のラベルが付いている。

⁴ conjecture: an opinion offered on insufficient presumptive evidence; an unverified supposition put forth to account for something. 不確かな推測。

⁵ paternity: the quality or condition of being a father; the relation of a father; fatherhood.

⁶ counsel: to advise.

⁷ box: to strike (the cheek, ear, etc.) with the hand.

⁸ render: to make, to cause to be or become, of a certain nature, quality, etc.

⁹ hilarity: [hɪlæɪrɪti] cheerfulness, boisterous joy.

¹⁰ dismal: [dɪzməl] causing gloom or dejection, depressing, wretched, miserable.

¹¹ spiritual: of the nature of a spirit or incorporeal supernatural essence; appropriate or natural to a spirit. 霊的存在の (にふさわしい)。Heathcliff の亡妻の霊にふれたことが尾を引いているのだろう。ただの「陰鬱な気分」ではなく、ぞっとするような気分。

¹² neutralize: to counterbalance; to render ineffective or void; to destroy by an opposite force or effect. 帳消しにする。

The business of eating being concluded, and no one uttering a word of sociable conversation, I approached a window to examine the weather.

A sorrowful sight I saw; dark night coming down prematurely¹, and sky and hills mingled in one bitter whirl² of wind and suffocating³ snow.

‘I don't think it possible for me to get home now, without a guide,’ I could not help exclaiming⁴. ‘The roads will be buried already; and, if they were bare⁵, I could scarcely distinguish a foot in advance.’

‘Hareton, drive those dozen sheep into the barn porch. They'll be covered if left in the fold all night; and put a plank⁶ before them,’ said Heathcliff.

‘How must I do?’ I continued, with rising irritation.

There was no reply to my question; and on looking round, I saw only Joseph bringing in a pail of porridge for the dogs, and Mrs Heathcliff leaning over the fire, diverting herself⁷ with burning a bundle of matches which had fallen from the chimney-piece as she restored the tea-canister to its place.

The former, when he had deposited⁸ his burden, took a critical survey of the room; and, in cracked⁹ tones, grated¹⁰ out:

‘Aw woonder hagh yah can faishion tuh stand thear i' idleness un war, when all on 'em's goan aght!¹¹ Bud yah're a nowt, and it's no use talking—yah'll niver mend uh yer ill

¹ prematurely: before the proper time; too soon, too hastily.

² whirl: (swift) rotatory or circling movement, rotation, circumvolution, gyration; a (rapid) turn, as of a wheel, around an axis or centre.

³ suffocating: that causes suffocation; stifling. 息苦しくさせる、息づまるような。

⁴ exclaim: to cry out suddenly and vehemently..

⁵ if they were bare: たとえ埋まっていなくたって (この雪では一步も先が見えない)。

⁶ plank: a long flat piece of smoothed timber, thicker than a board; spec. a length of timber sawn for building or other purposes to a thickness of from two to six inches, a width of nine inches or more, and eight feet or upwards in length.

⁷ divert oneself: (now rare) to entertain, amuse, recreate oneself; to give oneself to diversion.

⁸ deposit: to lay, put, or set down. 置く、降ろす。

⁹ cracked: (of the voice) sounding like a cracked bell, broken in musical quality or clearness. 「破れ鐘のような」とあるから、「音の濁った、こもった」。

¹⁰ grate: to utter (words) in a harsh tone. (がさがさ、ざらざらした) 耳ざわりな声でいう。

¹¹ Aw woonder ... aght!: I wonder how you can fashion (= *dial.* to bring oneself, 'have the face' [to do something] ずうずうしくも～する) to stand there in idleness and worse, when all of them's (=them have) gone out!

ways; bud goa raight tuh t' divil, like yer mother afore ye!'¹

I imagined, for a moment, that this piece of eloquence was addressed to me; and, sufficiently enraged, stepped towards the aged rascal with an intention of kicking him out of the door.

Mrs Heathcliff, however, checked me by her answer.

'You scandalous old hypocrite!' she replied. 'Are you not afraid of being carried away bodily, whenever you mention the devil's name? I warn you to refrain from provoking me, or I'll ask your abduction² as a special favour. Stop, look here, Joseph,' she continued, taking a long, dark book from a shelf. 'I'll show you how far I've progressed in the Black Art—I shall soon be competent to make a clear house of³ it. The red cow didn't die by chance; and your rheumatism⁴ can hardly be reckoned among providential visitations!⁵'

'Oh, wicked, wicked!' gasped the elder; 'may the Lord deliver us from evil!'

'No, reprobate!⁶ you are a castaway—be off, or I'll hurt you seriously! I'll have you all modelled⁷ in wax and clay⁸; and the first who passes the limits I fix, shall—I'll not say what he shall be done to⁹, but you'll see! Go, I'm looking at you!'

The little witch put a mock malignity into her beautiful eyes, and Joseph, trembling with sincere horror, hurried out, praying and ejaculating¹⁰ 'wicked' as he went.

¹ Bud yah're ... afore ye!: But you're a nowt (= nothing), and it's no use talking; you'll never mend of your ill ways, but go right to the devil, like your mother afore you!

² abduction: a leading away; the act of illegally carrying off or leading away anyone, such as a wife, child, ward, voter.. 連れ去ること、誘拐。

³ make a clear house of: 手元の辞書には熟語として見あたらずに、「(じまなものを) 取り除く、(仕事の残りを) かたづける」というほどの意味 ('clear off' に近い)。ここでは Black Art を残らず身につけること。

⁴ rheumatism: [rú:mætiz(ə)m] a disease of which inflammation and pain of the joints are prominent features. リウマチ。

⁵ visitation: the action, on the part of God or some supernatural power, of coming to, or exercising power over, a person or people for some end (so as to afflict with sickness or other trouble, esp. by way of punishment for wrong-doing). ここでは神のはからいによる災い。

⁶ reprobate: [réprəbèt] one rejected by God; one who has fallen away from grace or religion. 神に見放された者。'castaway' も同様の意味。

⁷ model: to produce or fashion in clay, wax, or the like (a figure or imitation of anything).

⁸ I'll have you all modelled in wax and clay: (PENGUIN 版注:) Catherine is proposing to make an effigy (人に似せた人形) of Joseph for the purpose of punishing him through witchcraft. おまえたちみんなの人形を蠟と粘土でこしらえて (呪いをかけて) やる。

⁹ what he shall be done to: どんな目に会うか (私がどんな目に会わせてやるか、ということ)。

¹⁰ ejaculate: to utter suddenly (a short prayer; now in wider sense, any brief expression of emotion). 不意に声を発する、いう。

I thought her conduct must be prompted by a species of dreary¹ fun; and, now that we were alone, I endeavoured to interest her in my distress.

‘Mrs Heathcliff,’ I said, earnestly, ‘you must excuse me for troubling you—I presume, because, with that face, I’m sure you cannot help being good-hearted. Do point out some landmarks by which I may know my way home—I have no more idea how to get there than you would have how to get to London!’²

‘Take the road you came,’ she answered, ensconcing³ herself in a chair, with a candle, and the long book open before her. ‘It is brief⁴ advice, but as sound as I can give.’

‘Then, if you hear of me being discovered dead in a bog⁵ or a pit full of snow, your conscience won’t whisper that it is partly your fault?’

‘How so? I cannot escort you. They wouldn’t let me go to the end of the garden-wall.’

‘*You!* I should be sorry to ask you to cross the threshold, for my convenience, on such a night,’ I cried. ‘I want you to *tell* me my way, not to *show* it; or else to persuade Mr Heathcliff to give me a guide.’

‘Who? There is himself, Earnshaw, Zillah⁶, Joseph, and I. Which would you have?’

‘Are there no boys at the farm?’

‘No, those are all.’

‘Then, it follows⁷ that I am compelled to stay.’

¹ dreary: dismal, gloomy; repulsively dull or uninteresting. ‘dreary fun’ を「退屈しのぎの冗談」とする解釈もあるが、「鬱憤晴らし」あたりがよいかと思う。

² I have ... to London!: あなたはロンドンへ行く道をご存じないでしょうが、私だって屋敷へ帰る道がまるでわからないんですよ。(‘no more A than B’ については、p. 118 注 1 参照)。

³ ensconce: to establish in a place or position for the purpose **a.** of concealment; **b.** of security, comfort, ‘snugness’, etc. ある場所に(身を)隠す、おさめる。ここは ‘sitting in a chair’ に同じ。

⁴ brief: occupying short time in speaking or reading; consisting of few words, short, concise. いい意味では「簡潔な」、悪い意味では「そっけない」。

⁵ bog: a piece of wet spongy ground, consisting chiefly of decayed or decaying moss and other vegetable matter, too soft to bear the weight of any heavy body upon its surface. 英和辞書には「沼」とあるが、ぶよぶよした植物の腐食層に覆われた「湿地(湿原)」のこと。(p. 122 注 9 参照)

⁶ Zillah: [zɪlə]

⁷ follow: to result (as an effect from a cause, an inference from premisses); to be, or occur as, a consequent. ～という結果になる、結果として～ということになる。しばしば ‘it follows (that) ...’。

‘That you may settle with your host. I have nothing to do with it.’

‘I hope it will be a lesson to you, to make no more rash journeys on these hills,’ cried Heathcliff’s stern voice from the kitchen entrance. ‘As to staying here, I don’t keep accommodations for visitors; you must share a bed with Hareton, or Joseph, if you do.’

‘I can sleep on a chair in this room,’ I replied.

‘No, no! A stranger is a stranger, be he rich or poor—it will not suit¹ me to permit any one the range of the place² while I am off guard!’ said the unmannerly wretch³.

With this insult my patience was at an end. I uttered an expression of disgust, and pushed past him into the yard, running against Earnshaw in my haste. It was so dark that I could not see the means of exit, and, as I wandered round, I heard another specimen⁴ of their civil behaviour amongst each other.

At first, the young man appeared about to befriend⁵ me.

‘I’ll go with him as far as the park⁶,’ he said.

‘You’ll go with him to hell!’ exclaimed his master, or whatever relation he bore. ‘And who is to look after the horses, eh?’

‘A man’s life is of more consequence⁷ than one evening’s neglect of the horses; somebody must go,’ murmured Mrs Heathcliff, more kindly than I expected.

‘Not at your command!’⁸ retorted⁹ Hareton. ‘If you set store on¹ him, you’d better be

¹ suit: to be agreeable or convenient to (a person, his inclinations, etc.); to fall in with the views or wishes of. 誰々 (の気持・性質・希望・意向) になう、適する。‘it will not suit me to permit ...’ は、～をゆるすような気はない。

² the range of the house: 家の中を勝手にうろうろすること。 *range*: opportunity or scope for ranging; liberty to range. うろつきまわる機会 (自由)。

³ wretch: one who is sunk in deep distress, sorrow, misfortune, or poverty; a miserable, unhappy, or unfortunate person; a poor or hapless being.

⁴ specimen: [spēsɪmən] an example, instance, or illustration of something, from which the character of the whole may be inferred.

⁵ befriend: to act as a friend to, to help, favour; to assist, promote, further.

⁶ park: (in Ireland, Scotland, and north of England) an enclosed piece of ground for pasture or tillage; a field; a parrock or paddock. (垣根や塀などで) 囲った放牧地または耕地。

⁷ consequence: importance, moment, weight.

⁸ at your command: at your bidding. おまえのいうとおりに、意のままに。

⁹ retort: to say or utter by way of (sharp or aggressive) reply.

quiet.'

'Then I hope his ghost will haunt you; and I hope Mr Heathcliff will never get another tenant till the Grange is a ruin!²' she answered sharply.

'Hearken, hearken, shoo's cursing on 'em!' muttered Joseph, towards whom I had been steering³.

He sat within earshot, milking the cows by the aide of a lantern, which I seized unceremoniously⁴, and, calling out that I would send it back on the morrow, rushed to the nearest postern⁵.

'Maister, maister, he's staling t' lantern!⁶' shouted the ancient⁷, pursuing⁸ my retreat⁹. 'Hey, Gnasher! Hey, dog! Hey, Wolf, holld him, holld him!'

On opening the little door, two hairy monsters flew at my throat, bearing me down¹⁰ and extinguishing the light, while a mingled guffaw¹¹, from Heathcliff and Hareton, put the copestone on¹² my rage and humiliation.

Fortunately, the beasts seemed more bent¹³ on stretching their paws, and yawning, and flourishing their tails, than devouring¹⁴ me alive; but, they would suffer no resurrection¹⁵, and I was forced to lie till their malignant masters pleased¹⁶ to deliver me: then, hatless and trembling with wrath, I ordered the miscreants¹⁷ to let me out—on their

¹ set store on: to have high regard for; to value, esteem. ～を重んずる、大切に思う。

² ruin: a ruined or ruinous building. あばら家。'ruins' なら「遺跡、廃墟」。

³ steer: to direct one's course in a specified direction.

⁴ unceremoniously: without ceremony. なんの挨拶もなく、いきなり。

⁵ postern: a back door; a private door; any door or gate distinct from the main entrance.

⁶ staling t' lantern: stealing the lantern.

⁷ the ancient: = the old man (*or* servant). いささか大げさなのは、冗談めかしているのだろう。

⁸ pursue: [pəsú:, -sjú:] to follow with intent to overtake and capture or kill; to chase, to hunt.

⁹ retreat: the act of retiring or withdrawing in the face of opposition, difficulty, or danger.

'pursuing my retreat' は、逃げる私を追いかける。

¹⁰ bear down: to push to the ground, overwhelm, overthrow. 地面に押し倒す。

¹¹ guffaw: [gʌfʌ:] a burst of coarse laughter; a loud or boisterous laugh.

¹² put the copestone on: ～をさらに高めた。copestone = the top or head stone of a building.

¹³ be bent (on): to be intent, determined, resolved (*on* or *upon* an object or action). ～に熱心。

¹⁴ devour: to swallow or eat up voraciously, as a beast of prey; to make a prey of, to prey upon.

¹⁵ suffer no resurrection: 起き上がろうとしても犬どもがゆるさぬ。suffer: to allow.

resurrection: the action or fact of rising again from sleep, decay, disuse, etc.

¹⁶ please: to have the will or desire, to be moved; to think proper, vouchsafe, choose. ～する (してやろう) という気になる。

¹⁷ miscreant: [mískriənt] a vile wretch; a villain, rascal.

peril to keep me one minute longer¹ —with several incoherent² threats of retaliation³ that, in their indefinite⁴ depth of virulency⁵, smacked⁶ of King Lear⁷.

The vehemence of my agitation brought on a copious⁸ bleeding at the nose, and still Heathcliff laughed, and still I scolded⁹. I don't know what would have concluded the scene had there not been¹⁰ one person at hand rather more rational than myself, and more benevolent¹¹ than my entertainer. This was Zillah, the stout housewife; who at length issued forth to inquire into the nature of the uproar. She thought that some of them had been laying violent hands on me; and, not daring to attack her master, she turned her vocal artillery¹² against the younger scoundrel.

‘Well, Mr Earnshaw,’ she cried, ‘I wonder what you'll have agait¹³ next! Are we going to murder folk on our very door-stones? I see this house will never do for¹⁴ me—look at t' poor lad, he's fair choking! Wisht, wisht!¹⁵ you mun'n't¹⁶ go on so—come in, and I'll cure that. There now, hold ye still.’

With these words she suddenly splashed a pint¹⁷ of icy water down my neck, and pulled

¹ on their peril ... longer: これ以上少しでもこのままにしておいたらどうなっても知らんぞ。 *on* (at*) *your* (*his*, etc.) *peril*: you (etc.) taking the risk or responsibility of the consequences: esp. in commands, or warnings, referring to the risk incurred by disregard or disobedience. 警告を無視した結果の責任はそっちもちで。 *‘on’は古いかたち。ふつうは‘at’。

² incoherent: without logical connexion or natural sequence of ideas; inconsistent, rambling, disjointed. 一貫性のない、つじつまの合わぬ、支離滅裂の。

³ retaliation: the action of retaliating; the return of like for like; repayment in kind; requital, reprisal. 報復。

⁴ indefinite: of undetermined extent, amount, or number; unlimited. 際限のない。

⁵ virulency: [vɪrjʊlənsi] violent malignity or rancour.

⁶ smack: to partake or savour *of*, to be strongly suggestive or reminiscent *of*, something.

⁷ (PENGUIN 版注:) [*King Lear*, II, iv, 279-82] (Lear のセリフ)

I will have such revenges on you both	おまえたち二人には復讐してやるとも。
That all the world shall—I will do such things,—	どうしてくれるかはまだ決めておらぬが、
What they are yet I know not,— but they shall be	世界中が震え上がるような、
The terrors of the earth.	恐ろしい復讐をな。

⁸ copious: plentiful; abundant.

⁹ scold: to rail *at* or wrangle *with* some one. (人) ののしる (*at*)、(人) と喧嘩口論する (*with*)。古くはこちらが‘scold’本来の意味。

¹⁰ had there not been ...: = if there had not been ... ~がいなかったら。この種の倒置は頻出する。

¹¹ benevolent: [bɪnɛvələnt] (of the general frame or habit of mind) desirous of the good of others, of a kindly disposition, charitable, generous.

¹² artillery: [ɑ:tɪləri] large guns, cannon, ordnance.

¹³ agait: afoot (= in operation or employment). ‘I wonder ... next!’ 今度はなにをしでかすおつもりやら！

¹⁴ do for: to be fitting or appropriate for.

¹⁵ wisht: hush; silent. (Yorkshire 方言)

¹⁶ mun'n't: must not.

¹⁷ pint: [paɪnt] a vessel containing a pint (= 0.57ℓ); a pint-pot. 1 パイント入りのポット。Zillah はポットを持ったまま急いで駆けつけてきたのである。

me into the kitchen. Mr Heathcliff followed, his accidental merriment expiring¹ quickly in his habitual moroseness.

I was sick exceedingly, and dizzy and faint; and thus compelled, perforce², to accept lodgings under his roof. He told Zillah to give me a glass of brandy, and then passed on to the inner room, while she condoled³ with me on my sorry predicament⁴, and having obeyed his orders, whereby I was somewhat revived, ushered me to bed.

¹ expire: to cease, come to an end.

² perforce: compulsorily, of necessity. やむなく。

³ condole: to express sympathy with another in his affliction.

⁴ predicament: an unpleasant, trying, or dangerous situation. 苦境、窮状。

Chapter III

While leading the way upstairs, she recommended that I should hide the candle, and not make a noise, for her master had an odd notion about the chamber she would put me in, and never let anybody lodge there willingly.

I asked the reason.

She did not know, she answered; she had only lived there a year or two; and they had so many queer goings on, she could not begin to be curious.

Too stupefied¹ to be curious myself, I fastened my door and glanced round for the bed. The whole furniture consisted of a chair, a clothes-press², and a large oak case, with squares cut out near the top, resembling coach windows³.

Having approached this structure, I looked inside, and perceived it to be a singular sort of old-fashioned couch⁴, very conveniently designed to obviate⁵ the necessity for every member of the family having a room to himself. In fact, it formed a little closet, and the ledge of a window, which it enclosed, served as a table.

I slid back the panelled sides, got in with my light, pulled them together again, and felt secure against the vigilance of Heathcliff, and every one else.

The ledge, where I placed my candle, had a few mildewed books piled up in one corner; and it was covered with writing scratched on the paint. This writing, however, was nothing but⁶ a name repeated in all kinds of characters, large and small—*Catherine*

¹ stupefy: to make stupid or torpid; to deprive of apprehension, feeling, or sensibility; to benumb, deaden. 無感覚（無気力）にする、ぼうっとさせる。

² clothes-press: (PENGUIN 版注:) a shelved recess or movable chest or case in which clothes are kept folded. 衣装棚（箆笥）。

³ coach windows: ‘coach’ は（乗合いの）大型四輪馬車。その窓のような四角い穴が、側面上部にたぶん三つほど並んでいたのだろう。この ‘oak box’ の構造はわかりにくいだが、‘I looked inside.’ とあるから上は蓋で覆われてはおらず、正面には真ん中から左右に開く鏡板張りの戸があったのだろう。また裏面の上部には板を張っておらず、部屋の窓のひとつを取り囲む（enclose）ように窓際に置かれ、その窓の下は棚がテーブルの役目を果たしていた。したがって ‘the ledge of a window’ の ‘window’ は箱の側面上部に開いた四角い窓状の穴を指すのではないことに注意。このことはこのあとまもなく明らかになる。

⁴ couch: [káutʃ] a frame or structure, with what is spread over it (or simply a layer of some soft substance), on which to lie down for rest or sleep; a bed. ふつう ‘bed’ と呼ばれるものもそうでないものも含め、人が横たわって眠るものを一般に、または漠然と指す。結局は「寝台」。

⁵ obviate: [ɒˈviɪt] to prevent by anticipatory measures. あらかじめ手を打って防ぐ。

⁶ nothing but: nothing other than; only.

Earnshaw, here and there varied to *Catherine Heathcliff*, and then again to *Catherine Linton*.¹

In vapid² listlessness³ I leant my head against the window, and continued spelling over Catherine Earnshaw—Heathcliff—Linton, till my eyes closed; but they had not rested five minutes when⁴ a glare of white letters started from the dark, as vivid as spectres—the air swarmed with Catherines; and rousing myself to dispel the obtrusive⁵ name, I discovered my candle wick reclining on one of the antique volumes, and perfuming the place with an odour of roasted calf-skin.

I snuffed⁶ it off, and, very ill at ease⁷, under the influence of cold and lingering⁸ nausea⁹, sat up, and spread open the injured tome¹⁰ on my knee. It was a Testament, in lean type, and smelling dreadfully musty¹¹: a fly-leaf¹² bore the inscription¹³—‘Catherine Earnshaw, her book,’ and a date some quarter of a century back.

I shut it, and took up another, and another, till I had examined all. Catherine's library was select¹⁴, and its state of dilapidation¹⁵ proved it to have been well used, though not altogether for a legitimate purpose; scarcely one chapter had escaped a pen-and-ink commentary¹⁶—at least, the appearance of one—covering every morsel¹ of blank that the

¹ Catherine Earnshaw, etc.: これらの名を刻んだのはもちろん Catherine だが、三つの名は一種の予言ともなっている、記憶にとどめておく必要がある。

² vapid: (fig.) devoid of animation, zest, or interest; dull, flat, lifeless, insipid. 気の抜けた。

³ listlessness: languid indifference as to one's surroundings, or as to what one has to do. 無気力、ものうさ。‘in vapid listlessness’ は、だるくてなにをする気にもなれぬまま。

⁴ they had not rested five minutes when ...: 目を閉じて五分とたたぬうちに～。

⁵ obtrusive: characterized by forcibly thrusting (oneself, one's opinions, etc.) into notice or prominence; forward; unduly prominent. でしゃばりな、押しつけがましい、ひどく目立つ。

⁶ snuff: to free (a candle, wick, etc.) from the snuff, by pinching or cutting this off. 火を消したのではなく、芯の燃えかすを（ここでは指でつまんで）取り除いたのである。

⁷ ill at ease: uncomfortable, uneasy.

⁸ lingering: remaining behind, slow to depart or disappear.

⁹ nausea: [nó:jiə, nó:siə, nó:ziə] a feeling of sickness, with loathing of food and inclination to vomit. 吐き気。

¹⁰ tome: [təʊm] a book, a volume; now usually suggesting a large, heavy, old-fashioned book.

¹¹ musty: mouldy; spoiled with damp; moist and fetid. かびた。

¹² fly-leaf: a blank leaf at the beginning or end, but esp. at the beginning, of a book. 表紙の真裏とそのすぐ隣が「見返し」、見返しのうち本文側を「遊び」という。その「遊び」とタイトル・著者名を記した「扉」との間にある白紙が‘fly-leaf’（遊び紙）。しかし実際には見返しの「遊び」を指すことも多いようだ。

¹³ inscription: a piece of writing or lettering upon something; a set of characters or words written, engraved, or otherwise traced upon a surface. ここでは、書きこみ。

¹⁴ select: choice, of special value or excellence; composed of or containing the best, choicest or most desirable; superior. 選り抜きの、上等の。

¹⁵ dilapidation: the action of falling into decay; the condition of being in ruins or in disrepair. ここでは、（本の）傷んだ状態、傷みぐあい。

¹⁶ commentary: anything that serves for exposition or illustration; a comment, remark.

printer had left.

Some were detached sentences²; other parts took the form of a regular diary, scrawled in an unformed, childish hand. At the top of an extra page, quite a treasure probably when first lighted on³, I was greatly amused to behold an excellent caricature⁴ of my friend Joseph, rudely yet powerfully sketched.

An immediate interest kindled within me for the unknown Catherine, and I began, forthwith, to decipher⁵ her faded hieroglyphics⁶.

‘An awful Sunday!’ commenced the paragraph beneath. ‘I wish my father were back again. Hindley is a detestable substitute⁷—his conduct to Heathcliff is atrocious⁸—H. and I are going to rebel⁹—we took our initiatory step this evening.

‘All day had been flooding with rain; we could not go to church, so Joseph must needs¹⁰ get up¹¹ a congregation¹² in the garret; and, while Hindley and his wife basked¹³ down stairs before a comfortable fire—doing anything but reading their Bibles¹⁴, I’ll answer¹ for

¹ morsel: a small piece (of anything), esp. a portion cut or broken from a mass; a little piece; a fragment.

² detached sentences: ここはたとえば ‘sentences detached from everyday concerns’ (日常のさまざまな事柄から離れた文章) とでも考えれば、‘a regular diary’ と釣合いが取れるだろう。

³ light on (or upon): to happen to come upon, chance upon; to meet with or discover, esp. unexpectedly or by accident; to come across, whether as the result of search or not. (たいていは偶然) みつける。

⁴ caricature: [kærikətjʊə(r)] grotesque or ludicrous representation of persons or things by exaggeration of their most characteristic and striking features.

⁵ decipher: (of obscure or badly-formed writing; of hieroglyphics, or writing in a foreign alphabet.) to make out the meaning of (characters as difficult as those of a cipher).

⁶ hieroglyphics: [hàɪərəglífiks] (pl. humorously) characters or writing difficult to make out. ここはそのまゝ「色の薄れた象形文字を解説する」としても十分通じらると思う。

⁷ substitute: a person acting in place of another.

⁸ atrocious: excessively and wantonly cruel; heinously wicked

⁹ rebel: [rɪbél] to resist, oppose, or be disobedient to, some one having authority or rule. あるいはわざとおおげさに ‘to rise in opposition or armed resistance against the rightful or established ruler or government of one’s country.’ (謀反を起こす)

¹⁰ must needs (do): ここは「よりによって寒い屋根裏部屋で」という含みがあるから、「どうしても(強情にも) ~するといつてきかない」という意味。needs: of necessity, necessarily. 【参考】「是非(何々)せねばならぬ(と云つて聴かぬ)の“must”は打消無く、其の儘*過去に用ふ。(齋藤秀三郎『英和中辞典』) *従属節中でなくとも (p. 44 注 2 参照)。したがって過去か現在かは文脈による。例: He must needs come (= insists or insisted on coming). 是非来ると強情を張って肯かぬ(のであった)。(研究社『新英和大辞典』昭和 26 年 7 月改訂増補第 6 版)

¹¹ get up: to prepare, make ready, organize, set on foot, bring into existence.

¹² congregation: a body of persons assembled for religious worship or to hear a preacher. ‘get up a congregation’ は、会衆をそろえる。

¹³ bask: too expose oneself to, or disport oneself in, an ambient flood of genial warmth, as in the sunshine, the rays of a fire.

¹⁴ doing anything ... Bibles: (ほかになにをしようとも) 聖書などけっして読みやしない。

for it—Heathcliff, myself, and the unhappy plough-boy², were commanded to take our Prayer-books and mount³—we were ranged in a row, on a sack of corn, groaning and shivering, and hoping that Joseph would shiver too, so that he might give us a short homily⁴ for his own sake. A vain idea! The service lasted precisely three hours; and yet my brother had the face to⁵ exclaim, when he saw us descending,

“What, done already?”

‘On Sunday evenings we used to be permitted to play, if we did not make much noise; now a mere titter⁶ is sufficient to send us into corners!’

“You forget you have a master here,’ says the tyrant⁷. ‘I’ll demolish⁸ the first who puts me out of temper!’ I insist on perfect sobriety⁹ and silence. Oh, boy! was that you? Frances, darling, pull his hair as you go by; I heard him snap his fingers¹⁰.”

‘Frances pulled his hair heartily¹¹, and then went and seated herself on her husband’s knee; and there they were, like two babies, kissing and talking nonsense by the hour¹²—foolish palaver¹³ that we should be ashamed of.

‘We made ourselves as snug¹⁴ as our means allowed in the arch of the dresser. I had

¹ answer: to guarantee, give an assurance (for).

² plough-boy: a boy who leads the team of oxen or horses that draw a plough; hence, a boy of the rustic labouring class. 農童、耕牛馬の口取り。

³ mount: to travel or proceed in an upward direction. Now usually implying a somewhat steep ascent, e.g. that of a flight of steps. (急な階段などを) 上る。

⁴ homily: a sermon.

⁵ have the face to (do something): to be sufficient impudent. ずうずうしくも～する。

⁶ titter: a stifled laugh, a giggle. クックッ、クスクスと笑う。

⁷ tyrant: any one who exercises power or authority oppressively, despotically, or cruelly; one who treats those under his control tyrannically. いわゆる「暴君」のことだが、はじめのほうに ‘Hindley is a detestable substitute.’ (Hindley がお父様の代りだなんてまっぴら) とあるから、‘one who seizes upon the sovereign power in a state without legal right’ (主権を不法に奪う者) という本来の意味も含まれているだろう。

⁸ demolish: to destroy (a building or other structure) by violent disintegration of its fabric; to pull or throw down, pull to pieces, reduce to ruin.

⁹ sobriety: [səbránti] staidness, gravity, seriousness. もともととは無茶な飲み食いをせぬことから、よろず羽目をはずさぬこと。ここは「じっとおとなしくしていこう」というのを、説教口調でわざと もったいぶったことばを使ったのだろう。

¹⁰ snap his fingers: 指をはじくのは、人を馬鹿にしたしぐさ。

¹¹ heartily: without restraint; vigorously. 遠慮なく、思い切り。

¹² by the hour: for hours.

¹³ palaver: [pəlá:və] applied contemptuously to (what is considered) unnecessary, profuse, or idle talk.

¹⁴ snug: in a state of ease, comfort, or quiet enjoyment.

just fastened our pinafores¹ together, and hung them up for a curtain², when in comes Joseph, on an errand³ from the stables. He tears⁴ down my handiwork, boxes my ears, and croaks⁵:

“T’ maister nobbut⁶ just buried, and Sabbath nut o’ered⁷, und t’ sahnd uh t’ gospel still i’ yer lugs, and yah darr be laiking!⁸ shame on ye! sit ye dahn, ill childer! they’s good books eneugh if ye’ll read ’em;⁹ sit ye dahn, and think uh yer sowls!¹⁰”

‘Saying this, he compelled us so to square¹¹ our positions that we might receive, from the far-off fire, a dull ray to show us the text of the lumber¹² he thrust upon us.

‘I could not bear the employment¹³. I took my dingy¹⁴ volume by the scroop¹⁵, and hurled it into the dog-kennel, vowing¹⁶ I hated a good book.

‘Heathcliff kicked his to the same place.

‘Then there was a hubbub¹⁷!

“Maister Hindley!” shouted our chaplain. “Maister, coom [= come] hither! Miss

¹ pinafore: [pínəfɔː] a covering of washable material worn by children, and by factory girls or others, over the frock or gown, to protect it from being soiled. 前掛け。‘apron’とのちがいは、背中の腰の上で合わせて留め、腕を通す穴のあるところ。

² for a curtain: カーテン代わりに。for: in place of, instead of.

³ on an errand: ちょっとした用事を足しに。errand: a short journey on which an inferior (e.g. a servant, a child) is sent to convey a message or perform some simple business on behalf of the sender.

⁴ tear: [téə] to pull apart or to pieces with some force. ここは「むしり取る」が適切。

⁵ croak: to utter a deep, hoarse, dismal cry, as a frog or a raven.

⁶ nobbut: [nɒˈbʌt] (dial.) only.

⁷ nut o’ered: not over.

⁸ t’ sahnd ... laiking: the sound of the gospel still in your lugs (= dial. ears), and you dare be laking (= dial. playing).

⁹ Sit ... ’em: Sit you down, ill children; there’s (= there are) good books enough if you’ll read them.

¹⁰ think uh yer sowls: think of your souls.

¹¹ square: to arrange, adjust, render appropriate or exact, etc.

¹² lumber: useless odds and ends; useless or cumbersome material.

¹³ employment: a special errand or commission. いいつけ。

¹⁴ dingy: [dínzɪ] of a (disagreeably) dark and dull colour or appearance (now usually implying a dirty colour or aspect due to smoke, grime, dust, weathering, or to deficiency of daylight and freshness of hue; and so of depreciatory connotation.)

¹⁵ scroop: (*OED*)? Perhaps a mistake for *scruff* (= the nape of the neck). (PENGUIN 版注:) the back cover or spine of a book. *OED* の推定は ‘grab ... by the nape of the neck’ (～の首根っこをつかむ) という決まり文句を根拠としているのだろう。

¹⁶ vow: to affirm or assert solemnly; to asseverate, to declare.

¹⁷ hubbub: noisy turmoil, confusion, disturbance.

Cathy's riven th' back off 'Th' Helmet uh [= of] Salvation,' un' Heathcliff's pawsed his fit¹ intuh [= into] t' first part uh 'T' Brooad Way to Destruction!' It's fair flaysome ut yah let 'em goa on this gait². Ech! th' owd man ud uh laced 'em properly—but he's goan!³”

‘Hindley hurried up from his paradise on the hearth, and seizing one of us by the collar⁴, and the other by the arm, hurled⁵ both into the back-kitchen; where, Joseph asseverated⁶, “owd Nick⁷” would fetch us as sure as we were living⁸; and, so comforted⁹, we each sought a separate nook¹⁰ to await his advent.

‘I reached¹¹ this book, and a pot of ink from a shelf, and pushed the house-door ajar to give me light, and I have got the time on with writing for twenty minutes¹²; but my companion is impatient and proposes that we should appropriate¹³ the dairy woman's cloak, and have a scamper¹⁴ on the moors, under its shelter. A pleasant suggestion—and then, if the surly old man come in, he may believe his prophesy verified—we cannot be damper, or colder, in the rain than we are here.’

I suppose Catherine fulfilled her project, for the next sentence took up another subject; she waxed lachrymose¹⁵.

‘How little did I dream that Hindley would ever make me cry so!’ she wrote. ‘My head aches, till I cannot keep it on the pillow; and still I can't give over¹⁶. Poor Heathcliff!

¹ pawsed his fit: (PENGUIN 版注:) kicked his feet.

² It's ... gait.: It's fair flaysome (= feaful) that you let them go on this gait (to pursue this course こんな勝手なふるまいをする).

³ th' owd ... goan!: the old man would have laced (= thrashed) them properly—but he's gone! 旦那が生きていたら、二人にたっぷりムチをくれてやっただろうに。

⁴ collar: the part of a garment which encircles the neck, or forms the upper border near the neck; the neckband of a coat, cloak, dress, shirt, etc., either standing up round the neck, or folded over upon the garment. 襟。ここでは襟首。

⁵ hurl: to drive or impel with impetuous force or violence.

⁶ asseverate: to affirm solemnly, declare positively, aver.

⁷ owd Nick: old Nick = the Devil.

⁸ as sure as we were living: most certainly. ‘as sure as’ の後に来ることばはさまざま。

⁹ comfort: to soothe in grief or trouble; to relieve of mental distress; to console, solace. ‘so comforted’ は、(いやなことから) 解放されたのでほっとして。

¹⁰ nook: a corner in a room or other enclosed space.

¹¹ reach: to draw or bring towards oneself (esp. to take down) *from* a certain place or position. (ある場所からなにかを) 引き出す、取る、降ろす。(p. 14 注 1 参照)

¹² I have got ... twenty minutes: これを書いているうちに (現在) 二十分たったが、とうとう Heathcliff がしびれを切らし…… (と、ここから実況中継に切り替わっている)。

¹³ appropriate: to take possession of for one's own. 他人のものを無断で使う。

¹⁴ scamper: a playful scurrying run. ‘have a scamper’ は「(ふざけて) 駆け回る、はね回る」。

¹⁵ waxed lachrymose: (gradually) became tearful. (‘wax’ については p. 102 注 1 参照)

¹⁶ give over: give over crying. 涙がとまらない。

Hindley calls him a vagabond¹, and won't let him sit with us, nor eat with us any more; and, he says, he and I must not play together, and threatens to turn him out of the house if we break his orders.

'He has been blaming our father (how dared he?) for treating H. too liberally; and swears he will reduce him to his right place—'

I began to nod drowsily over the dim page; my eye wandered from manuscript to print. I saw a red ornamented title ... 'Seventy Times Seven², and the First of the Seventy-First³. A Pious Discourse delivered by the Reverend Jabes Branderham, in the Chapel of Gimmerden Sough.' And while I was, half consciously, worrying my brain to guess what Jabes Branderham would make of his subject⁴, I sank back in bed, and fell asleep.

Alas, for the effects of bad tea and bad temper!⁵ what else could it be that made me pass such a terrible night? I don't remember another that I can at all compare with it since I was capable of suffering⁶.

I began to dream, almost before I ceased to be sensible of my locality. I thought it was morning; and I had set out on my way home, with Joseph for a guide. The snow lay yards deep in our road⁷; and, as we floundered⁸ on, my companion wearied me with constant reproaches that I had not brought a pilgrim's staff⁹: telling me I could never get into the house without one, and boastfully flourishing a heavy-headed cudgel¹⁰, which I understood

¹ vagabond: one who has no fixed abode or home, and who wanders about from place to place; spec. one who does this without regular occupation or obvious means of support; an itinerant beggar, idle loafer, or tramp; a vagrant.

² Seventy Times Seven: [Matthew 18:21-22] Then came Peter to him, and said, Lord, how oft shall my brother sin against me, and I forgive him? till seven times? Jesus saith unto him, I say not unto thee, Until seven times, Until seventy times seven. (ここにペテロ御許に來りて言ふ『主よ、わが兄弟われに對して罪を犯さば幾たび赦すべきか、七度までか』 イエス言ひたまふ『否、われ「七度まで」とは言はず「七度を七十倍するまで」と言ふなり』)

³ the First of the Seventy-First: (PENGUIN 版注:) the unpardonable sin. 上にいう限度を超えたわけ。

⁴ what Jabes ... his subject: その演題で J. B. がなにを語るのか。

⁵ Alas, for ... temper!: 'alas' はしばしば 'for' を伴い、'Alas for ...' で「ああ～の悲しさよ (など)」。ここは、「ああ、ひどいお茶を飲んだり腹を立てたりした報いがこれだ!」

⁶ since I was capable of suffering: はじめて苦しむということを知って以来。単に「物心ついて以来」でもいいと思う。

⁷ The snow ... our road: 諸例を見ると、「～に雪がどれほど積もった」というとき、前置詞には 'in' と 'on' のどちらも使われている。

⁸ flounder: to move on with clumsy or rolling gait, to struggle along with difficulty.

⁹ staff: a stick carried in the hand as an aid in walking or climbing (now chiefly literary <e.g. in reference to 'pilgrims'>). (巡礼の持つ) 杖。

¹⁰ cudgel: a short thick stick used as a weapon; a club. 棍棒。

to be so denominated¹.

For a moment I considered it absurd that I should need such a weapon to gain admittance into my own residence. Then, a new idea flashed across me. I was not going there; we were journeying to hear the famous Jabes Branderham preach from the text—‘Seventy Times Seven;’ and either Joseph, the preacher, or I had committed² the ‘First of the Seventy-First,’ and were to be publicly exposed and excommunicated³.

We came to the chapel—I have passed it really in my walks, twice or thrice: it lies in a hollow, between two hills—an elevated hollow⁴—near a swamp, whose peaty moisture⁵ is said to answer all the purposes of embalming⁶ on the few corpses deposited there. The roof has been kept whole hitherto, but, as the clergyman's stipend⁷ is only twenty pounds per annum, and a house with two rooms, threatening speedily to determine into one⁸, no clergyman will undertake the duties of pastor⁹, especially as it is currently reported that his flock¹⁰ would rather let him starve than increase the living by one penny from their own pockets. However, in my dream, Jabes had a full and attentive congregation: and he preached—good God—what a sermon! divided into *four hundred and ninety* parts—each fully equal to an ordinary address from the pulpit—and each discussing a separate sin! Where he searched for them, I cannot tell; he had his private manner of interpreting the phrase, and it seemed necessary the brother should sin different sins on every occasion.

They were of the most curious character—odd transgressions¹¹ that I never imagined previously.

¹ denominate: to give a name or appellation to; to call by a name, to name.

² commit: to do (something wrong or reprehensible); to perpetrate (a crime, offence, etc.).

³ excommunicate: (Eccl.) to cut off from communion; to exclude, by an authoritative sentence, from participation in the sacraments and services of the church, or from religious rites in general. 破門する。

⁴ an elevated hollow: つまり二つの丘にはさまれた、近くの湿地 (swamp) より高い位置にある窪地 (hollow)。「elevated」(持ち上げられた)とあるから、隆起したのだろう。

⁵ peaty moisture: moisture abounding in peat. ピートをたっぷり含んだ水。ここでは ‘moisture’ は「湿気」というより、ぶよぶよした湿地からにじみ出てくる「水、水分」が適切だろう。

⁶ embalm: to treat (a dead body) so as to preserve it, as with chemicals, drugs, or balsams. 薬品類を用いて(死体を)保存するために防腐処理する。‘answer all the purposes of embalming’は、死体防腐の目的にすべて合致する、つまり「死体をしっかり防腐してくれる」。

⁷ stipend: a salary or fixed periodical payment, made (annually or at shorter intervals) to a clergyman, teacher, or public official, in requital of his services.

⁸ determine into one: determine = (arch.) to take its course, go, tend to (a particular terminus or destination). しまいには崩れてひとつになってしまう。

⁹ pastor: the minister in charge of a church or congregation, with particular reference to the spiritual care of his ‘flock’. 教会を管理する牧師。

¹⁰ flock: a congregation in relation to its pastor. 教会の牧師(羊飼)との関係から見た会衆(羊の群れ)。

¹¹ transgression: a violation of law, duty or command; sin.

Oh, how weary I grew. How I writhed, and yawned, and nodded, and revived! How I pinched, and pricked myself, and rubbed my eyes, and stood up, and sat down again, and nudged¹ Joseph to inform me if he would *ever* have done!

I was condemned to hear all out—finally, he reached the ‘*First of the Seventy-First*.’ At that crisis², a sudden inspiration descended on me; I was moved to rise and denounce³ Jabes Branderham as the sinner of the sin that no Christian need pardon.

‘Sir,’ I exclaimed, ‘sitting here within these four walls, at one stretch⁴, I have endured and forgiven the four hundred and ninety heads⁵ of your discourse. Seventy times seven times have I plucked up⁶ my hat, and been about to depart—Seventy times seven times have you preposterously⁷ forced me to resume my seat. The four hundred and ninety-first is too much. Fellow-martyrs, have at⁸ him! Drag him down, and crush him to atoms, that the place which knows him may know him no more!’⁹

‘*Thou art the Man!*’¹⁰ cried Jabes, after a solemn pause, leaning over his cushion. ‘Seventy times seven times didst thou gapingly¹¹ contort thy visage¹²— seventy times seven did I take counsel with my soul—Lo, this is human weakness; this also may be absolved¹³! The First of the Seventy-First is come. Brethren¹⁴, execute upon him the judgment written! Such honour have all His saints!’¹⁵

¹ nudge: to touch or push (one) slightly with the elbow for the purpose of attracting attention. ひじでつついて注意を引く。ここでは、「ひじをつついて、説教がいつか終わるものならそのときは知らせてくれと Joseph に頼んだ」。

² crisis: a vitally important or decisive stage in the progress of anything; a turning-point. ここでは、やっと終わったと思ったまさにそのとき。

³ denounce: to declare (a person or thing) publicly to be wicked or evil, usually implying the expression of righteous indignation; to bring a public accusation against.

⁴ at one stretch: without intermission, continuously (during the time specified or implied).

⁵ head: one of the chief points of a discourse; the section of it pertaining to any such point; hence, a point, topic; a main division, section, chapter of a writing. (講演・論説などの) 題目。

⁶ pluck up: pick up; snatch up. 取り上げる、(ひったくるように) 取る。

⁷ preposterously: unnaturally, irrationally; perversely; absurdly. 理不尽にも。

⁸ have at: to go at or get at, esp. in a hostile way.

⁹ the place ... no more: [Job 7:10] He shall return no more to his house, neither shall his place know him any more. (彼は再びその家に歸らず 彼の郷里も最早かれを認めじ)

¹⁰ Thou art the Man!: [2 Samuel 12:7] And Nathan said to David Thou *art* the man. ナタン、ダビデにいひけるは汝は其人なり。

¹¹ gapingly: with the mouth wide open.

¹² contort thy visage: distort your face.

¹³ absolve: [əbsoʻlv, əbzɔʻlv] to remit, give absolution for (a sin or crime). 罪を赦す。

¹⁴ brethren: [bréðrɪn] special pl. of ‘brother’. ここでは ‘fellow members of the Church’.

¹⁵ execute upon ... His saints: [Psalms 149:9] To execute upon them the judgement written: this honour have all his saints. (録したる審判をかれらに行ふべきためなり 斯るほまれはそのもろもろの聖徒にあり)

With that concluding word, the whole assembly, exalting their pilgrim's staves¹, rushed round me in a body, and I, having no weapon to raise in self-defence, commenced grappling with² Joseph, my nearest and most ferocious assailant, for his³. In the confluence⁴ of the multitude, several clubs crossed; blows, aimed at me, fell on other sconces⁵. Presently the whole chapel resounded⁶ with rappings⁷ and counter-rappings. Every man's hand was against his neighbour⁸; and Branderham, unwilling to remain idle, poured forth his zeal in a shower of loud taps on the boards of the pulpit⁹, which responded so smartly that, at last, to my unspeakable relief, they woke me.

And what was it that had suggested the tremendous tumult, what had played Jabes' part in the row? Merely, the branch of a fir-tree that touched my lattice¹⁰, as the blast wailed by, and rattled its dry cones against the panes!

I listened doubtingly an instant; detected the disturber, then turned and dozed, and dreamt again; if possible¹¹, still more disagreeably than before.

This time, I remembered I was lying in the oak closet, and I heard distinctly the gusty wind, and the driving of the snow; I heard, also, the fir-bough repeat its teasing sound, and ascribed it to the right cause¹²; but it annoyed me so much, that I resolved to silence it, if possible; and, I thought, I rose and endeavoured to unhasp the casement¹³. The hook was

¹ exalting their pilgrim's staves: 巡礼の杖をふりかざし (stave = staff)。

² grapple with: to grip as in wrestling; to seize with hands and arms; to close with bodily. 取っ組み合う。

³ for his: for his weapon (=cudgel). Joseph の棍棒を取ろうと。

⁴ confluence: the running or flocking together of persons; the act of crowding to a place.

⁵ sconces = heads.

⁶ resound: (of places) to ring or re-echo *with* some sound. ~の音が (わんわんと) 鳴り響く。

⁷ rapping: the action of striking or knocking sharply.

⁸ every man's ... neighbour: [Genesis 16:12] And he will be a wild man; his hand *will* be against every man, and every man's hand against him; and he shall dwell in the presence of all his brethren. (彼は野驢馬の如き人とならん其手は諸の人に敵し諸の人の手はこれに敵すべし彼は其諸の兄弟の東に住んと)

⁹ pulpit: a raised structure consisting of an enclosed platform, usually supplied with a desk, seat, and other accessories, from which the preacher in a church or chapel delivers the sermon. 説教壇。

¹⁰ my lattice: 自分の寝台に隣接する格子窓。'oak box' はたしかに窓際に置かれていた (p. 27 注 3 参照)。細かい点だが、このあとの場面の恐怖がじかに伝わる巧みな設定である。

¹¹ if possible: if it be (or were) possible, if it can (or could) be. ここは (まさかの事態になり) とんでもないことに、あろうことか。ただし、次の文中の 'if possible' は「できれば」。

¹² ascribed it to the right cause: (さきほどは夢の中で聞き違えた) 音の出どころはちゃんとわかっていて。

¹³ casement: a frame or sash forming a window or part of a window, opening on hinges attached to the upright side of the frame in which it is fixed. 蝶番で開閉する窓の窓枠。 (p. 293 注 2 参照)

soldered into the staple¹, a circumstance² observed by me, when awake, but forgotten.

‘I must stop it, nevertheless!’ I muttered, knocking my knuckles through the glass, and stretching an arm out to seize the importunate³ branch: instead of which, my fingers closed⁴ on the fingers of a little, ice-cold hand!

The intense horror of nightmare came over me; I tried to draw back my arm, but, the hand clung to it, and a most melancholy voice sobbed,

‘Let me in—let me in!’

‘Who are you?’ I asked, struggling, meanwhile, to disengage myself.

‘Catherine Linton,’ it replied, shiveringly (why did I think of *Linton*? I had read *Earnshaw* twenty times for Linton⁵). ‘I’m come home, I’d lost my way on the moor!’

As it spoke, I discerned, obscurely, a child’s face looking through the window—Terror made me cruel; and, finding it useless to attempt shaking the creature off, I pulled its wrist on to the broken pane, and rubbed it to and fro till the blood ran down and soaked the bed-clothes: still it wailed⁶, ‘Let me in!’ and maintained its tenacious⁷ gripe, almost maddening me with fear.

‘How can I?’ I said at length. ‘Let *me* go⁸, if you want me to let you in!’

The fingers relaxed, I snatched mine through the hole, hurriedly piled the books up in a pyramid against it, and stopped my ears to exclude the lamentable⁹ prayer.

I seemed to keep them closed above a quarter of an hour, yet, the instant I listened

¹ was soldered into the staple: 股釘 (staple) にハンダづけされていた。

² circumstance: an accessory matter, a matter appertaining, relative, or subordinate; a particular, a detail. 可算名詞。ここは、「細かい点ながら）そのことは起きているときに見て知っていたのだが、忘れてしまったのだ」。

³ importunate: persistent or pressing in solicitation; pertinacious. しつこい。

⁴ close: to tighten fingers in a grasping motion (*on*). 握る、つかむ。

⁵ twenty times for Linton: Linton の何倍も。‘twenty’ は、ここでは正確に二十というより、漠然と多数を表し、‘for’ はひとつにつきいくらなど対応関係を示す。

⁶ wail: to utter persistent and bitter lamentations or complaints; (with clause or quoted words) to say lamentingly. (〜と) 悲しげに訴える。

⁷ tenacious: holding fast or inclined to hold fast; grasping hard; clinging tightly. しっかり握った、しがみついた。

⁸ Let me go.: 放してくれ。

⁹ lamentable: that is to be lamented; such as to call for lamentation, sorrow, or grief; pitiable, deplorable.

again, there was the doleful¹ cry moaning² on!

‘Begone!’ I shouted, ‘I’ll never let you in, not if you beg for twenty years.’

‘It’s twenty years,’ mourned the voice, ‘twenty years. I’ve been a waif³ for twenty years!’

Thereat⁴ began a feeble scratching outside, and the pile of books moved as if thrust forward.

I tried to jump up; but, could not stir a limb; and so yelled aloud, in a frenzy of fright.

To my confusion⁵, I discovered the yell was not ideal⁶. Hasty footsteps approached my chamber door: somebody pushed it open, with a vigorous hand, and a light glimmered through the squares at the top of the bed. I sat shuddering yet⁷, and wiping the perspiration from my forehead: the intruder appeared to hesitate and muttered to himself.

At last, he said in a half-whisper, plainly not expecting an answer,

‘Is any one here?’

I considered it best to confess my presence, for I knew Heathcliff’s accents⁸, and feared he might search further if I kept quiet.

With this intention, I turned and opened the panels—I shall not soon forget the effect my action produced.

Heathcliff stood near the entrance, in his shirt and trousers; with a candle dripping over his fingers, and his face as white as the wall behind him. The first creak⁹ of the oak

¹ doleful: expressing grief, mourning, or suffering.

² moan: to make a low mournful sound indicative of physical or mental suffering. つづく ‘on’ は継続を表す (continuously)。

³ waif: a person who is without home or friends; one who lives uncared for or without guidance.

⁴ thereat: at that time. (p. 422 注 6 参照)

⁵ to my confusion: 困ったことに、あわてたことに。to: indicating result, effect, or consequence: so as to produce, cause, or result in. (結果を表す ‘to’ について詳しくは p. 423 注 6 参照)

⁶ ideal: (PENGUIN 版注 :) imaginary.

⁷ sat shuddering yet: まだそのままだがた震えていた。(p. 10 注 3 参照)

⁸ accent: (often in pl.) the unique speech patterns, inflections, choice of words, etc., that identify a particular individual. (*RH 2nd*) (聞けば誰とわかる特有の) いい方、口調、ことばづかい。

⁹ creak: a strident noise, as of an ungreased hinge, new boots, etc.; a harsh squeak. ギー (キー) としる音。

startled him like an electric shock: the light leaped¹ from his hold to a distance of some feet, and his agitation was so extreme, that he could hardly pick it up.

‘It is only your guest, sir,’ I called out, desirous to spare² him the humiliation of exposing his cowardice further. ‘I had the misfortune to scream in my sleep, owing to a frightful nightmare. I’m sorry I disturbed you.’

‘Oh, God confound you³, Mr Lockwood! I wish you were at the—’ commenced my host, setting the candle on a chair, because he found it impossible to hold it steady.

‘And who showed you up into this room?’ he continued, crushing his nails into his palms, and grinding his teeth to subdue the maxillary⁴ convulsions. ‘Who was it? I’ve a good mind⁵ to turn them out of the house this moment!’

‘It was your servant Zillah,’ I replied, flinging myself on to the floor, and rapidly resuming my garments. ‘I should not care if you did, Mr Heathcliff; she richly deserves it. I suppose that she wanted to get another proof that the place was haunted, at my expense⁶—Well, it is—swarming with ghosts and goblins! You have reason in shutting it up, I assure you. No one will thank you for a doze in such a den!’

‘What do you mean?’ asked Heathcliff, ‘and what are you doing? Lie down and finish out the night, since you *are* here; but, for Heaven’s sake! don’t repeat that horrid noise—Nothing could excuse it, unless you were having your throat cut!’

‘If the little fiend⁷ had got in at the window, she probably would have strangled me!’ I returned. ‘I’m not going to endure the persecutions⁸ of your hospitable ancestors again—Was not the Reverend Jabes Branderham akin to you on the mother’s side? And that minx⁹, Catherine Linton, or Earnshaw, or however she was called—she must have been a

¹ leap: to rise with a bound from a sitting or recumbent position. ここでは、蠟燭が跳ね上がる。

² spare: to save from strain, discomfort, embarrassment, or the like. ここは、それ以上臆病ぶりをさらして彼が恥をかかぬようにすること。

³ God confound you: = God damn you. このあとの ‘at the—’ は、たとえば ‘at the hell’s gate’ などというつもりだったのだろう。

⁴ maxillary: of the upper jaw.

⁵ have a good mind: to be strongly disposed or inclined (to do something which one can do if one wishes), to have nearly made up one’s mind (to do it). ここでは、すぐにも叩き出してくれよう。なお ‘have half a mind’ も ‘half’ とはあるが同じ意味。

⁶ at a person’s expense: so that he suffers consequent loss, injury, or diminution. 人を犠牲（ダシ）にして、ひどい目にあわせて。（p. 10 注 7 参照）

⁷ fiend: an evil spirit generally; a demon, devil, or diabolical being; more fully *fiend of hell*.

⁸ persecution: persistent or continued injury or annoyance from any source. 執拗に悩まされること。

⁹ minx: (now often merely playful) a pert girl, hussy. おてんば（でしゃばり）娘。

changeling¹—wicked little soul! She told me she had been walking the earth these twenty years: a just punishment for her mortal² transgressions³, I've no doubt!

Scarcely were these words uttered, when I recollected the association⁴ of Heathcliff's with Catherine's name in the book, which had completely slipped from my memory till thus awakened. I blushed at my inconsideration; but without showing further consciousness of the offence⁵, I hastened to add,

'The truth is, sir, I passed the first part of the night in—' Here I stopped afresh⁶—I was about to say 'perusing⁷ those old volumes,' then it would have revealed my knowledge of their written, as well as their printed contents; so, correcting myself, I went on,

'In spelling⁸ over the name scratched on that window-ledge. A monotonous occupation, calculated⁹ to set me asleep, like counting, or—'

'What *can* you mean by talking in this way to *me*?' thundered Heathcliff with savage vehemence. 'How—how *dare* you, under my roof—God! he's mad to speak so!' And he struck his forehead with rage.

I did not know whether to resent¹⁰ this language¹¹, or pursue¹² my explanation; but he seemed so powerfully affected that I took pity and proceeded with my dreams; affirming I had never heard the appellation¹³ of 'Catherine Linton' before, but, reading it often over produced an impression which personified¹⁴ itself when I had no longer my imagination

¹ changeling: a child (usually stupid or ugly) supposed to have been left by fairies in exchange for one stolen. 妖精が子どもをさらったときに代わりに置いていった取り替え子。

² mortal: (of sin) entailing spiritual death; deadly.

³ transgression: a violation of law, duty, or command; disobedience, trespass, sin.

⁴ association: connexion or combination. 結びつき、関係。

⁵ offence: the act or fact of offending, wounding the feelings of, or displeasing another.

⁶ afresh: anew; once more; again.

⁷ peruse: to read through or over; to read thoroughly or carefully; hence (loosely) to read. (p. 207 注 1 参照)

⁸ spell: to read letter by letter (*out or over*).

⁹ calculate: (now only in pass.) to arrange, design, prepare, adjust, adapt, or fit for a purpose (*for, to do*). (受動態で) ~という目的にあてる、計画する (など)。ここでは、眠れるのではないかと思ってそんな単調なことをしたのです。

¹⁰ resent: to show that one is displeased or angry at (some wrong, injury, etc. sustained). ~に対して不快・怒りをあらわにする、腹を立てる。

¹¹ language: the form of words in which a person expresses himself; manner or style of expression. 口のききよう、もののいいよう。

¹² pursue: to follow up, carry on further, proceed with, continue (a course of action, etc. begun). いったん始めたことをつづける。

¹³ appellation: a name.

¹⁴ personify: to make or turn into a person; to give a human form or nature to. 'personified itself' 人の姿となって現れた。

under control.

Heathcliff gradually fell back into the shelter of the bed, as I spoke, finally, sitting down almost concealed behind it. I guessed, however, by his irregular and intercepted¹ breathing, that he struggled to vanquish² an excess of violent emotion.

Not liking to show him that I had heard the conflict, I continued my toilette³ rather noisily, looked at my watch, and soliloquised⁴ on the length of the night:

‘Not three o’clock yet! I could have taken oath⁵ it had been six—time stagnates⁶ here—we must surely have retired to rest at eight!’

‘Always at nine in winter, and always rise at four,’ said my host, suppressing a groan⁷; and, as I fancied, by the motion of his shadow’s arm, dashing⁸ a tear from his eyes.

‘Mr Lockwood,’ he added, ‘you may go into my room; you’ll only be in the way⁹, coming down stairs so early: and your childish outcry has sent sleep to the devil for me.’

‘And for me too,’ I replied. ‘I’ll walk in the yard till daylight, and then I’ll be off; and you need not dread a repetition of my intrusion. I’m now quite cured¹⁰ of seeking pleasure in society, be it country or town. A sensible¹¹ man ought to find sufficient company in himself.’

‘Delightful company!’ muttered Heathcliff. ‘Take the candle, and go where you please. I shall join you directly. Keep out of the yard, though, the dogs are unchained; and the

¹ intercepted: caught or stopped by the way, cut off, etc. ここでは、あえぐような。

² vanquish: to overcome, subdue, suppress, or put an end to (a feeling, state of things, etc.).

³ toilette = toilet: the action or process of dressing, or, more recently, of washing and grooming. 身支度。

⁴ soliloquise (= soliloquize): to talk to oneself. (p. 3 注 13 参照)

⁵ take (an) oath: to utter, or bind oneself by, an oath; to swear. *oath*: a solemn or formal appeal to God (or to a deity or something held in reverence or regard), in witness of the truth of a statement.

⁶ stagnate: to be or become stagnant; to cease to flow, to stand without motion or current.

⁷ groan: a low vocal murmur, emitted involuntarily under pressure of pain or distress. うなり (うめき) 声。

⁸ dash: to knock, drive, throw, or thrust (*away, down, out*, etc.) with a violent stroke or collision.

⁹ in the way: in such a position, or of such a nature, as to obstruct, impede, or be an annoyance.

¹⁰ cure: to heal, restore to health (a sick person *of* a disease). ここでは比喩的に、人と交際して楽しみを得ようなどという (まちがった) 考えはきれいさっぱりなくなりました。

¹¹ sensible: endowed with good sense; intelligent, reasonable, judicious. 分別のある、もののわかる。

house¹—Juno mounts² sentinel there—and—nay, you can only ramble about the steps and passages—but, away with you! I'll come in two minutes.'

I obeyed, so far as to quit the chamber; when, ignorant where the narrow lobbies led, I stood still, and was witness, involuntarily, to a piece of superstition³ on the part of my landlord, which belied⁴, oddly, his apparent sense.

He got on to the bed, and wrenched⁵ open the lattice, bursting, as he pulled at it, into an uncontrollable passion of tears.

'Come in! come in!' he sobbed. 'Cathy, do come. Oh do—*once* more! Oh! my heart's darling, hear me *this* time—Catherine, at last!'⁶

The spectre showed a spectre's ordinary caprice⁷; it gave no sign of being; but the snow and wind whirled wildly through, even reaching my station, and blowing out the light.

There was such anguish⁸ in the gush⁹ of grief that accompanied this raving¹⁰, that my compassion¹¹ made me overlook its folly, and I drew off, half angry to have listened at all¹², and vexed at having related my ridiculous nightmare, since it produced that agony; though

¹ the house: the family sitting-room. (p. 4 注 16 参照)

² mount: to set up or post for the purpose of defence or observation. 'mount sentinel' は、ここでは「番犬をしている」。

³ a piece of superstition: 迷信じみた行為。

⁴ belie: to show to be false, prove false or mistaken; to contradict. 'belied, oddly, his apparent sense' 正気そうなみかけとは妙にかみあわなかった。

⁵ wrench: to pull or draw with a wrench or twist; to force, turn, etc., by a twisting movement.

⁶ at last: in the end, finally. (ずいぶん待ったが) 今度こそは。

⁷ caprice: [kəprɪs] a tendency to change one's mind apparent or adequate motive. むら気。

⁸ anguish: severe mental suffering, excruciating or oppressive grief or distress.

⁹ gush: (of feeling and its expression, of action, condition, etc.) a sudden and violent outbreak; a 'burst'.

¹⁰ raving: wild or delirious talk or declamation.

¹¹ compassion: the feeling or emotion, when a person is moved by the suffering or distress of another, and by the desire to relieve it.

¹² at all: in every way, in any way. ふつう 'not ... at all = not ... in any way' (いかなる点でも、まったく～ない) と否定文中で使われるが、昔は肯定文中でのみ 'in every way; altogether, wholly' (すべての点で、まったく) の意味で使われていた (1550 年代の例文: They were careless at all. まったく不注意だった—*OED*)。肯定文の場合はわかりにくい、齋藤秀三郎『英和中辞典』は「此の熟語は疑問、打消にのみ用ふ、条件も疑問の一種、如何なる場合も “not at all” に直して譯す」として、いくつかの例文を挙げている。「Do you know it **at all**? (= or **not at all**?) 君は一體知つて居るのか (それとも全然知らないのぢやないか)。If you do it **at all**, do it well. (= If you **do not** do it well, **do not** do it **at all**.) 苟もする位なら良くせよ (良くせぬなら全然よせ)。I am glad to have passed **at all**. (假令末席でも) 兎に角及第して宜かつた (には— “I did **not** expect to pass **at all**” の意味籠る)」本文の場合は、もっともわかりにくい最後の例 (つまり、まったく予想外のこと (この例文では、まさか及第しようとは意外の幸い) に該当する。「まさか～とは (思わなかったのに)」と解すれば意味の通ることが多い。

why was beyond my comprehension¹.

I descended cautiously to the lower regions and landed² in the back-kitchen, where a gleam of fire, raked compactly together, enabled me to rekindle my candle.

Nothing was stirring except a brindled³, gray cat, which crept from the ashes, and saluted me with a querulous⁴ mew.

Two benches, shaped in sections of a circle⁵, nearly enclosed the hearth; on one of these I stretched myself, and Grimalkin⁶ mounted the other. We were both of us nodding, ere any one invaded our retreat; and then it was Joseph, shuffling⁷ down a wooden ladder that vanished⁸ in the roof, through a trap, the ascent to his garret, I suppose.

He cast a sinister look at the little flame which I had enticed⁹ to play between the ribs¹⁰, swept the cat from its elevation, and bestowing himself in the vacancy, commenced the operation of stuffing a three-inch pipe with tobacco; my presence in his sanctum¹¹ was evidently esteemed a piece of impudence¹² too shameful for remark. He silently applied the tube to his lips, folded his arms, and puffed away.

I let him enjoy the luxury unannoyed; and after sucking out his last wreath, and heaving a profound sigh, he got up, and departed as solemnly as he came.

A more elastic¹³ footstep entered next, and now I opened my mouth for a 'good-morning,' but closed it again, the salutation unachieved; for Hareton Earnshaw was

¹ comprehension: power of receiving and containing ideas, mental grasp. 理解力。

² land: (lit. and fig.) to arrive at a place, a stage in a journey, or the like.

³ brindled: [brínd(ə)ld] streaked, tabby, marked with streaks.

⁴ querulous: (of animals) uttering sounds expressive or suggestive of complaint.

⁵ two benches ... a circle: 扇面形のベンチがふたつ。暖炉を囲むように置かれていたというのだから、四等分したバウムクーヘンを二つ並べたかたちだろう。

⁶ Grimalkin: [grimælkín, -mó:lkin] a name given to a cat; hence, a cat, esp. an old she-cat. [Macbeth I. i. 9] I come, Gray-Malkin! ([here] used as the name of a fiend—*OED*)

⁷ shuffle: to move the feet along the ground without lifting them, so as to make a scraping noise; to walk with such a motion of the feet; to go with clumsy steps or a shambling gait. 足を引きずって歩く、おぼつかぬ足取りで歩く。

⁸ vanish: to disappear from sight, to become invisible, esp. in a rapid and mysterious manner. (忽然と) 消える、見えなくなる。

⁹ entice: to allure. 古くは 'to stir up' の意味で、ここではそれに近い。

¹⁰ rib: a bar of a grate or the like.

¹¹ sanctum: the 'holy place' of the Jewish tabernacle and temple; also applied to a sacred place or shrine in other temples and churches. ここでは比喩的に「神聖な場所」。

¹² impudence: shameless effrontery; insolent disrespect, insolence; unabashed presumption. ここでは 'sanctum' に対する無礼だから「冒瀆」。

¹³ elastic: springy. (足取りが) 軽快な。

performing his orisons¹, *sotto voce*², in a series of curses directed against every object he touched, while he rummaged³ a corner for a spade or shovel to dig through the drifts⁴. He glanced over the back of the bench, dilating⁵ his nostrils, and thought as little of exchanging civilities with me as with my companion, the cat.

I guessed by his preparations that egress⁶ was allowed, and leaving my hard couch, made a movement to follow him. He noticed this, and thrust at an inner door with the end of his spade, intimating⁷ by an inarticulate sound, that there was the place where I must go, if I changed my locality⁸.

It opened into the house⁹, where the females were already astir¹⁰. Zillah urging¹¹ flakes of flame up the chimney with a colossal¹² bellows; and Mrs Heathcliff, kneeling on the hearth, reading a book by the aid of the blaze.

She held her hand interposed between the furnace-heat and her eyes, and seemed absorbed in her occupation: desisting¹³ from it only to chide¹⁴ the servant for covering¹⁵ her with sparks, or to push away a dog, now and then, that snoozled¹⁶ its nose over-forwardly into her face.

I was surprised to see Heathcliff there also. He stood by the fire, his back towards me,

¹ orison: [ɒˈrɪz(ə)n] (arch., chiefly in pl.) a prayer.

² sotto voce: [ˈsotto ˈvotʃe] in a subdued or low voice.

³ rummage: to search thoroughly or actively through (a place, receptacle, etc.), esp. by moving around, turning over, or looking through contents. 引っかけ回して探す。

⁴ drift: an accumulation of snow driven together by the wind. 吹きだまり。

⁵ dilate: to make wider or larger; to increase the width of, widen; to expand, amplify, enlarge.

⁶ egress: a going out, or issuing forth, from an enclosed or confined place; the right or liberty of going out.

⁷ intimate: to make known or communicate by any means however indirect; hence, to signify, indicate; to imply, to suggest, to hint at. (間接的であれなんであれとにかく) わからせる、伝える。

⁸ there was ... my locality: 'You must go to the house, if you (want to) change your locality.' とてもいったのが、'the house (= sitting room)' の部分がよく聞き取れなかったのだろう。なお「主節の動詞が過去形である従属節では *must* を(時制の一致による)過去形として用いてよい」(ランダムハウス英和第2版)。一例を挙げると、[直接話法] She said, 'You **must** see *Othello*; it's marvellous.' [間接話法] She said that I **must** see *Othello* because it was marvellous. 「ぜひ『オセロ』を見なさい。すばらしいわ」と彼女が言った。(研究社『実例英文法』)

⁹ the house: the family sitting-room. (See p. 4.) しつこいようだが、この作品では「家」を意味することもあれば、こちらの意味で使われることもあるので注意。

¹⁰ astir: out of bed, up and moving about.

¹¹ urge: to stimulate to expression or action; to increase or intensify.

¹² colossal: of vast size, gigantic, huge.

¹³ desist: to cease (*from* some action or procedure); to stop, leave off, give over, forbear.

¹⁴ chide: (now chiefly literary, and somewhat archaic) reprove, rebuke.

¹⁵ cover: to overspread with something which marks or occupies the whole surface; to strew *with*. ~を何々まみれにする, ~に何々をまき散らす。

¹⁶ snooze: (colloq. or dial.) to thrust affectionately.

just finishing a stormy scene to poor Zillah, who ever and anon¹ interrupted her labour to pluck up the corner of her apron, and heave² an indignant³ groan.

‘And you, you worthless —’ he broke out as I entered, turning to his daughter-in-law, and employing an epithet⁴ as harmless as duck, or sheep, but generally represented by a dash⁵.

‘There you are at your idle tricks⁶ again! The rest of them do earn their bread—you live on my charity! Put your trash away, and find something to do. You shall pay me for⁷ the plague of having you eternally in my sight—do you hear, damnable jade⁸?’

‘I’ll put my trash away, because you can make me, if I refuse,’ answered the young lady, closing her book, and throwing it on a chair. ‘But I’ll not do anything, though you should swear your tongue out⁹, except what I please!’

Heathcliff lifted his hand, and the speaker sprang to a safer distance, obviously acquainted with its weight.

Having no desire to be entertained by a cat-and-dog combat, I stepped forward briskly, as if eager to partake¹⁰ the warmth of the hearth, and innocent of¹¹ any knowledge of the interrupted dispute¹². Each had enough decorum¹³ to suspend¹ further hostilities:

¹ ever and anon: every now and then.

² heave: to utter (a groan, sigh, or sob; rarely, words) with effort, or with a deep breath which causes the chest to heave; to ‘fetch’. (つらそうに、または深く息をついては胸をふくらませ) うめく、溜息をつく、または泣きじゃくる。

³ indignant: provoked to wrath by something regarded as unworthy, unjust, or ungrateful. (不当な扱いに) 憤慨した。

⁴ epithet: an adjective indicating some quality or attribute which the speaker or writer regards as characteristic of the person or thing described; an offensive or derogatory expression used of a person. つまり ‘worthless bitch’ とでもいったのだろう。

⁵ represented by a dash: たとえば devil を d-l、damn を d-n のように。

⁶ trick: a particular habit, way, or mode of acting; a characteristic quality, trait, practice, or custom. (Usually, a bad or unpleasant habit.) ‘at your idle tricks again’ は、また (例によって) 怠けおって、ほどの意味。at: with action in or with which one is engaged. (～に従事して)

⁷ You shall pay me for ...: ～していると、こらしめてやるからな。

⁸ jade: a term of reprobation applied to a woman. 性悪女、など。

⁹ swear your tongue out: しまいには舌が動かなくなるまでのしる。out: to an end, and so either to completion or to exhaustion.

¹⁰ partake: to take a part in, to share in. ～を共にする。

¹¹ innocent of: (colloq.) free from; devoid of. ‘innocent of any knowledge of ...’ ～などちっとも知らぬ。

¹² dispute: an argumentative contention or debate, a controversy.

¹³ decorum: [dikó:rəm] (arch.) that which is proper to the circumstances or requirements of the case: seemliness, propriety, fitness; decency. ‘had enough decorum to ...’ ～するくらいの礼儀はわきまえていた。

Heathcliff placed his fists, out of temptation, in his pockets: Mrs Heathcliff curled her lip², and walked to a seat far off, where she kept her word by playing the part of a statue³ during the remainder of my stay.

That was not long. I declined joining their breakfast, and, at the first gleam of dawn, took an opportunity of⁴ escaping into the free air, now clear, and still, and cold as impalpable⁵ ice.

My landlord hallooed⁶ for me to stop ere I reached the bottom of the garden, and offered to accompany me across the moor. It was well he did, for the whole hill-back was one billowy⁷, white ocean: the swells and falls not indicating corresponding rises and depressions in the ground—many pits, at least, were filled to a level⁸; and entire ranges of mounds, the refuse⁹ of the quarries, blotted from the chart which my yesterday's walk left pictured in my mind.

I had remarked on one side of the road, at intervals of six or seven yards, a line of upright stones, continued through the whole length of the barren¹⁰: these were erected, and daubed¹¹ with lime on purpose to serve as guides in the dark, and also, when a fall¹², like the present, confounded¹³ the deep swamps on either hand with the firmer path: but, excepting a dirty dot pointing up, here and there, all traces of their existence had vanished: and my companion found it necessary to warn me frequently to steer to the right, or left, when I imagined I was following, correctly, the windings of the road.

We exchanged little conversation, and he halted at the entrance of Thrushcross Park, saying I could make no error there. Our adieux were limited to a hasty bow, and then I

¹ suspend: to desist or refrain from, esp. temporarily. (一時) やめる、控える。

² curl one's (or the) lip: to bend or raise the upper lip slightly on one side, as an expression of contempt or scorn. (軽蔑または嘲笑を示して) 唇をゆがめる。

³ playing the part of a statue: 彫像のようにじっと動かないこと。

⁴ take an opportunity of: 機会をとらえて～する。

⁵ impalpable: imperceptible to the touch; intangible. 触れても手応えのない。

⁶ halloo: to shout (something). (p. 12 注 4 参照)

⁷ billowy: full of billows (= great swelling waves).

⁸ to a level: (地面と) 同じ高さまで。 *a level*: the same level with the ground.

⁹ refuse: [réfjù:s] the leavings *of* (= what is left by) something. ここは、石切場 (quarry) の跡に残った屑石が、地面の上に積み上げられた山 (mound) 状につづいていたというのだろう。

¹⁰ barren: a tract of barren (= sterile) land.

¹¹ daub: to coat or cover (a wall or building) with a layer of plaster, mortar, clay, or the like.

¹² fall = snowfall.

¹³ confound: to mix up or mingle so that the elements become difficult to distinguish or impossible to separate. ここでは、'the deep swamps on either hand' (道の両側の深い沼地) と 'the firmer path' (足場のよい道) との区別が降り積もった雪のためにつかなくなったことをいう。

pushed forward, trusting to my own resources¹, for the porter's² lodge is untenanted as yet.

The distance from the gate to the Grange is two miles: I believe I managed³ to make it four; what with losing myself among the trees, and sinking up to the neck in snow, a predicament⁴ which only those who have experienced it can appreciate⁵. At any rate, whatever were my wanderings, the clock chimed twelve as I entered the house; and that gave exactly an hour for every mile of the usual way from Wuthering Heights.

My human fixture⁶ and her satellites⁷ rushed to welcome me; exclaiming, tumultuously⁸, they had completely given me up; everybody conjectured that I perished last night; and they were wondering how they must set about⁹ the search for my remains¹⁰.

I bid them be quiet, now that they saw me returned, and, benumbed¹¹ to my very heart, I dragged¹² upstairs, whence, after putting on dry clothes, and pacing to and fro thirty or forty minutes, to restore the animal heat, I am adjourned to my study¹³, feeble as a kitten, almost too much so to enjoy the cheerful fire and smoking coffee which the servant has prepared for my refreshment.

¹ trusting to my own resources: 自分の力を頼りに。

² porter: a gate-keeper.

³ manage: (with inf. as obj.) often ironically, to be so unskilful or unlucky as to do something. 不覚にも (不運にも) ~する。

⁴ predicament: an unpleasant, trying, or dangerous situation. (p. 26 注 4 参照)

⁵ appreciate: to estimate aright, to perceive the full force of. (～のいかなるものかが) よくわかる。

⁶ fixture: a person or thing permanently confined to or established in a particular place or position. この家に根を生やした人 (Nelly)。 (p. 11 注 4 参照)

⁷ satellite: an attendant upon a person of importance, forming part of his retinue and employed to execute his orders (often with reproachful connotation, implying subserviency or unscrupulousness in the service). (しばしばその性質に対する非難をこめて) 従者。もともとは「従者」を意味し、1611 年に Kepler が木星の衛星群に satellites というラテン語を当ててから「衛星」という意味に使われるようになった (OED)。

⁸ tumultuously: with tumult or commotion; with confusion and uproar; riotously.

⁹ set about: to begin working at, take in hand, begin upon.

¹⁰ remains: (pl.) that which is left of a person when life is extinct; the (dead) body, corpse.

¹¹ benumb: to make (any part of the body) insensible, torpid, or powerless; occas. to stupefy or stun, as by a blow or shock; but now mostly used of the effects of cold. ここでは、凍えさせる。

¹² drag: to advance or progress slowly and painfully. ここでは、やっとの思いで二階へ上がった。

¹³ I am adjourned to my study: ここは理解しにくい。現在形になっている理由もわからない。しかし別のテキストでは 'I adjourned to my study' となっており、それなら *adjourn*: vi. (familiarily) to remove the place of meeting, without the intervention of any time save that occupied by the change of place (くだけた用法として一移動に要する時間を除いてはまったく時間をおかず、つまりただちに席をほかに移す—OED); to go to another place (RH 2nd)だから、意味がすんなり通る。誤植か？

Chapter IV

What vain weather-cocks¹ we are! I, who had determined to hold myself independent of all social intercourse, and thanked my stars that, at length, I had lighted on a spot where it was next to impracticable², I, weak wretch³, after maintaining⁴ till dusk a struggle with low spirits, and solitude, was finally compelled to strike my colours⁵, and, under pretence of gaining information concerning the necessities of my establishment, I desired Mrs Dean, when she brought in supper, to sit down while I ate it, hoping sincerely she would prove a regular gossip⁶, and either rouse me to animation or lull⁷ me to sleep by her talk.

‘You have lived here a considerable time,’ I commenced; ‘did you not say sixteen years?’

‘Eighteen, sir; I came, when the mistress was married, to wait on⁸ her; after she died, the master retained me for his housekeeper.’

‘Indeed.’

There ensued a pause. She was not a gossip, I feared, unless about her own affairs, and those could hardly interest me.

However, having studied⁹ for an interval, with a fist on either knee, and a cloud of meditation over her ruddy countenance, she ejaculated¹⁰ —

‘Ah, times are greatly changed since then!’

¹ weather(-)cock: a vane in the form of a cock, which turns with its head to the wind; (of persons) esp. one who is changeable or inconstant. (比喩的にも) 風見鶏。

² impracticable: not practicable; that cannot be carried out, effected, accomplished, or done; practically impossible.

³ wretch: one who is sunk in deep distress, sorrow, misfortune, or poverty; a miserable, unhappy, or unfortunate person; a poor or hapless being. (p. 23 注 3 参照。以後頻出する)

⁴ maintain: to carry on, keep up, prosecute (a war, fight, siege, contest); .

⁵ strike one's colours: to haul down a flag, esp. as a salute or as a sign of surrender. 旗を降ろして降参する。

⁶ gossip: a person, mostly a woman, of light and trifling character, esp. one who delights in idle talk; a newsmonger, a tattler.

⁷ lull: to induce to sleep or to pleasing quiescence.

⁸ wait on: to attend as or in the manner of a servant to the personal requirements of.

⁹ study: (now dial. and U.S. colloq.) to think intently; to meditate (about, on, upon, in); to reflect, try to recollect something or to come to a decision.

¹⁰ ejaculate: to utter suddenly (a short prayer; now in wider sense, any brief expression of emotion). (p. 21 注 10 参照)

‘Yes,’ I remarked, ‘you’ve seen a good many alterations,¹ I suppose?’

‘I have; and troubles too,’ she said.

‘Oh, I’ll turn the talk on my landlord’s family!’ I thought to myself. ‘A good subject to start—and that pretty girl-widow, I should like to know her history; whether she be a native of the country, or, as is more probable, an exotic² that the surly indigenae³ will not recognize⁴ for kin.⁵’

With this intention I asked Mrs Dean why Heathcliff let Thrushcross Grange, and preferred living in a situation and residence so much inferior. ‘Is he not rich enough to keep the estate in good order?’ I enquired.

‘Rich, sir!’ she returned. ‘He has, nobody knows what money, and every year it increases. Yes, yes, he’s rich enough to live in a finer house than this. But he’s very near⁶—close-handed⁷; and if he had meant to flit⁸ to Thrushcross Grange, as soon as he heard of a good tenant, he could not have borne⁹ to miss the chance of getting a few hundreds more. It is strange people should be so greedy, when they are alone in the world!’

‘He had a son, it seems?’

‘Yes, he had one. He is dead.’

‘And that young lady, Mrs Heathcliff, is his widow?’

‘Yes.’

‘Where did she come from originally?’

¹ alteration: a change in the character or appearance of anything, viewed as a fact; an altered or changed condition.

² exotic: (rare) a person of foreign origin; a foreigner. ここでは、よそ者。

³ indigena: (*pl.* indigenae) a native. 土地の人。‘indigene’に同じ。

⁴ recognize: to admit to consideration, or to a status, as being something.

⁵ kin: the group of persons who are related to one; one’s kindred, kinsfolk, or relatives, collectively.

⁶ near: niggardly, stingy, mean.

⁷ close-handed = close-fisted: loathe to give, stingy, miserly.

⁸ flit: (chiefly *north.* or *Sc.*) to remove from one habitation to another, change one’s residence, ‘move’.

⁹ bear: to reconcile oneself to, put up with, tolerate.

‘Why¹, sir, she is my late² master's daughter; Catherine Linton was her maiden name. I nursed her, poor thing! I did wish Mr Heathcliff would remove³ here, and then we might have been together again.’

‘What! Catherine Linton?’ I exclaimed, astonished. But a minute's reflection convinced me it was not my ghostly Catherine. ‘Then,’ I continued, ‘my predecessor's⁴ name was Linton?’

‘It was.’

‘And who is that Earnshaw—Hareton Earnshaw, who lives with Mr Heathcliff? are they relations?’

‘No; he is the late Mrs Linton's nephew.’

‘The young lady's cousin, then?’

‘Yes; and her husband was her cousin also—one, on the mother's—the other, on the father's side—Heathcliff married Mr Linton's sister.’

‘I see the house at Wuthering Heights has 'Earnshaw' carved over the front door. Are they an old family?’

‘Very old, sir; and Hareton is the last of them, as our Miss Cathy is of us—I mean, of the Lintons. Have you been to Wuthering Heights? I beg pardon for asking; but I should like to hear how she is?’

‘Mrs Heathcliff? She looked very well, and very handsome; yet, I think, not very happy.’

‘Oh dear, I don't wonder! And how did you like the master?’

¹ Why: (used interjectionally, before a sentence or clause.) as an expression of surprise (sometimes only momentary or slight; sometimes involving protest), either in reply to a remark or question, or on perceiving something unexpected. ここでは意外なことを聞くものだという軽い驚き。「where」とおっしゃいますが、それは…」ほどの意味。

² late: (of a person:) that was alive not long ago, but is not now; recently deceased. この定義のとおり、「通例死後 20・30 年以内の人に用いる」(ランダムハウス英和第 2 版)。

³ remove: to change the place of one's (temporary or permanent) residence. ここでは「こちらへ転居する」。

⁴ predecessor: [prɪˈdisɪsə] one who has held (and ceased to hold) any office or position before the present holder; one who has preceded in the position.

‘A rough fellow, rather, Mrs Dean. Is not that his character?’

‘Rough as a saw-edge, and hard as whinstone¹. The less you meddle with him the better.’

‘He must have had some ups and downs in life to make him such a churl². Do you know anything of his history?’

‘It’s a cuckoo’s³, sir—I know all about it; except where he was born, and who were his parents, and how he got his money, at first⁴—And Hareton has been cast out⁵ like an unfledged⁶ dunno⁷—The unfortunate lad is the only one, in all this parish, that does not guess how he has been cheated!’

‘Well, Mrs Dean, it will be a charitable deed⁸ to tell me something of my neighbours—I feel I shall not rest, if I go to bed; so be good enough to sit and chat an hour.’

‘Oh, certainly, sir! I’ll just fetch a little sewing⁹, and then I’ll sit as long as you please; but you’ve caught cold, I saw you shivering, and you must have some gruel¹⁰ to drive it out.’

The worthy woman bustled¹¹ off, and I crouched¹² nearer the fire: my head felt hot, and the rest of me chill: moreover, I was excited, almost to a pitch of foolishness, through my nerves and brain. This caused me to feel, not uncomfortable, but rather fearful, as I

¹ whinstone: a name for various very hard dark-coloured rocks or stones, as greenstone, basalt, chert, or quartzose sandstone.

² churl: a countryman, peasant, rustic, boor; rude, low-bred fellow.

³ a cuckoo’s: a cuckoo’s history. カッコウがほかの鳥の巣に自分の卵を託するところから。

⁴ at first: ‘in the first place’ (そもそも) の意味では廃用とされているので、やはり ‘at the beginning, at the first stage’ (はじめは、最初のうちは)。

⁵ cast out: to throw out of one’s house, one’s keeping or preservation.

⁶ unfledged: not yet furnished or covered with feathers; callow; unfeathered; (of persons) immature, inexperienced, undeveloped in knowledge, etc.

⁷ dunno: the hedge-sparrow. イケガキスズメ。

⁸ deed: a thing done intentionally or consciously. (意識的な) 行為、行い。

⁹ sewing: [səʊ’ɪŋ] a piece of material or work to be sewn. 縫い物。

¹⁰ gruel: a light, liquid food (chiefly used as an article of diet for invalids) made by boiling oatmeal (or occas. some other farinaceous substance) in water or milk, sometimes with the addition of other ingredients, as butter, sugar, spices, onions, etc. 主に病人用の粥。

¹¹ bustle: to bestir oneself or display activity with a certain amount of noise or agitation, to be fussily active: usually implying excessive or obtrusive show of energy. ‘bustle off’ 大あわてで (張り切って、バタバタと) 出て行く。

¹² crouch: to stoop or bend low with general compression of the body, as in stooping for shelter, in fear, or in submission; to cower with the limbs bent. 身をかがめる、しゃがむ。

am still¹, of serious effects from the incidents of to-day and yesterday.

She returned presently, bringing a smoking basin and a basket of work; and, having placed the former on the hob², drew³ in her seat⁴, evidently pleased to find me so companionable.

Before I came to live here, she commenced, waiting no further invitation to her story, I was almost always at Wuthering Heights; because my mother had nursed Mr Hindley Earnshaw, that was Hareton's father, and I got used to playing with the children—I ran errands⁵ too, and helped to make hay⁶, and hung about⁷ the farm ready for anything that anybody would set⁸ me to.

One fine summer morning—it was the beginning of harvest, I remember—Mr Earnshaw, the old master, came downstairs, dressed for a journey; and after he had told Joseph what was to be done during the day, he turned to Hindley, and Cathy, and me—for I sat eating my porridge⁹ with them—and he said, speaking to his son,

‘Now, my bonny¹⁰ man, I'm going to Liverpool, to-day ... what shall I bring you? You

¹ as I am still: 昨日今日と異常な体験をしたため、心身に異状をきたすのではないかと恐れたことをいうのだろうが、‘as I am still fearful’ (今もまだ恐れているのだが) とすれば、その「今」とはいつのことだろうか? Lockwood が「そのときの気持を語っている今 (語りうる今)」とは相当の時間の隔たりがあるから、実際は「この文章を書いている作者の今」が紛れこんだものだろう。

² hob: in a fire-place, the part of the casing having a surface level with the top of the grate. 暖炉の鍋台。

³ draw: to move or make one's way towards a place, to come near, approach, to come together, to withdraw to one side (*back, down, in, near, off, on, up*). ここは椅子を引き寄せたのではなく、(いつも座っている、または座るべき) 席に着いたこと。次注下線部参照。

⁴ seat: **a.** the place on which a person is sitting, or is accustomed to sit; a place to seat one person at a table, in a public building, conveyance, etc. **b.** something adapted or used for sitting upon, as a chair, stool, sofa, etc.; also spec. a bench to seat one or more persons; a horizontal board or chair-like structure in a boat, coach, train, aeroplane, etc. もちろん椅子も含まれるのだが、「座る場所、座席」の意味 (から、そこに座る権利、地位を象徴する座席など)。【参考】*chair* は動かすことができるが、*seat* は固定されている。(ランダムハウス英和第 2 版)。

⁵ errand: a short journey on which an inferior (e.g. a servant, a child) is sent to convey a message or perform some simple business on behalf of the sender. ‘run errands’ 使いに行く、使い走りをする。(p. 31 注 3 参照)

⁶ make hay: to mow grass and dry it by spreading it about and exposing it to the sun's heat. 草を刈って天日で干す、干し草を作る。

⁷ hang about: (= hang around) to remain as unwilling to depart or move on; to loiter, linger, as with expectation or interest.

⁸ set: to put (a person) to a piece of work or a task. (人に) 仕事をあてがう。

⁹ porridge: a soft food made by stirring oatmeal (or occas. some other meal or cereal) into boiling water (or milk); in cooling, it becomes more or less congealed. 主に病人食の ‘gruel’ よりも重い粥。

¹⁰ bonny: pleasing to the sight, comely, beautiful, expressing homely beauty. Now in common use only in Scotland and north or midland counties of England; sometimes as a term of fondness or coaxing, as in ‘my bonnie bairn’. ここでは後の意味。

may choose what you like; only let it be little, for I shall walk there and back; sixty miles each way¹, that is a long spell!’

Hindley named a fiddle, and then he asked Miss Cathy. She was hardly six years old, but she could ride any horse in the stable, and she chose a whip.

He did not forget me, for he had a kind heart, though he was rather severe sometimes. He promised to bring me a pocketful of apples and pears, and then he kissed his children, said good-bye, and set off.

It seemed a long while to us all—the three days of his absence—and often did little Cathy ask when he would be home. Mrs Earnshaw expected him by supper-time, on the third evening; and she put the meal off² hour after hour; there were no signs of his coming, however, and at last the children got tired of running down to the gate to look—Then it grew dark, she would have had them to bed³, but they begged sadly to be allowed to stay up; and, just about eleven o'clock, the door-latch was raised quietly, and in stept⁴ the master. He threw himself into a chair, laughing and groaning, and bid them all stand off⁵, for he was nearly killed—he would not have such another walk for the three kingdoms.

‘And at the end of it, to be flighted⁶ to death!’ he said, opening his great-coat, which he held bundled up in his arms, ‘See here, wife; I was never so beaten⁷ with anything in my life; but you must e'en⁸ take it as a gift of God; though it's as dark almost as if it came from the devil.’

We crowded round, and, over Miss Cathy's head, I had a peep at a dirty, ragged⁹, black-haired child; big enough both to walk and talk—indeed, its face looked older than Catherine's—yet, when it was set on its feet, it only stared round, and repeated over and

¹ sixty miles each way: Mrs Earnshaw は夫の帰りを三日目の夕と予想しているから、出発日と帰着日を含めて三日間だとすれば、往復 120 マイルを歩き通したうえ、Liverpool で用事をすませたというのは疑問。

² put off: to postpone to a later time; to defer.

³ she would have had them to bed: she wished to have them go to bed.

⁴ stept: = stepped.

⁵ stand off: to remain at or retire to a distance; to draw back, go farther away.

⁶ flight: (obs. exc. dial) to put to flight, rout; hence, to frighten, scare. *OED*はこの文章を例文として収録している。

⁷ beaten: overcome by hard work, exhausted.

⁸ e'en (= even): (chiefly in colloq. form e'en; now arch. and dial.) prefixed to verbs, with vague force expressible by ‘just’, ‘nothing else but’; in early use sometimes with notion of ‘to be sure’, ‘forsooth’ (L. *scilicet*). ‘you must e'en take it as a gift of God.’ は、これぞ神様からの授かりものだと思ってくれ。

⁹ ragged: (of persons) wearing ragged clothes; dressed in rags.

over again some gibberish¹ that nobody could understand. I was frightened, and Mrs Earnshaw was ready to fling it out of doors: she did fly up²—asking how he could fashion³ to bring that gipsy brat⁴ into the house, when they had their own bairns⁵ to feed and fend for⁶? What he meant to do with it, and whether he were mad?

The master tried to explain the matter; but he was really half dead with fatigue, and all that I could make out⁷, amongst her scolding, was a tale of his seeing it starving, and houseless, and as good as⁸ dumb, in the streets of Liverpool, where he picked it up and inquired for its owner—Not a soul knew to whom it belonged, he said, and his money and time being both limited, he thought it better to take it home with him, at once, than run into⁹ vain expenses there; because he was determined he would not leave it as he found it.

Well, the conclusion was that my mistress grumbled¹⁰ herself calm; and Mr Earnshaw told me to wash it, and give it clean things¹¹, and let it sleep with the children.

Hindley and Cathy contented themselves with looking and listening till peace was restored: then both began searching their father's pockets for the presents he had promised them. The former was a boy of fourteen, but when he drew out what had been a fiddle¹², crushed to morsels in the great-coat, he blubbered¹³ aloud¹⁴, and Cathy, when she learned the master had lost her whip in attending on¹⁵ the stranger, showed her humour¹⁶ by

¹ gibberish: [dʒɪbərɪʃ, ɡɪbərɪʃ] unintelligible speech belonging to no known language, and supposed to be of arbitrary invention; inarticulate chatter, jargon.

² fly up: (prob. = fly out) to 'explode' or burst out into extravagance in conduct, language, or temper.

³ fashion: *dial.* to bring oneself, 'have the face' (to do something). よくもまあ～できたものだ。

⁴ brat: 'a child' の蔑称。'beggar's brat' など。

⁵ bairn: [bɛən] a child; a son or daughter (expressing relationship, rather than age).

⁶ fend for: look after, provide for.

⁷ make out: to find out the meaning of; to discover the drift of; to arrive at an understanding of. 'all that I could make out was a tale of ...' やっと私に飲みこめたのは～という話だった。

⁸ as good as: practically, to all intents and purposes.

⁹ run into: to involve oneself in (debt, expenses, etc.). ここでは、むだな出費をするはめになる。

¹⁰ grumble: to express or utter with mumbling, muttering, or complaining. 'grumbled herself calm' ぶつぶつ文句をいっているうちに気を静めた (あきらめた)。

¹¹ things: (pl.) articles of apparel; clothes, garments.

¹² what had been a fiddle: 'fiddle' の残骸、なれのはて。

¹³ blubber: (generally used contemptuously) to weep effusively; to weep and sob unrestrainedly and noisily.

¹⁴ aloud: (arch.) in a loud voice; with great noise; loudly. *OED* には示されていないが、現在では 'with the normal tone and volume of the speaking voice, as distinguished from whisperingly; vocally, as distinguished from mentally (*RH 2nd*)' (ふつうの話し声で、頭の中ではなく口に出して) の意味で使われるのがふつう。'to read aloud' (音読する) を「大声で読む」とするのは誤訳。【参考】古く「大声で読む」として使われる例: 1767 *FORDYCE Serm. Yng. Wom. I. vi. 252* One of the Company would often *read aloud*. (*OED*) 結局文脈と常識によって判断すべし。

¹⁵ attend on: to follow, escort, or accompany, for the purpose of rendering services.

¹⁶ humour: temporary state of mind or feeling; mood, temper.

grinning and spitting¹ at the stupid little thing, earning² for her pains a sound blow from her father to teach her cleaner manners.

They entirely refused to have it in bed with them, or even in their room, and I had no more sense³, so I put it on the landing⁴ of the stairs, hoping it might be gone on the morrow. By chance, or else attracted by hearing his voice, it crept to Mr Earnshaw's door, and there he found it on quitting his chamber. Inquiries were made as to⁵ how it got there; I was obliged to confess, and in recompense⁶ for my cowardice⁷ and inhumanity was sent out of the house.

This was Heathcliff's first introduction to the family: on coming back a few days afterwards, for I did not consider my banishment⁸ perpetual⁹, I found they had christened¹⁰ him 'Heathcliff'; it was the name of a son who died in childhood, and it has served¹¹ him ever since, both for Christian and surname.

Miss Cathy and he were now very thick¹²; but Hindley hated him, and to say the truth I did the same; and we plagued¹³ and went on¹⁴ with him shamefully, for I wasn't reasonable enough to feel my injustice, and the mistress never put in a word on his behalf¹⁵ when she saw him wronged¹⁶.

He seemed a sullen, patient child; hardened, perhaps, to¹⁷ ill-treatment: he would

¹ spit: to eject saliva (at or on a person or thing) as a means of expressing hatred or contempt (usually with preps., as *against*, *at*, *in*, *on*, etc.)

² earn: to obtain as a recompense. ここでは皮肉に、'her pains' (歯をむいて見せたり、つばを吐きかけたりした「骨折り」) に対する報いとして 'a sound blow' (きつい拳固) を食らった。

³ sense: natural understanding, intelligence, esp. as bearing on action or behaviour; practical soundness of judgement. いわゆる 'common sense' の 'sense' がこれ。

⁴ landing: a platform in which a flight of stairs terminates; a resting-place between two flights of stairs. 階段の踊り場。

⁵ as to: with respect or reference to.

⁶ recompense: atonement or satisfaction for some misdeed or offence. 償い。

⁷ cowardice: [káuədɪs] the quality of a coward; cowardliness; want of courage to face danger; faint-heartedness, pusillanimity. 臆病、卑怯。

⁸ banishment: the action of peremptorily sending away; a state of enforced absence; dismissal.

⁹ perpetual: lasting or destined to last for ever; eternal, unceasing; permanent (during life).

¹⁰ christen: [krís(ə)n] to give a name to (a person) at baptism

¹¹ serve: to be of use to (a person or thing) in the way specified (*as, for, instead of*). 誰々に何々としての用をなす、役に立つ。ここでは 'for Christian and surname' (洗礼名兼姓として)。

¹² thick: close in confidence and association; intimate, familiar.

¹³ plague: (chiefly colloq.) to 'torment', trouble, vex, tease, bother, annoy.

¹⁴ go on: to conduct oneself, act, behave (in some reprehensible manner).

¹⁵ on his behalf: (= in his behalf, on [*or in*] behalf of him) in the interest of him, as a friend or defender of him.

¹⁶ wrong: to do wrong or injury to (a person); to treat with injustice, prejudice, or harshness.

¹⁷ hardened to: ～には無感覚 (慣れっこ) になっている。 *harden*: to make callous or unfeeling.

stand¹ Hindley's blows without winking or shedding a tear, and my pinches moved him only to draw in a breath, and open his eyes as if he had hurt himself by accident, and nobody was to blame.

This endurance made old Earnshaw furious when he discovered his son persecuting² the poor, fatherless child, as he called him. He took to³ Heathcliff strangely, believing all he said (for that matter⁴, he said precious⁵ little, and generally the truth), and petting him up far above Cathy, who was too mischievous⁶ and wayward⁷ for a favourite.

So, from the very beginning, he bred⁸ bad feeling in the house; and at Mrs Earnshaw's death, which happened in less than two years after, the young master had learned to regard his father as an oppressor rather than a friend, and Heathcliff as a usurper⁹ of his parent's affections, and his privileges, and he grew bitter with brooding¹⁰ over these injuries.

I sympathized awhile, but, when the children fell ill of the measles and I had to tend them, and take on me the cares of a woman¹¹, at once¹², I changed my ideas. Heathcliff was dangerously sick, and while he lay at the worst he would have me constantly by his pillow; I suppose he felt I did a good deal for him, and he hadn't wit to guess that I was compelled to do it. However, I will say this, he was the quietest child that ever nurse watched over. The difference between him and the others forced me to be less partial: Cathy and her brother harassed me terribly: *he* was as uncomplaining as a lamb; though hardness, not gentleness, made him give little trouble.

He got through¹³, and the doctor affirmed it was in a great measure owing to me, and

¹ stand: to confront, face, oppose, encounter; to resist, withstand, bear the brunt of a blow or stroke, shot, attack, assault, siege, or the like; also laughter, raillery, indignation, etc. 結局は「しっかり立つ」(‘to remain firm or steady in an upright position’) という意味から。

² persecute: to harass, trouble, vex, worry; to importune.

³ take to: to take a liking to, conceive an affection for.

⁴ for that matter: as far as that is concerned; as for that. その点に関しては。

⁵ precious: *adv.* (colloq.) extremely, very.

⁶ mischievous: [místʃɪvəs] (of persons, their conduct, etc.) disposed to or characterized by acts of playful malice or petty annoyance. いたずら好きな。

⁷ wayward: (of children) disobedient, refractory. 聞き分けのない、手に負えぬ。

⁸ breed: to give rise to, engender, develop, produce, create, cause, be the source of.

⁹ usurper: [ʃʊzə:pə(r)] one who illegally or unjustly seizes, appropriates, or intrudes into any office, property, rights, etc.

¹⁰ brood: to meditate moodily, or with strong feeling, *on* or *over*.

¹¹ take on me the cares of a woman: ‘to undertake things to be done by a woman’ (女の仕事＝家事を引き受ける) ということ。

¹² at once: at one and the same time; simultaneously.

¹³ get through: to succeed in coming or going, to bring oneself through (a space, an intervening object) 「無事通過する」より「(困難な時期などを) 切り抜ける」。

praised me for my care. I was vain¹ of his commendations, and softened towards the being by whose means I earned them², and thus Hindley lost his last ally³; still I couldn't dote⁴ on Heathcliff, and I wondered often what my master saw to admire so much in the sullen⁵ boy who never, to my recollection, repaid his indulgence by any sign of gratitude. He was not insolent⁶ to his benefactor; he was simply insensible⁷, though knowing perfectly the hold⁸ he had on his heart, and conscious he had only to speak and all the house would be obliged to bend⁹ to his wishes.

As an instance, I remember Mr Earnshaw once bought a couple of colts at the parish fair, and gave the lads each one. Heathcliff took the handsomest, but it soon fell lame¹⁰, and when he discovered it, he said to Hindley,

'You must exchange horses with me; I don't like mine, and if you won't I shall tell your father of the three thrashings you've given me this week, and show him my arm, which is black to the shoulder.'

Hindley put out his tongue, and cuffed¹¹ him over the ears.

'You'd better do it, at once,' he persisted, escaping to the porch (they were in the stable): 'You will have to, and if I speak of these blows, you'll get them again with interest¹².'

'Off, dog!' cried Hindley, threatening him with an iron weight, used for weighing potatoes and hay.

¹ vain: delighting in, or desirous of attracting, the admiration of others; conceited. ほめられていい気になる。

² softened towards ... them: ほめてもらえたのもこの子のおかげと Heathcliff に優しく接するようになった。'by whose means' は 'by means of the being' と考え、'by means of' by the instrumentality of (a person or thing).' (～の助けで、おかげで) と取る。'them' は 'his (= the doctor's) commendations'。

³ ally: [əlaɪ, ælaɪ] an individual who helps or co-operates with another; a supporter or associate.

⁴ dote: to be infatuatedly fond of; to bestow excessive love or fondness *on* or *upon*. 溺愛する。

⁵ sullen: (of persons, their attributes, aspect, actions) characterized by, or indicative of, gloomy ill-humour or moody silence. 陰気な、不機嫌な、むっつりした。

⁶ insolent: contemptuous of rightful authority; presumptuously or offensively contemptuous; impertinently insulting. (Said of those who treat superiors or equals with offensive familiarity or disrespect.) (目上・同輩に対し) 無礼な、不遜な。

⁷ insensible: incapable or destitute of feeling or emotion; emotionless, callous, apathetic.

⁸ hold: a controlling force or dominating influence. *have a hold on (a person)*: ～を支配する力を持つ。

⁹ bend: (fig.) to submit, to bow; to yield, give way to; to prove pliant, tractable, or subservient.

¹⁰ lame: crippled through injury to, or defect in, a limb; spec. disabled in the foot or leg, so as to walk haltingly or be unable to walk.

¹¹ cuff: to strike with the fist, or with the open hand; to buffet.

¹² with interest: with increase or augmentation. おまけをつけて。

‘Throw it,’ he replied, standing still, ‘and then I’ll tell how you boasted that you would turn me out of doors as soon as he died, and see whether he will not turn you out directly.’

Hindley threw it, hitting him on the breast, and down he fell, but staggered¹ up immediately, breathless and white, and had I not prevented it, he would have gone just so to the master, and got full revenge by letting his condition plead² for him, intimating³ who had caused it.

‘Take my colt, gipsy, then!’ said young Earnshaw. ‘And I pray that he may break your neck; take him, and be damned, you beggarly interloper!⁴ and wheedle⁵ my father out of all he has: only, afterwards, show him what you are, imp⁶ of Satan—And take that, I hope he’ll kick out your brains!’

Heathcliff had gone to loose the beast, and shift it to his own stall—He was passing behind it, when Hindley finished his speech by knocking him under its feet, and without stopping to examine whether his hopes were fulfilled⁷, ran away as fast as he could.

I was surprised to witness how coolly the child gathered himself up⁸, and went on with his intention, exchanging saddles and all; and then sitting down on a bundle of hay to overcome the qualm⁹ which the violent blow occasioned¹⁰, before he entered the house.

I persuaded him easily to let me lay the blame of his bruises on the horse¹¹; he minded little what tale was told since he had what he wanted. He complained so seldom, indeed,

¹ stagger: to sway involuntarily from side to side when trying to stand or walk erect; to totter or reel as if about to fall. ここでは、よろめきながら立ち上がる。

² plead: to make an earnest appeal, entreaty, or supplication; to beg, implore (*for* the person in whose interest one speaks). ここでは、傷ついた体を見せて自分の言い分を訴える。

³ intimate: to make known or communicate by any means however indirect; hence, to signify, indicate; to imply, to suggest, to hint at. (p. 44 注 7 参照)

⁴ interloper: one who, esp. for his own profit, thrusts himself into any position or affair, which others consider as pertaining solely to themselves. でしゃばり。

⁵ wheedle: to do (a person) *out of* a thing, or to get (a thing) *out of* a person, by coaxing or cajolery. うまいことをいって人からものを巻き上げる。

⁶ imp: a ‘child’ of the devil, or of hell; (with parentage expressed) applied to wicked men, and to petty fiends or evil spirits. ここはだれの子かを明記している例。

⁷ whether his hopes were fulfilled: 望みどおり Heathcliff が馬に蹴られたかどうか。

⁸ gather oneself up: to collect or summon up (one’s thoughts, strength, etc.) for an effort. ここでは、「平静を取り戻す」ほどの意味。

⁹ qualm: [kwɔ:m] a (sudden) feeling or fit of faintness, illness, or sickness.

¹⁰ occasion: to be the occasion or cause of (something); to give ground for, give rise to, cause, bring about, esp. in an incidental or subsidiary manner. ～の原因となる、～を引き起こす。

¹¹ lay the blame of his bruises on the horse: 傷を馬のせいにする。

of such stirs¹ as these, that I really thought him not vindictive²—I was deceived completely, as you will hear.

¹ stir: active or energetic movement of a number of persons (or animals); bustle, activity; commotion, disturbance. ここでは「いざごさ、ごたごた」ほどの意味だろう。

² vindictive: given to revenge; having a revengeful disposition. 復讐心を抱く。

Chapter V

In the course of time¹, Mr Earnshaw began to fail. He had been active and healthy, yet his strength left him suddenly; and when he was confined to the chimney-corner² he grew grievously³ irritable. A nothing⁴ vexed him, and suspected slights of his authority nearly threw him into fits.

This was especially to be remarked if any one attempted to impose upon, or domineer over, his favourite: he was painfully jealous⁵ lest a word should be spoken amiss to him⁶, seeming to have got into his head the notion that⁷, because he liked Heathcliff, all hated, and longed to do him an ill-turn⁸.

It was a disadvantage to the lad, for the kinder among us did not wish to fret the master, so we humoured⁹ his partiality; and that humouring was rich nourishment to the child's pride and black¹⁰ tempers. Still it became in a manner necessary; twice, or thrice, Hindley's manifestations of scorn, while his father was near, roused the old man to a fury. He seized his stick to strike him, and shook with rage that he could not do it.

At last, our curate (we had a curate then who made the living answer¹¹ by teaching the little Lintons and Earnshaws, and farming his bit of land himself)—he advised that the young man should be sent to college, and Mr Earnshaw agreed, though with a heavy spirit, for he said —

‘Hindley was naught, and would never thrive¹² as where he wandered.

¹ in the course of time: during the progress of time. 時がたつうちに。

² chimney-corner: the corner or side of an open fireplace or hearth, i.e. of the large projecting or retreating fireplace of olden times; ‘the fireside; the seat on each end of the firegrate’ (J.); familiarly treated as the place of the old, the infirm, and idle.

³ grievously: in a great or serious degree; heavily, deeply, strongly, exceedingly, etc.

⁴ nothing: a thing not worth reckoning, considering, or mentioning. 取るに足りぬ (ささいな) こと。

⁵ jealous: suspiciously careful or watchful. (p. 2 注 6、p. 8 注 5 参照)

⁶ lest a word ... to him: ひとことでも Heathcliff をあしざまにいわせまいと。

⁷ to have got into his head the notion that ...: ～と思いこんでしまった。 *get into one's head*: to come to have (a notion, impression, etc.).

⁸ do him an ill-turn: 意地悪くする。 *turn*: an act of good or ill will, or that does good or harm to another.

⁹ humour: to act in compliance or agreement with. 調子を合わせる、機嫌を取る。

¹⁰ black: foul, iniquitous, atrocious, horribly wicked.

¹¹ made the living answer: (PENGUIN 版注:) made his clerical income sufficient.

¹² thrive: to be successful or fortunate. ここは、「もともとダメなやつ (naught) だから、どこへ行ってもものにはなるまい」。

I hoped heartily we should have peace now. It hurt me to think the master should be made uncomfortable by his own good deed. I fancied the discontent of age and disease arose from his family disagreements, as he would have¹ it that it did—really, you know, sir, it was in his sinking frame.

We might have got on tolerably, notwithstanding, but for² two people, Miss Cathy, and Joseph, the servant; you saw him, I dare say³, up yonder. He was, and is yet, most likely, the wearisomest, self-righteous⁴ pharisee⁵ that ever ransacked⁶ a Bible to rake⁷ the promises⁸ to himself, and fling the curses to his neighbours. By his knack⁹ of sermonizing and pious discoursing, he contrived¹⁰ to make a great impression on Mr Earnshaw, and the more feeble the master became, the more influence he gained.

He was relentless in worrying him about his soul's concerns¹¹, and about ruling his children rigidly. He encouraged him to regard Hindley as a reprobate¹²; and night after night, he regularly grumbled out a long string of tales against Heathcliff and Catherine; always minding¹³ to flatter Earnshaw's weakness by heaping¹⁴ the heaviest blame on the

¹ have: to maintain or assert as a fact.

² but for: if it had not been for. Cathy と Joseph の二人がいなければ (うまくいったかもしれない)。

³ I dare say: (almost exclusively in the parenthetic 'I dare say') to assume as probable, presume. 私思うに、たぶん (presumably)。

⁴ self-righteous: righteous in one's own esteem. 「自分では 'righteous' だ (行いが正しい) と思っている」より、「独善的な、ひとりよがりな」。

⁵ pharisee: [færisr:] a hypocrite.

⁶ ransack: to make thorough search in or throughout (a place, receptacle, collection of things, etc.) for something

⁷ rake: to draw together, collect, gather (scattered objects) with, or as with, a rake. かき集める。

⁸ promise: that which affords a strong or reasonable ground of expectation of something to come, esp. of future good; something that leads one confidently to expect (good) results. (ここでは聖書中の) 幸先のよい箇所。

⁹ knack: the 'trick' of dexterous performance; an acquired faculty of doing something cleverly, adroitly, and successfully.

¹⁰ contrive: to succeed in bringing to pass; to 'manage', to effect (a purpose); (with inf.) extended ironically to action that has the result of bringing about an unintended or undesired event. つまり「予期せぬ (または望まぬ) 結果を引き起こすようなまねをする」という意味で使われることもある。

¹¹ concern: a matter or subject that affects or touches one, and that ought to engage one's active interest and attention. ここは「心配事」あたりが適切かと思う。

¹² reprobate: [rɛprəbət] one rejected by God; one who has fallen away from grace or religion. (p. 21 注 6 参照)

¹³ mind: to bear in mind and be careful *to do* (something) ～するよう心がける。現代英語では他動詞 'mind' に「to 不定詞」がつづくことはめったにない。ただし方言では '(obs. exc. dial.) to have a mind *to do* something; to wish, be inclined, purpose, intend.' (～するつもりである、～したいと思う)。

¹⁴ heap: to deal or bestow in heaps or large quantities (*on, upon*); to load, charge, or overwhelm (a person) with (something in large quantities).

latter.

Certainly, she had ways¹ with her such as I never saw a child take up² before; and she put all of us past our patience fifty times and oftener in a day: from the hour she came down stairs, till the hour she went to bed, we had not a minute's security that she wouldn't be in mischief³. Her spirits were always at high-water mark⁴, her tongue always going—singing, laughing, and plaguing everybody who would not do the same. A wild, wick slip⁵ she was—but, she had the bonniest eye, the sweetest smile, and lightest foot in the parish; and, after all, I believe she meant no harm; for when once she made you cry in good earnest⁶, it seldom happened that she would not keep you company, and oblige⁷ you to be quiet, that you might comfort her⁸.

She was much too fond of Heathcliff. The greatest punishment we could invent for her was to keep her separate from him: yet, she got chided⁹ more than any of us on his account¹⁰.

In play, she liked exceedingly, to act the little mistress; using her hands freely¹¹, and commanding her companions: she did so to me, but I would not bear slapping¹² and ordering; and so I let her know.

Now, Mr Earnshaw did not understand jokes from his children: he had always been strict and grave with them; and Catherine, on her part, had no idea why her father should be crosser and less patient in his ailing condition, than he was in his prime.

¹ way: (often in collective plural) a habitual or characteristic manner of action, behaviour, expression, or the like. 自分の流儀。ここでは、わがまま勝手。

² take up: to adopt (a practice, notion, idea, purpose, etc.); to assume (an attitude, tone, etc.) ～ぶりを見せる (など)。

³ mischief: vexatious or annoying action or conduct; chiefly, conduct causing petty injury or trouble to others by way of sport, without any ill-will. (悪意のないちょっとした) いたずら。

⁴ high-water mark: (fig.) the highest point of intensity, excellence, prosperity, or the like, attained.

⁵ wick slip: a lively girl. (wick: North var. of quick.)

⁶ in good earnest: earnestly, in reality. (冗談ではなく) 本気で、本当に。

⁷ oblige: to constrain, esp. by moral or legal force or influence; to force, compel (*to do* something).

⁸ it seldom ... comfort her: つきっきりでなだめられ、しまいには相手のほうが泣き止んで (そんなに気にしなくていいと) なぐさめる側に回った、ということ。

⁹ chide: (now chiefly literary, and somewhat archaic) to scold; to reprove, rebuke. ここは Heathcliff のことでは (われわれも叱られはしたが) だれよりも彼女が叱られていた。

¹⁰ on his account: on account of him.

¹¹ using her hands freely: 自由に手を使う、としてはわかりにくい。「遠慮なく手を上げる (出す)」、つまり、ぶったり叩いたり、あるいはつねったりしたということだろう。

¹² slapping: 'shopping' とするテキストもあるが、ここはやはり 'slapping' (ビンタ) としたほうが 'using her hands freely' と調和する。

His peevish¹ reproofs wakened in her a naughty² delight to provoke him; she was never so happy as when we were all scolding her at once, and she defying³ us with her bold, saucy⁴ look, and her ready words; turning Joseph's religious curses into ridicule, baiting⁵ me, and doing just what her father hated most, showing how her pretended insolence, which he thought real, had more power over Heathcliff than his kindness⁶; how the boy would do *her* bidding⁷ in anything, and his⁸ only when it suited his own inclination.

After behaving as badly as possible all day, she sometimes came fondling⁹ to make it up¹⁰ at night.

'Nay, Cathy,' the old man would say, 'I cannot love thee; thou'rt¹¹ worse than thy brother. Go, say thy prayers, child, and ask God's pardon. I doubt¹² thy mother and I must rue¹³ that we ever reared thee!' That made her cry at first; and then, being repulsed¹⁴ continually hardened her, and she laughed if I told her to say she was sorry for her faults, and beg to be forgiven.

But the hour came, at last, that ended Mr Earnshaw's troubles on earth. He died quietly in his chair one October evening, seated by the fire-side.

A high wind blustered round the house, and roared in the chimney: it sounded wild and stormy, yet it was not cold, and we were all together—I, a little removed from the hearth, busy at my knitting, and Joseph reading his Bible near the table (for the servants generally sat in the house then, after their work was done). Miss Cathy had been sick, and that made her still; she leant against her father's knee, and Heathcliff was lying on the

¹ peevish: morose, querulous, irritable, ill-tempered. (p. 3 注 14 参照)

² naughty: (of children) wayward, disobedient, given to doing wrong.

³ defy: to challenge the power of; to set at defiance; to resist boldly or openly.

⁴ saucy: (now chiefly colloq. with milder sense, applied to children and servants) insolent towards superiors; presumptuous. 小生意気な。

⁵ bait: (fig.) to cause (a person) to be molested, harassed, or persecuted.

⁶ how her ... his kindness: 彼女が傲慢なふりをしてみせたほうが、それを本気にした父の示す親切よりもずっと Heathcliff には効き目があること。

⁷ do one's bidding: 人の命令に従う。 *bidding*: a command, order, injunction.

⁸ his: his (= her father's) bidding. 父親のいいつけは自分がその気になったときだけしか聞かない。

⁹ fondle: to behave, play or speak fondly. べたべたする。

¹⁰ make it up: to be reconciled after a dispute; to become friends again. 仲直りする。【参考】*make it up to (someone)*: to compensate or atone to (someone) for a loss or wrong suffered.

¹¹ thou'rt: thou art (= you are).

¹² doubt: (*arch.* and *dial.*) to fear, be afraid.

¹³ rue: to regard or think of (an event, fact, etc.) with sorrow or regret; to wish that (something) had never taken place or existed. ～を後悔する、(こんなことになるなら) ～でなければよかったと悔やむ。

¹⁴ repulse: to repel with denial; to reject, refuse, rebuff. はねつける。

floor with his head in her lap.

I remember the master, before he fell into a doze, stroking her bonny hair—it pleased him rarely¹ to see her gentle—and saying—

‘Why canst thou not always be a good lass², Cathy?’

And she turned her face up to his, and laughed, and answered,

‘Why cannot you always be a good man, father?’

But as soon as she saw him vexed again, she kissed his hand, and said she would sing him to sleep. She began singing very low, till his fingers dropped from hers, and his head sank on his breast. Then I told her to hush, and not stir, for fear she should wake him. We all kept as mute as mice a full half-hour, and should have done so longer, only Joseph, having finished his chapter, got up and said that he must rouse the master for prayers and bed. He stepped forward, and called him by name, and touched his shoulder, but he would not move—so he took the candle and looked at him.

I thought there was something wrong as he set down the light; and seizing the children each by an arm, whispered them to ‘frame³ upstairs, and make little din⁴—they might pray alone that evening—he had summut⁵ to do.’

‘I shall bid father good-night first,’ said Catherine, putting her arms round his neck, before we could hinder⁶ her.

The poor thing discovered her loss directly—she screamed out—

‘Oh, he's dead, Heathcliff! he's dead!’

And they both set up⁷ a heart-breaking cry.

¹ rarely: in an unusual degree; exceptionally. いつになく、ことのほか。

² lass: a girl. (In northern and north midland dialects the ordinary word; in the southern counties it has little or no popular currency.)

³ frame: (obs. exc. dial.) = ‘go’.

⁴ din: a loud noise; particularly a continued confused or resonant sound, which stuns or distresses the ear.

⁵ summut: something. Joseph には用があるからお祈りは自分たちだけでしなさい、といったのである。

⁶ hinder: to keep back, delay, or stop in action; to put obstacles in the way of; to impede, deter, obstruct, prevent.

⁷ set up: to raise (a cry); to utter (vocal sound).

I joined my wail¹ to theirs, loud and bitter; but Joseph asked what we could be thinking of² to roar in that way over a saint in heaven.

He told me to put on my cloak and run to Gimmerton for the doctor and the parson³. I could not guess the use that either would be of, then. However, I went, through wind and rain, and brought one, the doctor, back with me; the other said he would come in the morning.

Leaving Joseph to explain matters, I ran to the children's room; their door was ajar, I saw they had never laid down⁴, though it was past midnight; but they were calmer, and did not need me to console them. The little souls were comforting each other with better thoughts than I could have hit on⁵; no parson in the world ever pictured heaven so beautifully as they did, in their innocent talk; and, while I sobbed, and listened, I could not help wishing we were all there⁶ safe together.

¹ wail: a cry of pain or grief, esp. if loud and prolonged.

² what we could be thinking of ...: (そうやって泣きわめくとは) 一体どういうつもりだ。この 'think' は 'to conceive or entertain the notion of doing something; to meditate, contemplate, intend, purpose, design, mean' (～しようかと考える、～するつもり)。

³ parson: a rector. 教区の牧師。

⁴ lay down: ここでは自動詞だから 'lie down' (横になる) の意味で使われている。

⁵ hit on: to find (what is sought), esp. by chance. ここでは、思いつく。

⁶ there: the heaven they pictured so beautifully.

Chapter VI

Mr Hindley came home to the funeral; and—a thing that amazed us, and set the neighbours gossiping right and left¹—he brought a wife with him.

What she was, and where she was born, he never informed us; probably, she had neither money nor name to recommend² her, or he would scarcely have kept the union from his father.

She was not one that would have disturbed the house much on her own account. Every object she saw, the moment she crossed the threshold, appeared to delight her; and every circumstance³ that took place about her, except the preparing for the burial, and the presence of the mourners⁴.

I thought she was half silly from her behaviour while that went on; she ran into her chamber, and made me come with her, though I should have been dressing the children; and there she sat shivering and clasping her hands, and asking repeatedly—

‘Are they gone yet?’

Then she began describing with hysterical emotion the effect it produced on her to see black⁵; and started⁶, and trembled, and, at last, fell a weeping⁷—and when I asked what was the matter? answered, she didn't know; but she felt so afraid of dying!

I imagined her as little likely to die as myself. She was rather thin, but young, and fresh complexioned⁸, and her eyes sparkled as bright as diamonds. I did remark, to be sure, that mounting the stairs made her breathe very quick, that the least sudden noise set her all in a quiver, and that she coughed troublesomely sometimes; but I knew nothing of

¹ right and left: on all hands; on all sides.

² recommend: to make (a person or thing) acceptable. (人なら) 喜んで迎えてもらう、(物なら) 快く受け取ってもらう。

³ circumstance: an incident, an occurrence. (p. 37 注 2 参照)

⁴ mourner: one who mourns the death of a friend or relation; one who attends a funeral out of respect or affection for the deceased. 会葬者。

⁵ black: black clothing, especially that worn as a sign of mourning. 喪服。

⁶ start: to undergo a sudden involuntary movement of the body, resulting from surprise, fright, sudden pain, etc.

⁷ fell a weeping: 泣き出した。 *fall a + 動名詞*: to set about, take to, begin (some action).

⁸ complexioned: having a (specified) complexion, or colour and texture of skin. これこれの顔色をした (ほかに ‘fair complexioned’ など)。

what these symptoms portended¹, and had no impulse to sympathize with her. We don't in general take to² foreigners here, Mr Lockwood, unless they take to us first.

Young Earnshaw was altered considerably in the three years of his absence. He had grown sparer³, and lost his colour, and spoke and dressed quite differently: and, on the very day of his return, he told Joseph and me we must thenceforth quarter⁴ ourselves in the back-kitchen, and leave the house for him. Indeed, he would have carpeted and papered a small spare room for a parlour; but his wife expressed such pleasure at the white floor, and huge glowing fire-place, at the pewter dishes, and delf-case⁵, and dog-kennel, and the wide space there was to move about in, where they usually sat, that he thought it unnecessary to her comfort, and so dropped the intention⁶.

She expressed pleasure, too, at finding a sister among her new acquaintance, and she prattled⁷ to Catherine, and kissed her, and ran about with her, and gave her quantities of presents, at the beginning. Her affection tired⁸ very soon, however, and when she grew peevish, Hindley became tyrannical. A few words from her, evincing⁹ a dislike to Heathcliff, were enough to rouse in him all his old hatred of the boy. He drove him from their company to the servants, deprived him of the instructions of the curate, and insisted that he should labour out of doors instead, compelling him to do so, as hard as any other lad¹⁰ on the farm.

He bore his degradation pretty well at first, because Cathy taught him what she learnt, and worked or played with him in the fields. They both promised¹¹ fair to grow up as rude as savages, the young master being entirely negligent¹² how they behaved, and what they did, so they kept clear of him. He would not even have seen after¹³ their going to

¹ these symptoms portended: (PENGUIN 版注 :) Hindley's wife exhibits the symptoms of tuberculosis or consumption, the disease which was to claim the lives of both Emily and Anne Bronte within six months of each other in 1848-9.

² take to: to take a liking to, conceive an affection for.

³ spare: having little flesh; lean, thin.

⁴ quarter: to station, place or lodge in a particular place. ここでは、居間 (the house) はおれ専用にするから、おまえたちは 'back-kitchen' に引っこめ、ということ。

⁵ delf-case: (PENGUIN 版注 :) cupboard for crockery. (delf = delft: a kind of glazed earthenware made at Delf or Delft in Holland; originally called Delf ware.)

⁶ the intention: 小さな空き部屋に手を入れて自分たちの居間にしようとしたこと。Hindley の妻は、それよりも広い 'the house (= the family sitting-room)' を選んだ。

⁷ prattle: to talk or chatter in a childish or artless fashion; to be loquacious about trifles.

⁸ tire: to have one's appreciation, power of attention, patience, exhausted by excess.

⁹ evince: to reveal the presence of (a quality, condition, feeling); to display, exhibit, manifest.

¹⁰ lad: a boy, youth; a young man, young fellow.

¹¹ promise: to cause or lead one to expect (something good or bad). 'fair' は強調。

¹² negligent: inattentive to duty; not attending to, or doing, what ought to be done; neglectful.

¹³ see after: to take care of; attend to. 'only' (= 'but for the fact that' ~ということがなかったら) に呼応して、完了条件法 (would+完了不定詞) になっている。

church on Sundays, only Joseph and the curate¹ reprimanded² his carelessness when they absented themselves, and that reminded him to order Heathcliff a flogging, and Catherine a fast from dinner or supper.

But it was one of their chief amusements to run away to the moors in the morning and remain there all day, and the after punishment grew a mere thing to laugh at. The curate might set as many chapters as he pleased for Catherine to get by heart, and Joseph might thrash Heathcliff till his arm ached³; they forgot everything the minute they were together again, at least the minute they contrived some naughty plan of revenge; and many a time I've cried to myself to watch them growing more reckless⁴ daily, and I not daring to speak a syllable for fear of losing the small power I still retained over the unfriended creatures.

One Sunday evening, it chanced that they were banished⁵ from the sitting-room, for making a noise, or a light offence of the kind, and when I went to call them to supper, I could discover them nowhere.

We searched the house, above and below, and the yard, and stables; they were invisible; and, at last, Hindley in a passion⁶ told us to bolt the doors, and swore nobody should let them in that night.

The household went to bed; and I, too anxious to lie down, opened my lattice and put my head out to hearken⁷, though it rained, determined to admit them in spite of the prohibition, should they return⁸.

In a while⁹, I distinguished¹⁰ steps coming up the road, and the light of a lantern glimmered through the gate.

I threw a shawl over my head and ran to prevent them from waking Mr Earnshaw by

¹ curate: [kjúərət] an assistant to a parish priest. 牧師補、副牧師。

² reprimand: [réprəmà:nd] to rebuke, reprove, or censure (a person) sharply or severely.

³ The curate ... ached: ここはいわゆる「讓歩」(いかに～しようとも)と考えればわかりやすい。

⁴ reckless: careless in respect of the consequences of one's actions; lacking in prudence or caution. 無鉄砲な、無分別な。

⁵ banish: to send or drive away, expel, dismiss imperatively (a person).

⁶ passion: an outburst of anger or bad temper.

⁷ hearken: [há:k(ə)n] (arch. or lit.) to apply the ears to hear; to listen, give ear.

⁸ should they return: = if they should return. この種の倒置は頻出する。

⁹ in a while (= in a little while): soon, shortly.

¹⁰ distinguish: to perceive distinctly or clearly (by sight, hearing, or other bodily sense); to 'make out' by looking, listening, etc.; to recognize.

knocking. There was Heathcliff, by himself¹; it gave me a start to see him alone.

‘Where is Miss Catherine?’ I cried hurriedly. ‘No accident, I hope?’

‘At Thrushcross Grange,’ he answered, ‘and I would have been there too, but they had not the manners to ask me to stay.’

‘Well, you will catch it!’² I said, ‘you’ll never be content till you’re sent³ about your business. What in the world led you wandering to Thrushcross Grange?’

‘Let me get off my wet clothes, and I’ll tell you all about it, Nelly,’ he replied.

I bid him beware of rousing the master, and while he undressed, and I waited⁴ to put out the candle, he continued—

‘Cathy and I escaped from the wash-house to have a ramble at liberty, and getting a glimpse of the Grange lights, we thought we would just go and see whether the Lintons passed their Sunday evenings standing shivering in corners, while their father and mother sat eating and drinking, and singing and laughing, and burning their eyes out before the fire. Do you think they do? Or reading sermons, and being catechised⁵ by their man-servant, and set to learn a column⁶ of Scripture names, if they don’t answer properly?’

‘Probably not,’ I responded. ‘They are good children, no doubt, and don’t deserve the treatment you receive, for your bad conduct.’

‘Don’t you cant⁷, Nelly’ he said. ‘Nonsense! We ran from the top of the Heights to the park, without stopping—Catherine completely beaten in the race, because she was barefoot. You’ll have to seek for her shoes in the bog to-morrow. We crept through a

¹ by oneself: without companion; alone.

² catch it: (colloq.) to get a thrashing or a scolding.

³ send: to dismiss.

⁴ wait: (with inf.) to delay to do something. 蠟燭を消さずにおいたこと。

⁵ catechise: (= catechize) [kætɪkàɪz] to instruct (the young or ignorant) in the elements of religion by repeating the instruction until it is learnt by heart, or (as always implied in modern times) by the method of formal questions and answers; in the Church of England, to teach the catechism, esp. in preparation for confirmation. 一問一答式に教義を覚えこませる、[英国教] 堅信礼の準備として ‘catechism’ (教理問答) を教える。

⁶ column: ここは人名の list がずらりと並んだイメージ。

⁷ cant: to talk unreally or hypocritically with an affectation of goodness or piety. もっともらしいこと (説教くさいこと) をいう。

broken hedge, groped our way up the path, and planted ourselves¹ on a flower-plot under the drawing-room² window. The light came from thence; they had not put up the shutters, and the curtains were only half closed. Both of us were able to look in by standing on the basement³, and clinging to the ledge, and we saw—ah! it was beautiful—a splendid place carpeted with crimson, and crimson-covered chairs and tables, and a pure white ceiling bordered by gold, a shower of glass-drops⁴ hanging in silver chains from the centre, and shimmering with little soft tapers⁵. Old Mr and Mrs Linton were not there. Edgar and his sister had it entirely to themselves; shouldn't they have been happy? We should have thought ourselves in heaven!⁶ And now, guess what your good children were doing? Isabella—I believe she is eleven, a year younger than Cathy—lay screaming at the farther end of the room, shrieking as if witches were running red hot needles into her. Edgar stood on the hearth weeping silently, and in the middle of the table sat a little dog shaking its paw and yelping⁷, which, from their mutual accusations⁸, we understood they had nearly pulled in two between them. The idiots! That was their pleasure! to quarrel who should hold a heap of warm hair, and each begin to cry because both, after struggling to get it, refused to take it. We laughed outright⁹ at the petted things, we did despise them! When would you catch me wishing to have what Catherine wanted? or find us by ourselves, seeking entertainment in yelling, and sobbing, and rolling on the ground, divided by the whole room?¹⁰ I'd not exchange, for a thousand lives, my condition here, for Edgar Linton's at Thrushcross Grange—not if I might have the privilege of flinging¹¹ Joseph off the highest gable, and painting the house-front with Hindley's blood!

'Hush, hush!' I interrupted. 'Still you have not told me, Heathcliff, how Catherine is left behind.'

¹ plant oneself: to place, station, post, fix oneself; to take up one's position.

² drawing-room: a room reserved for the reception of company, and to which the ladies withdraw from the dining-room after dinner. 応接間、客間。

³ basement: the lowest storey (not a cellar) of a building, esp. when sunk below the general ground level. 地下部分の割合はさまざまだが、たとえば窓から外を歩く人の足が見えるような半地下の階もそれ。'cellar' はもともと地上地下を問わず「食料貯蔵室」を意味し、のち次第に「地下室」の意味が優勢になった。

⁴ glass-drop: a glass pendant of a chandelier.

⁵ taper: a wax candle.

⁶ We should ... heaven!: おれたちがあそこにいたら (if we had been there)、天国にいると思っただろうなあ!

⁷ yelp: (said of dogs and related animals, and certain birds) to utter a yelp (= cry characteristic of dogs and some other animals, resembling a bark but distinguished from it by being sharp and shrill) or yelps. キャンキャン鳴く。

⁸ accusation: [ækjuːzɪʃ(ə)n] an indictment. 告発、非難。

⁹ outright: without reservation or limitation; openly, without reserve of manner or expression. 思い切り、遠慮なく。

¹⁰ divided by the whole room: 部屋全体によって隔てられて→部屋の向う側とこちら側に分かれて。

¹¹ fling: to throw, cast, toss, hurl.

‘I told you we laughed,’ he answered. ‘The Lintons heard us, and with one accord¹, they shot like arrows to the door; there was silence, and then a cry, ‘O mamma, mamma! O papa! O mamma, come here. O papa, oh!’ They really did howl² out, something in that way. We made frightful noises to terrify them still more, and then we dropped off the ledge, because somebody was drawing the bars, and we felt we had better flee. I had Cathy by the hand, and was urging her on, when all at once she fell down.

“Run, Heathcliff, run!” she whispered. “They have let the bull-dog loose, and he holds me!”

‘The devil had seized her ankle, Nelly; I heard his abominable³ snorting⁴. She did not yell out—no! She would have scorned⁵ to do it, if she had been spitted⁶ on the horns of a mad cow. I did, though: I vociferated⁷ curses enough to annihilate⁸ any fiend in Christendom, and I got a stone and thrust it between his jaws, and tried with all my might to cram⁹ it down his throat. A beast of a servant¹⁰ came up with a lantern, at last, shouting—

“Keep fast¹¹, Skulker, keep fast!”

‘He changed his note, however, when he saw Skulker's game¹². The dog was throttled¹³ off, his huge, purple tongue hanging half a foot out of his mouth, and his pendent¹⁴ lips streaming with bloody slaver.

¹ with one accord: with entire agreement, with one consent, with unanimity. 気をそろえて。

² howl: [haʊl] to utter loud and doleful inarticulate cries; to wail, lament, esp. with pain. In modern use often somewhat contemptuously applied to any cry of pain or distress.

³ abominable: exciting disgust and hatred, generally by evident ill qualities, physical or moral; offensive, loathsome; odious, execrable, detestable.

⁴ snort: (Of a horse [also said of other animals]) to make a characteristic loud or harsh sound by violently driving the breath through the nostrils, esp. when excited or frightened.

⁵ scorn: (with inf. as object.) to feel it beneath one, to disdain indignantly to do something. ～することを潔しとしない。

⁶ spit: to pierce, transfix, or stab with a sharp weapon, etc.

⁷ vociferate: to cry out loudly; to shout. W.S. Maugham は、本作におけるもったいぶった表現の一例として、これを挙げている。ここは ‘shout’ または ‘yell’ が適当だというのである。(岩波新書『世界の十代小説 (下)』による)

⁸ annihilate: to reduce to silence, powerlessness, or humiliation. 黙らせる、無力にする。

⁹ cram: to thrust, force, stuff, crowd (anything) *into* a receptacle or space, etc. which it overfills, *down* any one's throat, etc. 押しこむ、詰めこむ、飲み込ませる。

¹⁰ a beast of a servant: beast のような servant. この言い回しはときどき出てくる。

¹¹ fast: with firm grasp, attachment, or adhesion; so as not to permit of escape or detachment; tightly, securely.

¹² game: wild animals or birds such as are pursued, caught or killed in the chase. (狩の) 獲物。

¹³ throttle: to choke, suffocate. のどを締められて獲物から離された。

¹⁴ pendent: overhanging; jutting or leaning over; also, descending in a steep slope; slanting; placed or hanging on a steep slope. ブルドッグの口が前に張り出したさまをいうのだろう。

“The man took Cathy up; she was sick; not from fear, I'm certain, but from pain. He carried her in; I followed, grumbling execrations¹ and vengeance.

“What prey, Robert?” hallooed Linton from the entrance.

“Skulker has caught a little girl, sir,” he replied, “and there's a lad here,” he added, making a clutch² at me, “who looks an out-and-outer³! Very like⁴, the robbers were for⁵ putting them through the window, to open the doors to the gang, after all were asleep, that they might murder us at their ease. Hold your tongue, you foul-mouthed thief, you! you shall go to the gallows⁶ for this. Mr Linton, sir, don't lay by⁷ your gun.”

“No, no, Robert!” said the old fool. “The rascals knew that yesterday was my rent day; they thought to have⁸ me cleverly. Come in; I'll furnish them a reception. There, John, fasten the chain. Give Skulker some water, Jenny. To beard⁹ a magistrate¹⁰ in his strong-hold, and on the Sabbath, too! Where will their insolence stop? Oh, my dear Mary, look here! Don't be afraid; it is but a boy—yet, the villain scowls¹¹ so plainly in his face, would it not be a kindness to the country to hang him at once, before he shows his nature in acts, as well as features?”

He pulled me under the chandelier, and Mrs Linton placed her spectacles on her nose and raised her hands in horror. The cowardly children crept nearer also, Isabella lisping¹²

—
“Frightful thing! Put him in the cellar, papa. He's exactly like the son of the fortune-teller, that stole my tame¹³ pheasant¹. Isn't he, Edgar?”

¹ execration: an uttered curse; an anathema, an imprecation. 呪いのことば。

² clutch: an act of grasping at, a sudden and violent attempt to seize. ‘make a clutch’ ぐいとつかむ。

³ out-and-outer: a thorough or perfect type of his or its kind; a thorough-paced scoundrel. 悪党そのもの。

⁴ very like: probably.

⁵ for: having the intention of. (‘be *for doing*’ のかたちで) ～するつもりで。

⁶ gallows: an apparatus for inflicting the punishment of death by hanging, usually consisting of two uprights and a cross-piece, from which the criminal is suspended by the neck. 絞首台。

⁷ lay by: to put away in store. しまう。

⁸ have: (slang) to get the better of, outwit, take in, deceive, ‘do’.

⁹ beard: to oppose openly and resolutely, with daring or with effrontery.

¹⁰ magistrate: In England and Ireland, a more frequent synonym for ‘justice of the peace’. 治安判事。

¹¹ scowl: to look with lowering brows and a malignant or threatening expression.

¹² lisp: to speak with child-like utterance, falteringly or imperfectly.

¹³ tame: (of animals): brought under the control and care of man; domestic; domesticated. (Opp. to *wild*.)

‘While they examined me, Cathy came round; she heard the last speech, and laughed. Edgar Linton, after an inquisitive stare, collected sufficient wit² to recognize her. They see us at church, you know, though we seldom meet them elsewhere.

“‘That’s Miss Earnshaw!’” he whispered to his mother; “and look how Skulker has bitten her—how her foot bleeds!”

“‘Miss Earnshaw! Nonsense!’” cried the dame³, “Miss Earnshaw scouring⁴ the country with a gipsy! And yet, my dear, the child is in mourning⁵—surely it is—and she may be lamed for life.”

“‘What culpable⁶ carelessness in her brother!’” exclaimed Mr Linton, turning from me to Catherine. ‘I’ve understood from Shielders’” (that was the curate, sir)⁷ “‘that he lets her grow up in absolute heathenism.⁸ But who is this? Where did she pick up this companion? Oho! I declare he is that strange acquisition my late neighbour made in his journey to Liverpool—a little Lascar⁹, or an American or Spanish castaway.”

“‘A wicked boy, at all events¹⁰,” remarked the old lady, “and quite unfit for a decent house! Did you notice his language, Linton? I’m shocked that my children should have heard it.”

‘I recommenced cursing—don’t be angry, Nelly—and so Robert was ordered to take me off—I refused to go without Cathy—he dragged me into the garden, pushed the lantern into my hand, assured me that Mr Earnshaw should be informed of my behaviour, and

¹ pheasant: [fézənt] the name of a well-known game-bird, *Phasianus colchicus*, long naturalized in Britain and other parts of Europe. キジ。

² wit: the understanding or mental faculties in respect of their condition; chiefly = ‘right mind’, ‘reason’, ‘senses’, sanity. ‘collect one’s wit(s) = collect oneself’ は、散漫になった気を寄せ集める、つまり「心を落ち着かせる、気を鎮める」。

³ dame: (now arch. or dial.) the ‘lady’ of the house, the mistress of a household, a housewife.

⁴ scour: [skáuə] to pass rapidly over or along (a tract of land or water); esp. to traverse in quest of something, or in order to capture or drive away a foe. 目的もなくではなく、なにかをねらって駆け回る。【参考】(in 17th–18th century slang) to roam about at night uproariously, breaking windows, beating the watch, and molesting wayfarers. (この意味では自動詞だから適用できないが) たぶん夫人はこの夜盗をイメージしている。

⁵ in mourning: wearing the garments indicative of grief. 喪服を着ている。

⁶ culpable: deserving blame or censure, blameworthy.

⁷ (that was the curate, sir): これはもちろん Nelly の付け足した説明だから、念のため。

⁸ heathenism: [hí:ðəniz(ə)m] unchristian state of things; heathenish condition; unchristian degradation or barbarism. ‘he lets ... heathenism.’ は、この子のまったくキリスト教徒らしからぬ育ちぶりを放任している。

⁹ lascar: (freq. with capital initial.) an East Indian sailor.

¹⁰ at all events: in any case, at any rate.

bidding me march, directly, secured the door again.

‘The curtains were still looped¹ up at one corner; and I resumed my station² as spy, because, if Catherine had wished to return, I intended shattering their great glass panes to a million of fragments, unless they let her out.

‘She sat on the sofa quietly. Mrs Linton took off the grey cloak of the dairymaid which we had borrowed for our excursion, shaking her head, and expostulating³ with her, I suppose; she was a young lady and they made a distinction between her treatment and mine. Then the woman-servant brought a basin of warm water, and washed her feet; and Mr Linton mixed a tumbler of negus⁴, and Isabella emptied⁵ a plateful of cakes into her lap, and Edgar stood gaping at a distance. Afterwards they dried and combed her beautiful hair, and gave her a pair of enormous slippers, and wheeled⁶ her to the fire, and I left her, as merry as she could be, dividing her food between the little dog and Skulker, whose nose she pinched as he ate; and kindling a spark of spirit in the vacant⁷ blue eyes of the Lintons—a dim reflection from her own enchanting face—I saw they were full of stupid admiration; she is so immeasurably superior to them—to everybody on earth, is she not, Nelly?’

‘There will more come⁸ of this business than you reckon on,’ I answered, covering him up⁹ and extinguishing the light. ‘You are incurable¹⁰, Heathcliff, and Mr Hindley will have to proceed to extremities¹¹, see if he won’t.’

¹ loop: to fasten (*back, up*) by forming into a loop, or by means of an attached loop; to join or connect by means of a loop or loops. ここでは、端に寄せたカーテンを（カーテン留めで）輪状に留める。

² station: a place to stand in; esp. a position assigned to a man on duty, or in games. 持ち場。‘as spy’ と無冠詞にしたのは ‘spy’ を役職とみなしたからだろう。ここは「再びスパイとしての持ち場についた」と、わざとおおげさにいったのである。’

³ expostulate: to reason or remonstrate in a friendly manner *with* (a person), *about, for, on, or upon* (a thing).

⁴ negus: [nɪˈɡəs] a mixture of wine (esp. port or sherry) and hot water, sweetened with sugar and flavoured.

⁵ empty: to transfer the whole contents of (a vessel, etc.) to another receptacle. ここでは、皿のケーキをそっくり Cathy の膝に乗せた。

⁶ wheel: to turn (a person, animal, or thing) round. まさか椅子に車がついていたわけではなく、向きを変えたのである。

⁷ vacant: characterized by, exhibiting, or proceeding from, absence of intelligence or thought; expressionless, meaningless; inane. うつろな、ぼんやりした。

⁸ come: to arrive or appear as a result. ‘of’ は ‘from’ に同じ。

⁹ covering him up: 明りを消したとあるから、上掛けのシーツ・毛布などを肩までかけたのだろう。

【参考】1881 W. M. THAYER *Log Cabin to White Ho.* iv, Often feeling cold after having kicked off the bedclothes, he would say in his sleep: ‘Tom, *cover me up*’. (*OED*)

¹⁰ incurable: (fig.) not admitting of remedy, correction, or reformation. 救いようのない。

¹¹ extremity: (chiefly in pl.) an extreme measure; the utmost point of severity or desperation. ‘proceed to extremities (or extremity)’ 最後の（強硬な）手段に訴える。

My words came truer than I desired. The luckless adventure made Earnshaw furious —And then, Mr Linton, to mend matters, paid us a visit himself, on the morrow; and read the young master such a lecture¹ on the road he guided his family, that he was stirred to look about him,² in earnest.

Heathcliff received no flogging, but he was told that the first word he spoke to Miss Catherine should ensure³ a dismissal⁴; and Mrs Earnshaw undertook to keep her sister-in-law in due restraint, when she returned home; employing art, not force—with force she⁵ would have found it impossible.

¹ to read a lecture (or a lesson): to teach (one) something, to administer a reprimand or check (to one).

² look about one: to turn one's eyes or attention to surrounding objects; to consider, or take account of, one's position and circumstances.

³ ensure: to make certain the occurrence or arrival of (an event), or the attainment of (a result).

⁴ dismissal: (= dismissal) deprivation of office, dignity, or position; discharge from service.

⁵ she = Mrs Earnshaw.

Chapter VII

Cathy stayed at Thrushcross Grange five weeks, till Christmas. By that time her ankle was thoroughly cured, and her manners much improved. The mistress visited her often, in the interval, and commenced her plan of reform by trying to raise her self-respect with fine clothes and flattery, which she took readily: so that, instead of a wild, hatless little savage jumping into the house, and rushing to squeeze¹ us all breathless, there lighted from a handsome black pony a very dignified² person, with brown ringlets falling from the cover of a feathered beaver³, and a long cloth habit⁴ which she was obliged to hold up with both hands⁵ that she might sail⁶ in.

Hindley lifted her from her horse, exclaiming delightedly,

‘Why, Cathy, you are quite a beauty! I should scarcely have known you—you look like a lady now—Isabella Linton is not to be compared with her, is she, Frances?’

‘Isabella has not her natural advantages,’ replied his wife, ‘but she must mind and not grow wild again here. Ellen, help Miss Catherine off with her things—Stay, dear, you will disarrange your curls—let me untie your hat.’

I removed the habit, and there shone forth beneath, a grand plaid⁷ silk frock, white trousers, and burnished⁸ shoes; and, while her eyes sparkled joyfully when the dogs came bounding up to welcome her, she dare hardly touch them lest they should fawn upon⁹ her splendid garments.

She kissed me gently—I was all flour making the Christmas cake, and it would not have done to give me a hug¹⁰—and then she looked round for Heathcliff. Mr and Mrs

¹ squeeze: to give (someone) a hug.

² dignified: marked by dignity of manner, style, or appearance; characterized by lofty self-respect without haughtiness; stately, noble, majestic. 気品のある。

³ beaver: a hat made of beaver's fur, or some imitation of it; formerly worn by both sexes, but chiefly by men. ‘feathered’ とあるから、羽根飾りをつけていた。

⁴ habit: (= riding habit) a dress worn by ladies on horseback; a lady's riding-dress. 乗馬服といっても下はズボンではない（次注参照）

⁵ hold up with both hands: 裾が地面をひきずらないように両手でつまんで持ち上げること。

⁶ sail: (chiefly of women) to move or go in a stately or dignified manner, suggestive of the movement of a ship under sail. しずしずと歩む。

⁷ plaid: a long piece of twilled woollen cloth, usually having a chequered or tartan pattern.

⁸ burnished: polished.

⁹ fawn upon: (of a dog, etc.) to show delight at the presence of; to lavish caresses on, to caress.

¹⁰ I was all flour ... a hug: ケーキ作りをしていて粉まみれだった私を抱きしめようにもできなかった。do: to be fitting or appropriate.

Earnshaw watched anxiously their meeting, thinking it would enable them to judge, in some measure¹, what grounds they had for hoping to succeed in separating the two friends.

Heathcliff was hard to discover at first. If he were careless², and uncared for before Catherine's absence, he had been ten times more so since.

Nobody but I even did him the kindness to call him a dirty boy, and bid him wash himself, once a week; and children of his age seldom have a natural pleasure in soap and water. Therefore, not to mention his clothes, which had seen three months' service in mire and dust, and his thick uncombed hair, the surface of his face and hands was dismally beclouded³. He might well skulk behind the settle⁴, on beholding such a bright, graceful damsel⁵ enter the house, instead of a rough-headed counterpart⁶ of himself, as he expected.

'Is Heathcliff not here?' she demanded⁷, pulling off her gloves, and displaying fingers wonderfully whitened with doing nothing and staying in doors.

'Heathcliff, you may come forward,' cried Mr Hindley, enjoying his discomfiture⁸, and gratified to see what a forbidding⁹ young blackguard¹⁰ he would be compelled to present himself. 'You may come and wish Miss Catherine welcome, like the other servants.'

Cathy, catching a glimpse of her friend in his concealment, flew to embrace him; she bestowed seven or eight kisses on his cheek within the second, and, then stopped, and drawing back, burst into a laugh, exclaiming,

'Why, how very black¹¹ and cross you look! and how—how funny and grim! But that's

¹ in some measure: to a certain extent, in some degree, somewhat. ある程度。

² careless: not caring or troubling oneself. (自分の身なりやふるまいに) かまわない、無頓着な。

³ becloud: (fig.) to make obscure; to darken, to hide. (雲に覆われたように) 煤けて見せる。

⁴ settle: a long wooden bench, usually with arms and a high back. 'might well (do)' は「～するのはもっともだ、無理もない」。

⁵ damsel: [dæmz(ə)l] (arch. and lit. or playful) a young unmarried lady; originally one of noble or gentle birth, but gradually extended as a respectful appellation to those of lower rank. のちさらに価値は下落して、ときには軽蔑的に使われることさえあった。口語ではふつう使われない。

⁶ counterpart: (fig.) a person or thing so answering to another as to appear a duplicate or exact copy of it; 似たものの同士の片割れ、ぴったりの相手。

⁷ demand: to ask, inquire, make inquiry.

⁸ discomfiture: complete disconcertment or putting to confusion. うろたえぶり。

⁹ forbidding: repellent, repulsive, uninviting.

¹⁰ blackguard: a low worthless character addicted to or ready for crime; an open scoundrel. ここは、Heathcliff がならずものみたいな姿をさらすのを見物して楽しむ、ということ。

¹¹ black: (of the countenance, the 'look' of things, prospects) clouded with anger, frowning; threatening, boding ill; the opposite of *bright* and *hopeful*.

because I'm used to Edgar and Isabella Linton. Well, Heathcliff, have you forgotten me?"

She had some reason to put the question, for shame and pride threw double gloom over his countenance, and kept him immovable.

'Shake hands, Heathcliff,' said Mr Earnshaw, condescendingly¹; 'once in away² that is permitted.'

'I shall not,' replied the boy, finding his tongue at last; 'I shall not stand to be laughed at, I shall not bear it.'

And he would have broken³ from the circle⁴, but Miss Cathy seized him again.

'I did not mean to laugh at you,' she said, 'I could not hinder myself. Heathcliff, shake hands, at least! What are you sulky for? It was only that you looked odd—If you wash your face, and brush your hair, it will be all right. But⁵ you are so dirty!'

She gazed concernedly⁶ at the dusky⁷ fingers she held in her own, and also at her dress, which she feared had gained no embellishment⁸ from its contact with his.

'You needn't have touched me!' he answered, following her eye and snatching away his hand. 'I shall be as dirty as I please, and I like to be dirty, and I will be dirty.'

With that he dashed head foremost⁹ out of the room, amid the merriment of the master and mistress, and to the serious disturbance¹⁰ of Catherine, who could not comprehend¹¹ how her remarks should have produced such an exhibition of bad temper.

¹ condescendingly: in a condescending manner; with condescension, or a show of it. 人を見下したように、恩着せがましく。

² once in a way: as a solitary or exceptional instance. 今回だけは特別に。

³ break: to escape or depart by breaking ties or barriers (physical or immaterial); to depart by a forcible or sudden effort, to escape from restraint. (束縛を振り切って) 逃げ出す。

⁴ circle: a number of persons standing or seated round a person or object of interest. 回りの人々。

⁵ but: それにしても。'indeed' の意味を含む強調表現。

⁶ concernedly: in a concerned manner; with concern. 心配そうに。

⁷ dusky: somewhat black or dark in colour; dark-coloured; darkish.

⁸ embellishment: that which embellishes or beautifies, lit. and fig.; an ornament, decoration, setting off. ここではもちろん Heathcliff の衣服に触れて付いた汚れ、シミ。

⁹ head foremost: (fig.) precipitately, headlong, hastily.

¹⁰ disturbance: interruption of mental tranquillity or equanimity; mental agitation, excitement, discomposure. 度を失うこと、取り乱すこと。'to the serious disturbance of Catherine' の結果を表す 'to' について、詳しくは p. 423 注 6 参照。

¹¹ comprehend: [kəmˈpriːhɛnd] to grasp with the mind, conceive fully or adequately, understand, 'take in'.

After playing lady's-maid to the newcomer¹, and putting my cakes in the oven, and making the house and kitchen cheerful with great fires befitting Christmas eve, I prepared to sit down and amuse myself by singing carols, all alone; regardless of Joseph's affirmations that he considered the merry tunes I chose as next door to songs.

He had retired to private prayer in his chamber, and Mr and Mrs Earnshaw were engaging Missy's attention by sundry gay trifles bought for her to present to the little Lintons, as an acknowledgment² of their kindness.

They had invited them to spend the morrow at Wuthering Heights, and the invitation had been accepted, on one condition: Mrs Linton begged that her darlings might be kept carefully apart from that 'naughty, swearing boy.'

Under these circumstances³ I remained solitary. I smelt the rich scent of the heating spices; and admired the shining kitchen utensils, the polished clock, decked in holly⁴, the silver mugs ranged on a tray ready to be filled with mulled⁵ ale for supper; and, above all, the speckless⁶ purity of my particular care—the scoured⁷ and well-swept floor.

I gave due inward applause to every object and, then, I remembered how old Earnshaw used to come in when all was tidied⁸, and call me a cant⁹ lass, and slip a shilling into my hand as a Christmas-box¹⁰; and, from that, I went on to think of his fondness for Heathcliff, and his dread lest he should suffer neglect after death had removed him; and that naturally led me to consider the poor lad's situation now, and from singing I changed my mind to crying. It struck me soon, however, there would be more sense in endeavouring to repair some of his wrongs¹¹ than shedding tears over them—I got up and walked into the court to seek him.

¹ the newcomer: Catherine.

² acknowledgment: the sensible sign, whereby anything received is acknowledged; something given or done in return for a favour or message, or a formal communication that we have received it. 感謝のしるし。

³ under these circumstances: (= under the circumstances) because of the conditions. こういう事情だから、こんな次第で。

⁴ decked in holly: ヒイラギで飾った。deck: to clothe in rich or ornamental garments; to cover with what beautifies; to array, attire, adorn.

⁵ mull: to make (wine, beer, etc.) into a hot drink with the addition of sugar, spices, beaten yolk of egg, etc.

⁶ speckless: free from specks (= small spots) of dirt, dust, etc.; scrupulously or spotlessly clean.

⁷ scoured: polished by rubbing; cleansed by scrubbing with a detergent.

⁸ tidy: (chiefly colloq.) to make tidy or orderly; to put in order; to arrange neatly

⁹ cant: (Sc. and north. dial.) lively, merry, brisk. ここは「てきぱきと働く」ほどの意味。

¹⁰ Christmas box: a present or gratuity given at Christmas. (使用人などに与える)

¹¹ wrong: a violation or infringement of one's rights; an injury received or inflicted. 'to repair some of his wrongs' は、Heathcliff が受けている不当な仕打ちを幾分かでも埋め合せしてやる。

He was not far; I found him smoothing the glossy coat¹ of the new pony in the stable, and feeding the other beasts, according to custom.

‘Make haste, Heathcliff!’ I said, ‘the kitchen is so comfortable—and Joseph is upstairs; make haste, and let me dress you smart before Miss Cathy comes out—and then you can sit together, with the whole hearth to yourselves, and have a long chatter till bedtime.’

He proceeded with his task, and never turned his head towards me.

‘Come—are you coming?’ I continued. ‘There’s a little cake for each of you, nearly enough²; and you’ll need half an hour’s donning.³’

I waited five minutes, but getting no answer left him ... Catherine supped with her brother and sister-in-law; Joseph and I joined at an unsociable meal, seasoned with reproofs on one side and sauciness on the other⁴. His cake and cheese remained on the table all night for the fairies. He managed⁵ to continue work till nine o’clock, and, then, marched dumb and dour⁶ to his chamber.

Cathy sat up late, having a world of⁷ things to order for the reception of her new friends; she came into the kitchen, once to speak to her old one, but he was gone, and she only staid⁸ to ask what was the matter with him, and then went back.

In the morning he rose early; and, as it was a holiday, carried his ill-humour on to the moors; not reappearing till the family were departed for church. Fasting⁹ and reflection seemed to have brought him to a better spirit. He hung about¹⁰ me, for a while, and having screwed up¹¹ his courage, exclaimed abruptly,

¹ coat: an animal’s covering of hair, fur, wool, feathers, etc.

² nearly enough: 一人あたり小さいケーキがひとつだから、たくさんあるわけではない。「あなたたちにはケーキがひとつずつ、どうにかあたりますよ」ほどの意味だろう。

³ don: to put on (clothing, anything worn, etc.); (chiefly north. dial.) to dress (a person) in a garment. ‘do on’ から。反対は ‘doff (← do off)’。

⁴ seasoned with ... the other: Joseph が小言をいうたびに私はそれを鼻であしらい、せっかくの料理をまずくして。

⁵ manage: to bring to pass by contrivance; hence, to succeed in accomplishing. なんとかやり遂げる。たいして忙しくもないのにあれこれ仕事をして時間を消化したからこういう。

⁶ dour: stubborn, obstinate, sullen.

⁷ a world of: a quantity of.

⁸ staid: = stayed.

⁹ fasting: abstinence from food; an instance of this. 断食。

¹⁰ hang about: to remain as unwilling to depart or move on; to loiter, linger, as with expectation or interest (*about* or *around* a person, place, etc.).

¹¹ screw up: to cause to become sufficiently strong or intense.

‘Nelly, make me decent, I’m going to be good.’

‘High time¹, Heathcliff,’ I said, ‘you *have* grieved Catherine; she’s sorry she ever² came home, I dare say!³ It looks as if you envied her, because she is more thought of than you.⁴

The notion of *envying* Catherine was incomprehensible to him, but the notion of grieving her, he understood clearly enough.

‘Did she say she was grieved?’ he inquired, looking very serious.

‘She cried when I told her you were off again this morning.’

‘Well, *I* cried last night,’ he returned, ‘and I had more reason to cry than she.’

‘Yes, you had the reason of⁵ going to bed with a proud heart and an empty stomach,’ said I. ‘Proud people breed⁶ sad sorrows for themselves—But, if you be ashamed of your touchiness⁷, you must ask pardon, mind, when she comes in. You must go up, and offer to kiss her, and say—you know best what to say—only, do it heartily, and not as if you thought her converted into a stranger by her grand dress. And now, though I have dinner to get ready, I’ll steal time to arrange you so that Edgar Linton shall look quite a doll beside you: and that he does—You are younger, and yet⁸, I’ll be bound⁹, you are taller and twice as broad across the shoulders—you could knock him down in a twinkling¹⁰; don’t you feel that you could?’

Heathcliff’s face brightened a moment; then it was overcast afresh, and he sighed.

‘But, Nelly, if I knocked him down twenty times, that wouldn’t make him less handsome,

¹ high time: the appropriate time or past the appropriate time. もうそうしなくちゃね。

² ever: 【参考】[裏面に “never” の “ever”] I am sorry I have **ever** met her (= I wish I had *never* met her). 彼女に全く逢はなけれやよかつた。(齋藤秀三郎『英和中辞典』)

³ dare say: to venture to say (because one thinks it likely); to assume as probable, presume.

⁴ she is more thought of than you: お嬢さんのほうがあんたより大事にされている。

⁵ you had the reason of ...: あんたが～したのはもっともよ。

⁶ breed: to give rise to, engender, develop, produce, create, cause, be the source of.

⁷ touchiness: sensitiveness of temper, irritability, testiness. 怒りっぽさ。

⁸ yet: (as *conjunctive adv.* or *conj.*, introducing an additional fact or circumstance which is adverse to, or the contrary of what would naturally be expected from, that just mentioned.) in spite of that, for all that, nevertheless, notwithstanding.

⁹ I’ll be bound: I feel certain.

¹⁰ in a twinkling: in an instant. 瞬きする (twinkle) 間に、たちまち。

or me more so. I wish I had light hair and a fair skin, and was dressed, and behaved as well, and had a chance of being as rich as he will be!’

‘And cried for mamma at every turn¹—’ I added, ‘and trembled if a country lad heaved² his fist against you, and sat at home all day for a shower of rain.—O, Heathcliff, you are showing a poor spirit! Come to the glass, and I’ll let you see what you should wish. Do you mark those two lines between your eyes, and those thick brows that instead of rising arched, sink in the middle, and that couple of black fiends³, so deeply buried, who never open their windows boldly, but lurk glinting⁴ under them, like devil’s spies? Wish and learn to smooth away the surly wrinkles, to raise your lids frankly, and change the fiends to confident⁵, innocent angels, suspecting and doubting nothing, and always seeing friends where⁶ they are not sure of foes—Don’t get the expression of a vicious⁷ cur⁸ that appears to know the kicks it gets are its desert⁹, and yet, hates all the world, as well as the kicker, for what it suffers.’

‘In other words¹⁰, I must wish for Edgar Linton’s great blue eyes and even¹¹ forehead,’ he replied. ‘I do, and that won’t help me to¹² them.’

‘A good heart will help you to a bonny face, my lad,’ I continued, ‘if you were a regular¹³ black; and a bad one¹⁴ will turn the bonniest into something worse than ugly. And now that we’ve done washing, and combing, and sulking¹⁵—tell me whether you don’t think yourself rather handsome? I’ll tell you I do. You’re fit for a prince in disguise. Who

¹ at every turn: (usually fig.) at every change of circumstance; hence, on every occasion, constantly, continually. なにかあるたびに、なにかという。

² heave: to raise.

³ that couple of black fiends: your fiendish black eyes.

⁴ glint: to shine with a flashing light; to glance, gleam, glitter.

⁵ confident: full of assurance, self-reliant, bold; sure of oneself, one’s cause, etc.; having no fear of failure.

⁶ where: in a or the case in which (often nearly = *when*); in the circumstances, position, or condition in which. ～という場合には、状況では。

⁷ vicious: (of animals, esp. horses): inclined to be savage or dangerous, or to show bad temper; not submitting to be thoroughly tamed or broken-in.

⁸ cur: 雑種犬、野良犬のたぐい (p. 10 注 4 参照)。

⁹ desert: a deserved punishment. 当然の報い、相応の罰。

¹⁰ in other words: ここでは直前の Nelly のセリフに対し、「おまえがいったのは、要するにこれこれということだろう」と言い換えているわけ。 *words*: (pl.) things said, or something said; speech, talk, discourse, utterance. つまり Heathcliff は Nelly が ‘you must wish ...’ といったと解釈したのである。

¹¹ even: (of surfaces or lines) uniform, without inequality; smooth.

¹² help a person to: to help him to attain to, to aid in obtaining; hence, to furnish, provide, or present with (something). だれだれが～を獲得する助けとなる、～を与える。

¹³ regular: (colloq.) thorough, complete, absolute, perfect.

¹⁴ a bad one: a bad heart.

¹⁵ now that ... sulking: 体を洗って髪に櫛を入れ、機嫌をなおしたことだし。

knows, but¹ your father was Emperor of China, and your mother an Indian queen, each of them able to buy up, with one week's income, Wuthering Heights and Thrushcross Grange together? And you were kidnapped by wicked sailors, and brought to England. Were I in your place, I would frame² high notions of my birth; and the thoughts of what I was should give me courage and dignity to support³ the oppressions of a little farmer!

So I chattered on; and Heathcliff gradually lost his frown and began to look quite pleasant; when, all at once, our conversation was interrupted by a rumbling sound⁴ moving up the road and entering the court. He ran to the window, and I to the door, just in time to behold the two Lintons descend from the family carriage, smothered⁵ in cloaks⁶, and furs, and the Earnshaws dismount from their horses—they often rode to church in winter. Catherine took a hand of each of the children, and brought them into the house, and set them before the fire, which quickly put colour into their white faces.

I urged my companion to hasten now, and show his amiable humour; and he willingly obeyed; but ill luck would have it⁷ that, as he opened the door leading from the kitchen on one side, Hindley opened it on the other.; they met, and the master, irritated at seeing him clean and cheerful, or, perhaps, eager to keep his promise to Mrs Linton, shoved⁸ him back with a sudden thrust, and angrily bade Joseph 'keep the fellow out of the room—send him into the garret till dinner is over. He'll be cramming⁹ his fingers in the tarts¹⁰ and stealing the fruit, if left alone with them a minute.'

'Nay, sir,' I could not avoid answering; 'he'll touch nothing, not he—and, I suppose, he must have his share of the dainties¹¹ as well as we.'

'He shall have his share of my hand¹², if I catch him down stairs till dark,' cried Hindley.

¹ who knows but (that): ひょっとしたら～かもしれない、～でないとはかぎらない。

² frame: to form or construct in the mind; to conceive, imagine.

³ support: to endure without opposition or resistance; to bear with, put up with, tolerate.

⁴ rumbling sound: 馬車がゴロゴロ (ゴトゴト) と進む音。

⁵ smother: to cover up, cover over, densely or thickly by some thing or substance.

⁶ cloak: a loose outer garment worn by both sexes over their other clothes. 外套。

⁷ ill luck would have it: by ill fortune, unfortunately. 運の悪いことに。

⁸ shove: [ʃáv] to force (a person, etc.) onwards by pushing. ここでは、突き戻した。

⁹ cram: to thrust, force, stuff, crowd (anything) into a receptacle or space, etc.

¹⁰ tart: name for various dishes consisting of a crust of baked pastry enclosing different ingredients; (in current use restricted to) **a.** a flat, usually small, piece of pastry, with no crust on the top (so distinguished from a pie), filled with fruit preserve or other sweet confection; **b.** a covered fruit pie. つまり練り粉 (paste) を焼いた菓子 (pastry) で、上に皮のあるものとなないものとがある (上皮のあるものが 'pie')。 **b.** は主に英国。

¹¹ dainty: anything pleasing or delicious to the palate; a choice viand, a delicacy. ごちそう。

¹² He shall ... my hand.: やつにはおれのビンタ (拳固) を食わせてやる。

‘Begone, you vagabond! What, you are attempting the coxcomb¹, are you? Wait till I get hold of those elegant locks—see if I won't pull them a bit longer.’

‘They are long enough already,’ observed² Master Linton, peeping from the door-way; ‘I wonder they don't make his head ache. It's like a colt's mane over his eyes!’

He ventured this remark without any intention to insult; but Heathcliff's violent nature was not prepared to endure the appearance of impertinence³ from one whom he seemed to hate, even then, as a rival. He seized a tureen⁴ of hot apple-sauce, the first thing that came under his gripe, and dashed it full against the speaker's face and neck—who instantly commenced a lament⁵ that brought Isabella and Catherine hurrying to the place.

Mr Earnshaw snatched up the culprit⁶ directly and conveyed him to his chamber, where, doubtless, he administered⁷ a rough remedy to cool the fit of passion, for he appeared red and breathless. I got the dish-cloth, and, rather spitefully⁸, scrubbed Edgar's nose and mouth, affirming it served him right⁹ for meddling. His sister began weeping to go home, and Cathy stood by confounded, blushing for¹⁰ all.

‘You should not have spoken to him!’ she expostulated¹¹ with Master Linton. ‘He was in a bad temper, and now you've spoilt your visit, and he'll be flogged¹²—I hate him to be flogged. I can't eat my dinner. Why did you speak to him, Edgar?’

‘I didn't,’ sobbed the youth, escaping from my hands, and finishing the remainder of the

¹ coxcomb: a foolish, conceited, showy person, vain of his accomplishments, appearance, or dress. めかし立てたうぬぼれ屋。

² observe: to say by way of remark; to remark or mention in speech or writing. (p. 13 注 10 参照)

³ impertinence: unmannerly and offensive intrusion or taking of liberty; presumptuous or forward rudeness of behaviour or speech, esp. to a superior; insolence.

⁴ tureen: [təˈriːn] an earthenware or plated vessel (usually oval) for sauce or gravy.

⁵ lament: [ləˈmɛnt] a passionate or demonstrative expression of grief. 悲嘆に暮れること。

⁶ culprit: an offender, one guilty of a fault or offence. 犯人。法律用語としては被告。

⁷ administer: to provide, apply (a remedy).

⁸ spitefully: in a spiteful manner; with spite. 意地悪く。ここでは、わざと力をこめて。

⁹ serve (a person) right: to treat (an offender) as he deserves. (無礼を働いた者)をそれ相応に扱う。ここは、「よけいなことをいうから、そんな目に会った」。【例】‘(It) serves (you, etc.) right, Serve (you, etc.) right.’ ざまあみろ、いい気味だ (an exclamation of satisfaction at seeing a person punished for his folly or wrong-doing)。

¹⁰ blush: (fig.) to be ashamed (*at* or *for*). ここは、なにもかも恥ずかしく思っ。

¹¹ expostulate: to reason or remonstrate in a friendly manner *with* (a person). (人)をいさめる、いってきかせる。

¹² flog: to beat, whip; to chastise with repeated blows of a rod or whip.

purification with his cambric¹ pocket-handkerchief. 'I promised mamma that I wouldn't say one word to him, and I didn't.'

'Well, don't cry,' replied Catherine contemptuously. 'You're not killed—don't make more mischief—my brother is coming—be quiet! Give over, Isabella! Has anybody hurt *you*?'

'There, there², children—to your seats!' cried Hindley, bustling in³. 'That brute of a lad⁴ has warmed⁵ me nicely. Next time, Master Edgar, take the law into your own fists⁶; it will give you an appetite!'

The little party recovered its equanimity⁷ at sight of the fragrant feast. They were hungry, after their ride, and easily consoled, since no real harm had befallen⁸ them.

Mr Earnshaw carved bountiful platefuls, and the mistress made them merry with lively talk. I waited behind her chair, and was pained to behold Catherine, with dry eyes and an indifferent air, commence cutting up the wing of a goose before her.

'An unfeeling child,' I thought to myself, 'how lightly she dismisses her old playmate's troubles. I could not have imagined her to be so selfish.'

She lifted a mouthful to her lips, then she set it down again: her cheeks flushed, and the tears gushed⁹ over them. She slipped her fork to the floor, and hastily dived under the cloth to conceal her emotion. I did not call her unfeeling long, for I perceived she was in purgatory¹⁰ throughout the day, and wearying to find an opportunity of getting by herself¹,

¹ cambric: [kæmbrik, older kémbrik] a kind of fine white linen, originally made at Cambray in Flanders; also applied to an imitation made of hard-spun cotton yarn. 目の細かい白リネン。

² There, there: さあさあ、ほらほら、など。間投詞的に用いられ、そのときどきの状況に応じて、苛立ち・困惑・嘲笑・満足・激励などを声の調子とともに表す。

³ bustle in: あわただしく入ってくる。'bustle' については p. 51 注 10 参照。

⁴ that brute of a lad: あの人のかたちをした獣、獣みたいなやつ。この 'of' は 'in the form of' (～のかたちをした)。OED の解説には、'that fool of a man' = that foolish man, that man who deserves to be called 'fool'; 'that beast of a place' = that beastly place. とある。

⁵ warm: 「激怒させる」という意味もあるが、すぐ後に 'it will give you an appetite!' (拳固にものをいわせると食欲が出る) とあり、さんざんぐったおかげで「体が温まったよ」と取れる。

⁶ take the law into one's own fists (or hands): to punish an offender, without obtaining judicial assistance. お上の力を借りずに罰する、自分の拳固(手)で裁きをつける。

⁷ equanimity: [i:kwə'nɪmɪti] evenness of mind or temper; the quality or condition of being undisturbed by elation, depression, or agitating emotion. 平静、落ち着き。

⁸ befall: to happen to, esp. by chance or fate.

⁹ gush: to flow or rush out with violence; to issue suddenly or in copious streams, as water or other fluid when released from confinement, blood from a wound, etc.

¹⁰ purgatory: (fig.) any condition, place, or thing having the characteristics ascribed to purgatory (煉獄); a place or state of temporary suffering, expiation, etc.

or paying a visit to Heathcliff, who had been locked up by the master, as I discovered, on endeavouring to introduce to him a private mess² of victuals³.

In the evening we had a dance. Cathy begged that he might be liberated then, as Isabella Linton had no partner; her entreaties were vain, and I was appointed to supply the deficiency.

We got rid of all gloom in the excitement of the exercise, and our pleasure was increased by the arrival of the Gimmerton band, mustering⁴ fifteen strong⁵; a trumpet, a trombone, clarionets, bassoons, French horns, and a bass viol, besides singers. They go the rounds⁶ of all the respectable houses, and receive contributions⁷ every Christmas, and we esteemed it a first-rate treat to hear them.

After the usual carols⁸ had been sung, we set⁹ them to songs and glees. Mrs Earnshaw loved the music, and, so, they gave us plenty.

Catherine loved it too, but she said it sounded sweetest at the top of the steps, and she went up in the dark: I followed. They shut the house door¹⁰ below, never noting our absence, it was so full of people. She made no stay at the stairs' head, but mounted farther, to the garret where Heathcliff was confined, and called him. He stubbornly declined answering for a while—she persevered¹¹, and finally persuaded him to hold communion¹² with her through the boards.

I let the poor things converse unmolested¹³, till I supposed the songs were going to cease,

¹ an opportunity of getting by herself: 一人になる機会。 *by oneself* alone.

² mess: a serving of food; a prepared dish (of a specified kind of food).

³ victuals: [vít(ə)lz] (pl.) Articles of food; supplies, or various kinds, of provisions; in later use *esp.* articles of ordinary diet prepared for use.

⁴ muster: (of an army, etc.) : to comprise, to number.

⁵ strong: (with prefixed numerical determination) powerful to the extent of (a specified number of men, ships, etc.). ‘mustering fifteen strong’ で、十五人もの楽団員からなる。

⁶ go the rounds: (= make the rounds) to go from one place to another, as in making deliveries, paying visits, or seeking employment. 一軒一軒回って歩く。

⁷ contribution: a sum or thing (voluntarily) contributed. 寄付 (金)。ここは「ご祝儀」が適當。

⁸ carol: a song or hymn of joy sung at Christmas in celebration of the Nativity. なお ‘(arch.) a ring-dance with accompaniment of song.’ (歌に合わせ、輪になって踊るダンス。またはその歌) という意味も記憶しておく価値がある。

⁹ set: to put (a person) to a piece of work or a task.

¹⁰ the house door: 「居間」のドアであることに注意。

¹¹ persevere: to continue steadfastly in a course of action (formerly, also, in a condition, state, or purpose), *esp.* in the face of difficulty or obstacles. がんばり通す。

¹² communion: intercourse, communication. 「板壁越しに話をする」だけのことをおおげさに表現したもの。

¹³ unmolested: not interfered with.

and the singers to get some refreshment: then I clambered up the ladder to warn her.

Instead of finding her outside, I heard her voice within. The little monkey had crept by the skylight of one garret, along the roof, into the skylight of the other, and it was with the utmost difficulty I could coax¹ her out again.

When she did come, Heathcliff came with her, and she insisted that I should take him into the kitchen, as my fellow-servant had gone to a neighbour's to be removed from the sound of our 'devil's psalmody²,' as it pleased him to call it.

I told them I intended, by no means, to encourage their tricks; but as the prisoner had never broken his fast since yesterday's dinner, I would wink at³ his cheating Mr Hindley that once.

He went down: I set him a stool by the fire, and offered him a quantity of⁴ good things: but, he was sick and could eat little: and my attempts to entertain him were thrown away⁵. He leant his two elbows on his knees, and his chin on his hands, and remained wrapt⁶ in dumb meditation. On my inquiring the subject of his thoughts, he answered gravely—

'I'm trying to settle how I shall pay Hindley back⁷. I don't care how long I wait, if I can only do it, at last. I hope he will not die before I do!'

'For shame, Heathcliff!' said I. 'It is for God to punish wicked people; we should learn to forgive.'

'No, God won't have the satisfaction that I shall⁸,' he returned. 'I only wish I knew the best way! Let me alone, and I'll plan it out: while I'm thinking of that, I don't feel pain.'

¹ coax: to influence or persuade by caresses, flattery, or blandishment (*to do* a thing, *into* an action; with various other extensions). なだめすかして～させる。

² psalmody: [sɑ:mədi] the action, practice, or art of singing psalms (or sacred vocal music in general, including hymns and anthems), esp. in public worship.

³ wink at: to 'shut one's eyes to' (an offence, fault, defect, impropriety, or irregularity); to connive at.

⁴ a quantity of: an indefinite (usually a fair or considerable) portion or amount of.

⁵ throw away: to spend or use without adequate return; to squander, waste. 受動態で「ムダになる」。

⁶ wrap: to envelop, entangle, or implicate (a person, etc.) *in*, to surround, encompass, or beset *with*, some (esp. prejudicial) condition of things, as sin, trouble, sorrow, etc. ここでは受動態で「黙って物思いにふける」。

⁷ pay back: to retaliate against or punish.

⁸ I shall: I shall have.

But, Mr Lockwood, I forget these tales cannot divert¹ you. I'm annoyed how I should dream of chattering on at such a rate; and your gruel cold, and you nodding for bed! I could have told Heathcliff's history, all that you need hear, in half-a-dozen words.

Thus interrupting herself, the housekeeper rose and proceeded to lay aside her sewing; but I felt incapable of moving from the hearth, and I was very far from nodding.

'Sit still, Mrs Dean,' I cried, 'do sit still another half hour! You've done just right to tell the story leisurely². That is the method I like; and you must finish it in the same style. I am interested in every character you have mentioned, more or less.'

'The clock is on the stroke of eleven, sir.'

'No matter—I'm not accustomed to go to bed in the long hours³. One or two is early enough for a person who lies till ten.'

'You shouldn't lie till ten. There's the very prime of the morning gone long before that time. A person who has not done one half his day's work by ten o'clock, runs a chance⁴ of leaving the other half undone.'

'Nevertheless, Mrs Dean, resume your chair; because to-morrow I intend lengthening the night till afternoon. I prognosticate⁵ for myself an obstinate cold, at least.'

'I hope not, sir. Well, you must allow me to leap over some three years; during that space, Mrs Earnshaw—'

'No, no, I'll allow nothing of the sort! Are you acquainted with the mood of mind in which, if you were seated alone, and the cat licking its kitten on the rug before you, you would watch the operation so intently that puss's⁶ neglect of one ear would put you seriously out of temper?'

'A terribly lazy mood, I should say⁷.'

¹ divert: to draw away from fatiguing or serious occupations; pleasurably to excite the mind or attract the attention; to entertain, amuse.

² leisurely: performed or operating at leisure or without haste.

³ the long hours: 時計の鐘が数多く鳴る午後 11 時～12 時のあたり。午前 0 時を過ぎて 3 時頃までは the small hours.

⁴ run a chance: to expose oneself, or be exposed, to a chance (= risk).

⁵ prognosticate: to have previous knowledge; to foretell.

⁶ puss: [pus] (now mostly superseded by *pussy*) a nursery synonym or pet-name for 'cat'.

⁷ I should say: (付加的に) まあ～というところですね。'should' は控えめな表現。

‘On the contrary, a tiresomely¹ active one. It is mine at present, and, therefore, continue minutely. I perceive that people in these regions acquire over people in towns the value that a spider in a dungeon does over a spider in a cottage, to their various occupants; and yet the deepened attraction is not entirely owing to the situation of the looker-on.² They *do* live more in earnest, more in themselves, and less in surface, change, and frivolous³ external things. I could fancy a love for life⁴ here almost possible; and I was a fixed unbeliever in any love of a year's standing—one state⁵ resembles setting a hungry man down to a single dish on which he may concentrate his entire appetite, and do it justice⁶—the other, introducing him to a table laid out by French cooks; he can perhaps extract as much enjoyment from the whole, but each part is a mere atom in his regard and remembrance.’

‘Oh! here we are the same as anywhere else, when you get to know us,’ observed Mrs Dean, somewhat puzzled at my speech.

‘Excuse me,’ I responded. ‘You, my good friend, are a striking evidence against that assertion. Excepting a few provincialisms⁷ of slight consequence⁸, you have no marks of the manners which I am habituated to consider as peculiar to your class. I am sure you have thought a great deal more than the generality⁹ of servants think. You have been compelled to cultivate your reflective¹⁰ faculties, for want of occasions for frittering¹¹ your life away in silly trifles.’

¹ tiresomely: (colloq.) disagreeably, unpleasantly; irksomely, annoyingly, vexatiously.

² people in these regions ... occupants: 「住人にとって（話し相手のいない）地下牢のクモには家の中のクモにはない値打があるように、このあたりの人には都会人にはない値打がある。といっても、他所者として見ているからよけい魅力を感じるというわけでもないのだ」 ちょっとわかりにくい、人口がきわめて少なく、目移りする刺激がないだけに人間関係が濃密だというのである。

³ frivolous: of little or no weight, value, or importance; paltry, trumpery; not worthy of serious attention; having no reasonable ground or purpose.

⁴ a love for life: 生涯に渡る愛。 *for life*: for the remaining period of the person's life.

⁵ one state: 一方（この地方の人々）のありよう。 つづく ‘the other’ は ‘the other state (resembles)’ で、他方（都会人）のありよう。

⁶ do a thing justice = do justice to a thing: to treat a thing in a manner showing due appreciation. ここでは「満喫する」。

⁷ provincialism: (with *a* and *pl.*) a peculiarity confined to a certain area; a local peculiarity or variety; (with *pl.*) a local word, phrase, or peculiarity of pronunciation which is not part of the standard language of a country. Nelly の方言は目立たないから前者だろう。

⁸ of slight consequence: ささいな、取るに足りぬ。 *consequence*: importance, moment, weight.

⁹ generality: (now only with *n.* *pl.* or *collect.*) the main body, the bulk, the greater part of. つまり本例のように ‘the generality of servants’ と名詞の複数とともに、また ‘The generality are endowed with common sense.’ のように集合的に使われる。単数・複数扱い。

¹⁰ reflective: (of mental faculties) of or pertaining to reflection (on what is presented to the mind); meditative, thoughtful. ‘reflective faculties’ は、「深く考える能力、省察力」。

¹¹ fritter: (with *away*, *down*) to do away with piecemeal; to spend (energy, time) on trifles, to waste.

Mrs Dean laughed.

‘I certainly esteem myself a steady, reasonable kind of body¹,’ she said, ‘not exactly from living among the hills, and seeing one set of faces, and one series of actions, from year's end to year's end: but I have undergone sharp discipline which has taught me wisdom; and then, I have read more than you would fancy, Mr Lockwood. You could not open a book in this library that I have not looked into, and got something out of also; unless it be that range² of Greek and Latin, and that of French—and those I know one from another³: it is as much as you can expect of a poor man's daughter⁴.

However, if I am to follow my story in true gossip's fashion, I had better go on; and instead of leaping three years, I will be content to pass to the next summer—the summer of 1778, that is nearly twenty-three years ago.’

¹ body: a human being of either sex, an individual. 方言を除いては現在 ‘person’ がふつう。

² range: a row, line, or series of things. ここでは、本棚に並んだ本。

³ those I know one from another: どれが何語かは区別できます。

⁴ You could ... daughter.: 物語の進行上やむをえないにしても、この設定はやはり苦しい。亭主の影が感じられない Nelly がいつ結婚したのかも謎で、それこそ ‘of slight consequence’ かも知れぬが、やはり気になる場所である。

Chapter VIII

On the morning of a fine June day, my first bonny little nursling, and the last of the ancient Earnshaw stock¹, was born.

We were busy with the hay in a far away field, when the girl that usually brought our breakfasts came running, an hour too soon, across the meadow and up the lane, calling me as she ran.

‘Oh, such a grand bairn²!’ she panted³ out. ‘The finest lad that ever breathed! But the doctor says missis must go⁴; he says she's been in a consumption⁵ these many months. I heard him tell Mr Hindley—and now she has nothing to keep her⁶, and she'll be dead before winter. You must come home directly. You're to nurse it, Nelly—to feed it with sugar and milk, and take care of it, day and night—I wish I were you, because it will be all yours when there is no missis!’

‘But is she very ill?’ I asked, flinging down my rake⁷, and tying my bonnet.

‘I guess she is; yet she looks bravely⁸,’ replied the girl, ‘and she talks as if she thought of living to see it grow a man. She's out of her head for joy, it's such a beauty! If I were her I'm certain I should not die. I should get better at the bare sight of it, in spite of Kenneth. I was fairly mad⁹ at him. Dame¹⁰ Archer brought the cherub¹¹ down to master, in the house, and his face just began to light up, then the old croaker¹² steps forward, and, says he:—‘Earnshaw, it's a blessing your wife has been spared¹³ to leave you this son. When

¹ stock: a line of descent; the descendants of a common ancestor, a family, kindred. 家系、血筋。

² bairn: [béən, in Sc. bern] a child; a son or daughter. (expressing relationship, rather than age.

³ pant: to utter gaspingly; to gasp *out*, etc. 息を切らしながらいう。

⁴ go: to die. (In early use, *to go out of the world*.)

⁵ consumption: wasting of the body by disease; a wasting disease; now applied spec. to pulmonary consumption or phthisis (肺結核) .

⁶ has nothing to keep her: 救う手だてがない。

⁷ rake: an implement, consisting of a bar fixed across the end of a long handle and fitted with teeth which point downwards, used in field-work for drawing together hay, grass, or the like. レーキ、熊手。‘pitchfork’ (p. 12 注 10 参照) よりも歯が多く、こちらはまさに熊手。

⁸ bravely: excellently, capitally, well.

⁹ mad: ‘(colloq.) beside oneself’ with anger; moved to uncontrollable rage; furious.

¹⁰ Dame: (arch. or dial.) prefixed to the surname of a housewife, an elderly matron or schoolmistress.

¹¹ cherub: a beautiful and innocent child.

¹² croaker: one who talks dismally or despondingly, one who forebodes or prophesies evil. 縁起でもないことをいうからだろうか、(*slang*. now chiefly U.S.) a doctor, physician; esp. a prison doctor. (ただし *OED* に収録された最初の用例は 1859 年)

¹³ spare: to preserve or save (life) in place of destroying; to allow to continue or last.

she came, I felt convinced we shouldn't keep her long; and now, I must tell you, the winter will probably finish¹ her. Don't take on² and fret about it too much, it can't be helped. And besides, you should have known better than to choose such a rush of a lass!³”

‘And what did the master answer?’ I inquired.

‘I think he swore—but I didn't mind him, I was straining⁴ to see the bairn,’ and she began again to describe it rapturously.⁵ I, as zealous as herself, hurried eagerly home to admire⁶, on my part, though I was very sad for Hindley's sake; he had room in his heart only for two idols—his wife and himself—He doted⁷ on both, and adored one, and I couldn't conceive how he would bear the loss.

When we got to Wuthering Heights, there⁸ he stood at the front door; and, as I passed in, I asked, ‘How was the baby?’

‘Nearly ready to run about, Nell!’ he replied, putting on a cheerful smile.

‘And the mistress?’ I ventured to inquire, ‘the doctor says she's—’

‘Damn the doctor!’ he interrupted, reddening. ‘Frances is quite right—she'll be perfectly well by this time next week. Are you going upstairs? will you tell her that I'll come, if she'll promise not to talk.—I left her because she would not hold her tongue; and she must—tell her Mr Kenneth says she must be quiet.’

I delivered this message to Mrs Earnshaw; she seemed in flighty⁹ spirits, and replied merrily—

¹ finish: (now chiefly colloq.) to complete the destruction of; to dispatch, kill; (in weaker sense) to reduce to complete exhaustion or helplessness. 片づける、殺す、すっかりまいらせる。

² take on: (now colloq. and dial.) to distress oneself greatly.

³ you should ... a lass!: 虚弱な女を選んだ君が悪い。 *know better than*: to be more prudent or discreet than to do something / *rush*: a plant of the order *Juncaceæ*, having straight naked stems or stalks (properly leaves) and growing in marshy ground, or on the borders of rivers or ponds (イグサ。蠟燭の芯に使われたので灯心草とも); something of no value.

⁴ strain: to use one's utmost endeavours; to strive vigorously. (to *do*, *after*, *for*, to the attainment of some object)

⁵ rapturously: ‘with intense pleasure and excitement’ ほどの意味。

⁶ admire (the bairn): to gaze on with pleasure; to express admiration for, to praise.

⁷ dote: to be infatuatedly fond of; to bestow excessive love or fondness on or upon; to be foolishly in love (*on*, *upon*) (p. 57 注 4 参照)

⁸ there: 「するとそこでは～」と一呼吸おいているため、おや、という軽い驚きを感じられる。

⁹ flighty: guided by whim or fancy rather than by judgement or settled purpose; fickle, frivolous, inconstant. 浮かれた。

'I hardly spoke a word, Ellen, and there¹ he has gone out twice, crying. Well, say I promise I won't speak; but that does not bind me not to laugh at him.'²

Poor soul! Till within a week of her death that gay heart never failed her, and her husband persisted doggedly³, nay, furiously, in affirming her health improved every day. When Kenneth warned him that his medicines were useless at that stage of the malady⁴, and he needn't put him to further expense⁵ by attending her, he retorted—

'I know you need not—she's well—she does not want any more attendance from you! She never was in a consumption. It was a fever; and it is gone—her pulse is as slow as mine now, and her cheek as cool.'

He told his wife the same story, and she seemed to believe him; but one night, while leaning on his shoulder, in the act of saying she thought she should be able to get up to-morrow, a fit of coughing took her—a very slight one—he raised her in his arms; she put her two hands about his neck, her face changed, and she was dead.

As the girl had anticipated, the child Hareton fell wholly into my hands. Mr Earnshaw, provided⁶ he saw him healthy, and never heard him cry, was contented, as far as regarded him⁷. For himself, he grew desperate; his sorrow was of that kind that will not lament⁸, he neither wept nor prayed—he cursed and defied—execrated⁹ God and man, and gave himself up to reckless dissipation¹⁰.

The servants could not bear his tyrannical and evil conduct long: Joseph and I were the only two that would stay. I had not the heart to leave my charge; and besides, you know, I had been his foster-sister¹¹, and excused his behaviour more readily than a stranger would.

¹ there: at that point or stage in action, proceeding, speech, or thought; (formerly sometimes referring to what immediately precedes or follows at that juncture) on that; on that occasion; then. ここは、ほとんど一言もいわないうちに。

² that does not bind me not to laugh at him: だからといって笑っていけないということはないでしょう。

³ doggedly: with the persistence of a dog; obstinately, stubbornly, pertinaciously.

⁴ malady: a specific kind of ill health, an ailment, a disease.

⁵ put him ... expense: 余計な金を使わせる。 *put*: to subject (a person, etc.) to the suffering or endurance of something.

⁶ provided: if only.

⁷ him: この文中の 'him' はすべて 'the child'.

⁸ lament: to express (also, simply, to feel) profound grief. ここでは、すぐ後にあるように、泣いたり祈ったりして深い悲しみを表すこと。

⁹ execrate: [éksikrèt] to express or feel intense loathing or abhorrence for; to abhor.

¹⁰ dissipation: waste of the moral and physical powers by undue or vicious indulgence in pleasure; intemperate, dissolute, or vicious mode of living.

¹¹ foster-sister: a female child nursed at the same breast as, or reared together with, another of different parentage. Nelly の母は Hindley の乳母だった ((p. 52 参照)。

Joseph remained to hector¹ over tenants and labourers, and because it was his vocation² to be where he had plenty of wickedness to reprove.

The master's bad ways and bad companions formed a pretty example for Catherine and Heathcliff. His treatment of the latter was enough to make a fiend of a saint. And, truly, it appeared as if the lad *were* possessed of something diabolical at that period. He delighted to witness Hindley degrading himself past redemption³, and became daily more notable for savage sullenness and ferocity. I could not half tell what an infernal house we had. The curate dropped⁴ calling, and nobody decent came near us, at last; unless Edgar Linton's visits to Miss Cathy might be an exception. At fifteen she was the queen of the country-side; she had no peer⁵; and she did turn out a haughty, headstrong⁶ creature! I own⁷ I did not like her, after her infancy was past; and I vexed her frequently by trying to bring down her arrogance; she never took an aversion to me, though. She had a wondrous constancy to old attachments⁸; even Heathcliff kept his hold on her affections unalterably, and young Linton, with all his superiority, found it difficult to make an equally deep impression.

He was my late master; that is his portrait over the fireplace. It used to hang on one side, and his wife's on the other; but hers has been removed, or else you might see something of what she was. Can you make that out?⁹

Mrs Dean raised the candle, and I discerned a soft-featured face, exceedingly resembling the young lady at the Heights, but more pensive¹⁰ and amiable in expression. It formed¹¹ a sweet picture. The long light hair curled slightly on the temples; the eyes were large and serious, the figure almost too graceful. I did not marvel how Catherine

¹ hector: to brag, bluster, domineer.

² vocation: the particular function or station to which a person is called by God; a mode of life or sphere of action regarded as so determined. 天職。

³ past redemption: without or beyond the possibility of deliverance, recovery, or restoration.

⁴ drop: to cease.

⁵ peer: one who takes rank with another in point of natural gifts or other qualifications; an equal in any respect.

⁶ headstrong: violently self-willed.

⁷ own: to confess to be valid, true, or actual; to admit. (p. 10 注 1 参照)

⁸ attachment: the fact or condition of being attached by sympathy; affection, devotion, fidelity. ここでは、古なじみ。

⁹ make out: to discern or discover visually; to succeed in perceiving or identifying (something not easily visible). (見にくいものを) 見分ける、見てそれとわかる。

¹⁰ pensive: full of thought; plunged in thought; thoughtful, meditative, musing; reflective: often with some tinge of seriousness or melancholy.

¹¹ form: to be the components or material of; to go to make up, to compose. ここは、その顔が魅力的な絵として描かれていたのである。

Earnshaw could forget her first friend for such an individual. I marvelled much how he, with a mind to correspond with his person, could fancy¹ my idea of Catherine Earnshaw.

‘A very agreeable portrait,’ I observed to the house-keeper. ‘Is it like?’

‘Yes,’ she answered; ‘but he looked better when he was animated. That is his everyday countenance. He wanted² spirit in general.’

Catherine had kept up³ her acquaintance with the Lintons since her five weeks’ residence among them; and as she had no temptation to show her rough side in their company, and had the sense to be ashamed of being rude where she experienced such invariable courtesy⁴, she imposed⁵ unwittingly⁶ on the old lady and gentleman, by her ingenious⁷ cordiality⁸; gained the admiration of Isabella, and the heart and soul of her brother—acquisitions⁹ that flattered her from the first, for she was full of ambition—and led her to adopt¹⁰ a double character without exactly intending to deceive any one.

In the place where she heard Heathcliff termed a ‘vulgar young ruffian,’ and ‘worse than a brute,’ she took care not to act like him; but at home she had small inclination to practise politeness that would only be laughed at, and restrain¹¹ an unruly¹² nature when it would bring her neither credit, nor praise.

Mr Edgar seldom mustered¹³ courage to visit Wuthering Heights openly. He had a terror of Earnshaw’s reputation, and shrank from encountering him, and yet, he was

¹ fancy: to take a fancy to; to entertain a liking for; to be pleased with; to like. ここは、どうしてあの気性の激しい女に好意を抱いたのか、ということ。

² want: not to have; to be without, to lack; to have too little of; to be destitute of, or deficient in.

³ keep up: to maintain, continue.

⁴ courtesy: [kó:tisi] courtly elegance and politeness of manners; graceful politeness or considerateness in intercourse with others. 慇懃、丁重、下にも置かぬもてなしぶり。

⁵ impose: (with *upon, on*) to cheat or deceive by false representations.

⁶ unwittingly: not wittingly, knowingly, or intentionally.

⁷ ingenious: [ɪndʒiːnəs] showing cleverness of invention or construction; skilfully or curiously contrived or made.

⁸ cordiality: heartiness; sincere good-will or friendly feeling towards others; warmth and friendliness of manner. ‘by her ingenious cordiality’ は、お得意の打ち解けた態度で。

⁹ acquisition: a thing acquired or gained. 兄妹の心をわがものにしたこと。それですっきりいい気になり、二重人格（裏表のある性格）への道を選んでしまった。

¹⁰ adopt: to take (a course, etc.) as one’s own (without the idea of its having been another’s), to choose for one’s own practice. (針路・習慣など)を選んでわがものとする。

¹¹ restrain: これも ‘she had small inclination to’ につづく。わがままな性分を抑えたってだれもほめてくれないのだから抑える気もなかった、ということ。

¹² unruly: not amenable to rule or discipline; ungovernable. わがままし放題の。

¹³ muster: (fig.) to summon, gather up (one’s thoughts, courage, strength, etc.).

always received with our best attempts at civility¹: the master himself avoided offending him—knowing why he came—and if he could not be gracious², kept out of the way. I rather think his appearance there was distasteful to Catherine; she was not artful, never played the coquette³, and had evidently an objection to her two friends meeting at all: for when Heathcliff expressed contempt of Linton, in his presence, she could not half coincide⁴ as she did in his absence; and when Linton evinced disgust and antipathy to Heathcliff, she dare not treat his sentiments with indifference⁵, as if depreciation of her playmate were of scarcely any consequence to her.

I've had many a laugh at her perplexities and untold troubles, which she vainly strove⁶ to hide from my mockery. That sounds ill-natured—but she was so proud, it became really impossible to pity her distresses, till⁷ she should be chastened into more humility.

She did bring herself, finally, to⁸ confess, and to confide in me. There was not a soul else that she might fashion into an adviser⁹.

Mr Hindley had gone from home one afternoon, and Heathcliff presumed¹⁰ to give himself a holiday, on the strength of it¹¹. He had reached the age of sixteen then, I think, and without having bad features or being deficient in intellect, he contrived¹² to convey an impression of inward and outward repulsiveness that his present aspect retains no traces

¹ civility: behaviour proper to the intercourse of civilized people; ordinary courtesy or politeness, as opposed to rudeness of behaviour; decent respect, consideration.

² gracious: (now rare) characterized by or exhibiting kindness or courtesy; kindly, benevolent, courteous.

³ coquette: [kəʊkɛt] a woman (more or less young), who uses arts to gain the admiration and affection of men, merely for the gratification of vanity or from a desire of conquest, and without any intention of responding to the feelings aroused; a flirt. ここでは、二人の男を手玉にする浮気女。

⁴ coincide: to accord or concur (in opinion, sentiment, etc.).

⁵ she dare ... indifference: Linton の示す反感を平気な顔で受け流すことはできなかった。

PENGUIN 版では 'dare'、テキストによっては 'dared' だが、どちらも可。

⁶ strive: to endeavour vigorously, use strenuous effort (to do). ここは、私に笑われまいとやっきになって隠そうとしてもムダでした。

⁷ till: *OED* によれば、主節に否定が含まれる場合、till 以下の節に示される時に至って、その否定的状況が終了し、反対に肯定に転ずる。つまり「同情などとてもできない相談だったが、そんな彼女もとうとう懲りて謙虚になるときが来た（ので、私も少しは同情を感じるようになった）」という含みがあって、次の文章につづく。

⁸ bring oneself to: ～する気になる。(bring: to cause [a person or oneself] to come [to a certain course of action, etc.]; to induce, persuade, prevail upon.)

⁹ fashion into an adviser: 相談相手にする。

¹⁰ presume: to take the liberty; to venture, dare (to do something).

¹¹ on the strength of it: Hindley の留守をいいことに。(‘on the strength of’ については p. 184 注 7 参照)

¹² contrive: to manage; (with inf.) extended ironically to action that has the result of bringing about an unintended or undesired event. しなくてもいいのに結局損になるようなことをする。

of¹.

In the first place, he had, by that time, lost the benefit² of his early education: continual hard work, begun soon and concluded late³, had extinguished any curiosity he once possessed in pursuit of knowledge, and any love for books or learning. His childhood's sense of superiority, instilled⁴ into him by the favours of old Mr Earnshaw, was faded away. He struggled long to keep up an equality with Catherine in her studies and yielded⁵ with poignant⁶ though silent regret: but he yielded completely; and there was no prevailing on⁷ him to take a step in the way of moving upward, when he found he must, necessarily, sink beneath his former level. Then personal appearance sympathised⁸ with mental deterioration: he acquired a slouching⁹ gait, and ignoble¹⁰ look; his naturally reserved disposition was exaggerated into an almost idiotic¹¹ excess of unsociable moroseness; and he took a grim pleasure, apparently, in exciting the aversion rather than the esteem of his few acquaintance.

Catherine and he were constant companions still, at his seasons of respite¹² from labour; but, he had ceased to express his fondness for her in words, and recoiled¹³ with angry suspicion¹⁴ from her girlish caresses, as if conscious there could be no gratification¹⁵ in lavishing such marks of affection on him. On the before-named occasion he came into the house to announce his intention of doing nothing, while I was assisting Miss Cathy to

¹ an impression ... traces of: 当時は内面的にも見た目にもわざわざ悪印象を与えようとしたが、今ではそのかけらも残っていない、ということ。

² benefit: advantage, profit, good. ここでは教育の成果。

³ begun soon and concluded late: ここでは *soon* = early in the morning, *late* = late in the evening.

⁴ instil: to introduce (some immaterial principle, notion, feeling, or quality) little by little into the mind, soul, heart, etc.; to cause to enter by degrees; to infuse slowly or gradually; to insinuate. 徐々にしみこませる (いつの間にか信じ込ませる、思い込ませる、など)。

⁵ yield: to give oneself up, surrender, submit (as overcome in fight).

⁶ poignant: [póɪnjənt] painfully sharp to the physical or mental feelings, as hunger, thirst, a pang, an affront; also said of a state of feeling, as grief, regret, despair.

⁷ prevail on: to succeed in persuading, inducing, or influencing. 'there was no prevailing on ...' は 'it was impossible to prevail on ...' に同じ。

⁸ sympathise (= sympathize): to be similarly or correspondingly affected (*with*). 一致 (同調) する。精神的な墮落がそのまま外見にも現れたこと。

⁹ slouching: having an awkward, stooping, slipshod carriage or gait; walking or moving with a slouch (= a stooping, or bending forward of the head and shoulders, in walking).

¹⁰ ignoble: mean, base, sordid.

¹¹ idiotic: utterly stupid, senseless, or foolish.

¹² respite: temporary cessation of labour, suffering, war, etc.; (an) interval of rest.

¹³ recoil: (*fig.* of persons, in respect of the mind or feelings.) to start or spring back in fear, horror, disgust, or the like. (まっぴらだとばかり) さっと身を引く、尻ごみする。

¹⁴ suspicion: imagination or conjecture of the existence of something evil or wrong without proof. ここでは 'there could be no gratification ...' つまりべたべたと愛情表現をしてみせるのは本心からではあるまいという疑念。

¹⁵ gratification: enjoyment, satisfaction, pleasurable feeling.

arrange her dress—she had not reckoned on¹ his taking it into his head to be idle, and imagining she would have the whole place to herself, she managed, by some means, to inform Mr Edgar of her brother's absence, and was then preparing to receive him.

‘Cathy, are you busy this afternoon?’ asked Heathcliff. ‘Are you going anywhere?’

‘No, it is raining,’ she answered.

‘Why have you that silk frock on, then?’ he said. ‘Nobody coming here, I hope?’

‘Not that I know of²,’ stammered Miss; ‘but you should be in the field now, Heathcliff. It is an hour past dinner-time; I thought you were gone.’

‘Hindley does not often free us from his accursed presence,’ observed the boy. ‘I’ll not work any more to-day, I’ll stay with you.’

‘O, but Joseph will tell,’ she suggested, ‘you’d better go!’

‘Joseph is loading lime³ on the further side of Pennistow Crag⁴; it will take him till dark, and he’ll never know.’

So saying, he lounged⁵ to the fire, and sat down. Catherine reflected an instant, with knitted brows—she found it needful to smooth the way⁶ for an intrusion.

‘Isabella and Edgar Linton⁷ talked of calling this afternoon,’ she said, at the conclusion of a minute's silence. ‘As it rains, I hardly expect them; but they may come, and if they do,

¹ reckon on: to count on, expect. ここでは、Heathcliffが仕事をさぼる気になろうなどとは勘定に入れていなかった、つまり予期していなかったこと。

² not that I know of: (colloq.) not so far as I know, not to my knowledge. さあ、来ないと思うけど。

³ lime: 土壌改良のため石灰が使用された。

⁴ Pennistow Crag: この地名が現れるのはここだけで、あとはすべて ‘Penistone Crag(gs)’ となっている。多くのテキストはここを ‘Penistone Crag’ としているが、誤植にしては綴りがちがすぎるし、‘Pennistow Crag’ とするテキストもある。たぶん作者のミスとして第2版では訂正されたのだろう。なおこの ‘Crag’ のモデルになった場所が実際にあるという。

⁵ lounge: to go or move in a leisurely, indolent manner. のんびりと歩く。

⁶ smooth the way: to free from obstruction, difficulty, or impediment. ～の地ならしをする、～を容易にする (for)。ここでは、じゃまものを取り除いて ‘an intrusion’ (Heathcliff からすれば Edgar の来訪はいわば不法侵入) を容易にする、つまり Heathcliff を追い払って客を迎え入れるよう手を打つ。

⁷ Isabella and Edgar Linton: Edgar ひとりだけ来ることになっていたから、Catherine はウソをついている。

you run the risk of being scolded for no good¹.'

'Order Ellen to say you are engaged, Cathy,' he persisted. 'Don't turn me out for those pitiful, silly friends of yours! I'm on the point, sometimes, of² complaining that they—but I'll not—'

'That they what?' cried Catherine, gazing at him with a troubled countenance. 'Oh, Nelly!' she added petulantly³, jerking her head away from my hands, 'you've combed my hair quite out of curl! That's enough, let me alone. What are you on the point of complaining about, Heathcliff?'

'Nothing—only look at the almanack,⁴ on that wall.' He pointed to a framed sheet hanging near the window, and continued:

'The crosses are for the evenings you have spent with the Lintons, the dots for those spent with me—Do you see, I've marked every day?'

'Yes—very foolish—as if I took notice!⁵' replied Catherine, in a peevish tone. 'And where is the sense of that?'

'To show that I *do* take notice,' said Heathcliff.

'And should I always be sitting with you?' she demanded, growing more irritated. 'What good do I get—What do you talk about? You might be dumb or a baby, for anything you say to amuse me, or for anything you do, either!⁶'

'You never told me, before, that I talked too little, or that you disliked my company, Cathy!' exclaimed Heathcliff in much agitation.

'It's no company at all, when people know nothing and say nothing,' she muttered.

¹ being scolded for no good: 'for no good' は、よいことがなくためにならぬこと。したがって、よくないから叱られるのではなく、叱られて損ををすること。

² on the point of: just about to do; on the very verge of.

³ petulantly: pertly; with peevish or pettish impatience. すねて、ふくれて。

⁴ almanack (= almanac): [ʃ:lmənæk] a calendar.

⁵ take notice: to give heed, bestow attention. 'as if I took notice!' は「まるで私が気にしているみたいね、気にしているわけじゃない」。

⁶ You might ... either!: まるで唾か赤ん坊みたいで、なにひとつおもしろいことをいったり、してくれたりできないんだから！ 【参考】[慣用法] He **might have been** dead **for all** the signs of life he gave (= he gave *no* sign of life *as if he were* dead). 恰も死んだ様に少しも動かなかつた。(齋藤秀三郎『英和中辞典』)

Her companion rose up, but he hadn't time to express his feelings further, for a horse's feet were heard on the flags, and, having knocked gently, young Linton entered, his face brilliant with delight at the unexpected summons he had received.

Doubtless Catherine marked¹ the difference between her friends as one came in, and the other went out. The contrast resembled what you see in exchanging a bleak², hilly, coal country for a beautiful fertile valley; and his voice and greeting were as opposite as his aspect—He had a sweet, low³ manner of speaking, and pronounced his words as you do, that's less gruff⁴ than we talk here, and softer.

'I'm not come too soon, am I?' he said, casting a look at me. I had begun to wipe the plate, and tidy some drawers at the far end in the dresser.

'No,' answered Catherine. 'What are you doing there, Nelly?'

'My work, Miss,' I replied. (Mr Hindley had given me directions to make a third party⁵ in any private⁶ visits Linton chose to pay.)

She stepped behind me and whispered crossly, 'Take yourself and your dusters⁷ off! when company are in the house, servants don't commence scouring⁸ and cleaning in the room where they are!'

'It's a good opportunity, now that master is away,' I answered aloud: 'he hates me to be fidgeting⁹ over these things in his presence—I'm sure Mr Edgar will excuse me.'

'I hate you to be fidgeting in *my* presence,' exclaimed the young lady imperiously¹⁰, not allowing her guest time to speak—she had failed to recover her equanimity since the little dispute with Heathcliff.

¹ mark: to take notice of; to observe.

² bleak: bare of vegetation; exposed; wind-swept. 吹きさらしの。

³ low: (of the voice, a sound) not loud.

⁴ gruff: of the voice and speech, implying the utterance of hoarse or guttural sounds. 発音不明瞭で聞き取りにくい、つぶれてざらざらした声を形容する。「耳ざわりな」あたりが適当か。

⁵ to make a third party: 二人きりにせず一緒にいる。

⁶ private: personal. ここは Edgar がひとりだけで来ることをいう。

⁷ duster: a cloth for removing dust from a surface; a dust-brush. ここは複数になっているので、雑巾や布巾とちり取り帚(など)をいっしょに使っていたのかもしれない。

⁸ scour: to cleanse or polish (metal, earthenware, wood, etc.) by hard rubbing with some detergent substance.

⁹ fidget: to make movements indicative of impatience, restlessness, or uneasiness; to move restlessly to and fro. せわしなく動く。'over' を 'while engaged in or occupied with' (～しながら) と取れば、'fidgeting over these things' は、掃除をしながらせかせかと動き回ること。

¹⁰ imperiously: in a domineering manner; overbearingly, arrogantly.

'I'm sorry for it, Miss Catherine!' was my response; and I proceeded assiduously¹ with my occupation.

She, supposing Edgar could not see her, snatched the cloth from my hand, and pinched me, with a prolonged wrench, very spitefully² on the arm.

I've said I did not love her; and rather relished³ mortifying⁴ her vanity, now and then; besides, she hurt me extremely, so I started up from my knees, and screamed out.

'O, Miss, that's a nasty trick!⁵ you have no right to nip⁶ me, and I'm not going to bear it!'

'I didn't touch you, you lying creature!' cried she, her fingers tingling⁷ to repeat the act, and her ears red with rage. She never had power to conceal her passion, it always set her whole complexion in a blaze.

'What's that, then?' I retorted, showing a decided purple witness⁸ to refute⁹ her.

She stamped her foot, wavered¹⁰ a moment, and then, irresistibly impelled by the naughty spirit within her, slapped me on the cheek a stinging¹¹ blow that filled both eyes with water.

'Catherine, love! Catherine!' interposed¹² Linton, greatly shocked at the double fault¹³ of falsehood, and violence which his idol had committed.

¹ assiduously: with close or constant application, sedulously. せっせと。

² spitefully: in a spiteful manner; with spite. 悪意をこめて、憎々しげに。

³ relish: take pleasure or delight in, be pleased or satisfied with.

⁴ mortify: to cause to feel humiliated.

⁵ trick: a freakish or mischievous act; a capricious, foolish, or stupid act.

⁶ nip: to pinch, squeeze sharply.

⁷ tingle: to be thrilled by a peculiar stinging or smarting sensation, physical or emotional; to smart, thrill, vibrate. ウズウズ（ムズムズ、ピクピク）する。

⁸ a decided purple witness: 動かぬ証拠である紫色の跡。

⁹ refute: to prove (a person) to be in error, to confute. への誤りを証明する、～をやりこめる。

¹⁰ waver: (of persons, their sentiments, etc.) to exhibit doubt or indecision; (of the voice, the eye, etc., or a person with reference to these) to become unsteady; to shake, tremble, falter (through emotion or bodily weakness). 「どうしようか迷っていた」と取れないこともないが、ここは「(激しい感情に) 身を震わせていた」としたほうが Catherine らしいと思う。

¹¹ stinging: that produces a sharp pain or tingling smart, a burning sensation, or the like.

¹² interpose: to introduce between other matters, or between the parts of a narrative, as an interruption or digression; to say or pronounce as an interruption. 割って入る、口をはさむ。

¹³ the double fault: falsehood+violence (ウソをついたうえに暴力をふるったこと)

‘Leave the room, Ellen!’ she repeated, trembling all over.

Little Hareton, who followed me everywhere, and was sitting near me on the floor, at seeing my tears commenced crying himself, and sobbed out complaints against ‘wicked Aunt Cathy,’ which drew her fury on to his unlucky head: she seized his shoulders, and shook him till the poor child waxed¹ livid, and Edgar thoughtlessly laid hold of her hands to deliver him. In an instant one was wrung free, and the astonished young man felt it applied over his own ear² in a way that could not be mistaken for jest.

He drew back in consternation³—I lifted Hareton in my arms, and walked off to the kitchen with him, leaving the door of communication open, for I was curious to watch how they would settle their disagreement.

The insulted visitor moved to the spot where he had laid his hat, pale and with a quivering lip.

‘That's right!’ I said to myself. ‘Take warning⁴ and begone! It's a kindness to let you have a glimpse of her genuine disposition.’

‘Where are you going?’ demanded Catherine, advancing to the door.

He swerved⁵ aside, and attempted to pass.

‘You must not go!’ she exclaimed energetically.

‘I must and shall!’ he replied in a subdued voice.

‘No,’ she persisted, grasping the handle; ‘not yet, Edgar Linton⁶—sit down, you shall not⁷ leave me in that temper. I should be miserable, all night, and I won't be miserable for you!’

¹ wax: (with adj. complement) to become gradually, grow. (月が満ちるように) 次第に～になる。
(p. 32 注 15 参照)

² one was ... ear: Hareton の肩から離れた片手が Edgar の耳を一撃した。

³ consternation: amazement and terror such as to prostrate one's faculties; dismay. *in consternation*: あっけにとられて、茫然自失して。

⁴ take warning: to alter one's course of action when warned of its danger (by another's ill-fortune, etc.) (他人の不幸などを戒めにして) 行いを改める、行いを正しくする。

⁵ swerve: to turn aside, deviate in movement from the straight or direct course.

⁶ Edgar Linton: 非難・叱責・説諭・懸念などの気持ちをこめて、ことさらに姓名を呼ぶ。

⁷ you shall not: あなたには～させない、～してはいけない。二人称（および三人称）の shall は話者の意志を表す（現在では古風ないい方とされる）。基本事項だが、念のため。

‘Can I stay, after you have struck me?’ asked Linton.

Catherine was mute.

‘You’ve made me afraid, and ashamed of you,’ he continued. ‘I’ll not come here again!’

Her eyes began to glisten¹, and her lids to twinkle².

‘And you told a deliberate untruth!’ he said.

‘I didn’t,’ she cried, recovering her speech. ‘I did nothing deliberately—Well, go, if you please—get away! And now I’ll cry—I’ll cry myself sick!’³

She dropped down on her knees by a chair, and set to weeping in serious earnest.

Edgar persevered⁴ in his resolution as far as the court; there he lingered. I resolved to encourage him.

‘Miss is dreadfully wayward⁵, sir!’ I called out. ‘As bad as any marred child⁶—you’d better be riding home, or else she will be sick, only to grieve us.’

The soft thing looked askance⁷ through the window—he possessed the power to depart, as much as a cat possesses the power to leave a mouse half killed, or a bird half eaten⁸—

Ah, I thought, there will be no saving him—he’s doomed⁹, and flies to his fate!

And so it was; he turned abruptly, hastened into the house again, shut the door behind him; and, when I went in a while after to inform them that Earnshaw had come home

¹ glisten: to shine with a fitful twinkling light; to glitter; to sparkle with light. ここでは涙に濡れて光ったことをいう。

² twinkle: to move to and fro, or in and out, with rapid alternation; to flutter, flit, flicker. まばたきする、ピクピク動く。

³ cry oneself sick: ‘sick’ になるほど泣く。ほかに ‘cry oneself blind’ など。

⁴ persevere (in): to continue steadfastly in a course of action (formerly, also, in a condition, state, or purpose), esp. in the face of difficulty or obstacles. ここは、決心を曲げぬ。

⁵ wayward: disposed to go counter to the wishes or advice of others, or to what is reasonable; wrongheaded, intractable, self-willed; froward, perverse. わがまま勝手な。

⁶ marred child = spoilt child. だだっ子。‘as bad as any marred child’ は「どんなだだっ子にも負けず (劣らず)」だから強調表現。

⁷ askance: sidewise, obliquely, askew, askint; with a side glance. 横目で。

⁸ he possessed ... half eaten: 猫に～することができぬように、彼にはそのまま立ち去る決心がつかなかった。

⁹ he’s doomed: 悲しい定めにある。doom: to destine or consign to some adverse fate or lot.

rabid¹ drunk, ready to pull the old place about our ears² (his ordinary frame of mind in that condition), I saw the quarrel had merely effected a closer intimacy—had broken the outworks³ of youthful timidity, and enabled them to forsake⁴ the disguise of friendship, and confess themselves lovers.

Intelligence of Mr Hindley's arrival drove Linton speedily to his horse, and Catherine to her chamber. I went to hide little Hareton, and to take the shot out of the master's fowling-piece⁵, which he was fond of playing with in his insane excitement, to the hazard of⁶ the lives of any who provoked, or even attracted his notice too much; and I had hit upon⁷ the plan of removing it, that he might do less mischief if he did go the length of⁸ firing the gun.

¹ rabid: furious, raging; madly violent in nature or behaviour.

² ready to pull ... our ears: 私たちの前で屋敷を壊しかねない勢いで。 *about one's ears*: said of a shower of blows or missiles, a conflagration, a falling house. (自分の回りに一打撃・弾丸・矢などが雨あられと降り注ぐ、大火が迫る、屋根などが頭上に崩れ落ちてくるなど)。

³ outwork: any detached or advanced work forming part of the defence of a place; an outer defence or outfort. 'the outworks of youthful timidity' 若者特有の内気さという壁。 'of' は同格。

⁴ forsake: to break off from, renounce (an employment, design, esp. an evil practice or sin; also, a belief, doctrine).

⁵ fowling-piece: a light gun for shooting wild fowl. Nelly はこれから弾を抜こうとした。

⁶ to the hazard of: at the risk of. ～の危険を冒して。

⁷ hit upon (or on): to come upon, light upon, meet with, get at, reach, find, esp. something aimed at. ここでは、(ふと) 思いつく。

⁸ go to the length of: ～までもする、しでかす。 *length*: the distance or extent to which one 'goes' (in a line of action, opinion, etc.)

Chapter IX

He entered, vociferating¹ oaths² dreadful to hear; and caught me in the act of stowing his son away in the kitchen cupboard. Hareton was impressed with a wholesome terror of encountering either his wild-beast's fondness, or his madman's rage—for in one he ran a chance of being squeezed and kissed to death, and in the other of being flung into the fire, or dashed against the wall—and the poor thing remained perfectly quiet wherever I chose to put him.

‘There, I’ve found it out at last!’ cried Hindley, pulling me back by the skin of the neck, like a dog. ‘By Heaven and Hell, you’ve sworn³ between you⁴ to murder that child! I know how it is, now, that he is always out of my way. But, with the help of Satan, I shall make you swallow the carving knife, Nelly! You needn’t laugh; for I’ve just crammed⁵ Kenneth, head-downmost⁶, in the Blackhorse marsh; and two is the same as one⁷—and I want to kill some of you, I shall have no rest till I do!’

‘But I don’t like the carving knife, Mr Hindley,’ I answered; ‘it has been cutting red herrings⁸—I’d rather be shot, if you please.’

‘You’d rather be damned!’ he said, ‘and so you shall—No law in England can hinder a man from keeping his house decent, and mine’s⁹ abominable! open your mouth.’

He held the knife in his hand, and pushed its point between my teeth: but, for my part, I was never much afraid of his vagaries¹⁰. I spat out, and affirmed it tasted detestably—I would not take it on any account¹¹.

¹ vociferate: to cry out loudly; to shout. (p. 71 注 6 参照)

² oath: an act of profane swearing; a curse. ‘God damn you!’ や ‘Jesus Christ!’ のように神聖な名を用いた呪いや罵り (のことば)。

³ swear: to promise or undertake something by an oath; to take an oath by way of a solemn promise or undertaking. ～を誓って約束する、誓う。

⁴ between you: in secret. こっそり、おれにないしょで。

⁵ cram: to thrust, force, stuff, crowd (anything) into a receptacle or space, etc. 押し込む。

⁶ downmost: farthest down. もっとも下へ。つまり ‘down’ の最上級。‘down, downer (or downermore), downmost.’ 頭が一番下になるから、結局 ‘head foremost, headlong’ (頭から、真っ逆さまに) に同じ。

⁷ two is the same as one: 一人やるのも二人やるのも同じことだ。

⁸ red herring: (a) herring to which a red colour is imparted in the process of curing them by smoke. 燻製ニシン。

⁹ mine’s = my house is.

¹⁰ vagary: a capricious, fantastic, or eccentric action or piece of conduct. 突飛なふるまい。

¹¹ not ... on any account: (= on no account) certainly not, in no circumstances. けっして (どんなことがあっても) ～しない。

‘Oh!’ said he, releasing me, ‘I see that hideous little villain is not Hareton—I beg your pardon, Nell—if it be, he deserves flaying alive for not running to welcome me, and for screaming as if I were a goblin. Unnatural¹ cub², come hither! I’ll teach thee to impose³ on a good-hearted, deluded⁴ father—Now, don’t you think the lad would be handsomer cropped⁵? It makes a dog fiercer, and I love something fierce—Get me a scissors—something fierce and trim⁶! Besides, it’s infernal affectation⁷—devilish conceit, it is, to cherish our ears—we’re asses enough without them. Hush, child, hush! Well, then, it is my darling! wisht, dry thy eyes—there’s a joy⁸; kiss me; what! it won’t? Kiss me, Hareton! Damn thee, kiss me! By God, as if I would rear such a monster!⁹ As sure as I’m living¹⁰, I’ll break the brat’s neck.’

Poor Hareton was squalling¹¹ and kicking in his father’s arms with all his might¹², and redoubled his yells when he carried him upstairs and lifted him over the bannister¹³. I cried out that he would frighten the child into fits, and ran to rescue him.

As I reached them, Hindley leant forward on the rails to listen to a noise below; almost forgetting what he had in his hands.

‘Who is that?’ he asked, hearing some one approaching the stair’s foot.

I leant forward, also, for the purpose of signing to Heathcliff, whose step I recognized, not to come farther, and at the instant when my eye quitted Hareton, he gave a sudden

¹ unnatural: (of persons) devoid of natural feeling; acting at variance with the dictates of nature. 素直でない、ひねくれた。

² cub: an undeveloped, uncouth, unpolished youth.

³ impose: to practise imposture; with upon, on, to cheat or deceive by false representations. ここは、「父親をだますとどうなるか思い知らせてやろう」ということ。

⁴ deluded: deceived by mocking prospects, beguiled, misled.

⁵ crop: to cut the ears of animals as a means of identification, and of persons as a punishment. ここでは「髪を刈る」ではなく、「耳を切り取る」こと。

⁶ trim: neatly or smartly made, prepared, or arranged; elegantly or finely arrayed, dressed, or ‘got up’; having a neat, spruce, or tidy appearance or effect. さっぱりした、こぎれいな。

⁷ affectation: unreal assumption; hollow or false display; simulation, pretence. ここでは、聞く耳を持たぬくせに耳を大事にしているのは見せかけだ、うぬぼれだということ。

⁸ there’s a joy: ‘There’s a dear (= a good boy).’ などと同じ。「さあ、いい子だから」ほどの意味。joy: used (esp. *dial.*) as a term of endearment for a sweetheart, child, etc.; a darling.

⁹ as if I would rear such a monster!: ‘it isn’t’ が省略されている。‘it isn’t as if ...’ は「～なんてわけないだろう」ほどの意味だから、「おれがこんなやつを育てるなんてとんでもないことだ!」

¹⁰ as sure as I’m living: most certainly.

¹¹ squall: (of persons, esp. children) to scream loudly or discordantly.

¹² with all one’s might: strenuously, vigorously.

¹³ bannister (= banister) : (usually in *pl.*) slender upright posts or rails, esp. those guarding the side of a staircase, and supporting the handrail; often applied to the whole structure of uprights and handrail; (*collect. sing.*) = banisters.

spring, delivered himself from the careless grasp that held him, and fell.

There was scarcely¹ time to experience a thrill of horror before we saw that the little wretch was safe. Heathcliff arrived underneath just at the critical moment; by a natural impulse, he arrested his descent, and setting him on his feet, looked up to discover the author of the accident.

A miser² who has parted with a lucky lottery ticket for five shillings and finds next day he has lost in the bargain five thousand pounds, could not show a blanker³ countenance than he did on beholding the figure of Mr Earnshaw above—It expressed, plainer than words could do, the intensest anguish⁴ at having made himself the instrument of thwarting⁵ his own revenge. Had it been dark, I dare say⁶, he would have tried to remedy the mistake by smashing Hareton's skull on the steps; but we witnessed his salvation; and I was presently below with my precious charge pressed to my heart.

Hindley descended more leisurely, sobered and abashed⁷.

‘It is your fault, Ellen,’ he said, ‘you should have kept him out of sight; you should have taken him from me! Is he injured anywhere?’

‘Injured!’ I cried angrily, ‘if he's not killed, he'll be an idiot! Oh! I wonder his mother does not rise from her grave to see how you use⁸ him. You're worse than a heathen⁹—treating your own flesh and blood in that manner!’

He attempted to touch the child, who, on finding himself with me, sobbed off his terror¹⁰ directly. At the first finger his father laid on him, however, he shrieked again louder than

¹ scarcely: (with reference to time) barely, only just (chiefly with pluperfect tense, before a clause introduced by *when* or *before*.) ここは、「恐怖にぞっと震える間もなく～」

² miser: one who hoards wealth and lives miserably in order to increase his hoard; also, in wider use, an avaricious, grasping person, a niggard. 守銭奴、けちん坊。

³ blank: (looking) as if deprived of the faculty of speech or action; ‘shut up,’ utterly disconcerted, discomfited, resourceless, or non-plussed

⁴ anguish: severe mental suffering, excruciating or oppressive grief or distress. (p. 42 注 8 参照)

⁵ thwart: to prevent the accomplishment of (a purpose); to foil, frustrate, balk, defeat.

⁶ I dare say: presumably. たぶん。 (p. 61 注 3 参照)

⁷ abash: to put out of countenance, confound, discomfit, embarrass 面目をつぶす、うろたえさせる、ばつの悪い思いをさせる。

⁸ use: to treat or deal with (a person or thing) in a specified manner; to behave or act towards (another) in a particular way.

⁹ heathen: [hɪˈðən] one who holds a religious belief which is neither Christian, Jewish, nor Muslim; a pagan.

¹⁰ sobbed off his terror: 泣きじゃくっているうちに恐さを忘れた。

before, and struggled as if he would go into convulsions¹.

‘You shall not meddle with him!’ I continued, ‘He hates you—they all hate you—that’s the truth! A happy family you have; and a pretty state you’re come to!’²

‘I shall come to a prettier yet!’³ Nelly,’ laughed the misguided⁴ man, recovering his hardness. ‘At present, convey yourself and him away.—And, hark you, Heathcliff! clear you too, quite from my reach and hearing ... I wouldn’t murder you to-night, unless, perhaps, I set the house on fire; but that’s as my fancy goes⁵—’

While saying this he took a pint bottle of brandy from the dresser, and poured some into a tumbler.

‘Nay, don’t!’ I entreated. ‘Mr Hindley, do take warning.⁶ Have mercy on this unfortunate boy, if you care nothing for yourself!’

‘Any one will do better for him than I shall,’ he answered.

‘Have mercy on your own soul!’ I said, endeavouring to snatch the glass from his hand.

‘Not I! on the contrary, I shall have great pleasure in sending it⁷ to perdition⁸ to punish its maker,’ exclaimed the blasphemer. ‘Here’s to its hearty damnation!’⁹

He drank the spirits, and impatiently bade us go; terminating his command with a sequel of horrid imprecations¹⁰ too bad to repeat or remember.

¹ convulsion: (usually pl.) an affection marked by involuntary contractions or spasms of the muscles, alternating with relaxation, and producing violent irregular motion and agitation of a limb or of the whole body. ひきつけ。

² a pretty state you’re come to!: ほんとうにめぐまれたご境遇におなりですわね! 実際は ‘come to a pretty state’ は「困ったことになる」だから、もちろん皮肉。なお ‘you’re come to’ は ‘you have come to’ にほぼ同じ。

³ yet: used to strengthen a comparative: now more commonly expressed by *even* or *still*). ‘a prettier = a prettier state.’

⁴ misguided: guided in a wrong direction; misdirected or misled in action or thought; hence, having a wrong purpose or intention; erring in thought or action. 道を誤った。

⁵ as my fancy goes: おれの気分次第。

⁶ take warning: (危ういと知って) 行いを改める (p. 102 注 4 参照)。ここでは、どうかお慎みください。

⁷ it: my own soul. ‘its maker’ は ‘God’ のこと。

⁸ perdition: eternal death; damnation; hell.

⁹ Here’s to ...: ～ (ここでは地獄に堕ちる魂) に乾杯。

¹⁰ imprecation: a curse.

‘It’s a pity he cannot kill himself with drink,’ observed Heathcliff, muttering an echo of curses back when the door was shut. ‘He’s doing his very utmost; but his constitution defies him—Mr Kenneth says he would wager his mare, that¹ he’ll outlive² any man on this side Gimmerton, and go to the grave a hoary³ sinner; unless some happy chance out of the common course befall him.’

I went into the kitchen and sat down to lull⁴ my little lamb to sleep. Heathcliff, as I thought, walked through to the barn. It turned out, afterwards, that he only got as far as the other side the settle, when he flung himself⁵ on a bench by the wall, removed from the fire⁶, and remained silent.

I was rocking Hareton on my knee, and humming a song that began;

‘It was far in the night, and the bairnies grat,
The mither beneath the mools heard that,’⁷

when Miss Cathy, who had listened to the hubbub⁸ from her room, put her head in, and whispered,

‘Are you alone, Nelly?’

‘Yes, Miss,’ I replied.

She entered and approached the hearth. I, supposing she was going to say something, looked up. The expression of her face seemed disturbed and anxious. Her lips were half asunder⁹ as if she meant to speak; and she drew a breath, but it escaped in a sigh, instead of a sentence.

I resumed my song, not having forgotten her recent behaviour.

¹ Mr Kenneth says ... that: 自分の雌馬を賭けたっていいが、～だ。

² outlive: (of a person): to live longer than (another person); to survive.

³ hoary: having white or grey hair, grey-haired.

⁴ lull: to soothe with sounds or caresses; to induce to sleep or to pleasing quiescence.

⁵ fling oneself: to throw oneself. 身を投げ出す。ここでは、ベンチの上に横になった。

⁶ removed from the fire: ‘bench’ にかかる。台所の暖炉を取り囲むように置かれた二つのベンチ (p. 42) のうち一つが壁際に移されていた。Nelly は Heathcliff が台所に入ってきたのは見たものの、彼がそのまま通り抜けて (walked through) 納屋へ行ったものと思いこんでいた。しかし実際には Heathcliff は settle に座っていた Nelly の背後に回ったのである。

⁷ It was far into the night...heard that: 夜がふけてこどもの泣く声を、かあさんが聞いたよ土の下で。mither = mother. (PENGUIN 版注:) The opening lines of the ballad ‘The Ghaist’s Warning’. brat: wept, mools: earth, soil.

⁸ hubbub: noisy turmoil; confusion, disturbance; an instance of this.

⁹ asunder: (of two or more things) apart or separate from each other. 唇が (半分) 開いていた。

‘Where's Heathcliff?’ she said, interrupting me.

‘About¹ his work in the stable,’ was my answer.

He did not contradict² me; perhaps he had fallen into a doze.

There followed another long pause, during which I perceived a drop or two trickle³ from Catherine's cheek to the flags.

Is she sorry for her shameful conduct? I asked myself. That will be a novelty, but she may come to the point as she will⁴—I shan't help her!

No, she felt small trouble regarding any subject save her own concerns.⁵

‘Oh dear!’ she cried at last, ‘I'm very unhappy!’

‘A pity,’ observed I, ‘you're hard to please—so many friends and so few cares, and can't make yourself content!’

‘Nelly, will you keep a secret for me?’ she pursued, kneeling down by me, and lifting her winsome⁶ eyes to my face with that sort of look which turns off bad temper, even when one has all the right in the world to indulge it⁷.

‘Is it worth keeping?’ I inquired less sulkily.

‘Yes, and it worries me, and I must let it out! I want to know what I should do—To-day, Edgar Linton has asked me to marry him, and I've given him an answer—Now, before I tell you whether it was a consent, or denial—you tell me which it ought to have been.’

‘Really, Miss Catherine, how can I know?’ I replied. ‘To be sure, considering the

¹ about: occupied with; dealing with, attending to.

² contradict: [kɒntrədɪkt] to deny the words or statement of (a person).

³ trickle: (originally said of tears) to flow or fall in successive drops.

⁴ she may ... will: いうべきことを切り出す気があるのなら、そうすればいい。 *the point*: the precise matter in discussion or to be discussed; the essential or important thing.

⁵ No, she ... own concerns.: いや、この人は自分に関わりのあること以外は気にもかけない（と、私は思った）。過去形であるが、Nelly の自問自答だから現在形として考える。

⁶ winsome: attractive.

⁷ when one ... indulge it: どれだけ腹を立てたってあたりまえというとき。 *in the world*: on earth, in existence; as an intensive phrase after a superlative or all, no, not a, everything, nothing, etc.

exhibition¹ you performed in his presence this afternoon, I might say² it would be wise to refuse him—since he asked you after that, he must either be hopelessly stupid, or a venturesome³ fool.’

‘If you talk so, I won’t tell you any more,’ she returned peevishly, rising to her feet. ‘I accepted him, Nelly; be quick, and say whether I was wrong!’

‘You accepted him? Then what good is it discussing the matter? You have pledged⁴ your word, and cannot retract.’

‘But say whether I should have done so—do!’ she exclaimed in an irritated tone; chafing⁵ her hands together, and frowning.

‘There are many things to be considered, before that question can be answered properly,’ I said sententiously⁶. ‘First and foremost⁷, do you love Mr Edgar?’

‘Who can help it? Of course I do,’ she answered.

Then I put her through⁸ the following catechism⁹—for a girl of twenty-two it was not injudicious¹⁰.

‘Why do you love him, Miss Cathy?’

‘Nonsense, I do—that’s sufficient.’

‘By no means; you must say why.’

¹ exhibition: [ˈɛksɪbɪʃən] visible show or display (of a feeling, quality, etc.); an instance of this. ‘the exhibition you played’ あなたがしてみせたこと。

² I might say: ～と申し上げたほうがいいかもしれません。【参考】If I might give an opinion, I should say ... 意見を述べる資格が有ったなら斯う申すのだが（と謙遜し乍ら意見を述べる言葉）。（齋藤秀三郎『英和中辞典』）※ ‘I should say’ については p. 88 注 6 参照。

³ venturesome: (of persons) disposed or ready to venture or take risks; bold, daring. 向う見ずな。

⁴ pledge: to promise solemnly by the pledge of (one’s honour, word, etc.) （～にかけて）誓約する。pledge one’s word 自分のことばにかけて誓う。

⁵ chafe: to rub with the hand; esp. to rub (a person’s limbs, etc.) in order to restore warmth or sensation. ここでは両手をこすり合わせていらだちを表すしぐさ。

⁶ sententiously: tersely and pithily. そっけなく。

⁷ first and foremost: first of all.

⁸ put through: to cause to undergo or endure. （試練などを）受けさせる。

⁹ catechism: (fig.) a course of question and answer; a series or form of interrogatories put to candidates, etc. （教義問答式の）口頭試問。

¹⁰ injudicious: not manifesting practical judgement or discretion; showing want of judgement in action, behaviour, etc.; unwise, ill-advised, ill-judged. 分別や配慮に欠ける。

‘Well, because he is handsome, and pleasant to be with¹.’

‘Bad,’ was my commentary².

‘And because he is young and cheerful.’

‘Bad, still³.’

‘And, because he loves me.’

‘Indifferent⁴, coming there⁵.’

‘And he will be rich, and I shall like to be the greatest woman of the neighbourhood, and I shall be proud of having such a husband.’

‘Worst of all! And now, say how you love him.’

‘As everybody loves—You’re silly, Nelly.’

‘Not at all—Answer.’

‘I love the ground under his feet, and the air over his head, and everything he touches, and every word he says—I love all his looks, and all his actions, and him entirely and altogether. There now!’⁶

‘And why?’

‘Nay—you are making a jest of it; it is exceedingly ill-natured! It’s no jest to me!’ said the young lady, scowling⁷ and turning her face to the fire.

¹ pleasant to be with: 一緒にいて楽しい。

² commentary: a comment, remark.

³ still: (indicating the continuance of a previous action or condition.) now (or at the time in question) as formerly. まだ、依然として (ダメなまま)。‘worse still’ なら、「もっとダメ」。

⁴ indifferent: (by euphemism) not particularly good; poor, inferior; rather bad. ‘neither good nor bad’ (よくも悪くもない) という意味より。

⁵ coming there: ここはちょっとわかりにくいだが、「やっとそこ (その答) にたどりつくのでは」つまり「(もっと先に出ていておかしくない) その答がやっと出てくるようでは」と取っておく。

⁶ There now!: ここでは、「さあ、これでどう (満足でしょ)」 間投詞的に用いられる there は「いらだち、困惑、嘲笑、満足、促し」など、場面によってさまざまな意味合いを持つ。

⁷ scowl: to look with lowering brows and a malignant or threatening expression; to look angry or sullen.

‘I’m very far from jesting, Miss Catherine,’ I replied, ‘you love Mr Edgar, because he is handsome, and young, and cheerful, and rich, and loves you. The last, however, goes for nothing¹—You would love him without that, probably, and with it you wouldn’t, unless he possessed the four former attractions.’

‘No, to be sure not—I should only pity him—hate him, perhaps, if he were ugly and a clown².’

‘But there are several other handsome, rich young men in the world; handsomer, possibly, and richer than he is—What should hinder you from loving them?’

‘If there be any, they are out of my way—I’ve seen none like Edgar.’

‘You may see some; and he won’t always be handsome, and young, and may not always be rich.’

‘He is now; and I have only to do with the present—I wish you would speak rationally.’

‘Well, that settles it—if you have only to do with the present, marry Mr Linton.’

‘I don’t want your permission for that—I *shall* marry him; and yet, you have not told me whether I’m right.’

‘Perfectly right; if people be right to marry only for the present. And now, let us hear what you are unhappy about. Your brother will be pleased ... the old lady and gentleman will not object, I think—you will escape from a disorderly, comfortless home into a wealthy respectable one; and you love Edgar, and Edgar loves you. All seems smooth and easy—where is the obstacle³?’

‘*Here, and here!*’ replied Catherine, striking one hand on her forehead, and the other on her breast. ‘In whichever place the soul lives—in my soul, and in my heart, I’m convinced I’m wrong!’

¹ go for nothing: 理由として数には入らない、理由にはならない。go: to pass as or as equivalent to; to be accounted or valued as. (現在この意味では、‘to go for nothing, little, something, etc.’ のかたちでのみ使われる)

² clown: a man without refinement or culture; an ignorant, rude, uncouth, ill-bred man. (p. 18 注 2)

³ obstacle: something that stands in the way and obstructs progress; a hindrance, impediment, obstruction. 行く手をはばむもの、障害。

‘That’s very strange! I cannot make it out¹.’

‘It’s my secret; but if you will not mock at me, I’ll explain it; I can’t do it distinctly—but I’ll give you a feeling of how I feel.’

She seated herself by me again: her countenance grew sadder and graver, and her clasped hands trembled.

‘Nelly, do you never dream queer dreams?’ she said, suddenly, after some minutes’ reflection.

‘Yes, now and then,’ I answered.

‘And so do I. I’ve dreamt in my life dreams that have stayed with me ever after, and changed my ideas; they’ve gone through² and through me, like wine through water, and altered the colour of my mind. And this is one—I’m going to tell it—but take care not to smile at any part of it.’

‘Oh! don’t, Miss Catherine!’ I cried. ‘We’re dismal enough without conjuring up³ ghosts and visions to perplex us. Come, come, be merry and like yourself! Look at little Hareton—he’s dreaming nothing dreary. How sweetly he smiles in his sleep!’

‘Yes; and how sweetly his father curses in his solitude! You remember him, I dare say, when he was just such another as that chubby⁴ thing—nearly as young and innocent. However, Nelly, I shall oblige⁵ you to listen—it’s not long; and I’ve no power to be merry to-night.’

‘I won’t hear it, I won’t hear it!’ I repeated hastily.

I was superstitious about dreams then, and am still; and Catherine had an unusual gloom in her aspect, that made me dread something from which I might shape a prophecy,

¹ make out: to find out the meaning of; to discover the drift of; to arrive at an understanding of.

² through: so as to traverse or penetrate every part or district of; in or to all parts of (a region, or a body); throughout; everywhere in. したがって ‘go through’ は、～の隅々にまで入りこむ、しみこむ。

³ conjure up: to raise or bring into existence as by magic, occult influence, the art or tricks of the conjuror; to cause to appear to the fancy.

⁴ chubby: round-faced; plump and well-rounded.

⁵ oblige: to constrain, esp. by moral or legal force or influence; to force, compel (to do something). ここは「ぜひとも聞いてもらおうわよ」。(p. 62 注 7 参照)

and foresee a fearful catastrophe¹.

She was vexed, but she did not proceed. Apparently² taking up another subject, she recommenced in a short time.

‘If I were in heaven, Nelly, I should be extremely miserable.’

‘Because you are not fit to go there,’ I answered. ‘All sinners would be miserable in heaven.’

‘But it is not for that. I dreamt, once, that I was there.’

‘I tell you I won't harken³ to your dreams, Miss Catherine! I'll go to bed,’ I interrupted again.

She laughed, and held me down, for I made a motion to leave my chair.

‘This is nothing,’ cried she; ‘I was only going to say that heaven did not seem to be my home; and I broke my heart with weeping to come back to earth; and the angels were so angry that they flung me out, into the middle of the heath on the top of Wuthering Heights; where I woke sobbing for joy. That will do to explain my secret, as well as the other⁴. I've no more business⁵ to marry Edgar Linton than I have to be in heaven; and if the wicked man in there⁶ had not brought Heathcliff so low, I shouldn't have thought of it. It would degrade me to marry Heathcliff now; so he shall never know how I love him; and that, not because he's handsome, Nelly, but because he's more myself than I am. Whatever our souls are made of, his and mine are the same, and Linton's is as different as a moonbeam from lightning, or frost from fire.’

Ere this speech ended I became sensible of Heathcliff's presence. Having noticed a

¹ catastrophe: [kə'tæstrəfi] a final event; a conclusion generally unhappy; a disastrous end, finish-up, conclusion, upshot; overthrow, ruin, calamitous fate. 破局。

² apparently: **a.** clearly, plainly. **b.** so far as one can judge; seemingly. ここは後者（どうやら～らしく）。本作品にかぎらず、**b.** の意味で用いられることが多いから要注意。

³ harken: (= hearken) to apply the mind to what is said; to attend, have regard; to listen with sympathy or docility (to). 傾聴する。これも Maugham が「もったいぶった話しぶり」と指摘する一例。

⁴ That will do ... the other: 前頁で ‘And this is one (of such dreams)—I'm going to tell it.’ といっているから、ここは ‘that (dream)’ および ‘the other (queer dreams)’ であろう。do: to suffice.

⁵ business: (colloq.) justifying motive or right of action or interference (to do); ‘anything to do’ (with). ここでは「理由、いわれ」。⁶ ‘no more A than B’ は、B でないのと同様 A でない (p. 118 注 1 参照)。

⁶ the wicked man in there: Hindley.

slight movement, I turned my head, and saw him rise from the bench, and steal out, noiselessly. He had listened till he heard Catherine say it would degrade her to marry him, and then he staid to hear no further.

My companion, sitting on the ground¹, was prevented by the back of the settle from remarking his presence or departure; but I started, and bade her hush!

‘Why?’ she asked, gazing nervously round.

‘Joseph is here,’ I answered, catching, opportunely², the roll of his cartwheels up the road; ‘and Heathcliff will come in with him. I’m not sure whether he were not at the door this moment.’

‘Oh, he couldn’t overhear me at the door!’ said she. ‘Give me Hareton, while you get the supper, and when it is ready ask me to sup with you. I want to cheat my uncomfortable conscience, and be convinced that Heathcliff has no notion of these things—he has not, has he? He does not know what being in love is?’

‘I see no reason that he should³ not know, as well as you,’ I returned; ‘and if *you* are his choice, he’ll be the most unfortunate creature that ever was born! As soon as you become Mrs Linton, he loses friend, and love, and all! Have you considered how you’ll bear the separation, and how he’ll bear to be quite deserted in the world? Because, Miss Catherine —’

‘He quite deserted! we separated!’ she exclaimed, with an accent⁴ of indignation. ‘Who is to separate us, pray?⁵ They’ll meet the fate of Milo⁶. Not as long as I live, Ellen—for no mortal creature⁷. Every Linton on the face of the earth might melt into nothing, before I could consent to forsake⁸ Heathcliff. Oh, that’s not what I intend—that’s not what I

¹ ground: the floor.

² opportunely: at an opportune time or juncture, seasonably. ちょうどいいときに、折よく。

³ should: 【参考】 **don’t know why / see no reason why / can’t think why** に続けて（使われる **should** は）、話し手が事柄の正当性・妥当性に疑いをもち、意外に感じていることを表す。（『実例英文法』研究社）従ってこの文は「あなたが恋する気持を知っているのに、なぜそれを彼が知らないというのか、さっぱりわかりませんね」。

⁴ accent: sound, modulation or modification of the voice expressing feeling. 口調。

⁵ pray: (archaic & formal) please. 疑問や依頼の文に添えて。ここでは「だれが私たちを別れさせようっていうの、ねえ（お願いだからいってよ）？」

⁶ Milo: (PENGUIN 版注:) Greek athlete who attempted to tear the oak-tree in two but found himself trapped when the cleft closed over his hands.

⁷ for no mortal creature: for no one. だれのためにだって（～ない）。

⁸ forsake: to withdraw one’s presence and help or companionship from; to desert.

mean! I shouldn't be Mrs Linton were such a price demanded!¹ He'll be as much to me as he has been all his lifetime. Edgar must shake off his antipathy, and tolerate him, at least. He will when he learns my true feelings towards him. Nelly, I see now, you think me a selfish wretch, but, did it never strike² you that, if Heathcliff and I married, we should be beggars? whereas³, if I marry Linton, I can aid Heathcliff to rise, and place him out of my brother's power.'

'With your husband's money, Miss Catherine?' I asked. 'You'll find him not so pliable⁴ as you calculate upon: and, though I'm hardly a judge, I think that's the worst motive you've given yet for being the wife of young Linton.'

'It is not,' retorted she, 'it is the best! The others⁵ were the satisfaction of my whims; and for Edgar's sake, too, to satisfy him. This is for the sake of one who comprehends⁶ in his person⁷ my feelings to Edgar and myself. I cannot express it; but surely you and everybody have a notion that there is, or should be, an existence of yours beyond you. What were the use of my creation⁸ if I were entirely contained here? My great miseries in this world have been Heathcliff's miseries, and I watched and felt each from the beginning; my great thought in living is himself. If all else perished, and *he* remained, I should still continue to be; and if all else remained, and he were annihilated, the universe would turn to a mighty stranger. I should not seem a part of it.⁹ My love for Linton is like the foliage¹⁰ in the woods. Time will change it, I'm well aware, as winter changes the trees—my love for Heathcliff resembles the eternal rocks beneath—a source of little visible delight, but necessary. Nelly, I *am* Heathcliff —He's always, always in my mind—not as

¹ were such a price demanded: if such a price were demanded. 基本事項ではあるが念のため。

【参考】ifに助動詞 **were, had, should** が伴う場合は、if を省略して、助動詞と主語の位置を逆にすることができる。(『実例英文法』研究社)

² strike: (of a thought, an idea) to come into the mind of, occur to (a person).

³ whereas: while on the contrary; the fact on the other hand being that. それに反して。

⁴ pliable: (fig.) flexible in disposition or character; that is easily inclined, disposed, or influenced; ready to yield, docile. ここは「人のいいなりになる、お人好しな」。

⁵ the others: the other motives.

⁶ comprehend: to grasp with the mind, conceive fully or adequately, understand, 'take in'. (p. 78 注 11 参照)

⁷ in one's (own) person: in one's own character (not as representing another); as oneself. (他人の代理としてではなく) 本人自身が。ここでは「直接、じかに」。

⁸ creation: the action of bringing into existence by divine power or its equivalent; the fact of being so created. (この私が) 神によって創られ存在していること。

⁹ I should not seem a part of it.: きっと自分が宇宙の一部だという気はしなくなるわ。直前の文にそのままつづき仮定法過去。ちょっとわかりにくいだが、この 'seem' は 'to appear to oneself; to imagine oneself, or think one perceives oneself, to (do something).' つまり「自分には～する (である) ように見える、ような気がする、ように感じられる)」。【例】I *seem* to hear someone calling. 誰かの呼んでいる (のが聞こえる) ような気がする。(研究社『新英和大辞典』昭和 26 年 7 月改訂増補第 6 版)

¹⁰ foliage: [fəʊ'li:ʒ] the leaves (of a plant or tree) collectively; leafage.

a pleasure, any more than I am always a pleasure to myself¹—but, as my own being. So don't talk of our separation again—it is impracticable²; and—'

She paused, and hid her face in the folds of my gown, but I jerked³ it forcibly away. I was out of patience with her folly!

'If I can make any sense of⁴ your nonsense, Miss,' I said, 'it only goes⁵ to convince me that you are ignorant of the duties you undertake in marrying; or else, that you are a wicked, unprincipled⁶ girl. But trouble me with no more secrets. I'll not promise to keep them.'

'You'll keep that?' she asked eagerly.

'No, I'll not promise,' I repeated.

She was about to insist, when the entrance of Joseph finished our conversation; and Catherine removed her seat⁷ to a corner and nursed Hareton, while I made the supper.

After it was cooked, my fellow servant and I began to quarrel who should carry some to Mr Hindley; and we didn't settle it till all was nearly cold. Then we came to the agreement that we would let him ask, if he wanted any, for we feared particularly to go into his presence when he had been some time alone. '

'Und hah isn't that nowt comed in frough th' field, be this time? What is he abaht? girt eedle seeght!⁸' demanded the old man, looking round for Heathcliff.

'I'll call him,' I replied. 'He's in the barn, I've no doubt.'

¹ not as ... to myself: 私にとって自分が必ずしも喜びではないように、(私にとって) 彼もまた喜びとしてではなく。 'not A any more than B' は、B ではないのと同様 (少しも変わらず)、A ではない。 'no more A than B' も同じ。

² impracticable: that cannot be carried out, effected, accomplished, or done; practically impossible.

³ jerk: to move (anything) by a sharp suddenly arrested motion, like that with which a whip is wielded; to thrust, pull, or shake by such a motion; to give a sudden thrust, push, pull, or twist to. 古くは「むち打つ」の意味。

⁴ make any sense of: to find any meaning in.

⁵ go: to conduce, tend to. 結果として～(すること)になる。

⁶ unprincipled: not possessed of fixed, sound, or honourable principles of conduct. 無節操な。

⁷ removed her seat: 椅子を移動したのではなく、「座る場所」を変えたのである。(p. 52 注 4 参照)

⁸ Und hah ... eedle seeght!: And how isn't (= hasn't) that nowt (= *dial.* stupid person) come in from the field by this time? What is he about? great idle sight!

I went and called, but got no answer. On returning¹, I whispered to Catherine that he had heard a good part of what she said, I was sure; and told how I saw him quit the kitchen just as she complained of her brother's conduct regarding him.

She jumped up in a fine² fright—flung Hareton onto the settle, and ran to seek for her friend herself, not taking leisure to³ consider why she was so flurried, or how her talk would have affected him⁴.

She was absent such a while that Joseph proposed we should wait no longer. He cunningly⁵ conjectured⁶ they were staying away in order to avoid hearing his protracted blessing. They were 'ill enough for any fahl manners⁷,' he affirmed. And, on their behalf, he added that night a special prayer to the usual quarter of an hour's supplication⁸ before meat, and would have tacked⁹ another to the end of the grace¹⁰, had not his young mistress broken in upon¹¹ him with a hurried command that he¹² must run down the road, and wherever Heathcliff had rambled, find and make him re-enter directly!

'I want to speak to him, and I *must*, before I go upstairs,' she said. 'And the gate is open, he is somewhere out of hearing; for he would not reply, though I shouted at the top of the fold as loud as I could.'

Joseph objected at first; she was too much in earnest, however, to suffer¹³ contradiction¹⁴; and, at last, he placed his hat on his head, and walked grumbling forth.

¹ on returning: この 'on' について *OED* の挙げる例: **on reaching** ... = when I (he, &c.) reached ...; **on my return** = when I returned; **on hearing this** = when (and because) I heard this, I changed my plans. 時間は近接していても、常に「～するやいなや」と解すべきとは思われない。

² fine: pure, sheer, absolute; perfect.

³ not taking leisure to ...: ～するいとまもあらばこそ。

⁴ how her talk would have affected him: どれほどショックを与えただろうことか。'would have affected' は過去における推定 (～だったろう)。

⁵ cunningly: (obs. or arch.) knowingly. わけ知り顔で。

⁶ conjecture: to form an opinion or supposition as to facts on grounds admittedly insufficient; to guess, surmise. (p.3 注 16 参照)

⁷ ill enough for any fahl manners: ill enough for any foul manners.

⁸ supplication: (a) humble prayer addressed to God (or a deity); chiefly *pl.*

⁹ tack: to attach or add as a supplement; to adjoin, append, annex. この 'would have tacked' は、'had not ...' という条件があるから仮定法過去完了。

¹⁰ grace: a short prayer either asking a blessing before, or rendering thanks after, a meal. 食前食後の祈り。

¹¹ break in on: to force one's way in, enter forcibly or abruptly; to make an irruption. 外へ出た Catherine が不意に戻って Joseph をじゃました。

¹² he: = Joseph.

¹³ suffer: to allow (a thing) to be done, exist, or take place; to allow to go on without interference or objection, put up with, tolerate. この意味では古風または文語的とされる。

¹⁴ contradiction: the action of speaking against or in opposition to (an action, proposal, etc.); gainsaying; opposition.

Meantime, Catherine paced¹ up and down² the floor, exclaiming—

‘I wonder where he is—I wonder where he *can* be! What did I say, Nelly? I’ve forgotten. Was he vexed at my bad humour this afternoon? Dear! tell me what I’ve said to grieve him. I do wish he’d come. I do wish he would!’

‘What a noise for nothing!’ I cried, though rather uneasy myself. ‘What a trifle scares you! It’s surely no great cause of alarm that Heathcliff should take a moonlight saunter³ on the moors, or even lie too sulky to speak to us, in the hay-loft⁴. I’ll engage⁵ he’s lurking there. See if I don’t ferret him out⁶!’

I departed to renew my search; its result was disappointment, and Joseph’s quest ended in the same.

‘Yon lad gets war un war!’⁷ observed he on re-entering. ‘He’s left th’ yate ut t’ full swing, and miss’s pony has trodden dahn two rigs uh corn, un plottered through, raight o’er intuh t’ meadow!’⁸ Hahsomdiver, t’ maister ‘ull play t’ devil to-morn, and he’ll do weel.⁹ He’s patience itsself wi’ sich careless, offald craters¹⁰—patience itsself he is! Bud he’ll nut be soa allus [= always]—yah’s see, all on ye! Yah munn’t drive him aht uf his heead fur nowt!’¹¹

‘Have you found Heathcliff, you ass?’ interrupted Catherine. ‘Have you been looking for him, as I ordered?’

‘Aw sud [= I should] more likker look for th’ horse,’ he replied. ‘It ‘ud [= would] be tuh more sense. Bud, Aw can look for norther horse, nur man uf a neeght loike this—as black as t’

¹ pace: to walk with a slow, steady, or regular pace.

² up and down: hither and thither; to and fro; backward and forward. 行ったり来たり。

³ saunter: a leisurely, careless, loitering walk or ramble; a stroll.

⁴ hay-loft: a loft or storing place for hay over a stable or barn.

⁵ engage: to guarantee.

⁶ ferret out: to search out, discover.

⁷ Yon lad gets war un war!: That lad gets worse and worse.

⁸ He’s left ... t’ meadow!: He’s left the gate at the full swing, and miss’s pony has trodden down two rigs of corn, and plottered (= blundered) through, right over into the meadow!

⁹ Hahsomdiver ... do weel.: Howsomdever (= however), the master will play the devil (= to act diabolically) to-morrow and he’ll do well.

¹⁰ He’s patience ... craters: He’s patience itself with such careless, offald (=worthless) creatures. こんなくずどもによく我慢しとられるものだ。

¹¹ Yah munn’t ... nowt!: You mustn’t drive him out of his head for nowt (= nothing)! 旦那を怒らせてなにごともなしにはすまぬ、旦那を怒らせたらただではすまない。

chimbley! und Heathcliff's noan t' chap to coom at *maw* whistle¹—happen he'll be less hard uh hearing wi' ye!²

It *was* a very dark evening for³ summer; the clouds appeared inclined⁴ to thunder, and I said we had better all sit down; the approaching rain would be certain to bring him home without further trouble.

However, Catherine would not be persuaded into tranquillity⁵. She kept wandering to and fro, from the gate to the door, in a state of agitation which permitted no repose, and at length took up a permanent situation on one side of the wall, near the road; where, heedless⁶ of my expostulations⁷, and the growling thunder, and the great drops that began to splash⁸ around her, she remained, calling at intervals, and then listening, and then crying outright⁹. She beat¹⁰ Hareton, or any child, at a good passionate fit of crying.

About midnight, while we still sat up, the storm came rattling¹¹ over the Heights in full fury. There was a violent wind, as well as thunder, and either one or the other split a tree off at the corner of the building; a huge bough fell across the roof, and knocked down a portion of the east chimney-stack¹², sending a clatter¹³ of stones and soot into the kitchen fire.

We thought a bolt¹⁴ had fallen in the middle of us, and Joseph swung onto his knees¹⁵,

¹ Bud, Aw ... whistle: But, I can look for neither horse, nor man of a night like this—as black as the chimney! (こんな真っ暗な晩に) and Heathcliff's not the chap to come at my whistle.

² happen ... yeh!: perhaps he'll be less hard of hearing with you! おれの口笛は聞こえなくても (聞こえないふりをしても) あんたの声ならやつにはもっとよく聞こえるかもしれんが。

³ for: in proportion to, considering; considering the nature or capacity of. ここでは「(日の長い) 夏にしては」。

⁴ inclined: having a physical tendency (*to* something, or *to do* something). ～しそうな。

⁵ tranquillity: the quality or state of being tranquil; freedom from disturbance or agitation; serenity, calmness; quietness, peacefulness.

⁶ heedless: paying no heed or attention; careless, inattentive, regardless.

⁷ expostulation: the action of expostulating or remonstrating in a friendly manner; earnest and kindly protest; an instance of the same. やさしく言い聞かせること。

⁸ splash: (of water or other liquid) to dash against or upon any body.

⁹ outright: to the full extent, fully out, completely, entirely, quite; without reservation or limitation; openly, without reserve of manner or expression. 思い切り。

¹⁰ beat: to overcome, to conquer in battle, or in any other contest, at doing anything.

¹¹ rattle: to move, fall, etc. rapidly and with a rattling noise. バラバラ、ガタガタなどと音を立てて勢いよく動く、降るなど。ここでは嵐がすさまじい音を立てて襲来したこと。

¹² chimney-stack: a number of chimneys grouped in one structure; the part of a chimney which projects above a roof.

¹³ clatter: a rattling sound as of many hard objects struck together.

¹⁴ bolt: a discharge of lightning, a thunderbolt.

¹⁵ swung onto his knees: 'went down on his knees impetuously' ほどの意味。

beseeking the Lord to remember the patriarchs Noah and Lot¹; and, as in former times, spare the righteous, though he smote² the ungodly. I felt some sentiment that it must be a judgment on us also. The Jonah³, in my mind, was Mr Earnshaw, and I shook the handle of his den⁴, that I might ascertain if he were yet living. He replied audibly enough in a fashion⁵ which made my companion vociferate more clamorously⁶ than before that a wide distinction might be drawn between saints like himself and sinners like his master. But, the uproar passed away in twenty minutes, leaving us all unharmed, excepting Cathy, who got thoroughly drenched for her obstinacy⁷ in refusing to take shelter, and standing bonnetless and shawlless to catch as much water as she could with her hair and clothes.

She came in and lay down on the settle, all soaked as she was, turning her face to the back⁸, and putting her hands before it.

‘Well, Miss!’ I exclaimed, touching her shoulder. ‘You are not bent⁹ on getting your death, are you? Do you know what o’clock it is? Half-past twelve. Come, come to bed; there’s no use waiting longer on¹⁰ that foolish boy—he’ll be gone to Gimmerton, and he’ll stay there now. He guesses we shouldn’t wake for him till this late hour; at least, he guesses that only Mr Hindley would be up; and he’d rather avoid having the door opened by the master.’

‘Nay, nay; he’s noan [= not] at Gimmerton,’ said Joseph. ‘Aw’s niver wonder, bud he’s at t’ bothom uf a bog-hoile¹¹. This visitation worn’t for nowt, and Aw wod hev ye tuh look aht,

¹ the patriarchs Noah and Lot: patriarch は「族長・長老」[2 Peter 2:5-7] And spared not the old world, but saved Noah, the eighth *person*, a preacher of righteousness, bringing in the flood upon the world of the ungodly (また古き世を容さずして、ただ義の宣傳者なるノアと他の七人とをのみ護り、敬虔ならぬ者の世に洪水を來らせ); And turning the cities of Sodom and Gomorrah into ashes condemned *them* with an overthrow, making *them* an ensample unto those that after should live ungodly (またソドムとゴモラとの町を滅亡に定めて灰となし、後の不敬虔をおこなふ者の鑑とし); And delivered just Lot, vexed with the filthy conversation of the wicked: (ただ無法の者どもの好色の舉動を憂ひし正しきロトのみを救ひ給へり)

² smite: (of the Deity) to visit with death, destruction, or overthrow. *he* = the Lord.

³ Jonah: [Johah 1:15] So they took up Jonah, and cast him forth into the sea: and the sea ceased from her raging. (すなはちヨナを取りて海に投入たり しかして海のあることやみぬ) そのあと Jonah は神のはからいで大魚に呑みこまれ、三日三晩を魚の体内で過ごす。(PENGUIN 版注:) person who brings, or is sacrificed lest he bring, ill luck.

⁴ den: (colloq.) a small room or lodging in which a man can seclude himself for work or leisure

⁵ He replied audibly enough in a fashion ...: 大声で罰当たりな言葉を返したから……ということ。

⁶ clamorously: noisily; with loud importunity. 頑固、強情さ。

⁷ obstinacy: pertinacity, obduracy, stubbornness; persistency.

⁸ the back: the back of the settle. 長椅子の背 (もたれ)。

⁹ be bent on: to be intent, determined, resolved (*on* or *upon* an object or action; *to do*).

¹⁰ wait on = wait for.

¹¹ at t’ bothom uf a bog-hoile: at the bottom of a bog-hole. ‘bog-hole’ は湿地に隠れた穴。北海道でいう湿原のヤチマナコ (谷地眼。いったんはまったら抜け出せない) に相当するものだろう。

Miss,—yah muh [= may] be t' next.¹ Thank Hivin for all! All warks together for gooid tuh them as is choozen, and piked aht froo' th' rubbidge.² Yah know whet t' Scripture ses—'

And he began quoting several texts; referring us to chapters and verses, where we might find them.

I, having vainly begged the wilful girl to rise and remove her wet things, left him preaching, and her shivering, and betook³ myself to bed with little Hareton, who slept as fast as if every one had been sleeping round him.

I heard Joseph read on a while afterwards; then, I distinguished his slow step on the ladder, and then I dropped asleep.

Coming down somewhat later than usual, I saw, by the sunbeams piercing the chinks⁴ of the shutters, Miss Catherine still seated near the fire-place. The house door was ajar, too; light entered from its unclosed windows; Hindley had come out, and stood on the kitchen hearth, haggard⁵ and drowsy⁶.

'What ails⁷ you, Cathy?' he was saying when I entered. 'You look as dismal as a drowned whelp⁸. Why are you so damp and pale, child?'

'I've been wet!' she answered reluctantly, 'and I'm cold, that's all.'

¹ This visitation ... next.: This visitation wasn't for naught, and I would have you to look out*, Miss,—you may (?might) be the next. この (Heathcliff に下った) 天罰にやちゃんとわけがある。お嬢さん、次はあんたかもしれねえから気をつけなせえ。 *visitation*: a heavy affliction, blow, or trial, regarded as an instance of divine dispensation; retributive punishment operating by this means. この 'visitation' を直前のはげしい雷を伴う嵐とする解釈もあるが、「次はあんた」というのだから、具体的な天罰を指すと解すべきだろう。* 'I would have you [to] look out.' 正しくは原形不定詞を取り、to 不定詞がつづいているのは古いかたち。 *have*: (with *will*, *would*, or the like) to wish, will, require that something be done (to oneself or others). 誰々にぜひ何々してもらいたいと願う。齋藤秀三郎『英和中辞典』では '**will have** = *insist*' と説明している。

² All warks ... th' rubbidge: All works together for good to them as is chosen (= those that are chosen), and picked out from the rubbish. つまり、墮落した者たちの中から選ばれた (正しい) 人々にはよい報いがある。[Romans 8:28] And we know that all things work together for good to them that love God, to them who are the called according to *his* purpose. (神を愛する者、すなはち御旨によりて召されたる者の爲には、凡てのこと相働きて益となるを我らは知る)

³ betake (oneself): (refl.) to resort, make one's way, turn one's course, go.

⁴ chink: a long and narrow aperture through the depth or thickness of an object; a slit, an opening in a joint between boards, etc. (合せ目の) 隙間。

⁵ haggard: looking exhausted and distraught, esp. from fatigue, worry, privation, etc.

⁶ drowsy: inclined to sleep, esp. at a time when one wishes, or ought, to be awake; heavy with sleepiness; half asleep, dozing.

⁷ ail: to trouble, afflict, affect unusually. *What ails you?* どうかしたのか?

⁸ whelp: the young of the dog, puppy; a boy or girl.

‘Oh, she is naughty!’ I cried, perceiving the master to be tolerably¹ sober; ‘She got steeped² in the shower of yesterday evening, and there she has sat, the night through, and I couldn’t prevail on³ her to stir.’

Mr Earnshaw stared at us in surprise. ‘The night through,’ he repeated. ‘What kept her up, not fear of the thunder, surely? That was over, hours since.’

Neither of us wished to mention Heathcliff’s absence, as long as we could conceal it; so, I replied I didn’t know how she took it into her head⁴ to sit up; and she said nothing.

The morning was fresh and cool; I threw back the lattice⁵, and presently⁶ the room filled with sweet scents from the garden: but Catherine called peevishly to me.

‘Ellen, shut the window. I’m starving!’⁷ And her teeth chattered as she shrank closer to the almost extinguished embers.

‘She’s ill—’ said Hindley, taking her wrist, ‘I suppose that’s the reason she would not go to bed—Damn it! I don’t want to be troubled with more sickness here—What took you into the rain?’

‘Running after t’ lads as usual!’ croaked Joseph, catching an opportunity, from our hesitation, to thrust in his evil tongue⁸.

‘If Aw wur yah, maister, Aw’d just slam t’boards i’ their faces all on ‘em, gentle and simple.⁹ Never a day ut yah’re off, but yon cat uh Linton comes sneaking hither¹⁰—and Miss Nelly, shoo’s a fine lass! shoo [= she] sits watching for ye i’ t’ kitchen; and as yah’re in at one door, he’s aht [= out] at t’other—Und, then, wer grand lady goes a-coorting uf hor

¹ tolerably: passably, moderately, fairly, pretty well.

² steep: to soak in water or other liquid.

³ prevail on: to succeed in persuading, inducing, or influencing. 説き伏せる (p. 97 注 7 参照)。

⁴ take it into one’s head: to conceive the idea or notion of; to have (something) occur to one’s mind. ～しようなどという気になる。

⁵ threw back the lattice: サッと格子窓を開けた。

⁶ presently: in the space of time that immediately follows, in a little while, before long, after a short time, soon, shortly.

⁷ atarve: (now only north.) to die of exposure to cold; chiefly used hyperbolically, to suffer extreme cold, to be benumbed or ‘dead’ with cold.

⁸ thrust in his evil tongue: (私たちがためらっているのをこれ幸いと) 横合いから得意の悪態をつきました。

⁹ If Aw wur ... simple: If I were you, master, I’d just slam the board in their faces (門前払いをくわせてやる) all of them, gentle and simple (だれもかれも、身分の上下におかまいなく)。

¹⁰ Never a day...hither: Never a day that you’re off.... 旦那が留守の日はきつと、泥棒猫のリントンがこそこそやって来るんでさ。

side!¹ It's bonny behaviour, lurking amang t' fields, after twelve ut' night wi' that fahl [= foul], flaysome divil uf a gipsy, Heathcliff! They think *Aw'm* blind, but Aw'm noan—nowt ut t' soart!² Aw seed [= saw] young Linton, boath coming and going, and Aw seed *yah* (directing his discourse to me), 'yah gooid fur nowt, slattenly witch, nip³ up und bolt intuh th' hahs [= house], t' minute yah heard t' maister's horse fit clatter up t' road.'

'Silence, eavesdropper!' cried Catherine, 'None of your insolence, before me! Edgar Linton came yesterday by chance, Hindley; and it was *I* who told him to be off: because I knew you would not like to have met him as you were⁴.'

'You lie, Cathy, no doubt,' answered her brother, 'and you are a confounded⁵ simpleton! But, never mind Linton, at present—Tell me, were you not with Heathcliff last night? Speak the truth, now. You need not be afraid of harming him—Though I hate him as much as ever, he did me a good turn⁶, a short time since, that will make my conscience tender⁷ of breaking his neck. To prevent it, I shall send him about his business⁸ this very morning; and after he's gone, I'd advise you all to look sharp⁹. I shall only have the more humour¹⁰ for you!'

'I never saw Heathcliff last night,' answered Catherine, beginning to sob bitterly: 'and if you do turn him out of doors, I'll go with him. But, perhaps, you'll never have an opportunity—perhaps, he's gone.' Here she burst into uncontrollable grief, and the remainder of her words were inarticulate.

Hindley lavished¹¹ on her a torrent of scornful abuse, and bid her get to her room immediately, or she shouldn't cry for nothing!¹² I obliged¹³ her to obey; and I shall never

¹ Und...her side!; And, then, our grand lady (= Cathy) goes a courting of her side! 嬢様は嬢様で Heathcliff を誘惑している、ということ。

² They think ... t' soart!: They think I'm blind, but I'm not—nothing of the sort!

³ nip: (slang) to move rapidly or nimbly. 見張り役の Nelly が居間へ駆け込んで、Hindley の帰宅を Edgar に知らせて逃がしたこと。

⁴ as you were: as you were drunk.

⁵ confounded: applied by way of execration to any person or thing strongly objected to. いまいましい、とんでもない (など人やものをのしるときに用いる)。

⁶ a good turn: an act of good will, or that does good to another. 'do a good turn' 親切をつくす、一肌脱ぐ。Hareton を救ってくれたことをいう。

⁷ tender: scrupulous; reluctant, loth.

⁸ send him about his business: 仕事を首にして追い払う。(p. 69 の 'you'll never be content till you're sent about your business.' 参照)

⁹ look sharp: to keep strict watch; to bestir oneself briskly. うかうか (ぼやぼや) しない。

¹⁰ humour: (PENGUIN 版注:) ill temper.

¹¹ lavish: to bestow, deal out, distribute, or spend profusely and recklessly. (p. 4 注 10 参照)

¹² or she shouldn't cry for nothing!: ほんとに泣くような目に会わせてやるぞ。

¹³ oblige: to force, compel (to do something). (p. 62 注 7、p. 114 注 5 参照)

forget what a scene she acted, when we reached her chamber. It terrified me—I thought she was going mad, and I begged Joseph to run for the doctor.

It proved the commencement of delirium¹; Mr Kenneth, as soon as he saw her, pronounced her dangerously ill; she had a fever.

He bled² her, and he told me to let her live on whey³, and water gruel⁴, and take care she did not throw herself downstairs, or out of the window; and then he left; for he had enough to do in the parish where two or three miles was the ordinary distance between cottage and cottage.

Though I cannot say I made a gentle nurse, and Joseph and the master were no better; and, though our patient was as wearisome and headstrong⁵ as a patient could be, she weathered⁶ it through.

Old Mrs Linton paid us several visits, to be sure; and set things to rights⁷, and scolded and ordered us all; and when Catherine was convalescent⁸, she insisted on conveying her to Thrushcross Grange; for which deliverance⁹ we were very grateful. But, the poor dame had reason to repent of her kindness; she and her husband both took the fever, and died within a few days of each other.

Our young lady returned to us, saucier¹⁰, and more passionate¹¹, and haughtier¹² than ever. Heathcliff had never been heard of since the evening of the thunder-storm, and, one

¹ delirium: [dɪlɪrɪəm] a disordered state of the mental faculties resulting from disturbance of the functions of the brain, and characterized by incoherent speech, hallucinations, restlessness, and frenzied or maniacal excitement. 譫妄、狂乱。

² bleed: to draw or let blood from, esp. surgically.

³ whey: the serum or watery part of milk which remains after the separation of the curd by coagulation, esp. in the manufacture of cheese. 乳漿。

⁴ water gruel: thin gruel made with water instead of milk.

⁵ headstrong: wilful, obstinate; violently self-willed.

⁶ weather: to come safely through (a period of trouble, adversity, affliction, etc.) (難局・病気などを) 無事切り抜ける。

⁷ set things to rights: 事態を收拾する。 *to rights*: (chiefly with *bring*, *put*, or *set*) to or into a proper condition or order.

⁸ convalescent: recovering health and strength after illness; in the way of recovery; still in need of nursing. 病後の回復期にある。

⁹ deliverance: the action of delivering or setting free, or fact of being set free (from confinement, danger, evil, etc.); liberation, release, rescue. ここでは、肩の荷が下りること。

¹⁰ saucy: (of persons, their dispositions, actions, or language) insolent towards superiors; presumptuous; cheeky.

¹¹ passionate: easily moved to angry passion or wrath; prone to anger, hot-tempered, irascible.

¹² haughty: high in one's own estimation; lofty and disdainful in feeling or demeanour; proud, arrogant, supercilious.

day, I had the misfortune, when she had provoked me exceedingly, to lay the blame of his disappearance on her (where indeed it belonged, as she well knew.) From that period, for several months, she ceased to hold any communication with me, save in the relation of a mere servant. Joseph fell under a ban¹ also; he *would* speak his mind, and lecture her all the same as if she were a little girl; and she esteemed² herself a woman, and our mistress; and thought that her recent illness gave her a claim to be treated with consideration³. Then the doctor had said that she would not bear crossing⁴ much, she ought to have her own way⁵; and it was nothing less than⁶ murder, in her eyes, for any one to presume⁷ to stand up⁸ and contradict her.

From Mr Earnshaw, and his companions, she kept aloof, and tutored⁹ by Kenneth, and serious threats of a fit that often attended her rages, her brother allowed her whatever she pleased to demand, and generally avoided aggravating¹⁰ her fiery temper. He was rather *too* indulgent¹¹ in humouring¹² her caprices; not from affection, but from pride; he wished earnestly to see her bring honour to the family by an alliance¹³ with the Lintons, and as long as she let him alone, she might trample on us like slaves, for ought he cared!¹⁴.

Edgar Linton, as multitudes have been before, and will be after him, was infatuated¹⁵; and believed himself the happiest man alive on the day he led her to Gimmerton Chapel, three years subsequent to his father's death.

¹ ban: (fig.) practical denunciation, prohibition, or outlawry, not formally pronounced, as that of society or public opinion. たとえば「村八分」がそうだろう。ここでは Joseph が Cathy から無視されたこと。

² esteem: to account, consider, think, hold (a thing to be so and so).

³ consideration: regard for the circumstances, feelings, comfort, etc. of another; thoughtfulness for another; thoughtful kindness. 思いやり。

⁴ crossing: the act of opposing or thwarting.

⁵ have one's own way: (= have everything one's own way) to have one's wishes carried out; to meet with no resistance or opposition. 思いどおりにする、とやかくいわれない。

⁶ nothing less than: quite equal to, the same thing as.

⁷ presume: to be so presumptuous as; to take the liberty; to venture, dare (*to do* something).

⁸ stand up: to hold oneself boldly erect to confront an opponent; to make a stand *against*. *lit.* and *fig.* 真っ向から立ち向かう、まともに相手をする。

⁹ tutor: to give special or individual instruction to; to teach, instruct (in a subject).

¹⁰ aggravate: (of things evil) to increase the gravity of, to make more grievous or burdensome; to make worse, intensify, exacerbate.

¹¹ indulgent: disposed to gratify by compliance with desire or humour, or to overlook faults or failings; showing or ready to show favour or leniency; disinclined to exercise strictness, severity, or restraint: a quality of superiors or such as have the power to refuse compliance. (監督責任を果たさずに) 人に甘い、放任する。

¹² humour: to act in compliance or agreement with. (p. 59 注 9 参照)

¹³ alliance: union by marriage, affinity. 縁組み。

¹⁴ for ought he cared: he did not care at all. 彼の知ったことではなかった。

¹⁵ infatuate: to make (a person) utterly foolish or fatuous; to affect with extreme and unreasoning folly; to inspire or possess with an extravagant passion. (受動態で) のぼせ上がる。

Much against my inclination, I was persuaded to leave Wuthering Heights and accompany her here. Little Hareton was nearly five years old, and I had just begun to teach him his letters. We made a sad parting, but Catherine's tears were more powerful than ours—When I refused to go, and when she found her entreaties did not move me, she went lamenting to her husband and brother. The former offered me munificent¹ wages; the latter ordered me to pack up—he wanted no women in the house, he said, now that there was no mistress; and as to Hareton, the curate should take him in hand,² by-and-by³. And so, I had but one choice left, to do as I was ordered—I told the master he got rid of all decent people only to run to ruin a little faster; I kissed Hareton good bye; and, since then, he has been a stranger, and it's very queer to think it, but I've no doubt, he has completely forgotten all about Ellen Dean and that he was ever⁴ more than all the world to her, and she to him!

At this point of the housekeeper's story she chanced to glance towards the time-piece⁵ over the chimney; and was in amazement, on seeing the minute-hand measure half-past one. She would not hear of staying a second longer—In truth, I felt rather disposed to defer the sequel⁶ of her narrative, myself; and now that she is vanished to her rest, and I have meditated for another hour or two, I shall summon courage to go⁷, also, in spite of aching laziness of head and limbs.

¹ munificent: splendidly generous, bountiful.

² take in hand: to take the charge or responsibility of.

³ by-and-by: (= by and by) before long, presently, soon, shortly. 古くは 'straightway, immediately, directly, at once'.

⁴ ever: 第一義が 'a. (arch.) always, at all times; b. at any time.' なので強調語となる。

⁵ time-piece: (= timepiece) an instrument for measuring and registering the passage of time; in a general sense, any kind of chronometer, including clocks and watches; *spec.*: see quot. 1884 (F. J. BRITTEN *Watch & Clockm.* 264 Any timekeeper above the size of a watch which does not strike at the hours is called a timepiece.) つまり、特に時鐘を鳴らさぬ時計を指す。

⁶ sequel: the ensuing narrative, discourse, etc.; the following or remaining part of a narrative, etc.

⁷ go: go to bed.

Chapter X

A charming introduction¹ to a hermit's life! Four weeks' torture, tossing² and sickness! Oh, these bleak winds, and bitter, northern skies, and impassable roads, and dilatory³ country surgeons! And, oh, this dearth⁴ of the human physiognomy⁵, and, worse than all, the terrible intimation⁶ of Kenneth that I need not expect to be out of doors till spring!

Mr Heathcliff has just honoured⁷ me with a call. About seven days ago he sent me a brace⁸ of grouse—the last of the season. Scoundrel! He is not altogether guiltless in this illness of mine; and that I had a great⁹ mind to tell him. But, alas! how could I offend a man who was charitable enough to sit at my bedside a good hour, and talk on some other subject than pills, and draughts¹⁰, blisters¹¹, and leeches¹²?

This is quite an easy interval.¹³ I am too weak to read, yet I feel as if I could enjoy something interesting. Why not have¹⁴ up Mrs Dean to finish her tale? I can recollect its chief incidents, as far as she had gone¹⁵. Yes, I remember her hero had run off, and never been heard of for three years: and the heroine was married. I'll ring; she'll be delighted to find me capable of talking cheerfully.

Mrs Dean came.

¹ introduction: a preliminary part, as of a book, musical composition, or the like, leading up to the main part. 導入部 (本なら序文、曲なら序奏、芝居なら序幕など)。ここではこの意味を比喩的に用いたのだから「幕開け」でいいと思う。

² toss: to fling or jerk oneself about; to move about restlessly. ただ「寝返りを打つ」のではなく、「輾転反側する」。**【参考】(about—in bed)** (寝苦しい夜など) 轉げ廻る, のたうち廻る。(齋藤秀三郎『英和中辞典』) ※この定義はさすがにおおげさに思えるが、感じはよくわかる。

³ dilatory: slow, tardy.

⁴ dearth: scanty supply; practical deficiency.

⁵ physiognomy: the face or countenance, especially viewed as an index to the mind and character. ここでは、毎日決まりきった少数の顔しか見られないことをいう。(p. 8 注 9 参照)

⁶ intimation: formal notification or announcement.

⁷ honour: to confer honour or dignity upon; to do honour or credit to; to grace. 'honoured me with a call' で、私にご来駕の荣誉を授けてくださった。わざわざ見舞いに来てくれた、というのを滑稽にいったもの。

⁸ brace: two things taken together; a pair, a couple.

⁹ have a great mind: to be strongly disposed or inclined (to do something which one can do if one wishes), to have nearly made up one's mind (to do it). よほど~しようかと思う。

¹⁰ draught: a dose of liquid medicine; a potion.

¹¹ blister: *Med.* anything applied to raise a blister; a vesicatory. 発疱薬。

¹² leech: (治療のために血を吸わせる) ヒル。

¹³ interval.: the space of time intervening between any fits or periods of disease. 病状の落ち着いた時期。

¹⁴ have: to cause to come or go. ここでは、自分の部屋に来てもらう。「人を法廷に召喚する」という意味でも have a person up を使う。

¹⁵ as far as she had gone: 彼女が (この前) 話してくれたところまで。

‘It wants twenty minutes¹, sir, to taking the medicine,’ she commenced.

‘Away, away² with it!’ I replied; ‘I desire to have—’

‘The doctor says you must drop the powders³.’

‘With all my heart!⁴ Don't interrupt me. Come and take your seat here. Keep your fingers from that bitter phalanx of vials⁵. Draw your knitting out of your pocket—that will do—now continue the history of Mr Heathcliff, from where you left off, to the present day. Did he finish his education on the Continent, and come back a gentleman?⁶ or did he get a sizer's place⁷ at college, or escape to America, and earn honours by drawing blood from his foster-country⁸, or make a fortune more promptly on the English highways⁹?’

‘He may have done a little in all these vocations, Mr Lockwood, but I couldn't give my word for any. I stated before that I didn't know how he gained his money; neither am I aware of the means he took to raise his mind from the savage ignorance into which it was sunk; but, with your leave¹⁰, I'll proceed in my own fashion, if you think it will amuse, and not weary you. Are you feeling better this morning?’

‘Much.’

‘That's good news.’

¹ It wants twenty minutes: (～まで) まだ 20 分ある。want to come short by (so much) of completing a certain total or attaining a certain result. ～まで (何分・何時間・何日・何年など) 足りぬ。現在では ‘it is (so many minutes) to (such an hour).’ がふつう。

² away = go or get away with, take away. 薬なんかどっかへやってしまえ。

³ drop the powders: drop は ‘to cease to keep up, or have to do with; to have done with’ の意味 (p. 94 注 4 参照)。医師が粉薬をやめるようにいったから、Nelly は vial (水薬の瓶) を取ろうした。

⁴ with all one's heart: with great sincerity, earnestness, or devotion; now chiefly in weakened sense, with the utmost goodwill or pleasure. 心から、喜んで。ここは、それ (粉薬をやめること) はなによりだ！

⁵ phalanx of vials: 勢揃いした (ずらりと並んだ) 水薬の瓶。phalanx: a set of people etc. forming a compact mass, or banded for a common purpose. vial: [váɪəl] a vessel of a small or moderate size used for holding liquids; in later use spec., a small glass bottle, a phial.

⁶ come back a gentleman: 紳士になって戻る。【類例】He came back a different person.

⁷ sizer's place: (PENGUIN 版注:) scholarship position at Cambridge University, such as that held by Emily's father, Patrick, at St John's College. 特待免費生。

⁸ by drawing blood from his foster country: 育ての国 (英国) に血を流させて。Catherine の死は 1784 年なので、Heathcliff が独立戦争 (1783 年終結) から戻ってきたとすれば、英国軍と戦ったとも考えられる。しかしそれでは彼が財産を築いた説明にはならず、依然として謎は残るわけ。

⁹ make a fortune...highways: 街道で追いはぎを働いてもっと手っ取り早く一財産築く。

¹⁰ with your leave: (= by your leave) used as an apology for taking a liberty; often ironically used when some remark is made which will be unwelcome to the person addressed. 勝手 (失礼) ながら、ご免をこうむって。

I got Miss Catherine and myself to Thrushcross Grange: and, to my agreeable disappointment¹, she behaved infinitely better than I dared to expect. She seemed almost over-fond of Mr Linton; and even to his sister, she showed plenty of affection. They were both very attentive to her comfort, certainly. It was not the thorn bending to the honeysuckles, but the honeysuckles embracing the thorn. There were no mutual concessions²; one stood erect and the others yielded; and who *can* be ill-natured and bad-tempered, when they encounter neither opposition nor indifference?

I observed that Mr Edgar had a deep-rooted fear of ruffling³ her humour. He concealed it from her; but if ever he heard me answer sharply, or saw any other servant grow cloudy⁴ at some imperious order of hers, he would show his trouble by a frown of displeasure that never darkened on his own account⁵. He, many a time, spoke sternly to me about my pertness⁶, and averred⁷ that the stab of a knife could not inflict a worse pang than he suffered at seeing his lady vexed.

Not to grieve a kind master I learned to be less touchy⁸; and for the space of half a year, the gunpowder lay as harmless as sand, because no fire came near to explode it. Catherine had seasons of gloom and silence, now and then: they were respected⁹ with sympathizing silence by her husband, who ascribed¹⁰ them to an alteration in her constitution, produced by her perilous illness, as she was never subject¹¹ to depression of spirits before. The return of sunshine was welcomed by answering sunshine from him. I believe I may assert that they were really in possession of¹² deep and growing happiness.

¹ to my agreeable disappointment: うれしい見込みがちがいでしたが。(p. 423 注 6 参照)

² concession: the action of conceding, yielding, or granting (anything asked or required); (with pl.) an act of conceding; a grant.. 'mutual concessions' 双方が歩み寄ること、互いに折れること。

³ ruffle: to annoy, irritate, vex, discompose (a person, the mind, etc.).

⁴ cloudy: darkened by misfortune, grief, anger, forebodings, etc.; gloomy, sullen, frowning.

⁵ on one's own account: for one's own interest, and at one's own risk. ここでは、自分(の快不快)にかかわることについては。

⁶ pertness: forward boldness in behaviour or speech; sauciness; smartness bordering upon impudence: esp. in inferiors or young people. さしでがましい口のきき方やふるまいをすること。

⁷ aver: to assert as a fact; to state positively, affirm. きっぱりという。

⁸ touchy: easily moved to anger; apt to take offence on slight cause; highly sensitive in temper or disposition; irascible, irritable, testy, tetchy.

⁹ respect: to treat with consideration; to refrain from injuring or interfering with; to spare. 思いやりをもって扱う、(じゃまをせず) そっとしておく。

¹⁰ ascribe: to assign, attribute, impute, refer as due or owing *to*. 〜に帰する、のせいにする(*to*)。

¹¹ subject (*to*): prone *to* or liable to suffer from something damaging, deleterious, or disadvantageous. (たとえば病気など害をもたらすこと) になりやすい、(害)を受けやすい。

¹² in possession of: actually possessing, holding, or occupying something. しっかりと手にしている。

It ended. Well, we *must* be for ourselves in the long run¹; the mild and generous are only more justly selfish than the domineering—and it ended when circumstances caused each to feel that the one's interest was not the chief consideration in the other's thoughts.

On a mellow² evening in September, I was coming from the garden with a heavy basket of apples which I had been gathering. It had got dusk, and the moon looked over the high wall of the court, causing undefined³ shadows to lurk⁴ in the corners of the numerous projecting portions of the building. I set my burden on the house steps by the kitchen door, and lingered to rest⁵, and drew in a few more breaths of the soft, sweet air; my eyes were on the moon, and my back to the entrance, when I heard a voice behind me say—

‘Nelly, is that you?’

It was a deep voice, and foreign⁶ in tone, yet there was something in the manner of pronouncing my name which made it sound familiar. I turned about to discover who spoke, fearfully, for the doors were shut, and I had seen nobody on approaching the steps⁷.

Something stirred in the porch; and moving nearer, I distinguished⁸ a tall man dressed in dark clothes, with dark face and hair. He leant against the side, and held his fingers on the latch, as if intending to open for himself.

‘Who can it be?’ I thought. ‘Mr Earnshaw? Oh no! The voice has no resemblance to his.’

‘I have waited here an hour,’ he resumed, while I continued staring; ‘and the whole of that time all round has been as still as death. I dared not enter. You do not know me? Look, I'm not a stranger!’

¹ we must be for ourselves in the long run: しょせんは自分が大事（なのになにがいない）。

² mellow: (of landscape, seasons, etc.) characterized by ripeness; (of sound, colour, light, etc.) rich and soft; full and pure without harshness. すぐあとに ‘the soft, sweet air’ とあるから、「おだやかで心地よい」ほどの意味。

³ undefined: not defined or clearly marked; indefinite. あいまいな、ぼんやりした。

⁴ lurk: (now only with indication of place) to hide oneself; to lie in ambush; to remain furtively or unobserved about one spot. 潜む、隠れる、待ち伏せする。

⁵ lingered to rest: そのままひと休みした。 *linger*: to stay on or hang about in a place beyond the proper or usual time.

⁶ foreign: unfamiliar, strange.

⁷ on approaching the steps: = when I approached the steps. 「(今しがた) リンゴを持って階段に来たとき」だから ‘I had seen nobody’ と過去完了になっている。

⁸ distinguish: to perceive distinctly or clearly (by sight, hearing, or other bodily sense); to ‘make out’ by looking, listening, etc.; to recognize. (見て、または聞いて) ～をはっきりと認める。(p. 68 注 10 参照)

A ray fell on his features¹; the cheeks were sallow², and half covered with black whiskers, the brows lowering, the eyes deep set and singular³. I remembered the eyes.

‘What!’ I cried, uncertain whether to regard him as a worldly visitor⁴, and I raised my hands in amazement. ‘What! you come back? Is it really you? Is it?’

‘Yes, Heathcliff,’ he replied, glancing from me up to the windows, which reflected a score⁵ of glittering moons, but showed no lights from within. ‘Are they at home—where is she? Nelly, you are not glad—you needn’t be so disturbed. Is she here? Speak! I want to have one word with her—your mistress. Go, and say some person from Gimmerton desires to see her.’

‘How will she take it?’ I exclaimed, ‘what will she do? The surprise bewilders me—it will put her out of her head! And you *are* Heathcliff? But altered! Nay, there’s no comprehending it.⁶ Have you been for a soldier?’

‘Go and carry my message,’ he interrupted impatiently; ‘I’m in hell⁷ till you do!’

He lifted the latch, and I entered; but when I got⁸ to the parlour where Mr and Mrs Linton were, I could not persuade myself to proceed.⁹

At length, I resolved on making an excuse to ask if they would have the candles lighted, and I opened the door.

They sat together in a window whose lattice lay back against the wall¹⁰, and displayed, beyond the garden trees and the wild green park, the valley of Gimmerton, with a long line of mist winding nearly to its top (for very soon after you pass the chapel, as you may have noticed, the sough¹¹ that runs from the marshes joins a beck¹ which follows the bend of

¹ features: (pl.) the face. (p. 14 注 2 参照)

² sallow: (of the skin or complexion) having a sickly yellow or brownish yellow colour.

³ singular: remarkable; extraordinary, unusual, uncommon.

⁴ a worldly visitor: この世のもの。幽霊かしらと疑ったのである。

⁵ score: a group or set of twenty. 厳密に 20 かどうかはともかく、窓ごとに月の光を反射していた。詩的なイメージではあるが、物理的には疑問。なお ‘scores of’ なら ‘a great many’。

⁶ there’s no comprehending it.: = it’s impossible to comprehend it. (p. 97 注 7 参照)

⁷ in hell: ‘impatient, irritated’ ほどの意味。

⁸ glen: a mountain-valley, usually narrow and forming the course of a stream.

⁹ I could not persuade myself to proceed.: どうしても足がいうことをきかなかった (parlour に入らなかった)。

¹⁰ lay back against the wall: 格子窓は壁にあたるまでいっぱい開いていた。

¹¹ sough: [sálf] a small gutter for draining water; a drain, a sewer, a trench.

the glen). Wuthering Heights rose above this silvery vapour; but our old house was invisible—it rather dips down on the other side.

Both the room, and its occupants, and the scene they gazed on, looked wondrously² peaceful. I shrank reluctantly³ from performing my errand; and was actually going away, leaving it unsaid, after having put my question about the candles, when a sense of my folly compelled me to return and mutter⁴:

‘A person from Gimmerton wishes to see you, ma'am.’

‘What does he want?’ asked Mrs Linton.

‘I did not question him,’ I answered.

‘Well, close the curtains, Nelly,’ she said, ‘and bring up tea. I’ll be back again directly.’

She quitted the apartment; Mr Edgar inquired carelessly, who it was?

‘Some one mistress does not expect,’ I replied. ‘That Heathcliff, you recollect him, sir, who used to live at Mr Earnshaw’s.’

‘What, the gipsy—the plough-boy?⁵’ he cried. ‘Why did you not say so to Catherine?’

‘Hush! you must not call him by those names, master,’ I said. ‘She’d be sadly grieved to hear you. She was nearly heartbroken when he ran off; I guess his return will make a jubilee⁶ to her.’

Mr Linton walked to a window on the other side of the room that overlooked the court. He unfastened it, and leant out. I suppose they were below, for he exclaimed quickly:—

‘Don’t stand there, love! Bring the person in, if it be any one particular⁷.’

¹ beck: a brook or stream; often used spec. in literature to connote a brook with stony bed, or rugged course, such as are those of the north country.

² wondrously: to a wonderful degree; wonderfully, marvellously.

³ reluctantly: unwillingly. ここは、伝言を伝えることに「気が進まず」。

⁴ a sense of my folly ...: (肝腎の用を足さぬ) 自分の愚かさを感じて～しないわけにはいかなかった。

⁵ plough-boy: a boy who leads the team of oxen or horses that draw a plough; hence, a boy of the rustic labouring class. (p. 30 注 2 参照)

⁶ jubilee: a season or occasion of joyful celebration or general rejoicing.

⁷ any one particular: 知り合いの方。 *particular*: distinguished in some way among others of the

Ere long¹, I heard the click of the latch, and Catherine flew upstairs, breathless, and wild, too excited to show gladness; indeed, by her face, you would rather have surmised an awful calamity.²

‘O Edgar, Edgar!’ she panted, flinging her arms round his neck. ‘O Edgar darling! Heathcliff’s come back—he is!’ And she tightened her embrace to a squeeze.

‘Well, well,’ cried her husband crossly, ‘don’t strangle me for that!’³ He never struck me as⁴ such a marvellous treasure. There is no need to be frantic!’

‘I know you didn’t like him,’ she answered, repressing⁵ a little the intensity of her delight. ‘Yet, for my sake, you must be friends now. Shall I tell him to come up?’

‘Here?’ he said, ‘into the parlour?’

‘Where else?’ she asked.

He looked vexed, and suggested the kitchen as a more suitable place for him.

Mrs Linton eyed him with a droll⁶ expression—half angry, half laughing, at his fastidiousness⁷.

‘No,’ she added, after a while; ‘I cannot sit in the kitchen. Set two tables here, Ellen; one for your master and Miss Isabella, being gentry; the other for Heathcliff and myself, being of the lower orders⁸. Will that please you, dear? Or must I have a fire lighted

kind; more than ordinary; worth notice; marked; special. (これより ‘closely acquainted, familiar, intimate.’)

¹ ere long: (= before long) before the lapse of much time; soon.

² calamity: a grievous disaster, an event or circumstance causing loss or misery; a distressing misfortune. 災難、不幸なできごと。

³ for that: それだから (Heathcliff が戻ってきたから) といって。‘for’ は「原因、理由 (because of, on account of)」。

⁴ strike one as ～: to appear to one as ～, to give one the impression of being ～. ～だと見える、思える。

⁵ repress: to keep down, suppress (one’s desires, feelings, etc.), to keep under control; to restrain, refrain from (an action).

⁶ droll: **1.** intentionally facetious, amusing, comical, funny. **2.** unintentionally amusing; queer, quaint, odd, strange, ‘funny’. ここは、「まあ、しょうがない人ね」という気持だろうから **1.** を取り、「(わざと) おどけた顔をしてみせて」。

⁷ fastidiousness: disposition to be easily disgusted; squeamishness; over-niceness in matters of taste or propriety. 気むずかしさ、(好みや行儀に対する) やかましさ。

⁸ order: a rank of the community, consisting of persons of the same status (esp. in relation to other ranks higher or lower); a social division, grade, or stratum; esp. in the phrases **higher orders, lower orders**. 階級、地位、身分。

elsewhere? If so, give directions. I'll run down and secure my guest. I'm afraid the joy is too great to be real!"

She was about to dart¹ off again, but Edgar arrested her.

'You bid him step up,' he said, addressing me; 'and, Catherine, try to be glad, without being absurd! The whole household need not witness the sight of your welcoming a runaway servant as a brother.'

I descended and found Heathcliff waiting under the porch, evidently anticipating an invitation to enter. He followed my guidance without waste of words, and I ushered him into the presence of the master and mistress, whose flushed cheeks betrayed signs of warm talking². But the lady's³ glowed with another feeling when her friend appeared at the door; she sprang forward, took both his hands, and led him to Linton; and then she seized Linton's reluctant fingers and crushed⁴ them into his.

Now fully revealed by the fire and candlelight, I was amazed, more than ever⁵, to behold the transformation of Heathcliff. He had grown a tall, athletic, well-formed man; beside whom my master seemed quite slender and youth-like. His upright carriage⁶ suggested the idea of his having been in the army. His countenance was much older in expression and decision⁷ of feature⁸ than Mr Linton's; it looked intelligent, and retained no marks of former degradation. A half-civilized ferocity lurked yet in the depressed brows, and eyes full of black fire, but it was subdued⁹; and his manner was even dignified, quite divested¹⁰ of roughness, though too stern for grace.

My master's surprise equalled or exceeded mine: he remained for a minute at a loss how

¹ dart: to move like a dart; to spring or start with a sudden rapid motion.

² betrayed signs of warm talking: 激しく口論していたことをうかがわせた。 *betray*: to reveal, disclose or show incidentally; to exhibit, show signs of, to show (a thing which there is no attempt to keep secret).

³ the lady's: the lady's cheeks.

⁴ crush: to press or squeeze forcibly or violently. むりやり押し込む (into)。

⁵ more than ever: ますます、より一層。

⁶ carriage: manner of carrying one's body; bodily deportment, bearing, mien. 身のこなし、姿勢。

⁷ decision: firmness, decidedness of character. 果斷、決断力。

⁸ feature: (in pl. and distributively; also collect. in sing.) the lineaments of the face, the form or mould of its various parts. 'decision of feature' は、きりりと引き締まった目鼻立ちに性格の果斷さが現れていること。

⁹ subdue: to make less prominent or salient.

¹⁰ divest: (fig.) to strip (a person or thing) of possessions, rights, or attributes; to denude, dispossess, deprive; less usually in good sense, to free, rid. ここでは 'in good sense'. 「衣服 (vest) をはぎ取る、脱がせる」が第一義。

to address the plough-boy, as he had called him; Heathcliff dropped his slight¹ hand, and stood looking at him coolly till he chose to speak.

‘Sit down, sir,’ he said at length. ‘Mrs Linton, recalling old times, would have² me give you a cordial reception, and, of course, I am gratified when anything occurs to please her.’

‘And I also,’ answered Heathcliff, ‘especially if it be anything in which I have a part. I shall stay an hour or two willingly.’

He took a seat opposite Catherine, who kept her gaze fixed on him as if she feared he would vanish were she to remove it³. He did not raise his to her, often; a quick glance now and then sufficed; but it flashed back, each time more confidently, the undisguised delight he drank from hers.

They were too much absorbed in their mutual joy to suffer embarrassment⁴; not so Mr Edgar; he grew pale with pure annoyance, a feeling that reached its climax when his lady rose—and stepping across the rug, seized Heathcliff’s hands again, and laughed like one beside herself⁵.

‘I shall think it a dream to-morrow!’ she cried. ‘I shall not be able to believe that I have seen, and touched, and spoken to you once more—and yet, cruel Heathcliff! you don’t deserve this welcome. To be absent and silent for three years, and never to think of me!’

‘A little more than you have thought of me,’ he murmured. ‘I heard of your marriage, Cathy, not long since⁶; and while waiting in the yard below I meditated this plan—just to have one glimpse of your face—a stare of surprise, perhaps, and pretended pleasure⁷; afterwards settle my score with Hindley⁸; and then prevent the law by doing execution on myself⁹. Your welcome has put these ideas out of my mind; but beware of meeting me

¹ slight: of a small and slender form or build.

² would have: 誰々がぜひ何々するよう願う。 *have*: (with *will*, *would*, or the like) to wish, will, require that something be done (to oneself or others). (p. 123 注 1 参照)

³ were she to remove it: = if she were to remove it (= her gaze).

⁴ embarrassment: perplexity, sense of difficulty or hesitation with regard to judgement or action; constrained feeling or manner arising from bashfulness or timidity. ここでは、他人の目を気にしてためらうこと、気づまりな思いをすること。

⁵ beside oneself: out of one’s wits, out of one’s senses. 気がちがって、われを忘れて。

⁶ not long since: recently, of late.

⁷ pretended pleasure: うれしいふり。

⁸ settle my score with Hindley: Hindley に仕返しする、借りを返す。 *settle a score* (or *scores*): to revenge an injury, to ‘be even with’ some one.

⁹ prevent the law...myself: 裁きを受ける (お上のやっかいになる) 前に自殺する。

with another aspect next time!¹ Nay, you'll not drive me off again—you were really sorry for me, were you? Well, there was cause.² I've fought through a bitter life since I last heard your voice, and you must forgive me, for I struggled only for you!

‘Catherine, unless we are to have cold tea, please to come to the table,’ interrupted Linton, striving to preserve his ordinary tone, and a due measure of politeness³. ‘Mr Heathcliff will have a long walk, wherever he may lodge to-night, and I'm thirsty.’

She took her post before the urn⁴; and Miss Isabella came, summoned by the bell; then having handed their chairs forward⁵, I left the room.

The meal hardly endured ten minutes—Catherine's cup was never filled, she could neither eat, nor drink. Edgar had made a slop in his saucer⁶, and scarcely swallowed a mouthful.

Their guest did not protract⁷ his stay, that evening, above an hour longer. I asked, as he departed, if he went to Gimmerton?

‘No, to Wuthering Heights,’ he answered, ‘Mr Earnshaw invited me when I called this morning.’

Mr Earnshaw invited *him*! and *he* called on Mr Earnshaw! I pondered this sentence painfully⁸, after he was gone. Is he turning out⁹ a bit of a hypocrite, and coming into the country to work mischief under a cloak¹⁰? I mused—I had a presentiment¹¹, in the bottom of my heart, that he had better have remained away.

¹ meeting me with another aspect next time: (今回は歓迎してくれたが) 次に会ったときには態度が変わる (冷たい顔をする)。

² there was cause: それも当然だ。【参考】 There is no *cause for alarm*. 驚くにはあたらない。

³ a due measure of politeness: それ相応 (それなり) の礼儀。

⁴ urn: = tea-urn (an urn with a tap, placed upon a tea-table, to hold hot water for making tea).

⁵ handed their chairs forward: どうでもいいようなことだが、このとき Nelly が椅子をすすめたのは誰々かについては、注釈者のように彼の地のマナーを知らない者には案外わかりにくい。「みなさんが席に着いたので私は部屋を出ました」とでもしておけばごまかしがきくだろう。

⁶ made a slop in his saucer: 受け皿にお茶をこぼした。動揺して手が震えていたのである。 *slop*: an act of spilling or splashing; a quantity of liquid spilled or splashed.

⁷ protract: to lengthen out (an action); to cause to continue or last longer; to extend in duration; to prolong. ここは「長居をする」。

⁸ painfully: (arch.) with great pains, painstakingly, laboriously, with care and effort.

⁹ turn out: to come to be, become ultimately.

¹⁰ under a cloak: 陰で、隠れて。 *cloak*: *fig.* that which covers over and conceals; a pretext, pretence, outward show.

¹¹ presentiment: a mental impression or feeling of a future event; a vague expectation resting on no definite reason, but seeming like a direct perception of something about to happen; an anticipation, foreboding (most commonly of something evil). いやな予感、胸騒ぎ。

About the middle of the night I was wakened from my first nap by Mrs Linton gliding¹ into my chamber, taking a seat on my bedside, and pulling me by the hair to rouse me.

‘I cannot rest, Ellen,’ she said, by way of² apology. ‘And I want some living creature to keep me company in my happiness! Edgar is sulky, because I’m glad of a thing that does not interest him—He refuses to open his mouth, except to utter pettish, silly speeches; and he affirmed I was cruel and selfish for wishing to talk when he was so sick and sleepy. He always contrives to be sick at the least cross!³ I gave a few sentences of commendation⁴ to Heathcliff, and he, either for a head-ache or a pang⁵ of envy, began to cry: so I got up and left him.’

‘What use is it praising Heathcliff to him?’ I answered. ‘As lads⁶ they had an aversion⁷ to each other, and Heathcliff would hate just as much to hear him praised—it’s human nature. Let Mr Linton alone about him⁸, unless you would like an open quarrel between them.’

‘But does it not show great weakness?’ pursued she. ‘I’m not envious⁹—I never feel hurt at the brightness of Isabella’s yellow hair, and the whiteness of her skin; at her dainty elegance, and the fondness all the family exhibit for her. Even you, Nelly, if we have a dispute sometimes, you back Isabella, at once; and I yield like a foolish mother—I call her a darling, and flatter her into a good temper. It pleases her brother to see us cordial¹⁰, and that pleases me. But they are very much alike: they are spoiled children, and fancy the world was made for their accommodation¹¹; and, though I humour both, I think a smart¹²

¹ glide: to go unperceived, quietly, or stealthily; to insinuate oneself, steal, ‘slip’ into, out of a place. ここは、音もなくそっと部屋に入ってきた。

² by way of: as an instance or a mode of; as something equivalent to. ～めかして、のつもりで。

³ cross: a trouble, vexation, annoyance.

⁴ commendation: the expression of approval, recommendation. ‘sentences of commendation’ ほめ言葉。

⁵ pang: (fig.) a sudden sharp mental pain or feeling of intense mental anguish.

⁶ As lads ...: When they were lads ... ‘as’ は前置詞。【参考】*As a boy, he once sailed down the river.* 子供のころ彼はその川を船で下った。(この as は) 接続詞とも考えられる (ランダムハウス英和第2版)。

⁷ aversion: a mental attitude of opposition or repugnance; a fixed, habitual dislike; an antipathy.

⁸ about him: about Heathcliff.

⁹ envious: full of envy, affected or actuated by envy; vexed or discontented at the good fortune or qualities of another.

¹⁰ cordial: warm and friendly in manner.

¹¹ accommodation: a convenient arrangement.

¹² smart: (of blows, strokes, etc.) sufficiently hard or severe to cause pain. もともと、鞭でピシリと打たれたときの痛みを形容する。

chastisement¹ might improve them, all the same².'

'You're mistaken, Mrs Linton,' said I, 'They humour you—I know what there would be to do if they did not!³ You can well afford to⁴ indulge their passing whims, as long as their business is to anticipate⁵ all your desires—You may, however, fall out⁶, at last, over something of equal consequence to both sides⁷; and then those you term weak are very capable of being as obstinate as you!'

'And then we shall fight to the death, shan't we, Nelly?' she returned, laughing. 'No! I tell you, I have such faith in Linton's love that I believe I might kill him, and he wouldn't wish to retaliate⁸.'

I advised her to value him the more for⁹ his affection.

'I do,' she answered, 'but he needn't resort¹⁰ to whining¹¹ for trifles. It is childish; and, instead of melting into tears, because I said that Heathcliff was now worthy of any one's regard¹², and it would honour the first gentleman in the country to be his friend; he ought to have said it for me¹³, and been delighted from sympathy¹⁴—He must get accustomed to him, and he may as well¹⁵ like him—considering how Heathcliff has reason to object to him, I'm sure he behaved excellently!'

'What do you think of his going to Wuthering Heights?' I inquired. 'He is reformed in

¹ chastisement: [tʃæstɪzmənt] corrective or disciplinary punishment, correction, chastening; also simply punishment. お仕置き。

² all the same: nevertheless, notwithstanding. (～とはいっても) やっぱり。

³ what there would be to do if they did not!: 仮定法過去。(お二人があなたのご機嫌を取っているからいいようなもの) そうしなければいったいどうなることか!

⁴ You can well afford to ～: ～するくらいできるでしょう、したっていいでしょう。

⁵ anticipate: to answer (a question), obey (a command), or satisfy (a request) before it is made. いわれなくとも (あらかじめ察して) 望みに応える。

⁶ fall out: to disagree, quarrel.

⁷ something of equal consequence to both sides: どちらにとってもものつぴきな状態。

⁸ retaliate: to make return or requital of injury, insult, etc.

⁹ the more for: ～だからなおさらのこと。ここは、愛してくださっているならなおさら。

¹⁰ resort: to have recourse to something for assistance or furtherance of an object. ～に訴える、～の助けを借りる。

¹¹ whine: to cry in a subdued plaintive tone; to utter complaints in a low querulous tone. 哀れっぽく泣く、泣き言をいう。

¹² worthy of any one's regard: だれからも一目置かれておかしくない。

¹³ for me: in place of me. 私がいわなくたって Edgar のほうからそうやって当然なのに、ということ。

¹⁴ from sympathy: (私と) 共感して、同じ気持ちになって。 *sympathy*: the fact or capacity of entering into or sharing the feelings of another or others.

¹⁵ may as well: ～しても損はない、悪くない。 *as well*: with no loss of advantage or need for regret. (COD 8th) つまり「得をするから～したほうがいい」とはニュアンスが異なる。

every respect, apparently¹—quite a Christian—offering the right hand of fellowship to his enemies all round!’

‘He explained it,’ she replied. ‘I wonder as much as you—He said he called to gather information concerning me, from you, supposing you resided there still; and Joseph told Hindley, who came out and fell to² questioning him of what he had been doing, and how he had been living; and finally, desired him to walk in—There were some persons sitting at cards—Heathcliff joined them; my brother lost some money to him; and, finding him plentifully supplied, he requested that he would come again in the evening, to which he consented. Hindley is too reckless to select his acquaintance prudently³; he doesn't trouble himself to reflect on the causes he might have for mistrusting one whom he has basely injured⁴—But, Heathcliff affirms his principal reason for resuming a connection with his ancient persecutor is a wish to install⁵ himself in quarters⁶ at walking distance from the Grange, and an attachment to the house where we lived together, and, likewise, a hope that I shall have more opportunities of seeing him there than I could have if he settled in Gimmerton. He means to offer liberal payment for permission to lodge at the Heights; and doubtless my brother's covetousness⁷ will prompt him to accept the terms⁸; he was always greedy, though what he grasps with one hand, he flings away with the other.’

‘It's a nice place for a young man to fix his dwelling in!’ said I. ‘Have you no fear of the consequences, Mrs Linton?’

‘None for my friend,’ she replied, ‘his strong⁹ head will keep him from danger—a little¹⁰ for Hindley; but, he can't be made morally worse than he is; and I stand between him and bodily harm—The event of this evening reconciled me to God and humanity! I had risen in angry rebellion against providence¹¹—Oh, I've endured very, very bitter misery, Nelly!’

¹ apparently: so far as one can judge; seemingly. ここは ‘plainly’ ではない。(p. 115 注 2 参照)

² fall to: to begin, proceed to.

³ prudently: with prudence, circumspection, discretion, or practical wisdom; discreetly, wisely, judiciously.

⁴ the causes ... injured: 自分が手ひどく痛めつけた (つまり自分をうらみに思っている) 相手には信用しきれぬだけの根拠がありそうなこと。

⁵ install: to establish in any place or condition. ‘to install himself in’ は、すぐあとで ‘to fix his dwelling in’ と言い換えられている。

⁶ quarters: (now usu. in pl.) place of stay or residence; dwelling-place, lodgings, esp. of soldiers.

⁷ covetousness: inordinate and culpable desire of possessing that which belongs to another or to which one has no right.

⁸ terms: (pl.) conditions or stipulations; charge or price.

⁹ strong: firm in will or purpose; able to resist temptation; possessed of courage or fortitude; brave, resolute, steadfast.

¹⁰ a little: a little fear of the consequences.

¹¹ providence: (= providence of God) the foreknowing and beneficent care and government of God (or of nature, etc.); divine direction, control, or guidance. 神のはからい、神意。

If that creature¹ knew how bitter, he'd be ashamed to cloud its removal with idle petulance²—It was kindness for him which induced me to bear it alone: had I expressed the agony I frequently felt, he would have been taught to long for its alleviation³ as ardently⁴ as I—However, it's over, and I'll take no revenge on his folly—I can afford to suffer anything hereafter! Should the meanest thing alive slap me on the cheek, I'd not only turn the other, but I'd ask pardon for provoking it⁵—and, as a proof, I'll go make my peace⁶ with Edgar instantly—Good-night!—I'm an angel!

In this self-complacent⁷ conviction she departed; and the success of her fulfilled resolution⁸ was obvious on the morrow—Mr Linton had not only abjured⁹ his peevishness (though his spirits seemed still subdued¹⁰ by Catherine's exuberance¹¹ of vivacity) but he ventured no objection to her taking Isabella with her to Wuthering Heights, in the afternoon; and she rewarded him with such a summer¹² of sweetness and affection, in return, as made the house a paradise for several days; both master and servants profiting from the perpetual sunshine.

Heathcliff—Mr Heathcliff, I should say in future—used the liberty of visiting at Thrushcross Grange cautiously, at first: he seemed estimating how far its owner would bear his intrusion. Catherine, also, deemed it judicious to moderate¹³ her expressions of pleasure in receiving him; and he gradually established his right to be expected¹⁴.

¹ that creature: = Edgar.

² to cloud its removal with idle petulance: せっかく 苦しい思い (misery) が解消したというのに、わけもなく不機嫌な顔をしてそれをだいなしにする。

³ alleviation: the action of lightening weight, gravity, severity, or pain; relief, mitigation.

⁴ ardently: with great eagerness or keen desire; passionately, earnestly, zealously.

⁵ Should ... it: [Luke 6:29] And unto him that smiteth thee on the *one* cheek offer the other; and him that taketh away thy cloke forbid not to *take thy coat* also. (なんちの頬を打つ者には、他の頬をも向けよ。なんちの上衣を取る者には下衣をも拒むな)

⁶ make one's peace: to effect reconciliation for oneself or for some one else; to come, or bring some one, into friendly relations (with another)

⁷ self-complacent: feeling or showing pleasure or satisfaction in one's own condition or doings; self-satisfied.

⁸ the success of her fulfilled resolution: (Edgar と仲直りするという) 決心を実行したところうまくいったこと。

⁹ abjure: to renounce on oath; to retract, recant, or abnegate (a position or opinion formerly held). きっぱりと棄てる。

¹⁰ subdue: to reduce the intensity, force, or vividness of (sound, colour, light); to make less prominent or salient. 音・色・光ではないがこの意味だろう。ここは受動態で、旦那様のご気分は奥様のあふれんばかりの快活さの前ではまだ生彩を欠いていましたが。

¹¹ exuberance: [ɛgzjʊ:bərəns] overflowing fullness (of joy, health, etc.).

¹² summer: a character or condition suggestive of summer (as in warmth, brightness, or lushness.) ここでは 'exuberance' に近いと思う。

¹³ moderate: to abate the excessiveness of; to render less violent, intense, rigorous, or burdensome. ～を控えめにする。ここは、うれしそうな顔を見せるのもほどほどにする。

¹⁴ his right to be expected: 客として遇される権利。 *expect* to anticipate the coming of (a person or thing).

He retained a great deal of the reserve¹ for which his boyhood was remarkable, and that served² to repress all startling³ demonstrations of feeling. My master's uneasiness experienced a lull⁴, and further⁵ circumstances diverted it into another channel for a space⁶.

His new source of trouble sprang from the not anticipated misfortune of Isabella Linton evincing a sudden and irresistible attraction towards the tolerated guest⁷—She was at that time a charming young lady of eighteen; infantile in manners, though possessed of keen wit, keen feelings, and a keen temper, too, if irritated. Her brother, who loved her tenderly, was appalled at this fantastic⁸ preference. Leaving aside⁹ the degradation of an alliance¹⁰ with a nameless man, and the possible fact that his property, in default of¹¹ heirs male¹², might pass into such a one's power, he had sense to comprehend Heathcliff's disposition—to know that, though his exterior was altered, his mind was unchangeable and unchanged. And he dreaded that mind; it revolted¹³ him; he shrank forebodingly¹⁴ from the idea of committing Isabella to its keeping¹⁵.

He would have recoiled¹⁶ still more had he been aware that her attachment rose unsolicited¹⁷, and was bestowed where it awakened no reciprocation¹⁸ of sentiment; for the

¹ reserve: abstention from giving a full explanation or expressing one's mind freely; reticence. めったに心中を明かさぬこと。

² serve: to have a definite use or function, answer a purpose, effect or conduce to an end; to admit of being used for some end. ～の助けになる。

³ startling: that causes a shock of surprise; that suddenly and forcibly compels attention. 人を驚かせる。

⁴ lull: a brief period of intermission or quiescence in a storm. (比喩的にも) 嵐の小やみ。

⁵ further: more extended, going beyond what already exists or has been dealt with; additional, more. Heathcliff の態度に対する心配どころではない (事態)。

⁶ for a space: しばらくの間 (ふつうは短い期間をいう)。space: a period or interval of time.

⁷ the tolerated guest: 出入りを大目に見られている客。実は 'unwelcome guest' である。

⁸ fantastic: perversely or irrationally imagined; extravagantly fanciful, odd and irrational in behaviour. ここでは、「まともとは思われない、とんでもない」。

⁹ leaving aside ...: ～を別にしても、無視しても。

¹⁰ alliance: union by marriage, affinity. 縁組み。(p. 127 注 13 参照)

¹¹ in default of: through the failure or want of, in the absence of.

¹² heir male: 跡取り息子。

¹³ revolt: to affect (a person, etc.) with disgust or repugnance. 不快にさせる、嫌悪させる。

¹⁴ forebodingly: ここは 'with a presentiment of misfortune' (不幸を予感して) ほどの意味。

¹⁵ keeping: custody, charge, guardianship. 'its keeping' の 'it' は 'that mind' を指す。

¹⁶ recoil: (*fig.* of persons, in respect of the mind or feelings.) to start or spring back in fear, horror, disgust, or the like. (p. 96 注 12 参照)

¹⁷ unsolicited: not asked for; given or done voluntarily. (Heathcliff が誘惑したのではなく) 自分が勝手に (熱を上げた)。しかし Edgar はそうとは知らなかったから、「もし気づいていたら」 'he would have recoiled still more' という仮定法過去完了の文章になった。

¹⁸ reciprocation: a mutual return or exchange of acts, feelings, etc. 'reciprocation of sentiment' は互いに思いを交わすこと。これがないのだから、一方通行の片思い。

minute he discovered its existence, he laid the blame on Heathcliff's deliberate designing.

We had all remarked, during some time, that Miss Linton fretted, and pined¹ over something. She grew cross and wearisome², snapping at and teasing Catherine, continually, at the imminent risk of exhausting her limited patience. We excused her, to a certain extent, on the plea³ of ill-health—she was dwindling⁴ and fading⁵ before our eyes—But, one day when she had been peculiarly wayward, rejecting her breakfast, complaining that the servants did not do what she told them; that the mistress would allow⁶ her to be nothing⁷ in the house, and Edgar neglected her; that she had caught a cold with the doors being left open, and we let the parlour fire go out on purpose to vex her, with a hundred yet more frivolous⁸ accusations⁹; Mrs Linton peremptorily¹⁰ insisted that she should get to bed; and having scolded her heartily, threatened to send for the doctor.

Mention of Kenneth caused her to exclaim, instantly, that her health was perfect, and it was only Catherine's harshness which made her unhappy.

‘How can you say I am harsh, you naughty fondling?’¹¹ cried the mistress, amazed at the unreasonable assertion¹². ‘You are surely losing your reason. When have I been harsh, tell me?’

‘Yesterday,’ sobbed Isabella, ‘and now!’

¹ pine: to be consuming with longing. 思いこがれる。

² wearisome: (now somewhat rare) causing weariness from bodily or mental exertion or protracted pain; fatiguing, exhausting. 人をへとへとにさせる。Isabella 自身が ‘weary’ (疲れた) だったわけではないことに注意。人に当り散らして閉口させたのである。

³ plea: an apology, pretext, excuse. ‘on the plea of’ は、～を口実に、～だからしかたがないと。

⁴ dwindle: to become smaller and smaller; to shrink, waste away, decline.

⁵ fade: (of colour, light, or any object possessing these qualities) to lose brightness or brilliance; to grow dim, faint, or pale. (花がしおれるように) 生彩を失う。

⁶ allow: (with compl.) to acknowledge or admit a thing to be something. ～が…であることを認める。‘a thing’ とあるが、人も目的語になる。【例】1777 SHERIDAN *Sch. Scandal* ii. ii. 249 They'll not allow our friend · · to be handsome. (われらの友を handsome だと認めようとはしない) (OED)

⁷ nothing: a person not worth reckoning, considering, or mentioning. 取るに足りぬ者。‘would allow her to be nothing in the house’ は、‘will (would)’ を「習慣的動作」と取り、「なにかという私をこの家の余計者扱いする」。すぐあとの ‘Edgar neglected her.’ とほぼ同じ。

⁸ frivolous: of little or no weight, value, or importance; paltry, trumpery; not worthy of serious attention; having no reasonable ground or purpose.

⁹ accusation: [ækjuːzɪʃən] the charge of an offence or crime, or the declaration containing it; an indictment. 罪状。

¹⁰ peremptorily: in the way, or with an air, of positive command or the like; imperatively; imperiously.

¹¹ fondling: one who is fondly loved; one who is much fondled or caressed. 甘ったれ。

¹² assertion: a positive statement; a declaration, averment. 断固たる主張、申し立て。

‘Yesterday!’ said her sister-in-law. ‘On what occasion?’

‘In our walk along the moor; you told me to ramble where I pleased, while you sauntered on with Mr Heathcliff!’

‘And that’s your notion¹ of harshness?’ said Catherine, laughing. ‘It was no hint that your company was superfluous²; we didn’t care whether you kept with us or not; I merely thought Heathcliff’s talk would have nothing entertaining for your ears.’

‘Oh no,’ wept the young lady, ‘you wished me away because you knew I liked to be there!’

‘Is she sane?’ asked Mrs Linton, appealing to me. ‘I’ll repeat our conversation, word for word, Isabella, and you point out any charm it could have had for you.’

‘I don’t mind the conversation,’ she answered. ‘I wanted to be with—’

‘Well!’ said Catherine, perceiving her hesitate to complete the sentence.

‘With him; and I won’t be always sent off!’ she continued, kindling up. ‘You are a dog in the manger³, Cathy, and desire no one to be loved but yourself!’

‘You are an impertinent⁴ little monkey!’ exclaimed Mrs Linton, in surprise. ‘But I’ll not believe this idiocy. It is impossible that you can covet⁵ the admiration of Heathcliff—that you consider him an agreeable person! I hope I have misunderstood you, Isabella?’

‘No, you have not,’ said the infatuated⁶ girl. ‘I love him more than ever you loved Edgar; and he might love me, if you would let him!’

‘I wouldn’t be you for a kingdom⁷, then!’ Catherine declared, emphatically—and she seemed to speak sincerely.— ‘Nelly, help me to convince her of her madness. Tell her

¹ notion: an idea or concept.

² superfluous: [s(j)u:pə:fluəs] that is not needed or required; unnecessary, needless, uncalled-for. じやまな、余計な。

³ a dog in the manger [mémdʒə]: a churlish person who will neither use something himself nor let another use it; in allusion to the fable of the dog that stationed himself in a manger and would not let the ox or horse eat the hay. 意地悪。

⁴ impertinent: not consonant with reason; absurd, idle, trivial, silly.

⁵ covet: to desire eagerly, to wish for, long for. ‘can’ は可能性を表し、「～を望むことがありうる」。

⁶ infatuated: made or become utterly foolish; possessed with an extravagantly foolish passion; besotted.

⁷ for a kingdom: 王国をひとつもらったって（と引き換えにしても）。【参考】I would not do it **for the world**. 何を貰ってもそんな事をするのはいやだ。（齋藤秀三郎『英和中辞典』）

what Heathcliff is—an unreclaimed¹ creature, without refinement—without cultivation²; an arid³ wilderness of furze and whinstone⁴. I'd as soon put that little canary into the park on a winter's day, as recommend you to bestow your heart on him!⁵ It's deplorable⁶ ignorance of his character, child, and nothing else, which makes that dream enter your head. Pray don't imagine that he conceals depths of benevolence and affection beneath a stern exterior! He's not a rough diamond—a pearl-containing oyster of a rustic⁷; he's a fierce, pitiless, wolfish man. I never say to him 'let this or that enemy alone, because it would be ungenerous or cruel to harm them,' I say 'let them alone, because *I* should hate them to be wronged:' and he'd crush you, like a sparrow's egg, Isabella, if he found you a troublesome charge⁸. I know he couldn't love a Linton⁹; and yet, he'd be quite capable of marrying your fortune, and expectations¹⁰. Avarice¹¹ is growing with him a besetting¹² sin. There's my picture; and I'm his friend—so much so, that¹³ had he thought seriously to catch you, I should, perhaps, have held my tongue, and let you fall into his trap.'

Miss Linton regarded¹⁴ her sister-in-law with indignation.

'For shame! for shame!'¹⁵ she repeated, angrily. 'You are worse than twenty foes, you poisonous friend!'

'Ah! you won't believe me, then?' said Catherine. 'You think I speak from wicked selfishness?'

¹ unreclaimed: not reclaimed from error or wrong-doing; unreformed.

² cultivation: the developing, fostering, or improving (of the mind, faculties, etc.) by education and training; the condition of being cultivated; culture, refinement. 教養。

³ arid: (of the ground or climate) barren, bare.

⁴ whinstone: a name for various very hard dark-coloured rocks or stones. ごつごつした岩。

⁵ would as soon A as B: Bするくらいならいっそ A。'bestow your heart on him' は、あなたの心を彼に与える。【参考】I would **sooner** die **than**—**as soon** die **as**—disgrace myself. 恥を掻くならいっそ死ぬ。(齋藤秀三郎『英和中辞典』)

⁶ deplorable: (now chiefly used of events, conditions, circumstances) lamentable, very sad, grievous, miserable, wretched.

⁷ a pearl-containing oyster of a rustic: 内に真珠を秘めた貝のような無骨者。この 'of' については 85 頁注 4 参照。

⁸ charge: (obs.) a burden, load, weight (of trouble, inconvenience, etc.). お荷物。

⁹ a Linton: Linton 家の一員。

¹⁰ expectations: (pl.) prospects of inheritance or of profiting by testament. 遺産相続の見込み。

¹¹ avarice: inordinate desire of acquiring and hoarding wealth; greediness of gain, cupidity.

¹² besetting: that besets (つきまとう) ; esp. in the expression besetting sin, and the like, in allusion to Heb. xii. 1. (Wherefore seeing we also are compassed about with so great a cloud of witnesses, let us lay aside every weight, and the sin which doth so easily beset *us*, and let us run with patience the race that is set before us. この故に我らは斯く多くの證人に雲のごとく圍まれたれば、凡ての重荷と纏へる罪とを除け、忍耐をもて我らの前に置かれたる馳場をはしり)

¹³ so much so, that: 「とても(親密な友人)だから～」と結果を表す。'such an intimate friend of his that ...' ということ。

¹⁴ regard: to look at, gaze upon, observe. これが本来の意味。

¹⁵ for shame!: 'shame on you!' 'you should be ashamed' 恥知らず、恥を知れ!

‘I’m certain you do,’ retorted Isabella; ‘and I shudder at you!’

‘Good!’ cried the other. ‘Try for yourself, if that be your spirit¹; I have done², and yield the argument to your saucy insolence.³’

‘And I must suffer⁴ for her egotism!’ she sobbed, as Mrs Linton left the room. ‘All, all is against me; she has blighted⁵ my single consolation. But she uttered falsehoods, didn’t she? Mr Heathcliff is not a fiend; he has an honourable soul, and a true one, or how could he remember her?’

‘Banish him from your thoughts, miss,’ I said. ‘He’s a bird of bad omen—no mate for you. Mrs Linton spoke strongly, and yet, I can’t contradict her. She is better acquainted with his heart than I, or any one besides⁶; and she never would represent him as worse than he is. Honest people don’t hide their deeds. How has he been living? how has he got rich? Why is he staying at Wuthering Heights, the house of a man whom he abhors? They say Mr Earnshaw is worse and worse since he came. They sit up all night together continually, and Hindley has been borrowing money on his land⁷, and does nothing but play and drink, I heard only a week ago; it was Joseph who told me—I met him at Gimmerton.

“‘Nelly,’ he said, ‘we’s hae a Crahr’s ‘quest enah, at ahr folks. One on ‘em’s a’most gotten his finger cut off wi’ hauding t’other froo’ sticking hisselsn loike a cawlf. That’s maister, yah know, ut’s soa up uh going tuh t’ grand ‘sizes. He’s noan feared uh t’ Bench uh judges, norther Paul, nur Peter, nur John, nor Matthew, nor noan on ‘em, not he! He fair likes—he langs to set his brazened face agean ‘em! And yon bonny lad Heathcliff, yah mind, he’s a rare un! He can girn a laugh as, weell’s onybody at a raight divil’s jest. Does he niver say nowt of his fine living amang us, when he goas to t’ Grange? This is t’

¹ spirit: the disposition, feeling, or frame of mind with which something is done, considered, or viewed. ここは「あなたがそういうつもりなら」ほどの意味か。

² I have done: もうやめにしたわ。‘I have done with you.’なら「もうあなたに関わるのはやめたわ」。*to have done with*: to cease to have to do with.

³ yield the argument to your saucy insolence: あなたの生意気な態度には降参したから、議論はもうやすわ。 *yield*: to hand over, give up, relinquish possession of, surrender, resign.

⁴ suffer: to undergo or submit to pain, punishment, or death. (～ゆえに) 苦しみを味わう (*for*).

⁵ blight: (fig.) to exert a baleful influence on; to destroy the brightness, beauty, or promise of; to nip in the bud, mar, frustrate. 台なしにする。

⁶ besides: other than mentioned, otherwise, else. ここは ‘(than) anyone else’ (ほかのだれ) よりも同じ。

⁷ on his land: 土地をかたにして。 *on*: indicating that which forms the basis of income, taxation, borrowing, betting, profit, or loss. 【参考】(齋藤はこの *on* を「依拠する財源」を示すものと説明し) **raise money on** one’s estate—**borrow money on** some jewels (何々を) 抵當にして金を借りる (も財源に依る)。(齋藤秀三郎『英和中辞典』)

way on't—up at sun-dahn; dice, brandy, cloised shutters, und can'le lught till next day at noon—then, t' foil gangs banning un' raving to his cham'er, makking dacent fowks dig thur fingers i' thur lugs fur varry shame; un' the knave, wah he carn cahnt his brass, un' ate, un' sleep, un' off tuh his neighbour's tuh gossip wi' t' wife. I' course, he tells Dame Catherine hah hor fathur's goold runs intuh his pocket, and her fathur's son gallops dahn t' Broad road¹, while he flees afore to oppen t' pikes?"² Now, Miss Linton, Joseph is an old rascal, but no liar; and if his account of Heathcliff's conduct be true, you would never think of desiring such a husband, would you?"

'You are leagued with the rest, Ellen!' she replied. 'I'll not listen to your slanders. What malevolence³ you must have to wish to convince me that there is no happiness in the world!'

Whether she would have got over this fancy if left to herself, or persevered in nursing it perpetually, I cannot say; she had little time to reflect. The day after, there was a justice-meeting⁴ at the next town; my master was obliged to attend; and Mr Heathcliff, aware of his absence, called rather earlier than usual.

Catherine and Isabella were sitting in the library, on hostile terms⁵, but silent: the latter alarmed at her recent indiscretion, and the disclosure she had made of her secret feelings in a transient fit of passion; the former, on mature consideration⁶, really offended

¹ the Broad road: the broad road to destruction. 滅びに至る広き道。[Matt 7:13] Enter ye in at the strait gate: for wide *is* the gate, and broad *is* the way, that leadeth to destruction, and many there be which go in thereat: (狭き門より入れ、滅にいたる門は大きく、その路は廣く、之より入る者おほし)

² we's hae ... oppen t' pikes: we shall have a Coroner's inquest soon, at our folks. One of them's almost gotten his finger cut off with holding the other from sticking himself like a calf. That's master, you know, that's so (set) on going to the Grand Assizes (= heaven). He's not feared of the Bench or judges, neither Paul, nor Peter, nor John, nor Mathew, nor none of them, not he! He fair likes, he longs to set his brazened face against (= to take up an attitude of determined hostility towards) them! And yon (= that) bonny lad Heathcliff, you mind, he's a rare un (= one)! He can girn (= to utter in a snarling tone) a laugh, as well as anybody (= than anyone) at a right devil's jest. Does he never say nothing of his fine living among us, when he goes to the Grange? This is the way of it—up at sun-down; dice, brandy, closed shutters, and candle light till next day, at noon—then, the fool (= master) gangs (= goes) banning (= cursing) and raving to his chamber, making decent folks dig their finger in their lugs (= ears) for very shame; and the knave (= Heathcliff), why, he can count his brass (= money), and eat, and sleep, and off to his neighbour's to gossip with the wife (= Catherine). In course (= Of course), he tells Dame Catherine how her father's gold runs into his pocket, and her father's son gallops down the Broad road, while he (= Heathcliff) flees (= flies) afore (=previously) to open the pikes (= gates)?

³ malevolence: the wishing or the disposition to wish evil to others; ill-will.

⁴ justice-meeting: Edgar は治安判事 (magistrate = justice of the peace)。

⁵ terms: (pl.) standing, footing, mutual relation between two persons or parties. 'on hostile terms' 互いに反目しあつて。

⁶ on matured consideration: 時間をかけてよく考えてみるにつけ、考えれば考えるほど。

with her companion; and, if she laughed again at her pertness, inclined to make it no laughing matter to *her*.¹

She did laugh as she saw Heathcliff pass the window. I was sweeping the hearth, and I noticed a mischievous smile on her lips. Isabella, absorbed in her meditations, or a book, remained till the door opened; and it was too late to attempt an escape, which she would gladly have done had it been practicable.

‘Come in, that’s right!’ exclaimed the mistress, gaily, pulling a chair to the fire. ‘Here are two people sadly in need of a third to thaw the ice between them; and you are the very one we should both of us choose. Heathcliff, I’m proud to show you, at last, somebody that dotes² on you more than myself. I expect you to feel flattered—nay, it’s not Nelly; don’t look at her! My poor little sister-in-law is breaking her heart by mere contemplation of your physical and moral beauty. It lies in your own power to be Edgar’s brother! No, no, Isabella, you shan’t run off,’ she continued, arresting, with feigned playfulness, the confounded girl, who had risen indignantly. ‘We were quarrelling like cats about you, Heathcliff; and I was fairly beaten in protestations³ of devotion and admiration; and, moreover, I was informed that if I would but have the manners to stand aside, my rival, as she will have⁴ herself to be, would shoot a shaft⁵ into your soul that would fix you for ever, and send my image into eternal oblivion!’⁶

‘Catherine!’ said Isabella, calling up⁷ her dignity, and disdaining⁸ to struggle from the tight grasp that held her. ‘I’d thank you to adhere to the truth, and not slander me, even in joke!’⁹ Mr Heathcliff, be kind enough to bid this friend of yours release me—she forgets that you and I are not intimate acquaintances, and what amuses her is painful to me beyond expression.’

As the guest answered nothing, but took his seat, and looked thoroughly indifferent what sentiments she cherished concerning him, she turned, and whispered an earnest

¹ if she laughed ... to *her*: 次に Isabella の小生意気な態度をあざ笑うことがあれば、「彼女」(Catherine ではなく Isabella) にとっては笑いごとではすまされぬ話にしてやりたいと思った。

² dote: to be infatuatedly fond of; to bestow excessive love or fondness on or upon; to be foolishly in love (*on, upon*) (p. 57 注 4、p.92 注 7 参照)

³ protestation: a solemn affirmation of a fact, opinion, or resolution.

⁴ have: (with *will*) to maintain or assert as a fact.

⁵ shaft: (the long slender rod of) an arrow; an arrow. ここでは、恋の矢。

⁶ oblivion: the state or fact of forgetting or having forgotten; forgetfulness.

⁷ call up: to summon up (courage, valour, etc.). (勇気などを) 奮い起こす。

⁸ disdain: (with *inf.* or *gerund.*) to think it beneath one, to scorn (to do or doing something). じたばたするような見苦しいまねはせず。

⁹ I’d thank you ... joke!: 冗談にしたって、根も葉もない悪口はいわないでほしいものだわ。※これは上記注 1 の解釈 (*her*= Isabella) を裏付けるセリフである。

appeal for liberty to her tormentor.

'By no means!' cried Mrs Linton in answer. 'I won't be named a dog in the manger again. You *shall* stay, now then!¹ Heathcliff, why don't you evince satisfaction at my pleasant news? Isabella swears that the love Edgar has for me is nothing to² that she entertains for you.³ I'm sure she made some speech of the kind, did she not, Ellen? And she has fasted⁴ ever since the day before yesterday's walk, from sorrow and rage that I despatched her out of your society⁵, of its being unacceptable⁶.'

'I think you belie⁷ her,' said Heathcliff, twisting his chair to face them. 'She wishes to be out of my society now, at any rate!'

And he stared hard at the object of discourse, as one might do at a strange, repulsive animal, a centipede⁸ from the Indies, for instance, which curiosity leads one to examine in spite of the aversion it raises.

The poor thing couldn't bear that; she grew white and red in rapid succession, and, while tears beaded her lashes, bent⁹ the strength of her small fingers to loosen the firm clutch of Catherine, and perceiving that, as fast as she raised one finger off her arm, another closed down, and she could not remove the whole together, she began to make use of her nails, and their sharpness presently ornamented the detainer's with crescents¹⁰ of red.

'There's a tigress!¹¹' exclaimed Mrs Linton, setting her free, and shaking her hand with

¹ now then: さあさあ (～しなさい) など。命令・依頼などを表す。

² to: (expressing comparison) in comparison with, as compared with.

³ the love Edgar has...for you: PENGUIN 版注も指摘するとおり、Isabella のセリフは 'I love him more than ever you loved Edgar.' (p. 145) だから実際は逆。すぐに気づいてごまかそうとしていることから、自然に 'I love Edgar.' とはいいいにくい Catherine の微妙な心理がうかがわれる。

⁴ fast: to go without food.

⁵ sorrow and rage that I despatched her out of your society: この 'that' は案外わかりにくい。直前の名詞が 'rage and sorrow' では同格節を導く接続詞とは取れず、関係代名詞とすれば意味が通らない。辞書に用例はないけれど、とりあえず 'because of the fact that' とでも解釈しておこう。

⁶ under the idea of its being unacceptable: 'it = that I despatched her out of your society (Isabella をあなたの前から追い払ったこと)' と考え、それを Isabella は 'unacceptable' (ゆるせない) と思って、怒りと悲しみから食事を口にしなかった、と解釈するのが自然だろう。※これによく似た文章が後に出てくる。'she fasted pertinaciously under the idea, probably, that ...' (たぶん～とやってのことでしょうが、彼女は頑固に食事を絶っていました。p. 169 参照)

⁷ belie: to tell lies about; to give a false representation or account of.

⁸ centipede: [sɛntɪpi:d] a name given to wingless vermiform articulated animals having many feet, constituting the order Cheilopoda of the class Myriapoda. ムカデ。

⁹ bend: to direct, apply, or bring to bear strenuously (one's mind, energies, etc.)

¹⁰ crescents of red: 三日月形の赤い傷。

¹¹ tigress: [taɪgrɪs] A female tiger; (fig.) a fierce, cruel, or tiger-like woman.

pain. 'Begone, for God's sake, and hide your vixen¹ face! How foolish to reveal those talons² to *him*! Can't you fancy the conclusions he'll draw? Look, Heathcliff! they are instruments that will do execution³—you must beware of your eyes.'

'I'd wrench them off her fingers, if they ever menaced me,' he answered, brutally, when the door had closed after her. 'But what did you mean by teasing the creature in that manner, Cathy? You were not speaking the truth, were you?'

'I assure you I was,' she returned. 'She has been dying for your sake several weeks; and raving about you this morning, and pouring forth a deluge⁴ of abuse, because I represented your failings in a plain light for the purpose of mitigating⁵ her adoration⁶. But don't notice⁷ it further. I wished to punish her sauciness, that's all—I like her too well, my dear Heathcliff, to let you absolutely seize and devour her up.'⁸

'And I like her too ill to attempt it,' said he, 'except in a very ghoulish⁹ fashion. You'd hear of odd things if I lived alone with that mawkish¹⁰, waxen¹¹ face; the most ordinary¹² would be painting on its white the colours of the rainbow, and turning the blue eyes black, every day or two; they detestably resemble Linton's.'

'Delectably!¹³' observed Catherine. 'They are dove's eyes—angel's!'

¹ vixen: The female of the fox; a she-fox; (fig.) an ill-tempered quarrelsome woman; a shrew, a termagant.

² talons: the claws (or less usually in sing. any claw) of a bird or beast; *spec.* the powerful claws of a bird of prey, or of a dragon, griffin, etc.

³ execution: (now almost exclusively in phr. **to do execution**) effective action (esp. of weapons); destructive effect, infliction of damage or slaughter. *instruments that will do execution*: おそろしい殺傷効果を発揮する武器。

⁴ deluge: a great flood or overflowing of water, a destructive inundation. 'a deluge of abuse' 悪態のつき放題。

⁵ mitigate: to lessen the violence of (a disease). ここは恋の病。

⁶ adoration: (fig.) the exhibition of profound regard and love. 崇拜にも近い愛情をいう。

⁷ notice: to make mention of; to remark upon; to refer to, speak of (something observed).

⁸ I like ... up: 彼女が好きだから、あなたの食べ物にはさせたくないのよ。

⁹ ghoulish: [gú:lɪʃ] of the nature of, resembling, or characteristic of ghouls. 死体を食らう鬼のような、残忍な。

¹⁰ mawkish: having a faint, sickly flavour with little definite taste; (fig.) feebly sentimental; imbued with sickly or false sentiment; lacking in robustness. もともと「mawk (= maggot ウジ) のような→むかつくような」。

¹¹ waxen: made of wax; (fig.) with reference to the smooth and lustrous surface of things modelled in wax. ここは *OED* の注記 'Also applied to the pallor of a corpse or a sick person.' のように、顔の青白さについていう。

¹² the most ordinary: 'odd things' (妙なうわさ) の内で一番よく耳にするもの。'painting ...' は、暴力をふるって白い顔にさまざまな色の痣をこしらえること。

¹³ delectably: delightfully. もちろん前の *detestably* に対していったもの。

‘She’s her brother’s heir, is she not?’ he asked, after a brief silence.

‘I should be sorry to think so,’ returned his companion. ‘Half a dozen nephews¹ shall² erase her title, please Heaven! Abstract³ your mind from the subject, at present—you are too prone to covet your neighbour’s goods; remember *this* neighbour’s goods are mine.’

‘If they were *mine*, they would be none the less that⁴,’ said Heathcliff, ‘but though Isabella Linton may be silly, she is scarcely mad; and—in short, we’ll dismiss the matter, as you advise.’

From their tongues they did dismiss it; and Catherine, probably, from her thoughts. The other, I felt certain, recalled it often in the course of the evening; I saw him smile to himself—grin⁵ rather—and lapse into ominous⁶ musing whenever Mrs Linton had occasion to be absent from the apartment.

I determined to watch his movements. My heart invariably cleaved⁷ to the master’s, in preference to⁸ Catherine’s side—with reason⁹, I imagined, for he was kind, and trustful, and honourable; and she—she could not be called the *opposite*, yet she seemed to allow herself such wide latitude¹⁰, that I had little faith in her principles¹¹, and still less sympathy for her feelings. I wanted something to happen which might have the effect of freeing both Wuthering Heights and the Grange of Mr Heathcliff¹², quietly, leaving us as we had been prior to his advent¹³. His visits were a continual¹ nightmare to me; and, I

¹ half-a-dozen nephews: Catherine が六人男子を産めば、Isabella にとっては六人の甥。男子が生まれれば Isabella の相続資格は失われる。六人というのは冗談。

² shall: 話者の意志だから、Isabella の甥っ子を六人生んで、権利 (title) を無効にしてやりたい。

³ abstract: to withdraw, deduct, remove, or take away (something).

⁴ If they were ... that: (Isabella との結婚によって) 財産がおれのものになるとしても、それは結局おまえのものでもあるということ。

⁵ grin: to draw back the lips and display the teeth, by way of a forced or unnatural smile, or of the broad smile indicative of unrestrained or vulgar merriment, clownish embarrassment, stupid wonder or exultation, or the like. 歯を見せて (ここでは) いやらしい笑いを浮かべる。

⁶ ominous: of ill omen, foreboding evil, inauspicious; threatening. 不吉な、不気味な。

⁷ cleave: to adhere or cling to (a person, party, principle, practice, etc.); to remain attached, devoted, or faithful to.

⁸ in preference to: as a thing preferred over (another). ～よりむしろ。

⁹ with reason: (ご主人の側につくのも) 当然だ、もつともだ。

¹⁰ allow herself such wide latitude: 自由気ままも度がひどく。latitude: freedom from narrow restrictions.

¹¹ principle: an inward or personal law of right action; personal devotion to right; rectitude, uprightness, honourable character. (Also in pl.) 個人的な道徳律、正しい行いの基準、行いの正しさ。ここはいわゆる「道徳観念」でいいだろう。

¹² freeing ... Mr Heathcliff: 嵐が丘からお屋敷からもヒースクリフを厄介払いする。free: to clear, disengage, or disentangle (a thing) from some obstruction or encumbrance (from, off).

¹³ advent: the arrival of esp. an important person or thing. (詳しくは p. 4 注 1 参照)

suspected, to my master also. His abode at the Heights was an oppression past explaining. I felt that God had forsaken the stray sheep there² to its own wicked wanderings, and an evil beast prowled³ between it and the fold, waiting his time to spring and destroy.

¹ continual: constantly or frequently recurring; always happening. いつも（頻繁に）繰り返される。これに対し ‘continuous: unbroken, uninterrupted, connected throughout in space or time.’ つまり中断の有無によって使い分ける。しかし ‘the (two) words are used interchangeably in all kinds of speech and writing with no distinction in meaning.’ (*RH 2nd*) とあるとおり、実際には区別しにくいことが多い（例外：‘a *continuous* row of houses.’ など）

² the stray sheep there: Hindley.

³ prowl: to go, rove, roam, or wander about, in search of what can be found, esp. of plunder or prey, or with predatory intent. 獲物（ここでは群れからはぐれた羊）をねらってうろつく。

Chapter XI

Sometimes, while meditating on these things in solitude, I've got up¹ in a sudden terror, and put on my bonnet to go see² how all was at the farm; I've persuaded my conscience that it was a duty to warn him how people talked regarding his ways; and then I've recollected his confirmed bad habits, and, hopeless of benefiting him, have flinched from re-entering the dismal house, doubting if I could bear to be taken at my word³.

One time, I passed the old gate, going out of my way, on a journey to Gimmerton. It was about the period that my narrative has reached—a bright, frosty afternoon; the ground bare, and the road hard and dry.

I came to a stone where the highway branches off on to the moor at your left hand; a rough sand-pillar⁴, with the letters W. H. cut on its north side, on the east, G., and on the south-west, T. G. It serves as guide-post to the Grange, and Heights, and village.

The sun shone yellow on its grey head, reminding me of summer; and I cannot say why, but all at once, a gush of child's sensations flowed into my heart. Hindley and I held it a favourite spot twenty years before.

I gazed long at the weather-worn block; and, stooping down, perceived a hole near the bottom still full of snail-shells and pebbles which we were fond of storing there with more perishable things—and, as fresh as reality, it appeared that I beheld my early playmate seated on the withered turf; his dark, square head bent forward, and his little hand scooping out the earth with a piece of slate⁵.

¹ I've got up ...: あとの 'It was about the period that my narrative *has reached*.' はすんなりわかるが、Hindley の死は 1784 年、Nelly が話しているのは 1801 年で、相当過去の話をしているのに、ここも現在完了形なのはなぜだろうか。Nelly が心理的に 1784 年当時に身を置いていたのか、それとも「作者の現在」が顔を出したのか？ 【参考】現在完了は近い過去のことばかりではなく、ある程度遠い過去のことでも表すことができる。この場合は、その過去の事柄が引き続いて現在と結びついていることが前提になる。つまり、その過去の事柄が現在においても繰り返して起こりうることを示すと見てよい（研究社『実例英文法』） ※この場合、訪ねようにも Hindley はずいぶん前に死んだのだから、Nelly がふたたび立ち上がってボンネットをかぶる可能性はない。

² go see: = go to see, go and see. くだけた用法 (come もこのかたちを取る)。

³ if I could...my word: 私の言葉を聞き入れさせるという任に堪えるかどうか。

⁴ sand-pillar: sandstone (砂岩) の柱 (それが道標であることはすぐあとに出てくる)。W. H. = Wuthering Heights, G. = Gimmerton, T. G. = Thrushcross Grange.

⁵ slate: A thin, usually rectangular, piece of certain varieties of stone which split readily into laminae (薄層板), used especially for the purpose of covering the roofs of buildings; an argillaceous (粘土質の) rock of sedimentary origin, the different varieties of which have the common property of splitting readily into thin plates. (屋根を葺く) 石板; (薄い板状に割れやすく、屋根葺き用石板となる) 粘板岩。

‘Poor Hindley!’ I exclaimed, involuntarily¹.

I started²—my bodily eye³ was cheated into a momentary belief that the child lifted its face and stared straight into mine! It vanished in a twinkling; but, immediately, I felt an irresistible yearning⁴ to be at the Heights. Superstition urged me to comply⁵ with this impulse—supposing⁶ he should be dead! I thought—or should die soon!—supposing it were a sign of death!

The nearer I got to the house the more agitated I grew: and on catching sight of it, I trembled every limb. The apparition had outstripped⁷ me. It stood looking through the gate. That was my first idea on observing an elf-locked⁸, brown-eyed boy setting his ruddy countenance against the bars. Further reflection suggested this must be Hareton, *my* Hareton, not altered greatly since I left him, ten months since.

‘God bless thee, darling!’ I cried, forgetting instantaneously my foolish fears. ‘Hareton, it's Nelly—Nelly, thy nurse.’

He retreated out of arm's length, and picked up a large flint⁹.

‘I am come to see thy father, Hareton,’ I added, guessing from the action that Nelly, if she lived in his memory at all¹⁰, was not recognized as one with me¹¹.

He raised his missile¹² to hurl¹ it; I commenced a soothing speech, but could not stay

¹ involuntarily: without exercise or co-operation of the will. われ知らず、思わず。

² start: to undergo a sudden involuntary movement of the body, resulting from surprise, fright, sudden pain, etc. (p. 66 注 6 参照)

³ my bodily eye: 身体器官としての目。この目で実際に～を見たように錯覚した、ということ。

⁴ yearning: intense longing or desire after, *for*, *to*, or *to do* something; an instance of this.

⁵ comply: to act in accordance with, and fulfilment of, wishes, desires, requests, demands, conditions, or regulations. ～に従う、応ずる (*with*)。

⁶ supposing: upon the supposition that; in the event that. ～と仮定して、万一～だとしたら (どうだろう、どうなるだろう、など)

⁷ outstrip: to pass running or any kind of swift motion; to outrun; get ahead of, or leave behind, in any kind of competition. 追い抜く、先へ行く (そして人をあとに残す)。

⁸ elf-locked: having elf-locks or tangled hair. 俗信では、髪のもつれは妖精のしわざとされる。

⁹ flint: a kind of hard stone, most commonly of a steely gray colour, found in roundish nodules (団塊) of varying size, usually covered with a white incrustation (外層). In early and poetic use often put for hard stone in general. ここは「石 (ころ)」でいいだろう。

¹⁰ if she ... at all: (まったく忘れていてもおかしくはないが) たとえうっすら記憶に残っていたとしても。 (‘at all’ について詳しくは p. 42 注 12 参照)

¹¹ one with me: 私が当の本人であること。 *one*: identical; the same.

¹² missile: [mísàil, mísill] a missile object or weapon, as a stone discharged from a sling, an arrow, a bullet.

his hand. The stone struck my bonnet, and then ensued², from the stammering lips of the little fellow, a string of curses which, whether he comprehended them or not, were delivered with practised emphasis, and distorted his baby features into a shocking expression of malignity.

You may be certain this grieved, more than angered me. Fit³ to cry, I took an orange from my pocket, and offered it to propitiate⁴ him.

He hesitated, and then snatched it from my hold, as if he fancied I only intended to tempt⁵ and disappoint him.

I showed another, keeping it out of his reach.

‘Who has taught you those fine words, my bairn?’ I inquired. ‘The curate?’

‘Damn the curate, and thee! Gie me that,’ he replied.

‘Tell us where you got your lessons, and you shall have it,’⁶ said I. ‘Who’s your master?’

‘Devil daddy,’ was his answer.

‘And what do you learn from Daddy?’ I continued.

He jumped at the fruit. I raised it higher. ‘What does he teach you?’ I asked.

‘Naught,’ said he, ‘but to keep out of his gait⁷. Daddy cannot bide⁸ me, because I swear at him.’

¹ hurl: to throw or cast (a missile, projectile, or the like); to project; to fling.

² ensue: [ɛnsjú:] to occur or arise subsequently (chiefly implying immediate succession). (ひきつづき) ～が起こる、～がすぐあとにつづく。

³ fit: inclined, disposed; (now chiefly colloq. and dial. in stronger sense) angry or troubled enough *to* (do something desperate or violent); exhausted enough, ‘ready’ to (sink to the ground, etc.). ここは「(情けないありさまを見て心が乱れるあまり) 泣きたい気持ちになり」。

⁴ propitiate: [prəpɪʃiət] to appease, conciliate (one offended). なだめる。

⁵ tempt: to attract or incite *to* some action or to do something; *to* allure, entice, invite, attract; to dispose, incline. 気を引く (そしてなにかをさせる)、誘惑する。

⁶ Tell us ... have it.: どこで習ったのか教えてくれたらミカンをあげるわ。次の ‘master’ は ‘teacher’。

⁷ to keep out of his gait: to keep out of his way. 彼から離れている、彼に近寄らないでいる。‘Naught’ と ‘but’ で結局 ‘naught but = nothing but’ 「なんにも。ただおれに近寄るなっていうだけ」。

⁸ bide: to tolerate, endure, put up with.

‘Ah! and the devil teaches you to swear at Daddy?’ I observed.

‘Aye—nay,’ he drawled¹.

‘Who, then?’

‘Heathcliff.’

I asked if he liked Mr Heathcliff?

‘Aye!’ he answered again.

Desiring to have his reasons for liking him, I could only gather the sentences, ‘I known’t — he pays Dad back² what he gies to me — he curses Daddy for cursing me — He says I mun [= must] do as I will.’

‘And the curate does not teach you to read and write, then?’ I pursued.

‘No, I was told the curate should have his —³ teeth dashed down his — throat if he stepped over the threshold — Heathcliff had promised that!’

I put the orange in his hand; and bade him tell his father that a woman called Nelly Dean was waiting to speak with him, by the garden gate.

He went up the walk, and entered the house; but, instead of Hindley, Heathcliff appeared on the door stones, and I turned directly and ran down the road as hard as ever⁴ I could race⁵, making no halt till I gained⁶ the guide post, and feeling as scared as if I had raised a goblin.

This is not much connected with Miss Isabella's affair; except that it urged me to

¹ drawl: to prolong or lengthen out the sounds of speech in an indolent or affected manner; to speak slowly, by affectedly prolonging the words. 「いや」を「いーやー」というふうに。【参考】まだるく物言ふ、ぐづぐづした物の言ひ様する。(齋藤秀三郎『英和中辞典』)

² pay back: 仕返しする。pay: to inflict, bestow, give (punishment, a blow, etc.) as being deserved, or in return for the like.

³ —: damn または damned を略したもの。

⁴ as ... as ever: 【参考】[“as ... as ...” を強める “ever”] Come **as** soon **as** (**ever**) you can. 成る可く早く来い。(齋藤秀三郎『英和中辞典』)

⁵ race: to run, ride, sail, etc. swiftly.

⁶ gain: to reach, arrive at (some point desired or aimed at).

resolve further on mounting¹ vigilant² guard, and doing my utmost to check the spread of such bad influence at the Grange, even though I should wake³ a domestic storm, by thwarting Mrs Linton's pleasure.

The next time Heathcliff came, my young lady chanced to be feeding some pigeons in the court. She had never spoken a word to her sister-in-law, for three days; but she had likewise dropped her fretful complaining, and we found it a great comfort.

Heathcliff had not the habit of bestowing a single unnecessary civility on Miss Linton, I knew. Now, as soon as he beheld her, his first precaution was to take a sweeping survey of the house-front. I was standing by the kitchen window, but I drew out of sight. He then stepped across the pavement to her, and said something: she seemed embarrassed, and desirous of getting away; to prevent it, he laid his hand on her arm: she averted her face; he apparently put some question which she had no mind to answer. There was another rapid glance at the house, and supposing himself unseen, the scoundrel had the impudence to embrace her.

‘Judas!⁴ Traitor!’ I ejaculated. ‘You are a hypocrite too, are you? A deliberate⁵ deceiver.’

‘Who is, Nelly?’ said Catherine's voice at my elbow—I had been over-intent on watching the pair outside to mark her entrance.

‘Your worthless friend!’ I answered warmly, ‘the sneaking rascal yonder—Ah, he has caught a glimpse of us—he is coming in! I wonder will he have the art to find a plausible excuse for making love⁶ to Miss, when he told you he hated her?’

Mrs Linton saw Isabella tear herself free, and run into the garden; and a minute after, Heathcliff opened the door.

¹ mount guard: to go on duty as a guard. 歩哨に立つ、見張りをする。

² vigilant: wakeful and watchful; keeping steadily on the alert; attentively or closely observant. いつも警戒を怠らぬ。

³ wake: to bring into being, raise, stir up (war, strife, woe, etc.); to arouse, excite (an activity, feeling, emotion). 引き起こす。

⁴ Judas: the name of the disciple who betrayed Jesus Christ; (hence allusively) one who treacherously betrays under the semblance of friendship; a traitor or betrayer of the worst kind.

⁵ deliberate: (of persons) characterized by deliberation; considering carefully; careful and slow in deciding; not hasty or rash. 用心深い。「計画的な」ではない。実際この場面でも Heathcliff は非常に用心深く行動している。

⁶ make love: to pay amorous attention; (now more usually) to copulate. ここは前者、言い寄る。

I couldn't withhold giving some loose to¹ my indignation; but Catherine angrily insisted on silence, and threatened to order me out of the kitchen, if I dared to be so presumptuous² as to put in my insolent tongue.

'To hear you, people might think *you* were the mistress!' she cried. 'You want setting down in your right place!³ Heathcliff, what are you about, raising this stir? I said you must let Isabella alone!—I beg you will, unless you are tired of being received here, and wish Linton to draw the bolts against you⁴!'

'God forbid that he should try!' answered the black villain—I detested him just then. 'God keep him meek and patient! Every day I grow madder after⁵ sending him to heaven!'

'Hush!' said Catherine, shutting the inner door. 'Don't vex me. Why have you disregarded my request? Did she come across⁶ you on purpose?'

'What is it to you?' he growled. 'I have a right to kiss her, if she chooses; and you have no right to object—I am not *your* husband, *you* needn't be jealous of me.'

'I'm not jealous of you,' replied the mistress, 'I'm jealous for⁷ you. Clear⁸ your face, you shan't scowl at me! If you like Isabella, you shall marry her. But, do you like her, tell the truth, Heathcliff? There, you won't answer. I'm certain you don't.'

'And would Mr Linton approve of his sister marrying that man?' I inquired.

'Mr Linton should approve,' returned my lady decisively.

'He might spare⁹ himself the trouble¹⁰,' said Heathcliff, 'I could do as well without his

¹ give (a) loose to: to give full vent to (feelings, etc.). (感情などを) 表に出す、漏らす。

² presumptuous: forward, impertinent. 出すぎた。

³ You want ... place!: あんたは分をわきまえてちょうだい! *want*: (colloq.) need.

⁴ draw the bolt against you: 門をかけてあなたを閉め出す。

⁵ after: denoting the aim or object of many vbs., adjs., and ns. of action. 「目的」を表す。

⁶ come across: 偶然出くわしたのではなく、Isabella が Heathcliff の進路を横切る (遮る) ように近づいていったこと。

⁷ jealous: 最初の jealous は 'apprehensive of being displaced in the love or good-will of some one,' あとのほうは 'suspiciously careful or watchful.'

⁸ clear: to remove from (the brow) any traces of tension or anxiety, as folds or wrinkles. ここは、こわい顔をするのはやめるの、私をにらみつけちゃだめ。

⁹ spare: to allow to be free or exempt *from* some task, etc. ~の手数 (面倒) をかけない ('spare oneself' の場合は 'from' なしで) ~をせずにする。ここ 'He might be spared from the trouble.' に同じ。

¹⁰ the trouble: the trouble of approving the marriage.

approbation¹—And as to you, Catherine, I have a mind to speak a few words, now, while we are at it²—I want you to be aware that I *know* you have treated me infernally³—infernally! Do you hear? And if you flatter yourself⁴ that I don't perceive it you are a fool;—and if you think I can be consoled by sweet words you are an idiot—and if you fancy I'll suffer⁵ unrevenged, I'll convince you of the contrary, in a very little while. Meantime, thank you for telling me your sister-in-law's secret. I swear I'll make the most of it, and stand you aside!⁶

'What new phase of his character is this?'⁷ exclaimed Mrs Linton, in amazement. 'I've treated you infernally—and you'll take your revenge! How will you take it⁸, ungrateful brute? How have I treated you infernally?'

'I seek no revenge on you,' replied Heathcliff, less vehemently. 'That's not the plan—The tyrant grinds⁹ down his slaves and they don't turn against him, they crush those beneath them—You are welcome to torture me to death for your amusement, only, allow me to amuse myself a little in the same style—And refrain from insult, as much as you are able. Having levelled¹⁰ my palace, don't erect a hovel¹¹ and complacently admire your own charity in giving me that for a home. If I imagined you really wished me to marry Isabel, I'd cut my throat!'

'Oh, the evil is that I am not jealous, is it?' cried Catherine. 'Well, I won't repeat my offer of a wife—it is as bad as offering Satan a lost soul—Your bliss lies, like his, in inflicting misery—You prove it—Edgar is restored from the ill-temper he gave way to¹² at your coming; I begin to be secure and tranquil; and, you, restless to know us at peace, appear resolved on exciting a quarrel—quarrel with Edgar if you please, Heathcliff, and

¹ approbation: approval; official approval or sanction.

² while we are at it: この際だから。

³ infernally: in an infernal manner, hellishly, diabolically;(usually colloq.) to an 'infernal' extent, 'confoundedly', detestably. 地獄の思いをさせるほどひどく。

⁴ flatter oneself: to be pleased with the belief, idea, or suggestion *that*. ～と思って安心する。

⁵ suffer: to endure.

⁶ stand you aside!: you, stand aside! おまえは引っこんでいろ! *stand aside*: to draw back or retire and stand apart from the general company or from what is going on.

⁷ What new ... this?: あなたにそんなところ (一面) があったとはね! *phase*: any of the major appearances or aspects in which a thing of varying modes or conditions manifests itself to the eye or mind. (変化しつつあるものの状態がはっきりと目や心に見える) 様相や面、という *RH 2nd* の定義がわかりやすい。そのときどきで白だったり黒だったり、いい面だったり悪い面だったりするわけ。

⁸ take it: = take revenge.

⁹ grind: (fig.) to crush, to oppress; to harass with exactions. (also with *down*, *to the dust*.)

¹⁰ level: to bring to the level of the ground; to raze. 破壊する。

¹¹ hovel: a shed used as a human habitation; a rude or miserable dwelling-place. Isabella を指す。

¹² give way to: to abandon oneself to (anger, grief, etc.). ～に身を任せる。

deceive his sister, you'll hit on¹ exactly the most efficient method of revenging yourself on me.'

The conversation ceased—Mrs Linton sat down by the fire, flushed and gloomy. The spirit² which served her was growing intractable³: she could neither lay⁴ nor control it. He stood on the hearth with folded arms, brooding on his evil thoughts; and in this position⁵ I left them to seek⁶ the master, who was wondering what kept Catherine below so long.

'Ellen,' said he, when I entered, 'have you seen your mistress?'

'Yes; she's in the kitchen, sir,' I answered. 'She's sadly put out⁷ by Mr Heathcliff's behaviour: and, indeed, I do think it's time to arrange his visits on another footing⁸. There's harm in being too soft, and now it's come to this—.' And I related the scene in the court, and, as near as I dared⁹, the whole subsequent dispute. I fancied it could not be very prejudicial to Mrs Linton, unless she made it so, afterwards, by assuming the defensive¹⁰ for her guest.

Edgar Linton had difficulty in hearing me to the close¹¹—His first words revealed that he did not clear his wife of blame.

¹ hit on (or upon): to come upon, light upon, meet with, get at, reach, find, esp. something aimed at. (p. 65 注 5 参照)

² spirit: a particular character, disposition, or temper existing in, pervading, or animating, a person (気性)、あるいは(ふつうは性質を表す形容詞が先行して)「ある気性をそなえた人物」と取れる。いずれにしても知己である Heathcliff が Catherine の手には負えなくなりつつあったこと。
【参考】(意氣相投ずるの) 士, 同志。(齋藤秀三郎『英和中辞典』)

³ intractable: uncontrollable.

⁴ lay: (now arch.) to cause to subside (the sea, a tempest, a cloud of dust, etc.); appease (anger, appetite, etc.). (荒海などの現象、または怒りなどを) 鎮める。

⁵ position: (fig.) the situation which one metaphorically occupies in relation to others, to facts, or to circumstances; condition. (*OED*) 人が他とどのように関係して置かれているか、どのような状態・立場にあるか。 *Webster 3rd* は 'relative place, situation, or standing.'、また齋藤秀三郎『英和中辞典』は、人なら「境遇、立場」事なら「有様、状態」とする。ここでは 'in this position ...' を「こんな状態にある二人を残してご主人のもとに参りました」と考えておく。

⁶ seek: (arch.) to go to, visit, resort to (a place). 居場所はわかっている(少なくとも限られている)のだから、捜し回ったわけではないだろう。

⁷ put out: to cause to lose one's equanimity; to distress, 'upset' (mentally); in mod. use, to put out of temper, annoy, irritate, vex.

⁸ footing: the position or status due or assigned to a person, etc. in estimation or treatment. ここは、客としての待遇を見直すこと。

⁹ as near as I dared: ずいぶん思い切って。 *as near as*: extremely near; virtually.

¹⁰ assume the defensive: 守りにつく、弁護に回る。 *assume*: to adopt, choose, elect, to some position. ここは、(Edgar の敵である Heathcliff と言い争っていたのだから) あとで彼を弁護さえしなければ、Catherine にとって 'prejudicial' (= predudicial 不利になる) ことはなかっただろうに(実際にはそうしてしまった)ということ。

¹¹ close: [kləʊz] conclusion, termination, end.

‘This is insufferable!’ he exclaimed. ‘It is disgraceful that she should own¹ him for a friend, and force his company on me! Call me two men out of the hall, Ellen—Catherine shall linger no longer to argue with the low ruffian—I have humoured her enough.’

He descended; and, bidding the servants wait in the passage went, followed by me, to the kitchen. Its occupants had recommenced their angry discussion; Mrs Linton, at least, was scolding with renewed vigour; Heathcliff had moved to the window, and hung his head, somewhat cowed by her violent rating² apparently.

He saw the master first, and made a hasty motion that she should be silent; which she obeyed, abruptly, on discovering the reason of his intimation.

‘How is this?’ said Linton, addressing her; ‘What notion of propriety must you have to remain here³, after the language which has been held⁴ to you by that blackguard? I suppose, because it is his ordinary talk, you think nothing of it—you are habituated to his baseness, and, perhaps, imagine I can get used to it too!’

‘Have you been listening at the door, Edgar?’ asked the mistress, in a tone particularly calculated⁵ to provoke her husband, implying both carelessness and contempt of his irritation⁶.

Heathcliff, who had raised his eyes at the former speech, gave a sneering laugh at the latter, on purpose, it seemed, to draw Mr Linton's attention to him.

He succeeded; but Edgar did not mean to entertain him with any high flights⁷ of passion.

‘I have been so far forbearing with you, sir,’ he said quietly; ‘not that⁸ I was ignorant of

¹ own: (somewhat arch.) to acknowledge as approved or accepted; to declare or manifest one's acceptance or approval of; to countenance, vindicate. ここでは、公然と友人扱いする。

² rate: to chide, scold, reprove vehemently or angrily.

³ What notion of propriety must you have to remain here ...?: (あの悪党にひどいことをいわれても) ここに残っているからには、さぞ立派な礼儀を心得ているにちがいないまいな。

⁴ hold: to use (language) habitually or constantly. ここは ‘to use (bad) language to’ (～を口ぎたなくののしる) の意味であろう。

⁵ calculate: (now only in pass.) to arrange, design, prepare, adjust, adapt, or fit for a purpose (to do). あらかじめ効果を考えて、わざと怒らせるようなことをいった。

⁶ implying ... irritation: 夫のいらだちなど歯牙にもかけず軽蔑した様子を見せて。

⁷ flight: a mounting or soaring out of the regular course or beyond ordinary bounds. 度を越した高まり。

⁸ not that: = ‘I do not say this because ...’; or ‘One must not suppose that ...’

your miserable, degraded character, but, I felt you were only partly responsible for that; and Catherine wishing to keep up your acquaintance, I acquiesced¹—foolishly. Your presence is a moral poison that would contaminate² the most virtuous—for that cause, and to prevent worse consequences, I shall deny you, hereafter, admission into this house, and give notice, now, that I require your instant departure. Three minutes' delay will render it involuntary and ignominious³.

Heathcliff measured the height and breadth of the speaker with an eye full of derision.

‘Cathy, this lamb of yours threatens like a bull!’ he said. ‘It is in danger of splitting its skull against my knuckles. By God, Mr Linton, I’m mortally⁴ sorry that you are not worth knocking down!’

My master glanced towards the passage, and signed me to fetch the men—he had no intention of hazarding⁵ a personal encounter.

I obeyed the hint; but Mrs Linton, suspecting something, followed, and when I attempted to call them, she pulled me back, slammed the door to⁶, and locked it.

‘Fair means!’ she said, in answer to her husband’s look of angry surprise. ‘If you have not courage to attack him, make an apology, or allow yourself to be beaten. It will correct⁷ you of feigning⁸ more valour than you possess. No, I’ll swallow the key before you shall get it! I’m delightfully rewarded for my kindness to each!⁹ After constant indulgence of one’s weak nature, and the other’s bad one, I earn, for thanks¹⁰, two samples of blind ingratitude, stupid to absurdity!¹¹ Edgar, I was defending you and yours¹²; and I wish

¹ acquiesce: [ækwiés] to agree tacitly to, concur in; to accept (the conclusions or arrangements of others). 黙認する。

² contaminate: to render impure by contact or mixture; to corrupt, defile, pollute, sully, taint, infect.

³ ignominious: [ɪgnəˈmɪniəs] involving shame, disgrace, or obloquy; shameful, disgraceful.

⁴ mortally: (colloq.) extremely, exceedingly, ‘terribly’.

⁵ hazard: to put (anything) to the risk of being lost in a game of chance or other doubtful issue; to stake; to expose to hazard or risk.

⁶ to: adv. (expressing contact): so as to come close against something; esp. with vbs. forming phrases denoting shutting or closing. 「閉める、閉まる」を意味する動詞とともに、閉まってなにかにびたりと接触した状態にあることを表す。【例】The door shut to. (戸が閉まった)、He shut the door to. (戸を閉めた)。

⁷ correct: to set right, amend (a person); to cure of an error or fault. ここは ‘feigning ...’ というあなたの悪いところを矯正する (治す)。

⁸ feign: [fem] to make a show of, put on an appearance of, put on, pretend.

⁹ I’m ... to each!: あなたたち二人に親切にしてあげたお返しを喜んでいただくわ。

¹⁰ for thanks: ‘constant indulgence’ (いつも大目に見てきたこと) のお礼として、そのおかげで。.

¹¹ stupid to absurdity: 話にならぬほどばかげている。

¹² yours: あなたのもの、つまり家族 and/or 財産。

Heathcliff may flog you sick, for daring to think an evil thought of me!’

It did not need the medium of a flogging to produce that effect on the master. He tried to wrest¹ the key from Catherine's grasp; and for safety she flung it into the hottest part of the fire; whereupon Mr Edgar was taken with a nervous trembling, and his countenance grew deadly pale. For his life he could not² avert³ that excess of emotion—mingled anguish and humiliation overcame him completely. He leant on the back of a chair, and covered his face.

‘Oh! Heavens! In old days this would win you knighthood!’⁴ exclaimed Mrs Linton. ‘We are vanquished⁵! we are vanquished! Heathcliff would as soon lift a finger at you as a king would march his army against a colony of mice.⁶ Cheer up, you shan't be hurt!’⁷ Your type is not a lamb; it's a sucking leveret⁸.’

‘I wish you joy of⁹ the milk-blooded¹⁰ coward, Cathy!’ said her friend. ‘I compliment¹¹ you on your taste; and that is the slaving¹², shivering thing you preferred to me! I would not strike him with my fist, but I'd kick him with my foot, and experience considerable satisfaction. Is he weeping, or is he going to faint for fear?’

The fellow approached and gave the chair on which Linton rested a push. He'd better have kept his distance: my master quickly sprang erect, and struck him full on the throat a blow that would have levelled a slighter man.

It took his breath¹³ for a minute; and, while he choked, Mr Linton walked out by the

¹ wrest: to pull, pluck, drag away, or detach (a person or thing) with a wrench or twist.

² for his life he could not: he could not on any account. どうしても～できなかった。

³ avert: to prevent the incidence or occurrence of; to ward off.

⁴ In old days ... knighthood!: (まあご立派な態度なこと) もし昔だったら、ナイトの位を授かるころね。

⁵ vanquish: to overcome or defeat (an opponent or enemy) in conflict or battle.

⁶ Heathcliff would ... mice: 王様がハツカネズミの群れに軍隊を向けるというなら、それより先にHeathcliffのほうがあなたに指を振り上げているでしょうよ→王様はそんなばかなことをしないのだから、Heathcliffが指を振り上げることなんてない。(146 頁注 3 参照)

⁷ you sha'n't be hurt: (私が) あなたに怪我なんてさせないわ。

⁸ leveret: a young hare, strictly one in its first year.

⁹ wish one joy of: (often ironical) to express sympathetic joy or give one's good wishes to a person on a happy occasion; to congratulate. ～とはおめでとう、よかったね、～をせいぜいお楽しみなさい、など。

¹⁰ milk-blooded: cowardly, spiritless.

¹¹ compliment: to express approval or admiration of; commend.

¹² slaving: [slævəm] that slavers; allowing saliva to fall. よだれを垂らす。

¹³ take a person's breath (away): to cause him to hold his breath owing to sudden emotion; hence, to dumbfound, flabbergast. 人の息を止める (切らせる)、(口もきけないほど) びっくりさせる。

back door into the yard, and from thence, to the front entrance.

‘There! you’ve done with¹ coming here,’ cried Catherine. ‘Get away, now—he’ll return with a brace of² pistols, and half-a-dozen assistants. If he did overhear us, of course, he’d never forgive you. You’ve played me an ill turn³, Heathcliff! But, go—make haste! I’d rather see Edgar at bay⁴ than you.’

‘Do you suppose I’m going with that blow burning in my gullet⁵?’ he thundered. ‘By hell, no! I’ll crush his ribs in like a rotten hazel-nut, before I cross the threshold! If I don’t floor⁶ him now, I shall murder him some time; so, as you value his existence⁷, let me get at⁸ him!’

‘He is not coming,’ I interposed, framing⁹ a bit of a lie. ‘There’s the coachman, and the two gardeners, you’ll surely not wait to be thrust into the road by them! Each has a bludgeon; and master will, very likely, be watching from the parlour windows to see that they fulfil his orders.’

The gardeners and coachman *were* there, but Linton was with them. They had already entered the court—Heathcliff, on second thoughts, resolved to avoid a struggle against the three underlings¹⁰; he seized the poker, smashed the lock from the inner door, and made his escape as they tramped in.

Mrs Linton, who was very much excited, bid me accompany her upstairs. She did not know my share in contributing to the disturbance¹¹, and I was anxious to keep her in ignorance.

‘I’m nearly distracted¹², Nelly!’ she exclaimed, throwing herself on the sofa. ‘A

¹ have doe with: to cease to have to do with; to desist or cease from.

² a brace of: = a pair of.

³ You’ve played me an ill turn: 困ったことをしてくれたわね。turn: an act of good or ill will, or that does good or harm to another. (p. 60 注 8、p.125 注 6 参照)

⁴ at bay: in great straits, in distress. 追い詰められて、窮地に立って。

⁵ gullet: the throat. 一発くらってのどがヒリヒリしてるのに、おれがおとなしく退散するものか。

⁶ floor: to bring to the floor or ground; to knock down in boxing.

⁷ as you value his existence: Edgar の命が大事というなら (いつか殺すよりは) 今なぐらせろ。

⁸ get at: (slang) to attack, assail.

⁹ frame: to contrive (a plot, etc.); to devise, invent, fabricate (a rule, story, theory, etc.) 俗にいえば、でっち上げる。ここでは、少しだけウソをつく。

¹⁰ underling: a subordinate, esp. one of slight importance. (つまらぬ) 下っぱ。

¹¹ my share in contributing to the disturbance: 私が一枚加わってこんな騒ぎになったこと。contribute to (anything): to do a part in bringing (it) about; to have a part or share in producing.

¹² distract: to throw into a state of mind in which one knows not how to act; to perplex or bewilder greatly. なお古くは ‘to render insane, drive mad.’ という意味でも使われた。

thousand smiths' hammers are beating in my head! Tell Isabella to shun¹ me—this uproar is owing to her; and should she or any one else aggravate² my anger at present, I shall get wild. And, Nelly, say to Edgar, if you see him again to-night, that I'm in danger of being seriously ill—I wish it may prove true. He has startled and distressed me shockingly. I want to frighten him. Besides, he might come and begin a string of abuse, or complainings; I'm certain I should recriminate³, and God knows where we should end! Will you do so, my good Nelly? You are aware that I am no way blamable in this matter. What possessed him to turn listener?⁴ Heathcliff's talk was outrageous, after you left us; but I could soon have diverted him from Isabella, and the rest meant nothing⁵. Now all is dashed⁶ wrong by the fool's craving to hear evil of self that⁷ haunts some people like a demon! Had Edgar never gathered our conversation⁸, he would never have been the worse for it.⁹ Really, when he opened¹⁰ on me in that unreasonable tone of displeasure, after I had scolded Heathcliff till I was hoarse for *him*¹¹, I did not care hardly what they did to each other, especially as I felt that, however the scene closed, we should all be driven asunder¹² for nobody knows how long! Well, if I cannot keep Heathcliff for my friend—if Edgar will be mean and jealous, I'll try to break their hearts by breaking my own. That will be a prompt way of finishing all, when I am pushed to extremity!¹³ But it's a deed to be reserved for a forlorn hope¹⁴—I'd not take Linton by surprise¹⁵, with it. To this point he has been discreet in dreading to provoke me; you must represent¹⁶ the peril of quitting

¹ shun: to keep away from (a person or his society, a place, etc.) (人や場所) に近づかない。

² aggravate: [ægrəvèit] to increase the gravity of, to make more grievous or burdensome; to make worse, intensify, exacerbate.

³ recriminate: to retort an accusation; to bring a charge or charges in turn against one's accuser. ここでは、「(悪くいわれたら) いい返す」ほどの意味。

⁴ What possessed him to turn listener?: いったいどうして (なにが取り憑いて) Edgar は話を聞く気になったのか? *possess*: (of a demon or evuk spirit) to occupy and dominate, control, or actuate. 'listener' が無冠詞なのは、「聞き役」ととらえたからか?

⁵ the rest meant nothing: そのあとはどうということのない話だった。

⁶ dash: to break in pieces by a violent stroke or collision; to smash.

⁷ that: 先行詞は the fool's craving (渴望)。悪魔みたいに人に取り憑く、自分の悪口を聞きたくてしょうがないという気持。

⁸ gather our conversation: ここは 'to pick up our conversation' (私たちの話を聞きつける) ほどの意味であろう。

⁹ Had Edgar ... for it.: 私たちの話を聞かなかったとしても、(聞かなかった分だけ) Edgar が困ることなんてなかったのに。余計なことをしたものね、という気持。

¹⁰ open: to begin to speak. 'on me' の 'on' は動作の対象となる人・ものを指す (indicating the person or thing to which action, feeling, etc. is directed)、「私に (向かって)」。

¹¹ till I was hoarse for *him*: him = Edgar. Edgar のために声が枯れるまで。

¹² be driven asunder: 離ればなれ (ばらばら) になる。 *asunder*: (of two or more things) apart or separate from each other. (p. 109 注 9 参照)

¹³ when I am pushed to extremity: いよいよせつぱつまったら。

¹⁴ forlorn hope: a perilous or desperate enterprise. 絶体絶命の難事業、命がけの大仕事。もともとは「決死隊」(a picked body of men, detached to the front to begin the attack)

¹⁵ take a person by surprise: to come upon unexpectedly, take unawares. 人を不意打ちする。

¹⁶ represent: to state or point out explicitly or seriously to one, with a view to influencing action or conduct, freq. by way of expostulation or remonstrance. よくいつて聞かせる。

that policy¹; and remind him of my passionate temper, verging, when kindled, on frenzy².
—I wish you could dismiss that apathy out of your countenance, and look rather more anxious about me!’

The stolidity³ with which I received these instructions was, no doubt, rather exasperating⁴; for they were delivered in perfect sincerity, but I believed a person who could plan the turning of her fits of passion to account⁵, beforehand, might, by exerting her will, manage to control herself tolerably⁶ even while under their influence; and I did not wish to ‘frighten’ her husband, as she said, and multiply his annoyances for the purpose of serving her selfishness.

Therefore I said nothing when I met the master coming towards the parlour; but I took the liberty of⁷ turning back to listen whether they would resume their quarrel together.

He began to speak first.

‘Remain where you are, Catherine,’ he said, without any anger in his voice, but with much sorrowful despondency. ‘I shall not stay. I am neither come to wrangle nor be reconciled: but I wish just to learn whether, after this evening’s events, you intend to continue your intimacy with—’

‘Oh, for mercy’s sake,’ interrupted the mistress, stamping her foot, ‘for mercy’s sake, let us hear no more of it now! Your cold blood cannot be worked⁸ into a fever—your veins are full of ice-water—but mine are boiling, and the sight of such chillness makes them dance.’

‘To get rid of me—answer my question,’ persevered Mr Linton. ‘You *must* answer it, and that violence does not alarm me. I have found that you can be as stoical as any one⁹, when you please. Will you give up Heathcliff hereafter, or will you give up me? It is

¹ that policy: ‘dreading to provoke me’ 私を怒らせまいとする慎重さを保つこと。

² verging, when kindled, on frenzy: いったん火がつくと逆上の一歩手前になる。 *verge*: to be contiguous or adjacent to (*on, upon*).

³ stolidity: dull impassiveness; incapacity for feeling. 無関心ぶり。

⁴ exasperating: exceedingly irritating or provoking. しゃくにさわる。

⁵ turning of her fits of passion to account: 激情を爆発させ、それを利用すること。 *turn to account*: turn to one’s advantage.

⁶ tolerably: passably, moderately, fairly, pretty well.

⁷ take the liberty of (doing something): to go so far beyond the bounds of civility or propriety, be so presumptuous as to (etc.). 失礼（勝手）ながら～する。

⁸ work: to get (oneself or an object) into or out of a condition or position by gradual stages. 【例】 ‘*work* a person *into* silence’ 人を黙らせる（ランダムハウス英和第2版）。

⁹ as stoical as any one: 誰よりも（誰にも負けず）冷静な。 *stoical*: resembling a Stoic in austerity, indifference to pleasure and pain, repression of all feeling, and the like. ここでは感情の抑制という点において。

impossible for you to be *my* friend and *his* at the same time; and I absolutely require to know *which* you choose.’

‘I require to be let alone!’ exclaimed Catherine furiously. ‘I demand it! Don't you see I can scarcely stand?’¹ Edgar, you—you leave me!’

She rang the bell till it broke with a twang²; I entered leisurely. It was enough to try the temper of a saint, such senseless, wicked rages! There she lay dashing her head against the arm of the sofa, and grinding her teeth, so that you might fancy she would crash them to splinters!

Mr Linton stood looking at her in sudden compunction³ and fear. He told me to fetch some water. She had no breath for speaking.

I brought a glass full; and, as she would not drink, I sprinkled it on her face. In a few seconds she stretched herself out stiff, and turned up her eyes, while her cheeks, at once⁴ blanched and livid, assumed the aspect of death.

Linton looked terrified.

‘There is nothing in the world the matter,’ I whispered. I did not want him to yield, though I could not help being afraid in my heart.

‘She has blood on her lips!’ he said, shuddering.

‘Never mind!’ I answered tartly⁵. And I told him how she had resolved, previous to his coming, on exhibiting a fit of frenzy⁶.

I incautiously gave the account aloud, and she heard me, for she started up—her hair flying over her shoulders, her eyes flashing, the muscles of her neck and arms standing

¹ I can scarcely stand: 目的語は明示されていないが、このとき Catherine はソファに座っていたのだから、他動詞の ‘to endure, bear, put up with (harm, pain)’ (～に耐える、我慢する) が適當。

² twang: a vocal imitation of the resonant sound produced when a tense string is sharply plucked or suddenly released; also, any sharp ringing sound resembling this.

³ compunction: a feeling of regret for some slight offence (sometimes including pity for the person wronged). 悪いことをしてすまないという気持。

⁴ at once: in one and the same act, position, condition, circumstances, manner, degree; equally, both. ‘blanched’ (色を失った) でもあれば ‘livid’ (鉛色・土気色の) でもある。

⁵ tartly: sharply; with acidity.

⁶ frenzy: (fig.) agitation or disorder of the mind likened to madness; a state of delirious fury, rage, enthusiasm, or the like; also, wild folly, distraction, craziness.

out¹ preternaturally². I made up my mind for broken bones³, at least; but she only glared about her, for an instant, and then rushed from the room.

The master directed me to follow; I did, to her chamber door; she hindered me from going farther by securing it against me.

As she never offered to descend to breakfast next morning, I went to ask whether she would have some carried up.

‘No!’ she replied peremptorily.

The same question was repeated at dinner, and tea; and again on the morrow after, and received the same answer.

Mr Linton, on his part, spent his time in the library, and did not inquire concerning his wife's occupations⁴. Isabella and he had had an hour's interview, during which he tried to elicit⁵ from her some sentiment of proper horror for Heathcliff's advances; but he could make nothing of⁶ her evasive⁷ replies, and was obliged to close the examination, unsatisfactorily; adding, however, a solemn warning that if she were so insane as to encourage⁸ that worthless suitor, it would dissolve⁹ all bonds of relationship between herself and him.

¹ stand out: to jut out, project, protrude (from a surface); to be prominent.

² preternaturally: more than naturally; abnormally, extraordinarily, unusually.

³ I made ... bones: Catherine に骨を何本か折られるものと覚悟を決めた。

⁴ occupation: (with pl.) a particular action or course of action in which one is engaged, esp. habitually or statedly. なにをして過ごしているか。

⁵ elicit: to extract, draw out (information) from a person by interrogation. 聞き出す。

⁶ make nothing of: (with *can*) to be unable to accomplish anything; to fail to comprehend or solve. 【参考】 I can **make nothing** (= *no sense*) of this passage. 此處の意味がさっぱり分らぬ。(齋藤秀三郎『英和中辞典』)

⁷ evasive: tending or seeking to evade; not direct in one's answers etc. *evasive replies*: 要領を得ぬ返答。

⁸ encourage: to stimulate (persons or personal efforts) by assistance, reward, or expressions of favour or approval. 恋愛関係において「(相手に好意を示すなどして) その気にさせる」という意味でよく使われるようだ。

⁹ dissolve: [dɪzɒl'v] to undo (a tie, bond, knot); to put an end to, bring to an end (a relation of union, connexion, or association, etc.). 関係を絶つ、解消する。

Chapter XII

While Miss Linton moped¹ about the park and garden, always silent, and almost always in tears; and her brother shut himself up among books that he never opened; wearying, I guessed, with a continual vague expectation that Catherine, repenting her conduct, would come of her own accord² to ask pardon, and seek a reconciliation; and *she* fasted pertinaciously³ under the idea, probably, that at every meal, Edgar was ready to choke⁴ for her absence, and pride alone held him from running to cast himself at her feet⁵; I went about my household duties, convinced that the Grange had but⁶ one sensible soul in its walls, and that lodged in my body.

I wasted no condolences⁷ on miss, nor any expostulations⁸ on my mistress, nor did I pay attention to the sighs of my master, who yearned to hear his lady's name, since he might not hear her voice.

I determined they should come about⁹ as they pleased for me¹⁰; and though it was a tiresomely slow process, I began to rejoice at length in a faint dawn of its progress, as I thought at first¹¹.

Mrs Linton, on the third day, unbarred her door; and having finished the water in her pitcher and decanter, desired a renewed supply, and a basin of gruel, for she believed she was dying. That I set down¹² as a speech meant for Edgar's ears; I believed no such thing¹³, so I kept it to myself, and brought her some tea and dry toast¹⁴.

¹ mope: to move and act without the impulse and guidance of thought (あてもなく歩く、など) . ただしこの意味では obsolete (廃用) とされており、ふつうは 'to remain in a listless, apathetic condition, without any effort to rouse oneself.'

² of one's own accord: by one's unsolicited assent; of one's own spontaneous motion. 自発的に、自分から。

³ pertinaciously: resolutely; persistently; obstinately, stubbornly.

⁴ choke: to suffer suffocation, complete or partial. つまり、食事が喉を通らない。

⁵ cast himself at her feet: = throw himself at her feet. 彼女の足元にひざまずく。話し言葉では 'throw' がふつう。

⁶ but: only.

⁷ condolences: (with pl.) a (formal) declaration or expression of sympathy.

⁸ expostulation: (やさしく) さとすこと、またはそのことば。(p. 121 注 7 参照)

⁹ come about: (= come round) to return to a normal state or to a better mood after a fit of ill temper. 機嫌を直してもと通りに戻る。

¹⁰ for me: 私としては (自分たちで好きなように関係を修復してもらいたい)。

¹¹ as I thought at first: (〜だと) 最初はそう思って。

¹² set down: to estimate, reckon; now only, to regard (a person) as, take (him) for, consider (him) to be (so-and-so). 何々 (現在では「誰々」のみ) を〜だとみなす (考える)。

¹³ such thing: = that she was dying.

¹⁴ dry toast: toast without butter or the like. 絶食の後だからそうしたのだろう。

She ate and drank eagerly; and sank back on her pillow again, clenching¹ her hands and groaning.

‘Oh, I will die,’ she exclaimed, ‘since no one cares anything about me. I wish I had not taken that².’

Then a good while after I heard her murmur,

‘No, I’ll not die—he’d be glad—he does not love me at all—he would never miss³ me!’

‘Did you want anything, ma’am?’ I inquired, still preserving my external composure, in spite of her ghastly countenance and strange, exaggerated manner.

‘What is that apathetic⁴ being doing?’ she demanded, pushing the thick entangled locks from her wasted face. ‘Has he fallen into a lethargy⁵, or is he dead?’

‘Neither,’ replied I, ‘if you mean Mr Linton. He’s tolerably well, I think, though his studies occupy him rather more than they ought; he is continually among his books, since he has no other society⁶.’

I should not have spoken so, if I had known her true condition, but I could not get rid of the notion that she acted a part⁷ of her disorder.

‘Among his books!’ she cried, confounded. ‘And⁸ I dying! I on the brink of the grave! My God! does he know how I’m altered?’ continued she, staring at her reflection in a mirror, hanging against the opposite wall. ‘Is that Catherine Linton? He imagines me in a pet⁹

¹ clench: to set firmly together, close tightly (the fingers, fist, teeth). 手なら握りしめる、歯なら噛みしめる。

² that: = tea and dry toast.

³ miss: to perceive with regret the absence or loss of; to feel the want of. ～を失って悲しむ。

⁴ apathetic: [æpəθetik] insensible to suffering or emotion generally; unemotional; indifferent to what is calculated to move the feelings or excite attention. 冷淡な、無関心な。

⁵ lethargy: [lɛθədʒi] (Path.) a disorder characterized by morbid drowsiness or prolonged and unnatural sleep. ここは「無気力、無感動」ではなく「嗜眠症、眠り病」が適切。

⁶ society: persons with whom one has, or may have, companionship or intercourse. 交際相手。

⁷ to act a part: (= to play a part) to make a pretence, act deceitfully. (～を) 装う、(～の) ふりをする (of)。

⁸ and: (間投詞的に) in expressing surprise at, or asking the truth of, what one has already heard. なんと私が死にかけているというのに！

⁹ in a pet: in a fit of ill humour or peevishness.

—in play, perhaps. Cannot you inform him that it is frightful earnest?¹ Nelly, if it be not too late, as soon as I learn how he feels, I'll choose between these two—either to starve, at once, that would be no punishment unless he had a heart—or to recover and leave the country. Are you speaking the truth about him now? Take care. Is he actually so utterly indifferent for my life?

‘Why, ma'am,’ I answered, ‘the master has no idea of your being deranged²; and, of course, he does not fear that you will let yourself die of hunger.’

‘You think not? Cannot you tell him I will?’ she returned; ‘persuade him—speak of³ your own mind—say you are certain I will!’

‘No, you forget, Mrs Linton,’ I suggested, ‘that you have eaten some food with a relish⁴ this evening, and to-morrow you will perceive its good effects.’

‘If I were only sure it would kill him,’ she interrupted, ‘I'd kill myself directly! These three awful nights, I've never closed my lids—and oh, I've been tormented⁵! I've been haunted⁶, Nelly! But I begin to fancy you don't like me. How strange! I thought, though everybody hated and despised each other, they could not avoid loving me—and they have all turned to enemies in a few hours. *They* have, I'm positive; the people *here*. How dreary to meet death, surrounded by their cold faces! Isabella, terrified and repelled⁷, afraid to enter the room, it would be so dreadful to watch Catherine go⁸. And Edgar standing solemnly by to see it over⁹, then offering prayers of thanks to God for restoring peace to his house, and going back to his *books*! What in the name of all¹⁰ that feels, has he to do with *books* when I am dying?’

¹ Cannot you ... earnest?: 依頼文。私は真剣なのだと伝えてちょうだい。

² deranged: disordered in mind.

³ speak of: to mention, or discourse upon, in speech or writing. ‘speak of your own mind’ とは、人にいわれたことをそのまま伝えるのではなく、自分も本心からそう思っているのだと伝えなさい、ということ。

⁴ relish: enjoyment of the taste or flavour of something; the pleasure of tasting or enjoying something agreeable; liking, zest. ‘with (a) relish’ は、うまそうに、おいしそうに。

⁵ torment: to afflict or vex with great suffering or misery, physical or mental; to pain, distress, plague.

⁶ haunt: (of memories, cares, feelings, thoughts) to visit frequently or habitually; to come up or present themselves as recurrent influences or impressions, esp. as causes of distraction or trouble; to pursue, molest. 浮かんでは消えて離れない悩みごとにさいなまれたこと。

⁷ repel: to affect (one) with distaste or aversion. (人に) 嫌悪感 (不快感) を与える。ここは「追い払う」では意味が通じない。

⁸ go: to ‘depart this life’, die.

⁹ see it over: 死の一部始終を見届ける。over: through every part of, all through (sometimes including the notion of examination or consideration).

¹⁰ all: (as sing.) everything. 単数扱い。‘in the name of all that feels’ は「一体全体」ほどの強調だが、Edgar が心の冷たい (unfeeling) 男だとしてこういったもの。

She could not bear the notion which I had put into her head of Mr Linton's philosophical¹ resignation². Tossing about³, she increased her feverish bewilderment⁴ to madness, and tore the pillow with her teeth, then raising herself up all burning, desired that I would open the window. We were in the middle of winter, the wind blew strong from the north-east, and I objected.

Both the expressions flitting over her face, and the changes of her moods, began to alarm me terribly; and brought to my recollection her former illness, and the doctor's injunction⁵ that she should not be crossed.

A minute previously she was violent; now, supported on one arm, and not noticing my refusal to obey her, she seemed to find childish diversion⁶ in pulling the feathers from the rents⁷ she had just made, and ranging⁸ them on the sheet according to their different species: her mind had strayed to other associations.

'That's a turkey's,' she murmured to herself; 'and this is a wild-duck's; and this is a pigeon's. Ah, they put pigeons' feathers in the pillows—no wonder I couldn't die!⁹ Let me take care to throw it on the floor when I lie down. And here is a moor-cock's¹⁰; and this—I should know it among a thousand—it's a lapwing's¹¹. Bonny bird; wheeling¹² over our heads in the middle of the moor. It wanted to get to its nest, for the clouds had touched

¹ philosophical: rationally or sensibly calm, patient, or composed.

² resignation: the fact of resigning oneself or of being resigned; acquiescence, submission, compliance. あきらめ、(運命などに) 黙って従うこと。

³ toss about: to fling or jerk oneself about; to move about restlessly. (129 頁注 2 参照)

⁴ bewilderment: mental confusion from inability to grasp or see one's way through a maze or tangle of impressions or ideas. 思い乱れること。'bewilder' はもともと「道に迷わせる」。

⁵ injunction: an authoritative or emphatic admonition or order.

⁶ diversion: distraction, recreation, amusement, entertainment.

⁷ rent: a separation of parts produced by tearing or similar violence; esp. a large tear in a garment or piece of woven stuff. 引き裂いてできた裂け目。

⁸ range: to set or dispose (things) in a line or lines; hence, to arrange, put in order. 列に並べる。

⁹ no wonder I couldn't die!: 道理で死ぬに死ねないはずだわ! (PENGUIN 版注:) 'The soul cannot free itself if the dying person has been laid on a bed containing pigeon feathers ... Instances are on record of pigeon feathers having been placed in a small bag, and thrust under dying persons to hold them back until the arrival of some loved one; but the meeting having taken place, the feathers were withdrawn, and death allowed to enter.' (Richard Blakeborough, *Wit, Character, Folklore and Customs of the North Riding of Yorkshire*.) 鳩の羽根には近親者が駆けつけるまで人の死を引き留める力があるとされた。

¹⁰ moor-cock: the male of the red grouse, *Lagopus scoticus*. アカライチョウの雄。

¹¹ lapwing: a plover, *Vanellus vanellus*, with black and white plumage, crested head, and a shrill cry. チドリ科のタゲリ。

¹² wheel: to move in a circle, spiral, or similar curve; to circle, revolve; to go round about. 旋回する。トンビがくると輪を描くがごとし。

the swells¹, and it felt rain coming. This feather was picked up from the heath, the bird was not shot—we saw its nest in the winter, full of little skeletons². Heathcliff set a trap over it, and the old ones dare not come. I made him promise he'd never shoot a lapwing, after that, and he didn't. Yes, here are more! Did he shoot my lapwings, Nelly? Are they red³, any of them? Let me look.'

'Give over with that baby-work!' I interrupted, dragging the pillow away, and turning the holes towards the mattress, for she was removing its contents by handfuls⁴. 'Lie down and shut your eyes, you're wandering⁵. There's a mess! The down⁶ is flying about like snow.'

I went here and there collecting it.

'I see in you, Nelly,' she continued, dreamily, 'an aged woman—you have grey hair, and bent shoulders. This bed is the fairy cave under Penistone Crag, and you are gathering elf-bolts⁷ to hurt our heifers⁸, pretending, while I am near, that they are only locks⁹ of wool. That's what you'll come to fifty years hence. I know you are not so now. I'm not wandering, you're mistaken, or else I should believe you really *were*¹⁰ that withered hag, and I should think I *was* under Penistone Crag; and I'm conscious it's night, and there are two candles on the table making the black press¹¹ shine like jet¹².'

¹ swell: a piece of land rising gradually and evenly above the general level; a hill, eminence, or upland with a smooth rounded outline and broad in proportion to its height.

² skeleton: the bones or bony framework of an animal body considered as a whole; also, more generally, the harder (supporting or covering) constituent part of an animal organism. (バラバラではなく全体としての) 骸骨、骨格。

³ red: stained or covered with blood.

⁴ by handfuls: ひとつかみずつ、ひとつかみまたひとつかみと。この 'by' は数量を表す名詞を従えて、その連続を表す。

⁵ wander: (of persons) to be unsettled, or incoherent, in mind, purpose, etc. ; (hence, later) to be temporarily disordered in mind, as from illness or exhaustion affecting the brain; to be delirious, or (with especial reference to the resulting incoherence of speech) to ramble, rave, talk wildly. ここでは、熱のせいで頭がどうかしている。

⁶ down: the fine soft covering of fowls, forming the under plumage, used for stuffing beds, pillows, etc. 不可算名詞 (feather は可算名詞)。

⁷ elf-bolts: (PENGUIN 版注 :) flint arrowheads.

⁸ heifer: [hɛfə] a young cow, that has not had a calf.

⁹ lock: (of wool, cotton, etc.) a tuft or flock; a loose fragment, a shred. (羊毛・綿の) 房、くず。ここでは「毛くず」のほう。

¹⁰ were: 事実ではないから 'were'。次の 'was' も同じ。(もし気がおかしくなっているのなら) 本当に〜だと思いこんでいるでしょうよ。

¹¹ press: a large (usually shelved) cupboard, esp. one placed in a recess in the wall, for holding clothes, books, etc. 衣装棚、書棚など。

¹² jet: a hard compact black form of 'brown coal' or lignite, capable of receiving a brilliant polish. It is used in making toys, buttons, and personal ornaments. 黒玉。'black as jet' という用例あり。

‘The black press? Where is that?’ I asked. ‘You are talking in your sleep!’

‘It’s against¹ the wall, as it always is,’ she replied. ‘It *does* appear odd—I see a face in it!’

‘There’s no press in the room, and never was,’ said I, resuming my seat, and looping² up the curtain, that³ I might watch her.

‘Don’t *you* see that face?’ she inquired, gazing earnestly at the mirror.

And say what I could⁴, I was incapable of making her comprehend it to be her own; so I rose and covered it with a shawl.

‘It’s behind there still!’ she pursued, anxiously. ‘And it stirred. Who is it? I hope it will not come out when you are gone! Oh! Nelly, the room is haunted! I’m afraid of being alone!’

I took her hand in mine, and bid her be composed, for a succession of shudders convulsed her frame, and she would keep straining⁵ her gaze towards the glass.

‘There’s nobody here!’ I insisted. ‘It was *yourself* Mrs Linton; you knew it a while since⁶.’

‘Myself,’ she gasped; ‘and the clock is striking twelve! It’s true⁷, then; that’s dreadful!’

Her fingers clutched the clothes⁸, and gathered them over her eyes. I attempted to

¹ against: supported by, in contact with. ～に支えられて、接触して。なお物理的に接触していなくとも見た目にはそうだということの場合にも使える (in optical contact with something behind)。

² loop: to fasten (*back, up*) by forming into a loop, or by means of an attached loop; to join or connect by means of a loop or loops. カーテンをまとめ、カーテン留めを輪に巻くなどして締める。ここではベッドのカーテン。

³ that: (= in order that, so that) introducing a clause expressing purpose, end, aim, or desire: with simple subjunctive (arch.), or with *may* (pa. tense *might*), *should*, rarely *shall*. ～するために。目的・意図を示す接続詞。

⁴ say what I could: いえることはなんでもいったが→なにをいっても。 *what* = whatever.

⁵ strain: to force to extreme effort, exert to the utmost (one's limbs, organs, powers). ここでは、じっと目をこらす。

⁶ a while since: 少し前。 *since*: ago; before now.

⁷ It's true, then.: ‘it’ は ‘the room is haunted.’ を指すかと思うが、「あれが私で、時計はちょうど十二時を打っている。それじゃほんとなのね」というところからして、夜中の十二時に鏡などに映る自分の姿を見ると異変が起こるという俗信があるのかもしれない。

⁸ clothes: (pl.) short for bed-clothes. ここは ‘dress’ ではない。上掛けのシーツ・毛布を引っばって目をおったのである。

steal to the door with an intention of calling her husband; but I was summoned back by a piercing shriek. The shawl had dropped from the frame.

‘Why, what *is* the matter?’ cried I. ‘Who is coward now? Wake up! That is the glass—the mirror, Mrs Linton; and you see yourself in it, and there am I too, by your side.’

Trembling and bewildered, she held me fast, but the horror gradually passed from her countenance; its paleness gave place to a glow of shame.

‘Oh dear! I thought I was at home,’ she sighed. ‘I thought I was lying in my chamber at Wuthering Heights. Because I’m weak, my brain got confused, and I screamed unconsciously. Don’t say anything; but stay with me. I dread sleeping, my dreams appal¹ me.’

‘A sound sleep would do you good, ma’am,’ I answered; ‘and I hope this suffering will prevent your trying starving again.’²

‘Oh, if I were but in my own bed in the old house!’ she went on bitterly, wringing her hands. ‘And that wind sounding in the firs by the lattice. Do let me feel it—it comes straight down the moor—do let me have one breath!’

To pacify³ her, I held the casement ajar⁴, a few seconds. A cold blast rushed through, I closed it, and returned to my post.

She lay still, now: her face bathed in tears—Exhaustion of body had entirely subdued her spirit; our fiery Catherine was no better than⁵ a wailing child!

‘How long is it since I shut myself in here?’ she asked, suddenly reviving⁶.

‘It was Monday evening,’ I replied; ‘and this is Thursday night, or rather Friday morning, at present.’

¹ appal: [əpɔ:l] to cause the heart of (anyone) to sink; to dismay, shock, discomfit, terrify.

² I hope ... again.: こんな苦しい目にあったのですから、もう絶食しようなんてお思いになりませんように。

³ pacify: [pæsɪfəɪ] to allay the anger, excitement or agitation of (a person); to calm, quiet; to appease.

⁴ ajar: (of a door or window) slightly opened. (風が強いので) 手で支えながら窓を少し開けた。

⁵ no better than: 【参考】 He is **no better than** a beggar. 乞食も同然。(齋藤秀三郎『英和中辞典』)

⁶ revive: to resume courage or strength; to recover from depression. 気力を取り戻す。意識を失っていたわけではないから ‘to return to consciousness.’ ではない。

‘What! of the same week?’ she exclaimed. ‘Only that brief time?’

‘Long enough to live on nothing but cold water, and ill-temper,’ observed I.

‘Well, it seems a weary number of hours¹,’ she muttered doubtfully, ‘it must be more. I remember² being in the parlour, after they had quarrelled; and Edgar being cruelly provoking, and me running into this room desperate—As soon as ever³ I had barred the door, utter blackness overwhelmed me, and I fell on the floor—I couldn’t explain to Edgar how certain I felt of having a fit, or going raging mad, if he persisted in teasing me! I had no command of tongue, or brain, and he did not guess my agony, perhaps; it barely⁴ left me sense to try to escape from him and his voice.—Before I recovered sufficiently to see and hear, it began to be dawn; and, Nelly, I’ll tell you what I thought, and what has kept recurring and recurring till I feared for my reason⁵—I thought as I lay there with my head against that table leg, and my eyes dimly discerning the gray square of the window, that I was enclosed in the oak-panelled bed at home; and my heart ached with some great grief which, just waking⁶, I could not recollect—I pondered, and worried myself to discover what it could be; and most strangely, the whole last seven years of my life grew a blank! I did not recall that they⁷ had been at all. I was a child; my father was just buried, and my misery arose from the separation that Hindley had ordered between me and Heathcliff—I was laid⁸ alone, for the first time, and rousing from a dismal doze after a night of weeping—I lifted my hand to push the panels aside, it struck the table-top!⁹ I swept¹⁰ it along the carpet, and then, memory burst in—my late anguish was swallowed in a paroxysm¹¹ of despair—I cannot say why I felt so wildly wretched—It must have been temporary derangement, for there is scarcely cause—But, supposing at twelve years old, I had been wrenched from the Heights, and every early association, and my all in all¹², as Heathcliff

¹ a weary number of hours: うんざりするほど長い時間。

² remember: to retain in, or recall to, the memory; to bear in mind, recollect (a thing, person, fact, event, saying, etc.). ～(したこと)を覚えている、思い出す。※不定詞を伴う場合は ‘to bear in mind, not to forget, to do something.’ ～することを覚えている、忘れない(忘れずに～する)。

³ ever: added for emphasis to the conjunctions *as soon as, before, ere, or* (= *ere*). 強調語。

⁴ barely: only just. かろうじて(～だけは)。

⁵ I feared for my reason: 自分の頭(理性)はだいじょうぶかしらと思った。

⁶ just waking: 目がさめたというより、意識を取りもどしたばかりだったから(ボーッとして)。

⁷ they: the whole last seven years of my life.

⁸ lay: to place (a person, one’s limbs, oneself) in a recumbent posture in a specified place. ここは、一人で寝る。

⁹ rousing from ... table-top!: 「一晩泣き明かしてみじめな気持でウトウトし、目がさめて(ベッドの)板戸を押し開けようと手を上げたら」までは非現実、「その手が(自分のもたれていた)テーブルの天板にあたった」ところで現実に戻った。

¹⁰ sweep: to move or draw (something) over and in contact with a surface. (it = my hand) なでる。

¹¹ paroxysm: [pærəksiz(ə)m] a violent access of action or emotion; a fit, convulsion (e.g. of laughter, excitement, rage, terror, etc.) 感情の激発、発作。

¹² all in all: something that represents all things regarded as having value, significance, or importance; everything. かけがえのないもの、すべて。

was at that time, and been converted at a stroke into Mrs Linton¹, the lady of Thrushcross Grange, and the wife of a stranger; an exile and outcast, thenceforth, from what had been my world—You may fancy a glimpse of the abyss where I grovelled²! Shake your head, as you will³, Nelly, *you* have helped to unsettle me! You should have spoken to Edgar⁴—indeed you should—and compelled him to leave me quiet! Oh, I'm burning! I wish I were out of doors!—I wish I were a girl again, half savage⁵ and hardy⁶ and free ... and laughing at injuries, not maddening⁷ under them! Why am I so changed? why does my blood rush into a hell of⁸ tumult at a few words? I'm sure I should be myself were I once among the heather on those hills ... Open the window again wide, fasten it open! Quick, why don't you move?

'Because I won't give you your death of cold,' I answered.

'You won't give me a chance of life, you mean,' she said sullenly. 'However, I'm not helpless⁹ yet. I'll open it myself.'

And sliding from the bed before I could hinder her, she crossed the room, walking very uncertainly, threw it back, and bent out, careless of the frosty air that cut about her shoulders as keen as a knife.

I entreated, and finally attempted to force her to retire. But I soon found her delirious strength much surpassed mine (she *was* delirious, I became convinced by her subsequent actions and ravings).

There was no moon, and everything beneath lay in misty darkness; not a light gleamed from any house, far or near; all had been extinguished long ago; and those at Wuthering Heights were never visible ... still she asserted she caught their shining.

¹ be converted at a stroke into Mrs Linton: あっという間に (at a stroke) Linton の奥方にさせられる。 *convert*: to change in character or function; to turn (*into, to*).

² grovel: to lie prone or with the face downwards; to move with the body prostrate upon the ground. 腹ばいになる (になって進む)。

³ as you will: 好きなだけ (as much as you will)。【参考】*shout as loud as you will* = 'however loud you (choose to) shout' 好きなだけ大きな声で叫びなさい (*OED*)。

⁴ You should have spoken to Edgar.: 結局は、「どうして Edgar に話してくれなかったのよ」ということ。

⁵ savage: that is in a state of nature, wild. 野育ちの、野生の。

⁶ hardy: **a.** bold, courageous, daring. **b.** physically robust, vigorous. どちらとも取れるが、「怖いもの知らずの」あたりが適切かと思う。

⁷ madden: to become mad. 激怒する、怒り狂う。 'under them (= injuries)' ひどい目に会って。

⁸ a hell of: an exceedingly bad, great, loud, etc. ふつう 'a hell of a ...' として。

⁹ helpless: having no resources in oneself; unable to help oneself. 自力ではできない。

'Look!' she cried eagerly, 'that's my room, with the candle in it, and the tree swaying¹ before it ... and the other candle is in Joseph's garret ... Joseph sits up late, doesn't he? He's waiting till I come home, that he may lock the gate ... Well, he'll wait a while yet. It's a rough journey, and a sad heart to travel it; and we must pass by Gimmerton Kirk² to go that journey! We've braved³ its ghosts often together, and dared each other to stand among the graves and ask them to come ... But Heathcliff, if I dare⁴ you now, will you venture? If you do, I'll keep you. I'll not lie⁵ there by myself⁶; they may bury me twelve feet deep, and throw the church down over me; but I won't rest till you are with me ... I never will!'

She paused, and resumed with a strange smile, 'He's considering ... he'd rather I'd come to him! Find a way, then—not through that kirkyard ... You are slow! Be content⁷, you always followed me!'

Perceiving it vain to argue against her insanity, I was planning how I could reach something to wrap about her, without quitting my hold of herself, for I could not trust her alone by the gaping⁸ lattice, when, to my consternation⁹, I heard the rattle of the door-handle, and Mr Linton entered. He had only then come from the library; and in passing through the lobby, had noticed our talking and been attracted by curiosity, or fear, to examine what it signified, at that late hour.

'Oh, sir!' I cried, checking the exclamation risen to his lips at the sight which met him, and the bleak¹⁰ atmosphere of the chamber.

'My poor Mistress is ill, and she quite masters¹¹ me; I cannot manage her at all; pray,

¹ sway: to move or swing first to one side and then to the other, as a flexible or pivoted object: often amplified by phr., e.g. *backwards and forwards, to and fro, from side to side*. (前後または左右に行ったり来たりして) 揺れる。

² kirk: the Northern English and Scotch form of the word *church*, in all its senses.

³ brave: to treat with bravado; to challenge, defy.

⁴ dare: to challenge or defy (a person). 挑む。

⁵ lie: to be buried (in a specified place).

⁶ by oneself: without companion; alone, singly, in isolation. (p. 68 注 11、p. 85 注 10 参照)

⁷ content: having one's desires bounded by what one has (though that may be less than one could have wished); not disturbed by the desire of anything more, or of anything different. (不満はあっても現状のまま) 満足している。ここは「あきらめたらどう (あなたはいつも私のあとについてきたんだから)」ほどの意味。予言めいたセリフ。

⁸ gaping: wide open.

⁹ consternation: amazement and terror such as to prostrate one's faculties; dismay. 心身の機能を停止せしめるほどの驚き。'to my consternation' の 'to' は「結果」(詳細は p. 423 注 6 参照)。ここはあえて挿入句とせず「(リントン様が入ってこられたので) ぎょっとして心臓が止まりそうになりました」とでも訳したほうが自然だと思う。

¹⁰ bleak: (usually of wind or weather) cold, chilly.

¹¹ master: to reduce to subjection, compel to obey.

come and persuade her to go to bed. Forget your anger, for she's hard to guide any way but her own.¹

‘Catherine ill?’ he said, hastening to us. ‘Shut the window, Ellen! Catherine! why ...’

He was silent; the haggardness of Mrs Linton's appearance smote² him speechless, and he could only glance from her to me in horrified astonishment.

‘She's been fretting³ here,’ I continued, ‘and eating scarcely anything, and never complaining. She would admit⁴ none of us till this evening, and so we couldn't inform you of her state, as we were not aware of it ourselves, but it is nothing.’

I felt I uttered my explanations awkwardly; the master frowned. ‘It is nothing, is it, Ellen Dean?’⁵ he said sternly. ‘You shall account⁶ more clearly for keeping me ignorant of this!’ And he took his wife in his arms, and looked at her with anguish⁷.

At first she gave him no glance of recognition⁸ ... he was invisible to her abstracted gaze. The delirium was not fixed, however; having weaned⁹ her eyes from contemplating¹⁰ the outer darkness, by degrees, she centred her attention on him, and discovered who it was that held her.

‘Ah! you are come, are you, Edgar Linton?’ she said, with angry animation ... ‘You are one of those things that are ever found when least wanted, and when you are wanted,

¹ she's hard ... own: = it's hard to guide her ... own. いうことをなかなか聞いてくださらず、ご自分の思い通りにしようとされる。‘difficult, hard’ など一部の形容詞は、このように両方のかたちを取ることができる。

² smite: to bring *into* a certain condition by, or as by, striking. Also with adj. compl. *rare*. *OED*
※ランダムハウス英和第2版では ‘rare’ とせず、「《形容詞を伴って》<人>を> (一撃を加えて) (…の) 状態にする: ~ a person unconscious [or senseless] 人を殴って気絶させる」とする。参考までに *OED* 所収の例文は、‘1837 CARLYLE *Fr. Rev.* iii. iii. vii, Rabidity smites others rabid.’ (狂暴は他人をも狂暴にする、狂暴は狂暴を呼ぶ)。

³ fret: to distress oneself with constant thoughts of regret or discontent; to vex oneself, chafe, worry.

⁴ admit: to allow to enter, let in, receive (a person or thing).

⁵ Ellen Dean: Ellen ではなく Ellen Dean と呼ぶのは非難・叱責の気持を表す。(p. 102 注 7 参照)

⁶ account: to give a satisfactory reason *for*, to explain. ‘You shall account ...’ は、説明をしてもらおう (= ‘Will you account ...’).

⁷ anguish: severe mental suffering, excruciating or oppressive grief or distress. (p. 42 注 8、p. 107 注 4 参照)

⁸ she gave ... recognition: (自分を抱いているのが) だれかわからず、夫の顔を見ようとしなかった。彼女の目は ‘contemplating the outer darkness’ だったのだから、「夫の顔を見てもだれかわからなかった」のとはちがう。

⁹ wean: *fig.* to detach or alienate (a person, his desires or affections) from some accustomed object of pursuit or enjoyment. 「離乳させる」より、「慣れ親しんだものから引き離す」。

¹⁰ contemplate: to look at with continued attention, gaze upon, view, observe. じっと見る。

never! I suppose we shall have plenty of lamentations now ... I see we shall ... but they can't keep me from my narrow home¹ out yonder—My resting-place, where I'm bound before spring is over! There it is, not among the Lintons, mind, under the chapel-roof; but in the open air with a head-stone², and you may please yourself, whether you go to them or come to me!

‘Catherine, what have you done?’ commenced the master. ‘Am I nothing to you, any more? Do you love that wretch Heath—’

‘Hush!’ cried Mrs Linton. ‘Hush, this moment! You mention that name, and I end the matter, instantly, by a spring from the window! What you touch at present³, you may have; but my soul will be on that hill-top before you lay hands on me again. I don't want you, Edgar. I'm past⁴ wanting you ... Return to your books ... I'm glad you possess a consolation, for all you had in me is gone.⁵’

‘Her mind wanders, sir,’ I interposed. ‘She has been talking nonsense the whole evening; but, let her have quiet and proper attendance, and she'll rally⁶ ... Hereafter, we must be cautious how we vex her.’

‘I desire no further advice from you,’ answered Mr Linton. ‘You knew your mistress's nature, and you encouraged me to harass her. And not to give me one hint of how she has been these three days! It was heartless! months of sickness could not cause such a change!’

I began to defend myself, thinking it too bad to be blamed for another's wicked waywardness!

‘I knew Mrs Linton's nature to be headstrong and domineering,’ cried I; ‘but I didn't know that you wished to foster her fierce temper! I didn't know that, to humour her, I should wink at⁷ Mr Heathcliff. I performed the duty of a faithful servant in telling you,

¹ my narrow home: my resting-place, i.e. my grave. ‘keep me from my narrow home’ は、墓から私を離しておく、つまり、私を墓に行かせずにおく。

² head-stone (= headstone): an upright stone at the head of a grave; a gravestone.

³ what you touch at present: i.e. my body.

⁴ past: no longer capable of

⁵ for all you had in me is gone: ‘for’ は前言の根拠・理由を示す接続詞 (introducing the ground or reason for something previously said)。わたしに感じていたすべてを失ったのだから (それでも読書という慰めをひとつお持ちでよかったわね)。

⁶ rally: to recover in part from an illness.

⁷ wink at: to connive at the doings of. ～を見て見ぬふりをする。(p. 87 注 4 参照)

and I have got a faithful servant's wages!¹ Well, it will teach me to be careful next time. Next time you may gather intelligence² for yourself!

'The next time you bring a tale to me, you shall quit my service³, Ellen Dean,' he replied.

'You'd rather hear nothing about it, I suppose, then, Mr Linton?' said I. 'Heathcliff has your permission to come a courting to Miss and to drop in⁴ at every opportunity your absence offers, on purpose to poison the mistress against you?'

Confused as Catherine was, her wits were alert at applying⁵ our conversation.

'Ah! Nelly has played traitor!' she exclaimed, passionately. 'Nelly is my hidden enemy—you witch! So you do seek elf-bolts to hurt us! Let me go, and I'll make her rue⁶! I'll make her howl a recantation⁷!'

A maniac's fury kindled under her brows; she struggled desperately to disengage herself from Linton's arms. I felt no inclination to tarry⁸ the event; and resolving to seek medical aid on my own responsibility, I quitted the chamber.

In passing the garden to reach the road, at a place where a bridle hook⁹ is driven into the wall, I saw something white moved irregularly, evidently by another agent¹⁰ than the wind. Notwithstanding my hurry, I staid to examine it, lest ever after I should have the conviction impressed on my imagination that it was a creature of the other world.

My surprise and perplexity were great to discover, by touch more than vision, Miss Isabella's springer¹¹, Fanny, suspended by a handkerchief, and nearly at its last gasp. I quickly released the animal, and lifted it into the garden. I had seen it follow its mistress

¹ I have got a faithful servant's wages!: (忠実に勤めを果たして申し上げたら) それに見合うお給金 (おことば) をいただきましたこと!

² intelligence: knowledge as to events, communicated by or obtained from another; information, news, tidings.

³ you shall quit my service: 辞めてもらう。

⁴ drop in: to come in or call unexpectedly or casually; to pay a casual visit.

⁵ apply: to put to use; to employ. 'she was alert enough to apply her wits (= understanding) to our conversation' ほどの意味か。

⁶ rue: to feel repentance or remorse.

⁷ recantation: the action of recanting; an instance of this.. (発言などを) 撤回すること。

⁸ tarry: to wait for, wait in expectation of. ここは事のなりゆき・結果がどうなるか待つ。

⁹ bridle hook: 'bridle' は馬の頭部に装着する馬具 (手綱を含む)。手綱をつなぐ 'hook'。

¹⁰ agent: the efficient cause. 動因。ここは、「なにか白いものが不規則に動いていたけれど、それは明らかに風のせいではなかった」。

¹¹ springer: [sprɪŋər] a small variety of spaniel. 獵犬の一種。'bridle hook'に吊されていた。

upstairs when she went to bed, and wondered much how it could have got out there, and what mischievous¹ person had treated it so.

While untying the knot round the hook, it seemed to me that I repeatedly caught the beat of horses' feet galloping at some distance; but there were such a number of things to occupy my reflections that I hardly gave the circumstance² a thought, though it was a strange sound, in that place, at two o'clock in the morning.

Mr Kenneth was fortunately just issuing from his house to see a patient in the village as I came up the street; and my account of Catherine Linton's malady induced³ him to accompany me back immediately.

He was a plain, rough⁴ man; and he made no scruple⁵ to speak his doubts of her surviving this second attack; unless she were more submissive⁶ to his directions than she had shown herself before.

'Nelly Dean,' said he, 'I can't help fancying there's an extra cause for this. What has there been to do⁷ at the Grange? We've odd reports up here. A stout, hearty lass like Catherine does not fall ill for a trifle; and that sort of people should not either⁸. It's hard work bringing them through⁹ fevers and such things. How did it begin?'

'The master will inform you,' I answered; 'but you are acquainted with the Earnshaws' violent dispositions, and Mrs Linton caps¹⁰ them all. I may say this; it commenced in a

¹ mischievous: [mɪstʃɪvəs] (of persons, their conduct, etc.) disposed to or characterized by acts of playful malice or petty annoyance.

² circumstance: an incident, an occurrence; a matter or fact (properly of a secondary or subordinate kind). (p. 66 注 3 参照)

³ induce: to lead (a person), by persuasion or some influence or motive that acts upon the will, to some action, condition, belief, etc.; to lead on, move, influence, prevail upon (any one) to do something. ここでは、「私の話を聞いて事情を飲み込み、すぐに同行してくれた」

⁴ rough: unrefined (but kindly or friendly). 'unrefined: not refined in manners, feelings, or speech.' だから、ここでは、「ずばずばとものをいう」ほどの意味。

⁵ scruple: a thought or circumstance that troubles the mind or conscience: a doubt, uncertainty or hesitation in regard to right and wrong, duty, propriety, etc.; esp. one which is regarded as over-refined or over-nice, or which causes a person to hesitate where others would be bolder to act. 気がとがめること、(他人なら平気にすることでも) ためらうこと。

⁶ submissive: (of persons, their actions, words, attributes, etc.) disposed or inclined to submit; yielding to power or authority; marked by submission or humble and ready obedience. (～に) おとなしく (すなおに) 従う (to)。

⁷ what has there been to do?: 何 (の騒ぎ) があったというのだ? to do: ado, work, business, bustle, fuss.

⁸ and ... either: それにああいう (丈夫な) 連中は病気になっちゃいかんのだしね。(次の文章に治療がやっかいだとある)。

⁹ bring through: to treat successfully through the stages of an illness. (～の病気を) 完治させる。

¹⁰ cap: (at first *north. dial.*) to overtop, excel, outdo, surpass, beat.

quarrel. She was struck during a tempest of passion with a kind of fit. That's her account¹, at least; for she flew off in the height of it², and locked herself up. Afterwards, she refused to eat, and now she alternately raves, and remains in a half dream, knowing those about her, but having her mind filled with all sorts of strange ideas and illusions.'

'Mr Linton will be sorry?' observed Kenneth, interrogatively³.

'Sorry? He'll break his heart should anything happen!⁴' I replied. 'Don't alarm him more than necessary.'

'Well, I told him to beware,' said my companion; 'and he must bide⁵ the consequences of neglecting my warning! Hasn't he been thick⁶ with Mr Heathcliff lately?'

'Heathcliff frequently visits at the Grange,' answered I, 'though more on the strength of⁷ the mistress having known him when a boy, than because the master likes his company. At present, he's discharged from the trouble of calling⁸; owing to some presumptuous aspirations⁹ after Miss Linton which he manifested. I hardly think he'll be taken in again.'

'And does Miss Linton turn a cold shoulder¹⁰ on him?' was the doctor's next question.

'I'm not in her confidence,' returned I, reluctant¹¹ to continue the subject.

'No, she's a sly one,' he remarked, shaking his head. 'She keeps her own counsel!¹² But she's a real little fool. I have¹³ it from good authority¹, that, last night and a pretty

¹ account: a particular statement or narrative of an event or thing; a relation, report, or description. 話、言い分。

² she flew off in the height of it: 発作のまっ最中に（その場を）飛び出した。

³ interrogatively: by way of interrogation; as a question.

⁴ should anything happen: = if anything should happen.

⁵ bide: to tolerate, endure, put up with

⁶ thick: intimate. 親密な。(55 頁注 8 参照)

⁷ on the strength of: encouraged by, relying on, or arguing from. ～をいいことに、あてにして、～だからといって。(p. 96 注 11 参照)

⁸ he's discharged from the trouble of calling: 来訪の労を免れる→屋敷には入れてもらえないからやってこない。

⁹ aspiration: steadfast desire or longing for something above one. Isabella に対して身分をわきまえぬ野心を抱いているから、'presumptuous' (僭越な)。

¹⁰ turn a cold shoulder: (= give the cold shoulder) to display intentional and marked coldness, or studied indifference. 冷たいそぶりを見せる。

¹¹ reluctant: unwilling, averse, disinclined.

¹² keep one's own counsel: to keep one's own secret, be reticent about one's intentions or opinions.

¹³ have: to have learned (from some source).

night it was! she and Heathcliff were walking in the plantation² at the back of your house, above³ two hours; and he pressed her not to go in again, but just mount his horse and away with him! My informant said she could only put him off⁴ by pledging her word of honour to be prepared on their first meeting after that: when it was to be, he didn't hear, but you urge Mr Linton to look sharp⁵!

This news filled me with fresh fears; I outstripped Kenneth, and ran most of the way back. The little dog was yelping⁶ in the garden yet. I spared⁷ a minute to open the gate for it, but instead of going to the house door, it coursed up and down snuffing the grass, and would have escaped to the road, had I not seized and conveyed it in with me.

On ascending to Isabella's room, my suspicions were confirmed; it was empty. Had I been a few hours sooner, Mrs Linton's illness might have arrested⁸ her rash step. But what could be done now? There was a bare possibility of⁹ overtaking them if pursued instantly. I could not pursue them, however; and I dare not rouse the family, and fill the place with confusion; still less unfold¹⁰ the business to my master, absorbed as he was in his present calamity¹¹, and having no heart to spare for a second grief!

I saw nothing for it, but¹² to hold my tongue, and suffer matters to take their course¹³; and Kenneth being arrived, I went with a badly composed countenance¹⁴ to announce¹⁵ him.

¹ authority: an accepted source of information, advice, etc. 【参考】 I have the news **from** (or **on**) **good authority**. 確な筋から聞いた。(齋藤秀三郎『英和中辞典』)

² plantation: an assemblage of growing plants of any kind which have been planted; esp., a wood of planted trees. 植えこみ、(植林した) 小さな林。

³ above: more than.

⁴ put off: to dismiss till a later time, bid to wait.

⁵ look sharp: (originally) to keep strict watch; (in later use) to bestir oneself briskly, to lose no time. ここは前者。

⁶ yelp: to utter a yelp (= cry characteristic of dogs and some other animals, resembling a bark but distinguished from it by being sharp and shrill) or yelps. (p. 69 注 6 参照)

⁷ spare: to set apart, save, or give (time) from one's usual or ordinary duties or avocations. (仕事の手を止めて) 時間を割く。

⁸ arrest: to cause to stop; to stop the course of.

⁹ There was a bare possibility of ...: なんとか〜できたかもしれない。

¹⁰ unfold: to disclose or reveal by statement or exposition; to explain or make clear. 明かす。

¹¹ calamity: 不幸。(p. 134 注 2 参照)

¹² I saw nothing for it, but ...: 私には〜するしかなかった。

¹³ suffer matters to take their course: ことをなりゆきに任せる。suffer: to allow or permit a person, animal, or inanimate thing to be or to do so-and-so.

¹⁴ with a badly composed countenance: 落ち着きを失った (取り乱した) 顔で。

¹⁵ announce: to make known the arrival of (a guest).

Catherine lay in a troubled¹ sleep; her husband had succeeded in soothing the access² of frenzy; he now hung over her pillow, watching every shade, and every change of her painfully expressive features³.

The doctor, on examining the case⁴ for himself, spoke hopefully to him of its having a favourable termination⁵, if we could only preserve around her perfect and constant tranquillity⁶. To me, he signified the threatening danger was, not so much death, as permanent alienation of intellect⁷.

I did not close my eyes that night, nor did Mr Linton; indeed, we never went to bed: and the servants were all up⁸ long before the usual hour, moving through the house with stealthy tread, and exchanging whispers as they encountered each other in their vocations. Every one was active, but⁹ Miss Isabella; and they began to remark how sound she slept — her brother, too, asked if she had risen, and seemed impatient for her presence, and hurt that she showed so little anxiety for her sister-in-law.

I trembled¹⁰ lest he should send me to call her; but I was spared the pain of being the first proclaimant¹¹ of her flight. One of the maids, a thoughtless girl, who had been on an early errand to Gimmerton, came panting¹² upstairs, open-mouthed, and dashed into the chamber, crying.

‘Oh dear, dear! What mun [= must] we have next? Master, master, our young lady—’

¹ troubled: disturbed; disquieted; disordered; agitated; afflicted. 不安な。

² access: an attack or fit.

³ her painfully expressive features: いかにも苦しそうな顔。

⁴ case: (colloq.) a patient.

⁵ termination: outcome, issue, result. ‘having a favourable termination’ 有望な結末、つまり回復の望みがあること。

⁶ tranquillity: the quality or state of being tranquil; freedom from disturbance or agitation; serenity, calmness; quietness, peacefulness.

⁷ the threatening...intellect: こわいのは死よりも気がふれたままになること。【参考】The oceans do **not so much** divide the world **as** unite it. 大洋は世界を分つと云ふよりも寧ろ合する（と云つた方が好い）。（齋藤秀三郎『英和中辞典』）

⁸ up: *adv.* out of bed. 正反対の意味 ‘not gone to bed; not yet abed’（寝ずに起きて）もあるが、ここでは文脈から明らか。

⁹ but: except.

¹⁰ tremble: (fig. and rhet.) to be affected with dread or apprehension, or with any feeling that is accompanied by trembling (at, for, to do something). 不安におののく。

¹¹ proclaimant: (rare) a proclaimer (= one who proclaims or publicly announces). これもおおげさな言葉のひとつといえるだろう。

¹² pant: to breathe hard or spasmodically, as when out of breath; to draw quick laboured breaths, as from exertion or agitation; to gasp for breath. 息を切らす、あえぐ。

‘Hold your noise!’ cried I hastily, enraged at her clamorous¹ manner.

‘Speak lower, Mary—What is the matter?’ said Mr Linton. ‘What ails your young lady?’²

‘She’s gone, she’s gone! Yon’ Heathcliff’s run off wi’ her!’ gasped the girl.

‘That is not true!’ exclaimed Linton, rising in agitation. ‘It cannot be—how has the idea entered your head? Ellen Dean, go and seek her—it is incredible—it cannot be.’

As he spoke he took the servant to the door, and, then, repeated his demand to know her reasons for such an assertion.

‘Why, I met on the road a lad that fetches milk here,’ she stammered, ‘and he asked whether we weren’t in trouble at the Grange—I thought he meant for Missis’s sickness, so I answered, yes. Then says he, “they’s³ somebody gone after ‘em, I guess?” I stared. He saw I knew naught about it, and he told how a gentleman and lady had stopped to have a horse’s shoe fastened⁴ at a blacksmith’s shop, two miles out of Gimmerton, not very long after midnight! and how the blacksmith’s lass had got up to spy who they were: she knew them both directly—And she noticed the man—Heathcliff it was, she felt certain, nob’dy could mistake him, besides⁵—put a sovereign in her father’s hand for payment. The lady had a cloak about her face; but having desired a sup of water, while she drank, it fell back, and she saw her very plain—Heathcliff held both bridles as they rode on, and they set their faces from the village⁶, and went as fast as the rough roads would let them. The lass said nothing to her father, but she told it all over Gimmerton this morning.’

I ran and peeped, for form’s sake⁷, into Isabella’s room: confirming, when I returned, the servant’s statement—Mr Linton had resumed his seat by the bed; on my re-entrance, he raised his eyes, read the meaning of my blank aspect, and dropped them without giving an order, or uttering a word.

‘Are we to try any measures for overtaking and bringing her back?’ I inquired. ‘How should we do?’

¹ clamorous: [kæməɾəs] uttered with, or accompanied by, clamour or shouting; noisy.

² What ails your young lady?: お嬢さんがどうかしたのかね? (p. 123 注 7 参照)

³ they’s: there’s.

⁴ to have a horse’s shoe fastened: (ゆるんだ) 蹄鉄 (の釘) を打ってもらう。shoe = horseshoe.

⁵ besides: *adv.* also; as well; moreover.

⁶ set their faces from the village: 村の外へ向かった。‘to the village’ の逆。

⁷ for form’s sake: 形式上、かたちだけ。

‘She went of her own accord¹,’ answered the master; ‘she had a right to go if she pleased — Trouble me no more about her. — Hereafter she is only my sister in name; not because I disown² her, but because she has disowned me.’

And that was all he said on the subject; he did not make a single inquiry further, or mention her in any way, except directing me to send what property she had in the house to her fresh home, wherever it was, when I knew it.

¹ of one's own accord: by one's unsolicited assent; of one's own spontaneous motion. 自分から進んで。(p. 170 注 2 参照)

² disown: to refuse to acknowledge as one's own, or as connected with oneself; not to own; to renounce, repudiate, disclaim. 縁を切る。

Chapter XIII

For two months the fugitives¹ remained absent; in those two months, Mrs Linton encountered and conquered the worst shock of what was denominated² a brain fever³. No mother could have nursed an only child more devotedly than Edgar tended her. Day and night, he was watching, and patiently enduring all the annoyances⁴ that irritable nerves and a shaken reason could inflict; and, though Kenneth remarked that what he saved from the grave would only recompense⁵ his care by forming the source of constant future anxiety, in fact, that his health and strength were being sacrificed to preserve a mere ruin of humanity, he knew no limits in gratitude and joy, when Catherine's life was declared out of danger; and hour after hour, he would sit beside her, tracing the gradual return to bodily health, and flattering⁶ his too sanguine hopes with the illusion that her mind would settle back to its right balance also, and she would soon be entirely her former self.

The first time she left her chamber, was at the commencement of the following March. Mr Linton had put on her pillow, in the morning, a handful of golden crocuses⁷; her eye, long stranger to any gleam of pleasure, caught them in waking, and shone delighted as she gathered them eagerly together.

‘These are the earliest flowers at the Heights!’ she exclaimed. ‘They remind me of soft thaw winds⁸, and warm sunshine, and nearly melted snow—Edgar, is there not a south wind, and is not the snow almost gone?’

‘The snow is quite gone down here, darling!’ replied her husband, ‘and I only see two white spots on the whole range of moors—The sky is blue, and the larks are singing, and the beck and brooks⁹ are all brim full. Catherine, last spring at this time¹⁰, I was

¹ fugitive: one who flees or tries to escape from danger, an enemy, justice, or an owner. 逃亡者。

² denominate: to give a name or appellation to; to call by a name, to name (orig. *from* or *after* something); (now usually with complement) to give (a thing) the name of., to call.

³ brain fever: 脳炎。

⁴ annoyance: anything annoying or causing trouble, a nuisance. 厄介ごと、人を困らせること。

⁵ recompense: [rɛkəmpɛns] to reward, requite, repay (a person) for something done or given.

⁶ flatter: to foster (hopes). 希望を抱く。人を目的語に取ると ‘to inspire with hope, usually on insufficient grounds.’ (空しい希望を抱かせる)。

⁷ crocus: [krəʊˈkəs] クロッカス (=サフラン saffron)。

⁸ thaw winds: 雪融け頃の風。 *thaw*: the melting of ice and snow after a frost; the condition of the weather caused by the rise of temperature above the freezing point.

⁹ becks and brooks: どちらも「小川」だが、‘beck’ は北イングランドのごつごつした谷川 (p. 133 注 12 参照)、『brook’ は ‘a small stream, rivulet; orig. a torrent, a strong flowing stream.’ で、流れの速い小川。

¹⁰ last spring at this time: 二人が結婚したのは 1783 年の 3 月。まだ一年しかたっていない。つい
でながら、Heathcliff が失踪し、Edgar の両親が病死したのは 1780 年のこと。

longing¹ to have you under this roof—now, I wish you were a mile or two up those hills: the air blows so sweetly, I feel that it would cure you.’

‘I shall never be there. but once more!’ said the invalid; ‘and then you’ll leave me, and I shall remain for ever. Next spring you’ll long again to have me under this roof, and you’ll look back and think you were happy to-day.’

Linton lavished on her the kindest caresses, and tried to cheer her by the fondest² words; but, vaguely regarding the flowers, she let the tears collect on her lashes and stream down her cheeks unheeding.

We knew she was really better, and, therefore, decided that long confinement to a single place produced much of this despondency³, and it might be partially⁴ removed by a change of scene.

The master told me to light a fire in the many-weeks deserted parlour, and to set an easy-chair in the sunshine by the window; and then he brought her down, and she sat a long while enjoying the genial⁵ heat, and, as we expected, revived by the objects round her, which, though familiar, were free from the dreary associations investing⁶ her hated sick chamber. By evening, she seemed greatly exhausted; yet no arguments could persuade her to return to that apartment; and I had to arrange the parlour sofa for her bed, till another room could be prepared.

To obviate⁷ the fatigue of mounting and descending the stairs, we fitted up this⁸, where you lie at present, on the same floor with the parlour⁹: and she was soon strong enough to move from one to the other, leaning on Edgar's arm.

¹ long: To have a yearning desire; to wish earnestly.

² fond: affectionate, loving, tender. もともとは ‘foolishly tender, over-affectionate’ という意味なので注意。ここは悪い意味で使われてはいないようだが、結婚後まだ一年だから、やはりいくぶんベタベタした甘いことばだったのだろう。

³ despondency: depression or dejection of spirits through loss of resolution or hope. ここは希望を失って悲観的になっていること。

⁴ partially: in a partial way or degree, as opposed to totally; to some extent; in part; incompletely, restrictedly; partly. いくぶん。

⁵ genial: conducive to growth; (now chiefly of air, climate, sunshine, passing into the sense) pleasantly warm, mild. 「成長をうながす」という意味より、「(気候・日射などが)心地よく暖かい、おだやかな」

⁶ invest: to cover, envelop, or coat, as a garment does.

⁷ obviate: [ɒˈbviət] to prevent by anticipatory measures. あらかじめ手段を講じて回避する、未然に防ぐ。(p. 27 注 5 参照)

⁸ fitted up this: fitted up this room. この部屋にベッド(など寝室に必要なもの)を備えた。fit up: to supply with necessary fittings, furniture, or stores.

⁹ the same floor with the parlour: つまり二階。

Ah, I thought myself she might recover, so waited on as she was¹. And there was double cause to desire it, for on her existence depended that of another; we cherished the hope that in a little while, Mr Linton's heart would be gladdened, and his lands secured from a stranger's gripe, by the birth of an heir².

I should mention that Isabella sent to her brother, some six weeks from her departure, a short note announcing her marriage with Heathcliff. It appeared dry and cold; but at the bottom, was dotted in with pencil, an obscure apology, and an entreaty for kind remembrance, and reconciliation,³ if her proceeding⁴ had offended him; asserting that she could not help it then, and being done⁵, she had now no power to repeal⁶ it.

Linton did not reply to this, I believe; and, in a fortnight more, I got a long letter which I considered odd coming from the pen of a bride just out of the honeymoon. I'll read it, for I keep it yet. Any relic⁷ of the dead is precious, if they were valued living⁸.

DEAR ELLEN, it begins.

I came last night to Wuthering Heights, and heard, for the first time, that Catherine has been, and is yet, very ill. I must not write to her, I suppose, and my brother is either too angry or too distressed to answer what I sent him. Still, I must write to somebody, and the only choice left me is you.

Inform Edgar that I'd give the world to see his face again—that my heart returned to Thrushcross Grange in twenty-four hours after I left it, and is there⁹ at this moment, full of warm feelings for him, and Catherine! *I can't follow it, though*—(those words are underlined)—they need not expect me, and they may draw what conclusions they please;

¹ so waited on as she was: そのように(行き届いた)世話をしてもらっているのだから。 *wait on*: to attend as or in the manner of a servant to the personal requirements of; to minister to the comfort of.

² heir: [éə] the person who is entitled by law to succeed another in the enjoyment of property or rank, upon the death of the latter; one who so succeeds. 法定相続権者、相続人。ここは跡取り。

³ an entreaty for kind remembrance, and reconciliation: どうかお見捨てなく、これまでどおりおつきあいくださいますように、というほどの意味。

⁴ proceeding: action, course of action; conduct, behaviour.

⁵ being done: こうなった以上は。

⁶ repeal: to revoke, rescind, annul (something determined or appointed, esp. a law or sentence).

⁷ relic: something kept as a remembrance or souvenir of a person, thing, or place; a memento. 形見の品。

⁸ living: when alive. 生前。 *they*= the dead.

⁹ is: 主語は 'my heart'。なお次の 'I can't follow it' の 'it' も 'my heart' で、心は Grange にあっても体はそっちへ行けない、ということ。

taking care, however, to lay nothing at the door of¹ my weak will or deficient² affection.

The remainder³ of the letter is for yourself alone. I want to ask you two questions: the first is,

How did you contrive to preserve the common sympathies of human nature when you resided here? I cannot recognise any sentiment which those around share with me.

The second question, I have great interest in; it is this—

Is Mr Heathcliff a man? If so, is he mad? And if not, is he a devil? I shan't tell my reasons for making this inquiry; but, I beseech⁴ you to explain, if you can, what I have married—that is, when you call to see me; and you must call, Ellen, very soon. Don't write, but come, and bring me something from Edgar.

Now you shall hear how I have been received in my new home, as I am led to imagine the Heights will be. It is to amuse myself that I dwell on⁵ such subjects as the lack of external comforts; they never occupy my thoughts, except at the moment when I miss them⁶—I should laugh and dance for joy, if I found their absence was the total of my miseries, and the rest was an unnatural⁷ dream!

The sun set behind the Grange, as we turned on to the moors: by that, I judged it to be six o'clock; and my companion halted half-an-hour to inspect the park and the gardens, and, probably, the place itself, as well as he could; so it was dark when we dismounted in the paved yard of the farm-house, and your old fellow-servant, Joseph, issued⁸ out to receive us by the light of a dip candle⁹. He did it with a courtesy that redounded¹⁰ to his credit.

¹ lay at the door of: to impute, or be imputable or chargeable to. ここは 'they need not expect me' (私の帰りを待つには及びません) といった理由について、「私が帰らないのは意志が弱いせいだとか愛情が足りないせいだ、などとお思いになりませぬように」。

² deficient: present in less than the proper quantity; not of sufficient force; wholly or partly wanting or lacking; insufficient, inadequate.

³ remainder: something that remains or is left; a remaining part.

⁴ beseech: to supplicate, entreat, implore a person to do a thing. 人に～してほしいと懇願する。

⁵ dwell on: to treat at length or with insistence, in speech or writing. 長々と話す (書く)。

⁶ they never ... them: ('they = external comforts') 楽しいことだなんて、そんなものがあつたんだと思ひ出したときでもなければ考えやしない。'miss = to regret the absence or loss of' (～のないことを残念がる) ではなく、'to notice the absence or loss of' (～のないことに気づく) が適切。

⁷ unnatural: at variance with what is natural, usual, or to be expected; unusual, strange.

⁸ issue: to go or come out; to flow out; to come forth, sally out (often with *out* or *forth*).

⁹ dip candle: a candle made by repeatedly dipping a wick into melted tallow. (溶かした獣脂に芯を何度も浸して厚く付着させた) 糸芯蠟燭。すぐあとに見える 'torch' はこれ。

¹⁰ redound: to result in, have the effect of, contributing or turning to some advantage or disadvantage for a person or thing. (ここでは皮肉をこめて) 評判を高める。

His first act was to elevate his torch¹ to a level with my face, squint² malignantly, project his under lip, and turn away.

Then he took the two horses and led them into the stables, reappearing for the purpose of locking the outer gate, as if we lived in an ancient castle.

Heathcliff stayed to speak to him, and I entered the kitchen—a dingy, untidy hole³; I dare say⁴ you would not know it, it is so changed since it was in your charge.

By the fire stood a ruffianly child, strong in limb, and dirty in garb, with a look of Catherine in his eyes, and about his mouth.

‘This is Edgar's legal nephew⁵,’ I reflected—‘mine in a manner⁶. I must shake hands, and—yes—I must kiss him. It is right to establish a good understanding at the beginning.’

I approached, and, attempting to take his chubby fist, said,—

‘How do you do, my dear?’

He replied in a jargon⁷ I did not comprehend.

‘Shall you and I be friends, Hareton?’ was my next essay⁸ at conversation.

An oath, and a threat to set Throttler on me if I did not ‘frame⁹ off,’ rewarded my perseverance¹⁰.

‘Hey, Throttler, lad!’ whispered the little wretch, rousing a half-bred bull-dog from its

¹ torch: a light to be carried in the hand, consisting of a stick of resinous wood, or of twisted hemp or similar material soaked with tallow, resin, or other inflammable substance. ここでは ‘dip candle’ を指す。

² squint: (fig.) to glance *at, on, or upon* (a person or thing) with dislike or disapproval, or by means of some covert allusion, hint, or suggestion. (*OED*); to look suspiciously or with envy, malice, or disapproval (*Webster 3rd*) 反感をこめて、不満げに、または意味ありげにちらりと見る。

³ hole: an unpleasant place of abode; a term of contempt or depreciation for any place.

⁴ I dare say: たぶん～だと思ふ。(p. 61 注 3、p. 107 注 6 参照)。

⁵ legal nephew: nephew in law. 義理の甥。Edgar の配偶者である Catherine の甥だから。

⁶ in a manner: in some way, in some degree, so to speak, as it were.

⁷ jargon: unintelligible or meaningless talk or writing; nonsense, gibberish.

⁸ essay: an attempt.

⁹ frame: *obs. exc. dial.* = ‘go’.

¹⁰ perseverance: constant persistence in a course of action, purpose, or state; steadfast pursuit of an aim; tenacious assiduity or endeavour. 粘り強さ、忍耐。

lair¹ in a corner. ‘Now, wilt thou be ganging²?’ he asked authoritatively.

Love for my life urged a compliance³; I stepped over the threshold to wait till the others should enter. Mr Heathcliff was nowhere visible; and Joseph, whom I followed to the stables, and requested to accompany me in, after staring and muttering to himself, screwed up⁴ his nose and replied—

‘Mim! mim! mim!’⁵ Did iver Christian body hear owt like it?⁶ Minching un’ munching!⁷ Hah can I tell whet ye say?’

‘I say I wish you to come with me into the house!’ I cried, thinking him deaf, yet highly disgusted at his rudeness.

‘Nor nuh me! Aw getten summut else to do,’⁸ he answered, and continued his work, moving his lantern jaws⁹ meanwhile, and surveying my dress and countenance (the former a great deal too fine, but the latter, I’m sure, as sad as he could desire) with sovereign¹⁰ contempt.

I walked round the yard and through a wicket¹¹, to another door, at which I took the liberty of knocking, in hopes some more civil servant might show himself.

After a short suspense¹² it was opened by a tall, gaunt man, without neckerchief, and otherwise¹³ extremely slovenly¹⁴; his features were lost in masses of shaggy hair that hung on his shoulders, and *his* eyes, too, were like a ghostly Catherine’s, with all their beauty

¹ lair: a place for animals to lie down in. 動物のねぐら。

² gang: (obs. exc. Sc. and dial.) to walk, go.

³ Love for my life urged a compliance: 命が惜しいからいうとおりにした。

⁴ screw up: to contract the surrounding parts of (the mouth, eyes). 顔をしかめたのである。

⁵ mim: (orig. Sc. and dial.) affectedly modest, demure, primly silent or quiet. 次の Isabella のセリフに ‘I cried, thinking him deaf’ とあるので、お上品に小声で話すものだから、よく聞き取れぬことを皮肉っているのだろう。「ぼそぼそいうな」あたりか。

⁶ Did iver...it?: Did ever Christian body hear aught (= anything) like it?

⁷ minching un’ munching: (PENGUIN 版注:) mincing and affected. 上品ぶりおって。

⁸ Nor nuh...to do.: None of me! (おらはごめんだ) I’ve got something else to do.

⁹ lantern jaws: long thin jaws, giving a hollow appearance to the cheek.

¹⁰ sovereign: (of contempt) supreme, unmitigated.

¹¹ wicket: a small door or gate made in, or placed beside, a large one, for ingress and egress when the large one is closed; also, any small gate for foot-passengers, as at the entrance of a field or other enclosure. くぐり戸など、人が出入りできる小さな門。

¹² after a short suspense: (どうなることかと) 少し待っていると。 *suspense*: the condition of waiting, esp. of being kept waiting, for an expected decision, assurance, or issue;

¹³ otherwise: in other respects; with regard to other points.

¹⁴ slovenly: (of dress, appearance, habits, etc.) marked or characterized by untidiness or want of attention to neatness and cleanliness.

annihilated¹.

‘What’s your business here?’ he demanded, grimly. ‘Who are you?’

‘My name *was* Isabella Linton,’ I replied. ‘You’ve seen me before, sir. I’m lately married to Mr Heathcliff, and he has brought me here—I suppose by your permission.’

‘Is he come back, then?’ asked the hermit, glaring² like a hungry wolf.

‘Yes—we came just now,’ I said; ‘but he left me by the kitchen door; and when I would have gone in³, your little boy played sentinel over the place, and frightened me off by the help of a bull-dog.’

‘It’s well the hellish villain has kept his word!’ growled my future host, searching the darkness beyond me in expectation of discovering Heathcliff; and then he indulged in a soliloquy⁴ of execrations⁵, and threats of what he would have done had the ‘fiend’⁶ deceived him.

I repented having tried this second entrance; and was almost inclined to slip away before he finished cursing, but ere I could execute⁷ that intention, he ordered me in, and shut and re-fastened the door.

There was a great fire, and that was all the light in the huge apartment, whose floor had grown a uniform gray⁸; and the once brilliant pewter dishes which used to attract my gaze when I was a girl partook of⁹ a similar obscurity, created by tarnish¹ and dust.

¹ like a ghostly ... annihilated: 美しさがまったくないところは、幽霊にした Catherine の目のよう。

² glare: [glɛə] to look fixedly and fiercely (*at, on, upon*). じつとにらみつける。

³ when I would have gone in: 入ろうとしたその時。「入れたら」入っていたであろうに、実現できなかったから would+完了不定詞のかたちを取っている。

⁴ soliloquy: [səlɪləkwɪ] an instance of talking to or conversing with oneself, or of uttering one's thoughts aloud without addressing any person.

⁵ execration: an uttered curse; an anathema, an imprecation.

⁶ the ‘fiend’: ‘the hellish villain’ と同一人物。Hareton を指すとする解釈もあるが、いかに正気を失いかけているとはいえ、この場面で息子に「鬼畜生」とまで悪態をつく理由はない。ここは憎悪の対象たる Heathcliff を指すと考えるのが自然。実際 197 頁には ‘Should he (= Heathcliff) offer to leave me, he’s a dead man.’ (やつが出て行くなどと抜かしたら、生かしてはおかぬ) とあり、Heathcliff が駆落ち (は秘していただろうが) 直前の約束どおり帰ってきたのだと解釈しておく。

⁷ execute: [ɛksɪkjʊ:t] To follow out, carry into effect (an intention, purpose, plan, instruction, or command.) 実行に移す。

⁸ a uniform grey: ほこりが一面に積もって灰色になっていること。

⁹ partake of: to have something of, possess a certain amount of (a quality or attribute). ここは、色あせて床同様灰色がかっていたこと。

I inquired whether I might call the maid, and be conducted to a bed-room? Mr Earnshaw vouchsafed² no answer. He walked up and down, with his hands in his pockets, apparently quite forgetting my presence; and his abstraction³ was evidently so deep, and his whole aspect so misanthropical⁴, that I shrank from disturbing him again.

You'll not be surprised, Ellen, at my feeling particularly cheerless, seated in worse than solitude, on that inhospitable hearth, and remembering that four miles distant lay my delightful home, containing the only people I loved on earth: and there might as well be the Atlantic to part us, instead of those four miles, I could not overpass them!⁵

I questioned with myself—where must I turn for comfort? and—mind you don't tell Edgar or Catherine—above every sorrow beside⁶, this rose pre-eminent—despair at finding nobody who could or would be my ally⁷ against Heathcliff!

I had sought shelter at Wuthering Heights, almost gladly, because I was secured by that arrangement from living alone with him; but he knew the people we were coming amongst⁸, and he did not fear their intermeddling⁹.

I sat and thought a doleful¹⁰ time; the clock struck eight, and nine, and still my companion paced to and fro, his head bent on his breast, and perfectly silent, unless a groan, or a bitter ejaculation¹¹ forced itself out at intervals.

¹ tarnish: loss of brightness, discoloration; stain, blemish.

² vouchsafe: [vautʃséɪf] to deign or condescend to give (a word, answer, etc.) in reply or by way of friendly notice. (快く) ご返事をくださる、ご返事し給う。‘gave no answer’ でいいところを、わざと大げさにいったものか。

³ abstraction: inattention to things present; absence of mind. 放心状態、上の空。

⁴ misanthropical (= misanthropic): [mɪsənθrəpɪkəl] characterized by misanthropy; man-hating.

⁵ there might ... them!: 4 マイルでも越えるに越えられないのなら、いっそ大西洋に隔てられていたって同じこと。※‘may (might) as well’ の ‘as well’ については、*COD 8th* の定義が大変明解なので、p. 140 注 13 を参照のこと。

⁶ above every sorrow beside: ほかのどんな悲しみ以上に。 *beside* = besides

⁷ ally: [əlaɪ, æləɪ] an individual who helps or co-operates with another; a supporter or associate; a friend.

⁸ the people we were coming amongst: 私たちがいっしょに暮らすことになる人たち。

⁹ he did not fear their intermeddling: *fear*: to have an uneasy sense of the probability of (some unwelcome occurrence in the future); to apprehend. つまり彼らがどんな連中か熟知していたから、「彼らに干渉される心配は (はじめから) していなかった」こと。「彼らの干渉を恐れてはいなかった」ではない。

¹⁰ doleful: sorrowful.

¹¹ ejaculation: a short prayer ‘darted up to God’ (Fuller) in an emergency; (in wider sense) a short hasty emotional utterance. 思わず感情を漏らした短いことば。英米の辞書はいずれも ‘utterance’ (音声を発すること、また発せられたことば) としており、特にこの場面では、必ずしも叫び声とは限らないことに注意。

I listened to detect a woman's voice in the house, and filled the interim¹ with wild regrets, and dismal anticipations, which, at last, spoke audibly² in irrepressible sighing, and weeping.

I was not aware how openly I grieved, till Earnshaw halted opposite, in his measured³ walk, and gave me a stare of newly awakened surprise. Taking advantage of⁴ his recovered attention, I exclaimed—

‘I'm tired with my journey, and I want to go to bed! Where is the maid-servant? Direct me to her, as she won't come to me!’

‘We have none,’ he answered; ‘you must wait on yourself.’

‘Where must I sleep, then?’ I sobbed—I was beyond regarding self-respect, weighed down⁵ by fatigue and wretchedness.

‘Joseph will show you Heathcliff's chamber,’ said he; ‘open that door—he's in there.’

I was going to obey, but he suddenly arrested me, and added in the strangest tone—

‘Be so good as to turn your lock, and draw your bolt—don't omit⁶ it!’

‘Well!’ I said. ‘But why, Mr Earnshaw?’ I did not relish⁷ the notion of deliberately fastening myself in with Heathcliff.

‘Look here!’ he replied, pulling from his waistcoat a curiously constructed pistol, having a double-edged spring knife attached to the barrel⁸. ‘That's a great tempter to a desperate man, is it not? I cannot resist going up with this, every night, and trying his door. If once I find it open, he's done for!’⁹ I do it¹⁰ invariably¹, even though the minute before² I

¹ interim: an intervening time, interval of time; the meantime. 合間。

² spoke audibly: ‘wild regrets, and dismal anticipations’ が口をついて出た、声になって出た。

³ measured: having a marked rhythm; rhythmical; regular in movement.

⁴ take advantage of: to use any favourable condition which it yields; to avail oneself of. ～をこれ幸いと利用する、好機に乗ずる。

⁵ weigh down: (fig.) to depress, oppress, lie heavy on.

⁶ omit: [əʊmɪt] to fail or forbear to use or perform; to let alone, pass over, neglect, leave undone.

⁷ relish: to like, have a liking for; to care for, be pleased or satisfied with; to approve of.

⁸ barrel: the metal tube of a gun, through which the bullet or shot is discharged. 銃身。

⁹ do for: (colloq. freq. in pass.) to ruin, damage, or injure fatally, destroy. ‘he's done for’ は「やつはおしまいだ」。

¹⁰ it: = trying his door. ドアが開いているかどうか試してみることに。

have been recalling a hundred reasons that should make me refrain—it is some devil that urges me to thwart my own schemes³ by killing him—you fight against that devil, for love, as long as you may⁴; when the time comes, not all the angels in heaven shall save him!⁵

I surveyed the weapon inquisitively⁶; a hideous notion struck me. How powerful I should be possessing such an instrument! I took it from his hand, and touched the blade. He looked astonished at the expression my face assumed⁷ during a brief second. It was not horror, it was covetousness⁸. He snatched the pistol back, jealously⁹; shut the knife, and returned it to its concealment.

‘I don't care if you tell him,’ said he. ‘Put him on his guard, and watch for him. You know the terms we are on¹⁰, I see; his danger does not shock you.’

‘What has Heathcliff done to you?’ I asked. ‘In what has he wronged you, to warrant¹¹ this appalling hatred? Wouldn't it be wiser to bid him quit the house?’

‘No!’ thundered¹² Earnshaw. ‘Should he offer to leave me, he's a dead man, persuade him to attempt it, and you are a murderess! Am I to lose *all*, without a chance of retrieval? Is Hareton to be a beggar? Oh, damnation! I *will* have it back, and I'll have *his* gold too, and then his blood; and hell shall have his soul! It¹³ will be ten times blacker with that guest than ever it was before!’

¹ invariably: constantly; without exception.

² the minute before: the minute before I go up with this and try his door.

³ scheme: a plan of action devised in order to attain some end; a project, enterprise; (often with unfavourable notion, a self-seeking or an underhand project, a plot, or a visionary or foolish project. Hindley のもくろみ (または夢) とは失った財産の回復と Heathcliff の金を巻き上げる。殺人を犯せば死刑になるか自殺を選ぶしかないから、今後の計画はすべて破れる。

⁴ you fight...you may: 夫のために、せいぜい (Hindley をそそのかす) その devil と戦うがいい。

⁵ not all ... him: この ‘shall’ は話者の意志だから ‘all the angels in heaven’ にもやつを救わせはしない、つまり、天使が総がかりでもやつは助からない、ということ。

⁶ inquisitively: with curiosity to obtain information. 好奇の目で。

⁷ the expression my face assumed: 私の顔に現れた表情。assume: to take upon oneself, put on (a garb, aspect, form, or character). (衣服・様相・外観・性質を) 身につける、帯びる、呈する。

⁸ covetousness: inordinate and culpable desire of possessing that which belongs to another or to which one has no right.

⁹ jealously: with watchful care for preservation; with apprehension of rivalry, or (esp.) of loss or damage.

¹⁰ the terms we are on: おれたち (Hindley と Heathcliff) の仲。terms: (pl.) standing, footing, mutual relation between two persons or parties

¹¹ warrant: to furnish good and sufficient grounds for (a course of action); to render allowable, justify. ～に十分な根拠を与える。

¹² thunder: to speak in a very loud tone, shout loudly, vociferate.

¹³ it: = hell. Heathcliff を迎えたなら地獄はもとの十倍暗くなる。

You've acquainted¹ me, Ellen, with your old master's habits. He is clearly on the verge of madness—he was so, last night, at least. I shuddered to be near him, and thought on² the servant's ill-bred moroseness as comparatively agreeable.

He now recommenced his moody³ walk, and I raised the latch, and escaped into the kitchen.

Joseph was bending over the fire, peering into a large pan that swung above it; and a wooden bowl of oatmeal stood on the settle close by. The contents of the pan began to boil, and he turned to plunge his hand into the bowl; I conjectured that this preparation was probably for our supper, and, being hungry, I resolved it should be eatable⁴—so, crying out sharply, 'I'll make the porridge!'—I removed the vessel out of his reach, and proceeded to take off my hat and riding habit⁵. 'Mr Earnshaw,' I continued, 'directs me to wait on myself—I will—I'm not going to act the lady among you, for fear⁶ I should starve.'

'Gooid Lord!' he muttered, sitting down, and stroking his ribbed stockings⁷ from the knee to the ankle. 'If they's tuh be fresh ortherings—just when Aw gotten used tuh two maisters, if Aw mun hev a *mistress* set o'er my heead, it's loike time tuh be flitting. Aw niver *did* think tuh say t' day ut I mud lave th' owld place⁸—but Aw doubt it's nigh at hend!⁹

This lamentation drew no notice from me; I went briskly to work; sighing to remember a period when it would have been all merry fun¹⁰; but compelled speedily to drive off the

¹ acquaint: to inform (a person) of (a thing); to make cognizant or aware (*with, that*).

² think on: = think of. *think*: to have a (good, bad, or other) opinion with regard to a person or thing; to value or esteem something (highly or otherwise). Const. with adv. (*much, little, well, ill*, etc.), and with *of* (dial. *to, on*) before the name of the person or thing. つまり 'think much of' (～を重んずる) などの 'think of' に同じく、人 (もの) を～と考える (思う)。【例文】1974 *Amer. Speech* 1971 XLVI. 117 We should *think on* each student *as* unique. (*OED*) 学生はそれぞれ独自の存在だと考えるべきであります。

³ moody: subject to, or indulging in, moods of ill-humour, depression, or the like; ill-humoured, gloomy, sullen, melancholy.

⁴ it should be eatable: ちゃんと口にできるものにしなくちゃ。

⁵ riding habit: 婦人用乗馬服。p. 76 注 4・注 5 にもあるように、現在の軽快な乗馬服とはちがう。

⁶ for fear: = lest.

⁷ ribbed stockings: うね織りの長靴下。

⁸ If they's...place: If there's to be fresh orderings (= orders)—just when I have got used to two masters, if I must have a *mistress* set over my head, it's like time to be flitting. I never *did* think to see the day that I might leave the old place. また新規に注文がつくかね。旦那が二人いるのにやっと慣れたと思ったら、今度は奥方までござるとは、どうやら逃げ時らしいて。この家を出るときがこようとは思ひもせなんだ。

⁹ Aw doubt it's nigh at hand!: I doubt it's nigh (= near) at hand! *at hand*: (sometimes preceded by *close, hard, near, nigh, ready*.) within easy reach; near; close by.

¹⁰ a period ... fun: なにをしてもきつとおもしろおかしかった頃。

remembrance. It racked¹ me to recall past happiness, and the greater peril there was of conjuring up its apparition², the quicker the thible³ ran round, and the faster the handfuls of meal fell into the water⁴.

Joseph beheld my style of cookery with growing indignation.

‘Thear!’ he ejaculated. ‘Hareton, thah willn’t sup thy porridge tuh neeght; they’ll be nowt but lumps as big as maw nave.⁵ Thear, agean! Aw’d fling in bowl un all, if Aw wer yah!⁶ There, pale t’ guilp off, un’ then yah’ll hae done wi’t⁷. Bang, bang. It’s a marcy t’ bothom isn’t deaved aht!⁸’

It *was* rather a rough mess, I own⁹, when poured into the basins; four had been provided, and a gallon pitcher of new milk was brought from the dairy¹⁰, which Hareton seized and commenced drinking and spilling from the expansive lip.

I expostulated¹¹, and desired that he should have his in a mug; affirming that I could not taste the liquid treated so dirtily. The old cynic chose to be vastly offended at this

¹ rack: to inflict mental pain or torture on (a person); to torture, distract, lacerate (the mind, soul, etc.).

² the greater ... apparition: 昔の思い出がよみがえりそうになればなるほど（それを打ち消そうとして）。

³ thible = thivel: a stick for stirring porridge or anything cooked in a pot; a potstick.

⁴ the quicker...the water: meal (in Scotland and Ireland = oatmeal) を手でひとつかみずつ入れてはヘラでかき回す手が速まっていた。

⁵ thah willn’t...maw nave: thou will not sup thy porridge tonight; they’ll be nothing but lumps as big as my nave (= nieve: *dial. or arch.* a clenched hand; a fist). 今夜はおめえ粥は食えねえぞ。おらの拳骨ぐらいのでけえダマしか入っちゃいねえでな。

⁶ Aw’d ... yah!: I’d fling in bowl and all, if I were you! おれなら（オートミールを）鉢ごとそっくり入れちまうのになあ！（Joseph のいうとおり、本来オートミールは一気に投入すべきもの）。

⁷ pale t’ guilp off, un’ then yah’ll have done wi’t.: peel the *guilp* off, and then you’ll have done with it. 牛乳の皮をすくい取ればそれでおしめえ（なのになあ）。「pale the guilp off」の pale は peel（表皮をはぎ取る）だろう。問題は *guilp* だが、イギリスのあるサイトには ‘skim the milk off’ と説明されており、（水には牛乳も混じっており）熱してできた牛乳の膜をすくい取ること。

⁸ It’s a marcy...aht!: It’s a mercy the bottom isn’t deaved out (PENGUIN 版注 : = knocked out) ! 鍋の底が抜けねえでなによりだわい。

⁹ own: to confess to be valid, true, or actual; to admit. (p. 10 注 1、p. 94 注 7 参照)

¹⁰ dairy: [dēəri] that department of farming, or of a particular farm, which is concerned with the production of milk, butter, and cheese; a room or building in which milk and cream are kept, and made into butter and cheese.. ここは牛小屋。この場面では、粥がテーブルに並ぶまでに牛乳を持ってきたのは Joseph であろう。嵐が丘では納屋の裏手に牛小屋があった (p. 24: ‘He (= Joseph) sat within earshot, milking the cows by the aide of a lantern.’ p. 355: ‘she (= Zillah) was milking the cows in a shed behind the barn’) ※時間の経過を考えると夕食は夜の 10 時近くで、いかにも遅すぎる。作者の計算ちがいまたは錯覚があったのかもしれない。

¹¹ expostulate: to reason or remonstrate in a friendly manner *with* (a person). さとす、言い聞かせる。(p. 74 注 3、p. 84 注 11 参照)

nicety; assuring me, repeatedly, that ‘the barn¹ was every bit as gooid’ as I, ‘and every bit as wollsome [= wholesome],’ and wondering how I could fashion² to be so conceited; meanwhile, the infant ruffian continued sucking; and glowered³ up at me defyingly, as he slavered⁴ into the jug.

‘I shall have my supper in another room,’ I said. ‘Have you no place you call a parlour?’

‘*Parlour!*’ he echoed, sneeringly, ‘*parlour!*’ Nay, we’ve noa *parlours*. If yah dunnut loike wer [= don’t like our] company, they’s [= there’s] maister’s; un’ if yah dunnut loike maister, they’s us.’

‘Then I shall go upstairs,’ I answered; ‘shew me a chamber!’

I put my basin on a tray, and went myself to fetch some more milk.

With great grumblings the fellow rose, and preceded me in my ascent: we mounted to the garrets; he opening a door, now and then, to look into the apartments we passed.

‘Here’s a rahm [= room],’ he said at last, flinging back a cranky⁵ board on hinges. ‘It’s weel eneugh tuh ate a few porridge in. They’s a pack uh corn i’ t’ corner, thear, meeterly⁶ clane; If yah’re feared uh muckying⁷ yer grand silk cloes, spread yer hankerchir ut t’ top on’t.’⁸

The ‘rahm’ was a kind of lumber-hole⁹ smelling strong of malt and grain¹⁰; various sacks of which articles were piled around, leaving a wide, bare space in the middle.

‘Why, man!’ I exclaimed, facing him angrily, ‘this is not a place to sleep in. I wish to see my bed-room.’

¹ barn: bairn (= Hareton).

² fashion: (dial.) to ‘have the face’ (to do something). あつかましくも～する。(p. 54 注 3 参照)

³ glower: to look angrily or crossly; to scowl.

⁴ slaver: to let the saliva run from the mouth; to slabber. よだれを垂らす。

⁵ cranky: shaky; crooked. グラグラする、ゆがんだ。

⁶ meeterly: (north. dial.) tolerably, moderately, fairly; handsomely, modestly, agreeably.

⁷ mucky: (dial.) to make dirty.

⁸ It’s weel ... top on’t.: It’s well enough to eat a few porridge in. There’s a pack of corn in the corner, there, meeterly clean; If you’re feared of muckying your grand silk clothes, spread your handkerchief at the top on it.

⁹ lumber-hole: = lumber-room: a room for the reception of lumber or disused chattels. 物置部屋。

¹⁰ malt and grain: 麦芽と穀物。‘ale’ (古くはホップを入れぬビール。現在は ‘beer’ に同じ) や ‘porter’ (黒ビール) を含む自家製ビールの原料であろう。

‘*Bed-rume!*’ he repeated, in a tone of mockery. ‘Yah’s see all *t’bed-rumes* thear is¹—yon’s mine.’

He pointed into the second garret, only differing from the first in being more naked about the walls, and having a large, low, curtainless bed, with an indigo²-coloured quilt³, at one end.

‘What do I want with yours?’ I retorted. ‘I suppose Mr Heathcliff does not lodge⁴ at the top of the house, does he?’

‘Oh, it’s Maister *Hathecliff’s* yah’re wanting?’ cried he, as if making a new discovery. ‘Couldn’t ye uh said soa, at onst? Un then Aw mud ha’ telled ye, baht all this wark, ut that’s just one yah cannut sea—he allas keeps it locked, un nob’dy iver mells on’t but hisseln.’⁵

‘You’ve a nice house, Joseph,’ I could not refrain from observing, ‘and pleasant inmates; and I think the concentrated essence of all the madness in the world took up its abode in my brain the day I linked my fate with theirs!’⁶ However, that is not to the present purpose⁷—there are other rooms. For Heaven’s sake, be quick, and let me settle somewhere!’

He made no reply to this adjuration⁸; only plodding⁹ doggedly¹⁰ down the wooden steps,

¹ Yah’s ... is.: You’ll see all the bed-rooms there is (are). なお ‘*bed-rume*’ と表記してあるのは、Joseph が皮肉をこめてわざと Catherine の上品な発音に合せていることを示す。

² indigo: [índigəʊ] a substance obtained in the form of a blue powder from plants of the genus *Indigofera*, N.O. *Leguminosæ*, and largely used as a blue dye; the colour yielded by indigo, reckoned by Newton as one of the seven prismatic or primary colours, lying in the spectrum between blue and violet, and now often called *blue-violet* or *violet-blue*.

³ quilt: a bed-covering made of padding enclosed between layers of cloth etc. and kept in place by cross lines of stitching.

⁴ lodge: (now rare) to remain or dwell temporarily in a place; esp. to pass the night, sleep; (in a wider sense) to have one’s abode; to dwell, reside. 寝泊まりする、住む。

⁵ Couldn’t ye...hisseln.: Couldn’t you have said so, at once? (それならそれと、さっさとといえばよかったに) And then I must have told you, without all this work, that that’s just one you cannot see—he always keeps it locked, and nobody ever meddles on it but himself.

⁶ I think ... theirs!: この家のみんなと同じ運命に結ばれた日から、世界中の狂気を煮つめたエキスが私の頭の中に住み着いたんだわ! 【参考】**take up one’s abode** 住居を定める(居をトする)。(齋藤秀三郎『英和中辞典』)

⁷ that is not to the present purpose: そんなこと今は関係ないわ。‘to the purpose’ は、適切な(relevant)。 *purpose*: the matter in hand; the point at issue.

⁸ adjuration: an earnest appeal.

⁹ plod: to walk heavily or without elasticity; to move or progress laboriously, to trudge. 重い足取りで(大儀そうに)歩く。

¹⁰ doggedly: surlily, sullenly; with sullen obstinacy. むっつりとして。

and halting before an apartment which, from that halt¹, and the superior quality of its furniture, I conjectured to be the best one.

There was a carpet—a good one; but the pattern² was obliterated³ by dust; a fire-place hung with cut paper⁴, dropping to pieces; a handsome oak bed-stead with ample⁵ crimson⁶ curtains of rather expensive material, and modern make. But they had evidently experienced rough usage: the valances⁷ hung in festoons, wrenched from their rings, and the iron rod supporting them was bent in an arc, on one side, causing the drapery to trail upon the floor. The chairs were also damaged, many of them severely; and deep indentations⁸ deformed the panels of the walls.

I was endeavouring to gather⁹ resolution for entering and taking possession¹⁰, when my fool of a guide¹¹ announced—

‘This here is t' maister's.’

My supper by this time was cold, my appetite gone, and my patience exhausted. I insisted on being provided instantly with a place of refuge, and means of repose.

‘Whear the divil,’¹² began the religious elder. ‘The Lord bless us! The Lord forgie us!’

¹ from that halt: そうして立ち止まったところを見ると（ずかずか中へ入らず手前で立ち止まったのは遠慮を示す）。「from」は「判断の根拠」を示す（indicating the ground of a judgement, belief, or the like.）。

² pattern: a decorative or artistic design, as for china, carpets, wall-papers, etc.; hence, this design carried out in the manufactured article, fabric, etc.

³ obliterate: to blot out (anything written, figured, or imprinted) so as to leave no distinct traces; to erase, delete, efface.

⁴ cut paper: 装飾用の切り紙細工（cut paper ornament）であろう。

⁵ ample: extending far and wide; broad, wide, spacious. (Now always *eulogistic*: abundantly, excellently wide.) たつぷりと幅のある。

⁶ crimson: (the name of a colour) of a deep red somewhat inclining towards purple; of the colour of an alkaline infusion of cochineal. コチニール (cochineal [kɔˈtʃɪni:l] コチニールカイガラムシから抽出した色素) はアルカリ性溶液では赤紫色を呈する。

⁷ valance: a piece of drapery attached lengthways to a canopy, altar-cloth, or the like, so as to hang in a vertical position; *spec.* a border of drapery hanging round the canopy of a bed. 垂れ布、飾りカーテン。これがリングからもぎ取られ（wrenched from their rings）、花綱状に垂れ下がって（hung in festoons）。

⁸ indentation: the action of impressing so as to form a dent or dint; the dent, hollow, or depression thus formed; any deep and decided depression in a surface. へこみ。

⁹ gather: to collect or summon up (one's thoughts, strength, etc.) for an effort. ここは、思い切って入る決心を固めようとしたこと。

¹⁰ take possession (of): to take for one's own or into one's control, to seize. 自分の部屋にする。

¹¹ my fool of a guide: 愚かな案内人。この ‘of’ については p. 85 注 3 を参照のこと。

¹² Whear the divil: そんな場所なんどこにもあるもんか。

Whear the *hell*, wold ye gang? ye marred, wearisome nowt!¹ Yah seen all bud Hareton's bit uf a cham'er.² They's not another hoile tuh lig down in i' th' hahse!³

I was so vexed, I flung my tray and its contents on the ground; and then seated myself at the stairs-head, hid my face in my hands, and cried.

'Ech! ech!' exclaimed Joseph. 'Weel done, Miss Cathy!⁴ weel done, Miss Cathy! Hahsiver, t' maister sall just tum'le o'er them brocken pots; un' then we's hear summut; we's hear hah it's tuh be.⁵ Gooid-fur-nowt madling⁶! yah deserve pining⁷ froo [= from] this tuh Churstmas, flinging t' precious gifts uh God under fooit i' yer flaysome rages!⁸ Bud, Aw'm mista'en if yah shew yer sperrit lang.⁹ Will Hathecliff bide sich [= such] bonny ways, think ye? I nobbut wish he muh catch ye i' that plisky.¹⁰ Aw nobbut wish he may.'

And so he went on scolding to his den beneath, taking the candle with him, and I remained in the dark.

The period of reflection succeeding this silly action, compelled me to admit the necessity of smothering¹¹ my pride, and choking¹² my wrath, and bestirring myself¹³ to remove its effects¹⁴.

¹ Whear...nowt!: Where the hell would you go? you marred (= spoilt), wearisome nowt (= a stupid or clumsy person)!

² Yah seen...cham'er.: You(ve) seen all but Hareton's bit of a chamber.

³ They's not...hahse!: There's not another hole (= room) to lig down in (= lie down in) in the house! この家にゃ、ほかに寝る部屋なんてひとつもねえんだよ！

⁴ Miss Cathy: どうして Miss でも Cathy でもない Isabella に向かってこういったのかはよくわからない。癪癪を破裂させた姿が結婚前の Catherine を彷彿とさせたからか？

⁵ Hahsiver ... to be: However, the master shall just tumble over them broken pots; and then we'll hear something; we'll hear how it's to be. 旦那が割れた鉢につまずいて転んだらなんといいなさるか、今にわかるべえ。'sall (=shall)' は、自分から進んでつまずきはしないし、人が故意につまずかせるわけでもないから単純未来。

⁶ madling: a mad creature; one who acts wildly or foolishly.

⁷ pining: exhaustion or wasting away by suffering, disease, or want of food; starvation.

⁸ Gooid-fur-nowt ... rages!: Good-for-nothing madling! you deserve pining from this to Christmas, flinging the precious gifts of God under foot in your flaysome rages! ごくつぶしの阿呆めが！癪癪を起こしよって神様のくだすったありがたい食いもんを床に抛りよるとは、今日からクリスマスまで飢えて苦しむがええ！

⁹ Aw'm mista'en...lang.: I'm mistaken if you show your spirit long. その威勢のよさも長くは持つまいて。

¹⁰ Aw nobbut...plisky.: I only wish he may catch you in that plisky (= an awkward plight). ヒースクリフにおめえさんのその情けないざまを見てもらいてえもんだ。

¹¹ smother: to repress, retain from displaying, (feeling, etc.) by the exercise of self-control.

¹² choke: to suppress or smother any feeling, or aspiration.

¹³ bestir oneself: to begin to move actively, to manifest activity, to busy oneself.

¹⁴ to remove its effects: 'my wrath' をあらわにした結果である、食器の破片やこぼれた粥。

An unexpected aid presently appeared in the shape of¹ Throttlér, whom I now recognized as a son of our old Skulker; it had spent its whelphood² at the Grange, and was given by my father to Mr Hindley. I fancy it knew me—it pushed its nose against mine by way of salute, and then hastened to devour the porridge, while I groped from step to step, collecting the shattered earthenware, and drying³ the spatters of milk from the bannister with my pocket-handkerchief.

Our labours were scarcely over when I heard Earnshaw's tread in the passage; my assistant tucked⁴ in his tail and pressed to the wall; I stole into the nearest doorway. The dog's endeavour to avoid him was unsuccessful; as I guessed by a scutter⁵ downstairs, and a prolonged, piteous⁶ yelping. I had better luck. He passed on, entered his chamber, and shut the door.

Directly after, Joseph came up with Hareton, to put him to bed. I had found shelter in Hareton's room, and the old man, on seeing me, said—

‘They's rahm for boath yah, un yer pride, nah, Aw sud think, i' th' hahse. It's empty; yah muh hev it all tuh yerseln, un Him as allas maks a third, i' sich ill company!’⁷

Gladly did I take advantage of this intimation; and the minute I flung myself into a chair, by the fire, I nodded and slept.

My slumber was deep, and sweet, though over⁸ far too soon. Mr Heathcliff awoke me; he had just come in, and demanded, in his loving manner, what I was doing there?

I told him the cause of my staying up so late—that he had the key of our room in his pocket.

¹ in the shape of: ～という (特定の姿かたちを現した)。ここは Throttlér という助け。 *shape*: the visible form or appearance characteristic of a particular person or thing.

² whelphood: 犬の ‘childhood’。

³ dry: to make dry (e.g. by wiping, rubbing, exposure to heat or air, draining, etc.); to rid, deprive, or exhaust of moisture; to desiccate. ここでは、拭き取る。

⁴ tuck: to thrust in the edge or end of (anything pendent or loose) so as to retain or confine it (*in, up*) ここでは、怖がって後ろ足の間に尻尾の先を突っこんだ。

⁵ scutter: (chiefly dial.) a hasty, scrambling, noisy rush.

⁶ piteous: exciting, appealing for, or deserving pity; moving to compassion; affecting, lamentable, deplorable, mournful. (ここでは聞く者の) 哀れを誘う。

⁷ They's rahm...company!: There's room for both you, and your pride, now, I should think, in the house. It's empty; you may have it all to yourself, and Him (= the devil) as (= who) always made a third, in such ill company! つまり、空いているから ‘the house’ (居間) へ行け。

⁸ over: past, gone by, finished, done with, at an end.

The adjective¹ *our* gave mortal offence. He swore it was not, nor ever should be mine; and he'd—but I'll not repeat his language, nor describe his habitual conduct; he is ingenious² and unrelenting in seeking to gain my abhorrence! I sometimes wonder at him with an intensity that deadens my fear³; yet, I assure you, a tiger, or a venomous⁴ serpent could not rouse terror in me equal to that which he awakens. He told me of Catherine's illness, and accused my brother of causing it; promising that I should be Edgar's proxy⁵ in suffering, till he could get hold of⁶ him.

I do hate him—I am wretched—I have been a fool! Beware of⁷ uttering one breath of this to any one at the Grange. I shall expect you every day—don't disappoint me!

ISABELLA.

¹ adjective: [ædʒɪktɪv] a word or phrase naming an attribute, added to or grammatically related to a noun to modify it or describe it. おなじみ「形容詞」。ここは所有形容詞（人称代名詞の所有格としてもかまわない。ついでながら 'mine' は所有代名詞としてもよい）。

² ingenious: [ɪndʒɪːniəs] having an aptitude for invention or construction; clever at contriving or making things; skilful. 工夫に富む、巧みな。

³ I sometimes ... my fear.: ときどきあの人にはすっかりあきれて恐さを忘れるほど。

⁴ venomous: [vénəməs] containing, consisting or full of, infected with, venom; possessing poisonous properties or qualities. 'venomous serpent' 毒蛇。

⁵ proxy: a person appointed or authorized to act instead of another; an attorney, substitute, representative, agent.

⁶ get hold of: capture (a person); also (in recent colloquial use, esp. in perf. and pa. tense), to have an advantage over (another), to 'corner'; to puzzle, perplex, nonplus. ここは現在形だが「追い詰める、窮地に追いやる」が適切だろう。

⁷ beware of: to be on one's guard against. ～せぬよう用心する、～には油断しない。

Chapter XIV

As soon as I had perused this epistle¹, I went to the master, and informed him that his sister had arrived at the Heights, and sent me a letter expressing her sorrow for Mrs Linton's situation, and her ardent² desire to see him; with a wish that he would transmit³ to her, as early as possible, some token⁴ of forgiveness by me⁵.

‘Forgiveness?’ said Linton. ‘I have nothing to forgive her, Ellen—you may call at Wuthering Heights this afternoon, if you like, and say that I am not *angry*, but I'm *sorry* to have lost her: especially as I can never think she'll be happy. It is out of the question my going to see her, however; we are eternally divided; and should she really wish to oblige⁶ me, let her persuade the villain she has married to leave the country.’

‘And you won't write her a little note, sir?’ I asked, imploringly.

‘No,’ he answered. ‘It is needless. My communication with Heathcliff's family shall be as sparing⁷ as his with mine. It shall not exist!’⁸

Mr Edgar's coldness depressed me exceedingly; and all the way from the Grange, I puzzled my brains how to put more heart into what he said⁹, when I repeated it; and how to soften his refusal of even a few lines¹⁰ to console Isabella.

I dare say she had been on the watch for me since morning: I saw her looking through the lattice, as I came up the garden causeway and I nodded to her; but she drew back, as if afraid of being observed.

I entered without knocking. There never was such a dreary, dismal scene as the formerly cheerful house presented! I must confess that, if I had been in the young lady's

¹ perused this epistle: これも Maugham が「勿体ぶり」だと指摘する一例（「書簡を閲読した」はおおげさだから ‘read this letter’ でいいというのである）。

² ardent: glowing with passion, animated by keen desire; intensely eager, zealous, fervent, fervid.

³ transmit: fig. to convey or communicate (usually something immaterial) to another or others; to pass on

⁴ token: something that serves to indicate a fact, event, object, feeling, etc.; a sign, a symbol.

⁵ by me: by Nelly.

⁶ oblige: to gratify *with* or *by* doing something; to do a service to, confer a favour on

⁷ sparing: small in amount, quantity, or extent; not lavish, liberal, or profuse; scanty, limited.

⁸ It shall not exist!: ‘communication’（手紙のやりとり）があつてはならんのだ！（私が許さぬ、という気持ちが含まれている）。

⁹ how to ... said: 彼のことばをどうやわらげて伝えたものか。

¹⁰ his refusal of even a few lines: わずか数行（慰めの）手紙を書くことさえ拒んだこと。

place, I would, at least, have swept the hearth, and wiped the tables with a duster¹. But she already partook of the pervading spirit of neglect which encompassed her². Her pretty face was wan and listless, her hair uncurled: some locks hanging lankly³ down, and some carelessly twisted round her head. Probably she had not touched her dress since yester evening.

Hindley was not there. Mr Heathcliff sat at a table, turning over some papers in his pocket-book⁴; but he rose when I appeared, asked me how I did, quite friendly, and offered me a chair.

He was the only thing there that seemed decent, and I thought he never looked better⁵. So much had circumstances altered their positions, that he would certainly have struck a stranger as⁶ a born and bred gentleman, and his wife as a thorough⁷ little slattern⁸!

She came forward eagerly to greet me; and held out one hand to take the expected letter.

I shook my head. She wouldn't understand the hint, but followed me to a sideboard where I went to lay my bonnet, and importuned⁹ me in a whisper to give her directly what I had brought.

Heathcliff guessed the meaning of her manoeuvres¹⁰, and said—

‘If you have got anything for Isabella—as no doubt you have, Nelly—give it to her. You needn't make a secret of it; we have no secrets between us.’

‘Oh, I have nothing,’ I replied, thinking it best to speak the truth at once. ‘My master bid me tell his sister that she must not expect either a letter or a visit from him at present. He sends his love, ma'am, and his wishes for your happiness, and his pardon for the grief

¹ duster: a cloth for removing dust from a surface. 雑巾。

² partook of ... her: 周囲に充満する怠惰な気分になされていた。

³ lankly: ←lank: (of hair) without curl or wave, straight and flat. まとまりなく、だらりと。

⁴ pocket-book: a book-like case of leather or the like, having compartments for papers, bank-notes, bills, etc. 「手帳」の意味もあるが、ここでは「紙入れ」。

⁵ he never looked better: これほど立派に見えたことはない。

⁶ strike a person as ~: to appear to one as ~, to give one the impression of being ~. 人には～と見える、人に～という印象を与える。

⁷ thorough: [θʌrə] thoroughgoing, complete, perfect, downright, entire. まったくの。

⁸ slattern: a woman or girl untidy and slovenly in person, habits, or surroundings; a slut.

⁹ importune: to solicit pressingly and persistently.

¹⁰ manoeuvre: an artfully contrived plan; an adroit move; an ingenious expedient or artifice. こは、こそこそしたふるまい。

you have occasioned¹; but he thinks that after this time, his household, and the household here, should drop intercommunication, as nothing could come² of keeping it up.'

Mrs Heathcliff's lip quivered slightly, and she returned to her seat in the window. Her husband took his stand³ on the hearthstone, near me, and began to put questions concerning Catherine.

I told him as much as I thought proper of her illness, and he extorted from me, by cross-examination⁴, most of the facts connected with its origin⁵.

I blamed her, as she deserved, for bringing it all on herself; and ended by hoping that he would follow Mr Linton's example, and avoid future interference with his family, for good or evil.

'Mrs Linton is now just recovering,' I said, 'she'll never be like she was, but her life is spared, and if you really have a regard for her, you'll shun⁶ crossing her way⁷ again. Nay, you'll move out of this country entirely; and that you may not regret it⁸, I'll inform you Catherine Linton is as different now from your old friend Catherine Earnshaw, as that young lady⁹ is different from me, her appearance is changed greatly, her character much more so; and the person, who is compelled, of necessity, to be her companion, will only sustain his affection hereafter, by the remembrance of what she once was, by common humanity¹⁰, and a sense of duty!'

'That is quite possible,' remarked Heathcliff, forcing himself to seem calm, 'quite possible that your master should have nothing but common humanity, and a sense of duty to fall back upon¹¹. But do you imagine that I shall leave Catherine to his *duty* and

¹ occasion: to be the occasion or cause of (something); to give ground for, give rise to, cause, bring about, esp. in an incidental or subsidiary manner. (なにかがきっかけとなって) ~を引き起こす。(p. 58 注 10 参照)

² come: to be derived *from, of*. (~から) 得られる。

³ take one's stand (on): 位置・持ち場につく、陣取る。 *stand*: a place of standing, position, station

⁴ cross-examination: a close or minute examination.

⁵ its origin: 病気の発端、原因。

⁶ shun: to eschew, abstain carefully from (an action, an indulgence, etc.). 慎む、控える。

⁷ cross a person's way: (= cross the path of any one) to meet him in his way, to come in the way of; often implying obstruction or thwarting. ここは、彼女の前に現れる。

⁸ that you may not regret it: あなたが後悔せぬように。この 'that' は 'so (or in order) that' に同じだが、古風な用法。

⁹ that young lady: = Isabella.

¹⁰ common humanity: 人情。 *common*: belonging to all mankind alike.

¹¹ fall back on (or upon): to have recourse to (something) when other things fail. ~を最後の頼みの綱とする、まさかのときは~に頼る。

humanity? and can you compare my feelings respecting¹ Catherine, to his? Before you leave this house, I must exact² a promise from you, that you'll get me an interview with her—consent, or refuse, I *will* see her! What do you say?³

'I say, Mr Heathcliff,' I replied, 'you must not—you never shall through my means⁴. Another encounter between you and the master would kill her altogether!'

'With your aid that may be avoided,' he continued; 'and should there be danger of such an event—should he be the cause of adding a single trouble more to her existence—Why, I think, I shall be justified in going to extremes! I wish you had sincerity enough to tell me whether Catherine would suffer greatly from his loss. The fear that she would restrains me⁵: and there you see the distinction between our feelings—Had he been in my place, and I in his, though I hated him with a hatred that turned my life to gall⁶, I never would have raised a hand against him. You may look incredulous⁷, if you please! I never would have banished him from her society as long as she desired his. The moment her regard ceased, I would have torn his heart out, and drunk his blood! But, till then—if you don't believe me, you don't know me—till then I would have died by inches before I touched a single hair of his head!'

'And yet,' I interrupted, 'you have no scruples⁸ in completely ruining all hopes of her perfect restoration, by thrusting yourself into her remembrance, now, when she has nearly forgotten you, and involving her in a new tumult of discord and distress.'

'You suppose she has nearly forgotten me?' he said. 'Oh Nelly, you know she has not! You know as well as I do, that for every thought she spends on Linton, she spends a thousand on me! At a most miserable period of my life, I had a notion of the kind⁹, it haunted me on my return to the neighbourhood, last summer; but only her own assurance

¹ respecting: with reference or regard to; concerning.

² exact: to require by force or with authority the performance of (duty, labour, etc.), the concession of (anything desired); to insist upon (*from, off*). きっと～してもらう。

³ What do you say?: どうだ、どう思う？

⁴ through my means: 私の助けによって、私の力で。 *through (or by) means of* by the instrumentality of (a person or thing). 'you never shall ...' は「私の力はお貸しできません」。

⁵ The fear that she would restrains me: 'The fear that she would (suffer greatly from his loss)' が ('going to extremes' 極端な行動—つまり Edgar を殺すこと—to 走ろうとする) おれを押しとどめるのだ。

⁶ gall: the bitterness of gall. (胆汁のような苦さ)

⁷ incredulous: unbelieving; not ready to believe; sceptical. ここは、信じられんという顔をしたらければするがいいさ。

⁸ scruple: a doubt, uncertainty or hesitation in regard to right and wrong, duty, propriety, etc. 気のとがめ、ためらい。(p. 183 注 5 参照)

⁹ a notion of that kind: 'she has nearly forgotton me' を指す。

could make me admit the horrible idea again. And then¹, Linton would be nothing, nor Hindley, nor all the dreams that ever I dreamt. Two words would comprehend² my future — *death* and *hell*—existence, after losing her, would be hell.

‘Yet I was a fool to fancy for a moment that she valued Edgar Linton’s attachment more than mine—if he loved with all the powers of his puny³ being, he couldn’t love as much in eighty years, as I could in a day. And Catherine has a heart as deep as I have; the sea could be as readily contained in that horse-trough, as her whole affection be monopolized by him⁴—Tush! He is scarcely a degree dearer to her than her dog, or her horse—it is not in him to be loved like me⁵, how can she love in him what he has not?’

‘Catherine and Edgar are as fond of each other as any two people can be!’ cried Isabella with sudden vivacity⁶. ‘No one has a right to talk in that manner, and I won’t hear my brother depreciated in silence!’

‘Your brother is wondrous⁷ fond of you too, isn’t he?’ observed Heathcliff scornfully. ‘He turns you adrift⁸ on the world with surprising alacrity⁹.’

‘He is not aware of what I suffer,’ she replied. ‘I didn’t tell him that.’

‘You have been telling him something, then, you have written, have you?’

‘To say that I was married, I did write—you saw the note.’

‘And nothing since?’

¹ And then: もし彼女自身がおれを忘れたと認めるなら。

² comprehend: to take in, contain, comprise, include. ‘Two words would comprehend my future’ は、おれの未来はふたつのことばからなる（ふたつのことばに尽きる）だろう。

³ puny: (esp. of human beings and animals) of small growth and feeble vitality; undersized and weakly. うらなりの。

⁴ the sea ... by him: やつが彼女の愛情をそっくり独占できるというなら、海の水すべてがたやすくあの飼い葉桶におさまることだろう。‘would as soon A as B’ (p. 146 注 5 参照) と同様の表現。

⁵ it is not in him to be loved like me: やつはおれのように愛される柄じゃないのだ。 *in*: belonging to, as an internal quality, attribute, faculty, or capacity, inherent in; hence, within the ability, capacity, thought, etc. of. 【参考】 **It is not in him to do** such a thing. 彼には迫も（生れ變らなければ）そんな事は出来ぬ。（齋藤秀三郎『英和中辞典』）

⁶ vivacity: active force, power, vigour. ‘with vivacity’ は、ここでは「快活に」ではなく「力をこめて、語気強く」。

⁷ wondrous: (= wondrously) to a wonderful degree; wonderfully, marvellously. ‘wondrous’ を副詞として用いるのは ‘archaic’（古風）。

⁸ adrift: in a drifting condition, drifting, at the mercy of wind and tide.

⁹ alacrity: briskness, cheerful readiness. ここは、「あいつはびっくりするほどやすやすと妹を世間の荒波にもませるじゃないか」。

‘No.’

‘My young lady is looking sadly the worse for¹ her change of condition,’ I remarked. ‘Somebody’s love comes short² in her case, obviously—whose, I may guess; but, perhaps, I shouldn’t say.’

‘I should guess³ it was her own⁴,’ said Heathcliff. ‘She degenerates⁵ into a mere slut⁶. She is tired of trying to please me, uncommonly early—you’d hardly credit⁷ it, but the very morrow of our wedding, she was weeping to go home. However, she’ll suit⁸ this house so much the better for not being over nice⁹, and I’ll take care she does not disgrace me by rambling abroad.’

‘Well, sir,’ returned I, ‘I hope you’ll consider that Mrs Heathcliff is accustomed to be looked after, and waited on, and that she has been brought up like an only daughter whom every one was ready to serve—you must let her have a maid to keep things tidy about her, and you must treat her kindly—Whatever be your notion of Mr Edgar, you cannot doubt that she has a capacity for strong attachments, or she wouldn’t have abandoned the elegances, and comforts, and friends of her former home, to fix contentedly, in such a wilderness as this, with you.’

‘She abandoned them under a delusion,’ he answered, ‘picturing in me a hero of romance, and expecting unlimited indulgences¹⁰ from my chivalrous¹¹ devotion. I can

¹ the worse for: in less good condition because of. (境遇・健康・品質など) ~のせいで以前より悪くなって。【参考】He is **the worse for** his visit to the hot-springs. 病人は温泉へ行つて却つて悪くした。(齋藤秀三郎『英和中辞典』)

² come short: to be imperfect or inadequate.

³ I should guess: ~だろうな。【参考】**I should think—I should say.** まあ(何々)だろう。(齋藤秀三郎『英和中辞典』)

⁴ it was her own: it was her own love. ここは過去形だが、結局は ‘I guess it is her own love that comes short.’ をやや柔らかくいったもの。

⁵ degenerate: to lose, or become deficient in, the qualities proper to the race or kind; (more generally) to decline in character or qualities, become of a lower type. 墮落する。ここでは、(だらしない女に)身を落とす。

⁶ slut: a woman of dirty, slovenly, or untidy habits or appearance; a foul slattern; a woman of a low or loose character.

⁷ credit: to give credit to, put faith in, believe, trust (a statement, person, or thing).

⁸ suit: to be fitted or adapted to, be suitable for, answer the requirements of.

⁹ she’ll suit ... over nice.: 上品すぎぬようにしたほうが、あいつもずっとこの家になじむだろう。

¹⁰ indulgence: (an instance of) gratification of another’s desire or humour; favouring forbearance or relaxation of restraint. 望むままにさせること。

¹¹ chivalrous: of, belonging to, or characteristic of the ideal knight; possessing all the virtues attributed to the Age of Chivalry; characterized by pure and noble gallantry, honour, courtesy, and disinterested devotion to the cause of the weak or oppressed. 騎士道精神に富む(ふさわしい)。

hardly regard her in the light of¹ a rational creature, so obstinately has she persisted in forming a fabulous² notion of my character, and acting on the false impressions she cherished. But, at last, I think she begins to know me—I don't perceive³ the silly smiles and grimaces that provoked me at first; and the senseless⁴ incapability of discerning that I was in earnest when I gave her my opinion of her infatuation and herself—It was a marvellous effort of perspicacity⁵ to discover that I did not love her. I believed, at one time, no lessons could teach her that! and yet it is poorly learned, for this morning she announced, as a piece of appalling⁶ intelligence⁷, that I had actually succeeded in making her hate me! A positive⁸ labour of Hercules, I assure you! If it be achieved, I have cause to return thanks—Can I trust your assertion, Isabella, are you sure you hate me? If I let you alone for half-a-day, won't you come sighing and wheedling⁹ to me again? I dare say she would rather I had seemed all tenderness before you; it wounds her vanity to have the truth exposed. But, I don't care who knows that the passion was wholly on one side¹⁰; and I never told her a lie about it. She cannot accuse me of showing one bit of deceitful softness. The first thing she saw me do, on coming out of the Grange, was to hang up her little dog, and when she pleaded¹¹ for it, the first words I uttered were a wish that I had the hanging of every being belonging to her, except one: possibly she took that exception¹² for herself—But no brutality disgusted her—I suppose she has an innate¹³ admiration of it, if only her precious person¹⁴ were secure from injury! Now, was it not the depth of absurdity—of genuine idiocy, for that pitiful, slavish, mean-minded brach¹⁵ to dream that I could love her? Tell your master, Nelly, that I never, in all my life, met with such an abject¹⁶ thing as she is—She even disgraces the name of Linton; and I've sometimes

¹ in the light of: in the aspect or character of, viewed as being (so and so). ～として。

² fabulous: [fæbj fæbjʊləs] such as is met with only in fable; beyond the usual range of fact; astonishing, incredible.; (now freq. in trivial use) esp. = 'marvellous', 'terrific'

³ perceive: to apprehend (an external object) through one of the senses (esp. sight); to become aware of by sight, hearing, or other sense; to observe. ここは、(最初の頃いらいらさせられた表情を) いまは目にしなくなった。

⁴ senseless: devoid of sense or intelligence, stupid, silly, foolish.

⁵ perspicacity: [pə:spɪkæsi] clearness of understanding or insight; discernment. 洞察力。

⁶ appalling: such as to overwhelm with consternation or dismay; dismaying, shocking.

⁷ intelligence: knowledge as to events, communicated by or obtained from another; information, news, tidings; *spec.* information of military value. (機密の) 情報。

⁸ positive: (colloq.) that is absolutely what is expressed by the n.: nothing less than, downright, 'perfect'; 'out-and-out'. ここでは「まさに 'labour of Hercules' (ヘラクレスの難行、大仕事)」。

⁹ wheedle: to use soft flattering words.

¹⁰ the passion was wholly on one side: 熱を上げていたのはあいつの方だけ。

¹¹ plead (for): to make an earnest appeal, entreaty, or supplication; to beg, implore (*for* the thing desired, or the person in whose interest one speaks). ～を懇願する、～を助けてくれと頼む。

¹² that exception: もちろん Catherine を指す。

¹³ innate: [ɪnert, mért] existing in a person (or organism) from birth; belonging to the original or essential constitution (of body or mind); inborn, native, natural.

¹⁴ her precious person: 自分の大切な身 (体)。 *person*: the living body of a human being.

¹⁵ brach: [brætʃ] a bitch hound.

¹⁶ abject: [æbdʒekt] low in regard or estimation, degraded, mean-spirited, despicable.

relented¹, from pure lack of invention², in my experiments on what she could endure, and still creep³ shamefully cringing⁴ back! But tell him also to set his fraternal and magisterial heart⁵ at ease, that I keep strictly within the limits of the law—I have avoided, up to this period, giving her the slightest right to claim a separation⁶; and, what's more, she'd thank nobody for dividing us—if she desired to go she might⁷—the nuisance of her presence outweighs the gratification to be derived from tormenting her!

‘Mr Heathcliff,’ said I, ‘this is the talk of a madman, and your wife, most likely, is convinced you are mad; and, for that reason, she has borne with⁸ you hitherto; but now that you say she may go, she'll doubtless avail herself of the permission.—You are not so bewitched, ma'am, are you, as to remain with him of your own accord?’

‘Take care, Ellen!’ answered Isabella, her eyes sparkling irefully⁹—there was no misdoubting, by their expression, the full success of her partner's endeavours to make himself detested. ‘Don't put faith in a single word he speaks. He's a lying fiend, a monster, and not a human being! I've been told I might leave him before; and I've made the attempt, but I dare not repeat it! Only, Ellen, promise you'll not mention a syllable of his infamous¹⁰ conversation to my brother or Catherine—whatever he may pretend, he wishes to provoke Edgar to desperation—he says he has married me on purpose to obtain power over him; and he shan't obtain it—I'll die first!¹¹ I just hope, I pray that he may forget his diabolical prudence¹², and kill me! The single pleasure I can imagine is to die, or to see him dead!’

¹ relent: to soften in temper; to grow more gentle or forgiving; to give up a harsh intention or inclination to severity. 折れる、手荒なことを控える。

² from pure lack of invention: (どこまで我慢してビクビクふるまっているか実験してみたとも) さっぱりよい工夫を思いつかぬから。

³ creep: to move timidly or diffidently; to proceed humbly, abjectly, or servilely, to cringe.

⁴ cringe: to shrink in or away (as with fear); to cower.

⁵ his fraternal and magisterial heart: 兄妹としての (fraternal) また治安判事としての (magisterial) 心情。

⁶ to claim a separation: 法的手続きに莫大な費用を要する上、遺棄または極端な虐待があったことを立証せねばならぬから、Isabella が離婚を請求するのは事実上不可能に近かった。1869 年 John Stuart Mill は、その著 *The Subjection of Women* (女性の従属的地位) に「英国普通法下の妻の地位は、多くの国における法律上の奴隷の地位よりも劣悪である」と記している。(以上 PENGUIN 版巻末注による)

⁷ if she desired to go she might: 「出て行きたければ勝手にするさ」というのだが、別居はゆるすとしても、Linton 家の遺産が目的なのだから、もちろん離婚を認めるわけではない。

⁸ bear with: to put up with, be patient with, make allowance for.

⁹ irefully: angrily, wrathfully.

¹⁰ infamous: [ɪnfəməs] deserving of infamy; of shameful badness, vileness, or abominableness; of a character or quality deserving utter reprobation. (One of the strongest adjectives of detestation.) 恥知らずの、汚らしい。

¹¹ I'll die first!: そうなれば遺産は Heathcliff の手に渡らない。

¹² prudence: ability to discern the most suitable, politic, or profitable course of action, esp. as regards conduct. (計算ずくの) 抜け目のなさ、用心深さ。ここではいい意味ではない。

‘There—that will do for the present!’ said Heathcliff. ‘If you are called upon in a court of law, you’ll remember her language, Nelly! And take a good look at that countenance—she’s near the point which would suit me. No; you’re not fit to be your own guardian, Isabella, now; and I, being your legal protector, must retain you in my custody, however distasteful the obligation¹ may be—Go upstairs; I have something to say to Ellen Dean, in private. That’s not the way—upstairs, I tell you! Why, this is the road upstairs, child.’

He seized, and thrust her from the room; and returned muttering²,

‘I have no pity! I have no pity! The more the worms writhe³, the more I yearn to crush out their entrails!⁴ It is a moral teething⁵; and I grind with greater energy, in proportion to the increase of pain.’

‘Do you understand what the word pity means?’ I said, hastening to resume⁶ my bonnet. ‘Did you ever feel a touch⁷ of it in your life?’

‘Put that down!’ he interrupted, perceiving my intention to depart. ‘You are not going yet—Come here now, Nelly—I must either persuade or compel you to aid me in fulfilling my determination to see Catherine, and that without delay—I swear that I meditate⁸ no harm; I don’t desire to cause any disturbance, or to exasperate⁹, or insult Mr Linton; I only wish to hear from herself how she is, and why she has been ill; and to ask, if anything that I could do would be of use to her. Last night, I was in the Grange garden six hours, and I’ll return there to-night; and every night I’ll haunt the place, and every day, till I find an opportunity of entering. If Edgar Linton meets me, I shall not hesitate to knock him down,

¹ obligation: action, or an act, to which one is morally or legally obliged; that which one is bound to do; one’s bounden duty, or a particular duty.

² mutter: to speak in low tones, with the mouth nearly closed, so that one’s words are barely audible.

³ writhe: to change place or position, to turn, move, or go, with a writhing or twisting motion. のたくる、くねくねと動く。

⁴ entrails: (pl.) the contents of the abdominal cavity; the bowels; the intestines.

⁵ teething: the process of developing teeth, dentition; usually applied to the cutting of the milk-teeth. 歯の成長。ここでは、乳歯がむずむずしてかゆいとき、ものを噛みたがったり歯ざしりしたりすること。‘moral teething’ とはわかりにくい、**moral support**: support or help the effect of which is *psychological rather than physical*. (OED) が参考になる。つまり「心理的な(精神的な) うずき」。

⁶ resume: to take or pick up (a thing) again; to return to the use of. ここでは帽子をかぶったのではなく取り上げたことをいい、Heathcliff の ‘Put that down!’ につながるのであろう。

⁷ touch: a slight amount or trace of some quality, attribute, or ingredient.

⁸ meditate: to plan by revolving in the mind; to conceive, plan or design mentally.

⁹ exasperate: to irritate (a person); to provoke to anger; to enrage, incense.

and give him enough to assure his quiescence¹ while I stay—If his servants oppose me, I shall threaten them off with these pistols—But wouldn't it be better to prevent my coming in contact with them, or their master? And you could do it so easily!² I'd warn³ you when I came, and then you might let me in unobserved, as soon as she was alone, and watch till I departed—your conscience quite calm, you would be hindering mischief⁴.'

I protested against playing that treacherous part in my employer's house; and, besides, I urged⁵ the cruelty and selfishness of his destroying Mrs Linton's tranquillity⁶, for his satisfaction.

'The commonest occurrence startles her painfully,' I said. 'She's all nerves, and she couldn't bear the surprise, I'm positive—Don't persist, sir! or else I shall be obliged to inform my master of your designs, and he'll take measures⁷ to secure his house and its inmates from any such unwarrantable⁸ intrusions!'

'In that case, I'll take measures to secure you, woman!' exclaimed Heathcliff, 'you shall not leave Wuthering Heights till to-morrow morning. It is a foolish story to assert that Catherine could not bear to see me; and as to⁹ surprising her, I don't desire it, you must prepare her—ask her if I may come. You say she never mentions my name, and that I am never mentioned to her¹⁰. To whom should she mention me if I am a forbidden topic in the house? She thinks you are all spies for her husband—Oh, I've no doubt she's in hell among you! I guess, by her silence as much as anything¹¹, what she feels. You say she is often restless, and anxious looking—is that a proof of tranquillity? You talk of her mind being unsettled—How the devil could it be otherwise, in her frightful isolation. And that

¹ quiescence: [kwaɪə'səns, kwɪ-] the state of being quiescent; quietness; an instance of this; the action of making quiet or calm.

² you could do it: おまえならできるさ。以下すべて、「おまえがその気になったら」という仮定での話だから過去形になっている。

³ warn: to give previous notice to.

⁴ you would be hindering mischief: (そうすれば、良心も痛まず) 面倒を起こさずにすむ役にも立つというもの。

⁵ urge: to insist on, allege, or assert with earnestness. ～だと力説する。

⁶ tranquillity: the quality or state of being tranquil; freedom from disturbance or agitation; serenity, calmness; quietness, peacefulness.

⁷ take measures: ある目的を達成する計画を立てる(行動を取る)より、策(手段)を講じる。measure: a plan or course of action intended to attain some object.

⁸ unwarrantable: not justifiable; inexcusable.

⁹ as to: so far as it concerns, with respect or reference to.

¹⁰ I am never mentioned to her: = they never mention my name to her. だれも彼女の前でおれの名を口にしない。

¹¹ as much as anything: なによりもよく(はつきりと)。^{as ... as anything} は、「なににも劣らず」という意味より程度を強調する。【参考】**as ... as anything—like anything** (誰にも劣らず) 非常に。He will work **as hard as anything**—he will work **like anything**. 彼は(誰にも劣らず) 非常な勉強家だ。(齋藤秀三郎『英和中辞典』)

insipid¹, paltry² creature attending her from *duty* and *humanity*! From *pity* and *charity*! He might as well plant an oak in a flower-pot, and expect it to thrive, as³ imagine he can restore her to vigour in the soil of his shallow cares! Let us settle it at once; will you stay here, and am I to fight my way to Catherine over Linton, and his footmen? Or will you be my friend, as you have been hitherto, and do what I request? Decide! because there is no reason for my lingering another minute, if you persist in your stubborn ill-nature.'

Well, Mr Lockwood, I argued, and complained, and flatly⁴ refused him fifty times; but in the long run⁵ he forced me to an agreement—I engaged to carry a letter from him to my mistress; and should she consent, I promised to let him have intelligence of Linton's next absence from home, when he might come, and get in as he was able⁶—I wouldn't be there, and my fellow-servants should be equally out of the way.

Was it right or wrong? I fear it was wrong, though expedient⁷. I thought I prevented another explosion by my compliance⁸, and I thought, too, it might create a favourable crisis⁹ in Catherine's mental illness: and then I remembered Mr Edgar's stern rebuke of my carrying tales¹⁰; and I tried to smooth¹¹ away all disquietude¹² on the subject, by affirming, with frequent iteration¹³, that that betrayal of trust, if it merited so harsh an appellation, should be the last.¹⁴

¹ insipid: (fig.) wanting the qualities which excite interest or emotion; uninteresting, lifeless, dull, flat. ビールでいえば、「気の抜けた」に相当。

² paltry: [pɒːltri] rubbishy, trashy, worthless; petty, insignificant, trifling; contemptible, despicable; of worthless nature.

³ might as well A as B: B するのも A するのも同じことだ、B するのなら A してもいい。この 'well' は 'may' や 'might' とともに用いて、ある行為がもうひとつの行為と同価値であるか同じ結果をもたらすことを意味する (implying the equivalence or equal result of one action in comparison with another)。

⁴ flatly: in a plain, blunt, or decisive manner; without ambiguity, qualification, or hesitation; plainly, bluntly; decisively.

⁵ in the long run: in the end; when things have run their full course; as the ultimate outcome of a series of vicissitudes. (曲折を経て) とどのつまりは、結局は。

⁶ as he was able: 'as he was able to come and get in' (来るも入るもなんの制約もなきがごとく) 自由に。 *able*: having freedom from restriction or obligation or from conditions preventing an action.

⁷ expedient: fit, proper, or suitable to the circumstances of the case. その場しのぎの。

⁸ by my compliance: by my compliance with his desire. *compliance*: the acting in accordance with, or the yielding to a desire, request, condition, direction, etc. つまり Heathcliff の望みに従ったからには屋敷でまた騒動が起こるのを防げるのだ、と自分を納得させたわけ。

⁹ favourable crisis: 回復のきっかけ。 *crisis*: the turning-point of a disease for better or worse.

¹⁰ tales: (pl.) things told so as to violate confidence or secrecy; reports of private matters not proper to be divulged; idle or mischievous gossip. 告げ口、無駄口。

¹¹ smooth: to diminish or clear away (an obstruction, difficulty, etc.).

¹² disquietude: restlessness, disturbance, disquietness. 不安な気持。

¹³ iteration: repetition of an action or process. ここでは、何度も何度も自分に言い聞かせたこと。

¹⁴ that betrayal ... the last: それは信頼を裏切ることだときつくいわれてもしかたないにせよ、もうこれっきりにするのだ。

Notwithstanding, my journey homeward was sadder than my journey thither; and many misgivings¹ I had, ere I could prevail on² myself to put the missive³ into Mrs Linton's hand.

But here is Kenneth—I'll go down, and tell him how much better you are. My history is *dree*⁴, as we say, and will serve to while away another morning.

Dree and dreary! I reflected, as the good woman descended to receive the doctor, and not exactly of the kind⁵ which I should have chosen to amuse me; but never mind! I'll extract wholesome medicines from Mrs Dean's bitter herbs; and firstly, let me beware of the fascination that lurks in Catherine Heathcliff's brilliant eyes. I should be in a curious taking⁶ if I surrendered my heart to that young person, and the daughter turned out a second edition of the mother!

¹ misgiving: a feeling of mistrust, apprehension, or loss of confidence.

² prevail on: to succeed in persuading, inducing, or influencing. (p. 97 注 7、p. 124 注 3 参照)

³ missive: a letter or letters sent by a superior authority, esp. the sovereign, to a particular person or body of persons, conveying a command, recommendation, or permission; (obs.) *gen.* a letter or epistle sent from one person to another. 大変おおげさなことば。これも W.S. Maugham は「勿体ぶった話しぶり」と評している。p. 207 注 1 も参照のこと。

⁴ dree: (Sc. and north. dial. or arch.) **1.** long; slow, tedious, wearisome. **2.** dreary, cheerless, doleful. PENGUIN 版注では **2** と解するけれど、**1** が適切。

⁵ not exactly of the kind: 'Mrs Dean's history (= narrative)' についていっている。

⁶ in a curious taking: 動揺して、興奮して。 *taking*: a disturbed or agitated state of mind; excited condition, passion. もし娘の Catherine にぞっこん惚れこみ、やはり母親とまるで同じ気性の女だったと知ったら、とても平静ではいられまい。

WUTHERING HEIGHTS

A NOVEL.

BY

ELLIS BELL.

IN THREE VOLUMES.

VOL. II.

LONDON:

THOMAS CAUTLEY NEWBY, PUBLISHER,
72, MORTIMER ST., CAVENDISH SQ.

1847.

注：初版の表紙には 'IN THREE VOLUMES' とあるが、*Wuthering Heights* は VOL. II まで。VOL. III には Acton Bell (Anne Brontë) の *Agnes Grey* が収められていた。

Chapter I (XV)

Another week over—and I am so many¹ days nearer health, and spring! I have now heard all my neighbour's history, at different sittings², as the housekeeper could spare time from more important occupations. I'll continue it in her own words, only a little condensed³. She is, on the whole, a very fair narrator and I don't think I could improve her style⁴.

In the evening, she said, the evening of my visit to the Heights, I knew as well as if I saw him, that Mr Heathcliff was about the place⁵; and I shunned going out, because I still carried his letter in my pocket, and didn't want to be threatened, or teased⁶ any more.

I had made up my mind not to give it till my master went somewhere; as I could not guess how its receipt would affect Catherine. The consequence⁷ was, that it did not reach her before the lapse of three days. The fourth was Sunday, and I brought it into her room, after the family⁸ were gone to church.

There was a man servant left to keep the house with me, and we generally made a practice of locking the doors during the hours of service; but on that occasion, the weather was so warm and pleasant that I set them wide open; and to fulfil my engagement, as I knew who would be coming, I told my companion that the mistress wished very much for some oranges, and he must run over to the village, and get a few, to be paid for on the morrow. He departed, and I went upstairs.

Mrs Linton sat in a loose, white dress, with a light⁹ shawl over her shoulders, in the

¹ so many: an equal number (of). 七日たったらそれ（七日）だけ。

² sitting: a spell of remaining seated. 'at different sittings' は、「何度かに分けて」、'at one sitting' なら「一度（一気）に」。

³ condense: to reduce (a speech or writing) within smaller compass by conciseness of expression. 要約する。

⁴ style: the manner of expression characteristic of a particular writer (hence of an orator), or of a literary group or period; a writer's mode of expression considered in regard to clearness, effectiveness, beauty, and the like. ここでは「言い回し、言葉づかい」。

⁵ the place: the Grange.

⁶ tease: to worry or irritate by persistent action which vexes or annoys; (now esp. in lighter sense) to disturb by persistent petty annoyance, out of mere mischief or sport. しつこく悩ます。

⁷ consequence: a thing or circumstance which follows as an effect or result from something preceding. 'the consequence was that ...' は、結局～だった。

⁸ family: the body of persons who live in one house or under one head, including parents, children, servants, etc. 【参考】全体として考えるときは単数扱いで関係代名詞は which, 家族を構成する一人一人として考えるときは複数扱いで関係代名詞は who. 《英》では《米》よりも複数扱いすることが多い。(ランダムハウス英和大辞典第2版)

⁹ light: ここでは 'of little weight, not heavy' 。

recess¹ of the open window, as usual. Her thick, long hair had been partly removed at the beginning of her illness; and now, she wore it simply combed in its natural tresses² over her temples and neck. Her appearance was altered, as I had told Heathcliff, but when she was calm, there seemed unearthly beauty in the change.

The flash of her eyes had been succeeded by a dreamy and melancholy softness: they no longer gave the impression of looking at the objects around her; they appeared always to gaze beyond, and far beyond—you would have said out of this world—Then, the paleness of her face, its haggard³ aspect having vanished as she recovered flesh⁴, and the peculiar expression arising from her mental state, though painfully suggestive of their causes⁵, added to the touching⁶ interest which she awakened, and invariably to me, I know, and to any person who saw her, I should think, refuted⁷ more tangible proofs of convalescence⁸, and stamped her as one doomed to decay.

A book lay spread on the sill before her, and the scarcely perceptible wind fluttered its leaves at intervals. I believe Linton had laid it there, for she never endeavoured to divert herself with⁹ reading, or occupation of any kind; and he would spend many an hour in trying to entice¹⁰ her attention to some subject which had formerly been her amusement.

She was conscious of his aim, and in her better moods, endured his efforts placidly¹¹; only showing their uselessness by now and then suppressing a wearied¹² sigh, and checking him at last, with the saddest of smiles and kisses. At other times, she would

¹ recess: a receding part or space breaking the continuity of a wall; a niche or alcove.

² tress: (mostly in pl.) a long lock of hair (esp. that of a woman), without any sense of its being plaited or braided. (編んでいない) 長い髪のふさ。

³ haggard: (of a person) wild-looking; in early use applied esp. to the 'wild' expression of the eyes, afterwards to the injurious effect upon the countenance of privation, want of rest, fatigue, anxiety, terror, or worry. やつれた、憔悴した。

⁴ flesh: quantity or excess of flesh; hence, plumpness, good condition, embonpoint. 肉づき (のよさ)。ここは、肉づきを取り戻していたのでもはや憔悴した表情は消え失せていたものの青白い顔をしていたこと。

⁵ painfully suggestive of their causes: そうなった原因をうかがわせて痛々しかった。

⁶ touching: fig. that touches the feelings or emotions; such as to excite tender feeling or sympathy. 見るものの哀れを誘う。

⁷ refute: to disprove, overthrow by argument, prove to be false. ※この部分ややこみいつているが、'the paleness of her face' と 'the peculiar expression'、そのふたつあるがゆえに、彼女を見た人は哀れみの気持をいつそう深めるとともに、もうこれ以上はっきりした回復のしるしは現れまい、このまま衰えゆく運命に定まっているのだと、私だけでなくだれもがそう思うのだった—ざっとそんなところ。

⁸ convalescence: gradual recovery of health and strength after illness. 病後の回復。

⁹ divert oneself (with): ~で気を紛らわせる (with)。(p. 20 注 7 参照)

¹⁰ entice: To allure, attract by the offer of pleasure or advantage; esp. to allure insidiously or adroitly (*from, to* a course of conduct, a place). (巧みに) 誘う、(~に) 気を引く。

¹¹ placidly: mildly, calmly, quietly.

¹² wearied: (of a look, sigh) expressive of or indicating weariness. あきあきした、うんざりした。

turn petulantly¹ away, and hide her face in her hands, or even push him off angrily; and then he took care to let her alone, for he was certain of doing no good².

Gimmerton chapel bells were still ringing, and the full, mellow³ flow of the beck in the valley came soothingly on the ear. It was a sweet substitute for the yet absent murmur of the summer foliage⁴, which drowned that music about the Grange when the trees were in leaf. At Wuthering Heights it always sounded on quiet days, following a great thaw, or a season of steady rain—and, of Wuthering Heights, Catherine was thinking as she listened; that is, if she thought, or listened at all⁵; but she had the vague, distant look, mentioned before, which expressed no recognition of material things⁶ either by ear or eye.

‘There's a letter for you, Mrs Linton,’ I said, gently inserting it in one hand that rested on her knee. ‘You must read it immediately, because it wants an answer. Shall I break the seal?’

‘Yes,’ she answered, without altering the direction of her eyes.

I opened it—it was very short.

‘Now,’ I continued, ‘read it.’

She drew away her hand, and let it fall.

I replaced it in her lap, and stood waiting till it should please⁷ her to glance down; but that movement was so long delayed that at last I resumed—

‘Must I read it, ma'am? It is from Mr Heathcliff.’

¹ petulantly: pertly; with peevish or pettish impatience. (p. 99 注 3 参照)

² do no good: to effect no good result.

³ mellow: (of sound, colour, light, etc.) rich and soft; full and pure without harshness. 【参考】1856 MRS. CARLYLE *Lett.* II. 290 A gentle sound .. like the flow of a brook. (*OED*).

⁴ the yet absent murmur of the summer foliage: 夏にならねば聞こえぬ木々の葉のそよぎ。

⁵ if she thought, or listened at all: 彼女が少しでも考えたり聞いたりしていたとしての話ですが。(まさかとは思いますが、もしそうなら、ということ。‘at all’については p. 42 注 12 参照)

⁶ material thing: (philos.) an object considered as a physical existent independent of consciousness. 意識とは独立して実在するもの。ここは、そこにあるものが目には見えず、流れている音が耳には入らぬ様子だったこと。※もっと軽い意味で ‘material’ を用いているのかも知れないが、哲学的な意味合いで用いたのだとすれば、1959 J. L. AUSTIN *Sense & Sensibilia* (1962) ii. 7 ‘Material thing’ is not an expression which the ordinary man would use. (*OED*) だから、むしろかしいことばを使いたがる癖が出たのかもしれない。

⁷ please: to be the pleasure or will of. ここでは、彼女が～する気になる。

There was a start¹, and a troubled gleam of recollection, and a struggle to arrange her ideas. She lifted the letter, and seemed to peruse it; and when she came to the signature she sighed; yet still I found she had not gathered² its import³; for, upon my desiring to hear her reply she merely pointed to the name, and gazed at me with mournful and questioning eagerness.

‘Well, he wishes to see you,’ said I, guessing her need of an interpreter. ‘He’s in the garden by this time, and impatient to know what answer I shall bring.’

As I spoke, I observed a large dog lying on the sunny grass beneath, raise its ears, as if about to bark, and then smoothing⁴ them back, announce by a wag⁵ of the tail that some one approached whom it did not consider a stranger.

Mrs Linton bent forward and listened breathlessly. The minute after⁶ a step traversed⁷ the hall; the open house was too tempting for Heathcliff to resist walking in: most likely he supposed that I was inclined to shirk⁸ my promise, and so resolved to trust to his own audacity⁹.

With straining eagerness¹⁰ Catherine gazed towards the entrance of her chamber. He did not hit¹¹ the right room directly; she motioned me to admit¹² him; but he found it out, ere I could reach the door, and in a stride or two was at her side, and had her grasped in his arms.

He neither spoke, nor loosed his hold, for some five minutes, during which period he

¹ start: a sudden involuntary movement of the body, occasioned by surprise, terror, joy or grief, or the recollection of something forgotten.

² gather: to collect (knowledge) by observation and reasoning; to infer, deduce, conclude. 【参考】gather the meaning of the remark 言葉の意味を汲む (ランダムハウス英和第2版)。(gather one's meaning) 彼是を綜合して意味を察する (齋藤秀三郎『英和中辞典』)

³ import: purport, significance, meaning.

⁴ smooth: to make (a surface or substance) smooth, even, or level; to remove or reduce the roughness, irregularity, inequality, or unevenness of. この語義で説明がつく。ここでは、立てた耳をもと (の寝た状態) に戻したこと。

⁵ wag: an act of wagging (the tail, hand, tongue, etc.). (しっぽや手を) 振ること、(舌をさかんに動かすことから) 無駄口を叩くこと。

⁶ the minute after: = at the next minute.

⁷ traverse: to pass or journey across, over, or through; to pass through (a region) from side to side, or from end to end. 端から端まで通り抜ける。

⁸ shirk: to withdraw or draw back through lack of courage from one's word or from an engagement. (気がくじけて) 約束を果たさない。

⁹ audacity: boldness combined with disregard of consequences; venturesomeness, rashness, recklessness.

¹⁰ with straining eagerness: じっと食い入るように。

¹¹ hit: to come upon, light upon, meet with, get at, reach, find, esp. something aimed at.

¹² admit: to allow to enter, let in, receive (a person or thing).

bestowed more kisses than ever he gave in his life before, I dare say; but then my mistress had kissed him first, and I plainly saw that he could hardly bear, for downright¹ agony, to look into her face! The same conviction had stricken him as me, from the instant he beheld her, that there was no prospect of ultimate² recovery there—she was fated, sure to die.

‘Oh, Cathy! Oh, my life! how can I bear it?’ was the first sentence he uttered, in a tone that did not seek to disguise his despair.

And now he stared at her so earnestly that I thought the very intensity of his gaze would bring tears into his eyes; but they burned with anguish³—they did not melt⁴.

‘What now?’ said Catherine, leaning back, and returning his look with a suddenly clouded brow—her humour was a mere vane⁵ for constantly varying caprices⁶. ‘You and Edgar have broken my heart, Heathcliff! And you both come to bewail⁷ the deed to me, as if you were the people to be pitied! I shall not pity you, not I. You have killed me—and thriven⁸ on it, I think. How strong you are! How many years do you mean to live after I am gone?’

Heathcliff had knelt on one knee to embrace her; he attempted to rise, but she seized his hair, and kept him down.

‘I wish I could hold you,’ she continued bitterly, ‘till we were both dead! I shouldn’t care what you suffered. I care nothing for your sufferings. Why shouldn’t you suffer?⁹ I do! Will you forget me—will you be happy when I am in the earth? Will you say twenty years hence, ‘That’s the grave of Catherine Earnshaw. I loved her long ago, and was wretched to lose her; but it is past. I’ve loved many others since—my children are dearer to me than she was, and, at death, I shall not rejoice that I am going to her, I shall be sorry

¹ downright: that is thoroughly or entirely (what is denoted by the n.); nothing less than..., mere, absolute, positive, thorough, ‘flat’, ‘out-and-out’.

² ultimate: coming at the end of a process, course of action, etc.; final, decisive. 最後に来る、最終的（決定的）な。

³ anguish: severe mental suffering, excruciating or oppressive grief or distress. (p.42 注 8, p. 107 注 4, p.180 注 7 参照)

⁴ melt: to become softened by compassion, or love; to ‘dissolve’ in or into tears. (感傷的になって) 涙ぐむ。

⁵ vane: a weather-cock; (fig.) an unstable or constantly changing person or thing.

⁶ caprice: a sudden change or turn of the mind without apparent or adequate motive. むら気。

⁷ bewail: to express great sorrow for; to lament loudly, mourn.

⁸ thrive (on): to grow or develop well and vigorously; to flourish, prosper (on). (～を養分にして) 成長する、(～によって) 栄える。

⁹ Why shouldn’t you suffer?: あなたは苦しんで当然よ。反語表現。次の ‘I do!’ は、私がこんなに苦しんでいるのだから。

that I must leave them.' Will you say so, Heathcliff?"

'Don't torture me till I'm as mad as yourself,' cried he, wrenching his head free, and grinding his teeth.

The two, to a cool spectator, made a strange and fearful picture. Well might Catherine deem¹ that Heaven would be a land of exile² to her, unless, with her mortal body, she cast away her mortal character³ also. Her present countenance had a wild vindictiveness⁴ in its white cheek, and a bloodless lip, and a scintillating⁵ eye; and she retained, in her closed fingers, a portion of the locks she had been grasping⁶. As to her companion, while raising himself with one hand, he had taken her arm with the other, and so inadequate was his stock of gentleness⁷ to the requirements of her condition, that on his letting go, I saw four distinct impressions⁸ left blue in the colourless skin.

'Are you possessed with a devil,' he pursued, savagely, 'to talk in that manner to me, when you are dying? Do you reflect⁹ that all those words will be branded¹⁰ in my memory, and eating deeper eternally, after you have left me? You know you lie to say I have killed you; and, Catherine, you know that I could as soon forget you, as my existence!¹¹ Is it not sufficient for your infernal¹² selfishness, that while you are at peace, I shall writhe in the torments of hell?"

'I shall not be at peace,' moaned Catherine, recalled to a sense of physical weakness by the violent, unequal throbbing of her heart, which beat visibly and audibly under this excess of agitation.

¹ Well might Catherine deem ...: it was natural that Catherine should deem ...

² a land of exile: 流刑地. exile: enforced removal from one's native land according to an edict or sentence; enforced residence in some foreign land.

³ mortal character: 他のテキストでは 'moral character' となっているので、あるいは PENGUIN 版の誤植かもしれない。いずれにしても、肉体とともにそれに宿る激しい心をも捨て去らねば安らぎは得られず、天国は安住の地ではないということだろう。

⁴ vindictiveness: revengefulness.

⁵ scintillating: sparkling.

⁶ a portion of the locks she had been grasping: さきほど握りしめていた Heathcliff の髪。

⁷ his stock of gentleness: 優しさの持ち合せ。

⁸ impression: a mark produced upon any surface by pressure, esp. by the application of a stamp, seal, etc.; hence, any depression, indentation, etc. such as would result from pressure. 压した痕。

⁹ reflect: to turn one's thoughts (back) *on*, to fix the mind or attention *on* or *upon* a subject; to ponder, meditate *on*. (この文のように '*that, what, how*' に導かれる節も取る)。

¹⁰ brand: to impress (a fact, an event) indelibly on one's memory. 記憶に焼きつける。

¹¹ I could...as my existence!: おまえを忘れることなどできるものか! (自分を忘れられるものなら忘れましょう)。as soon (as): as readily, as willingly.

¹² infernal: of the nature of the inhabitants of hell; diabolical, fiendish, devilish; (*colloq.* as a term of strong execration or condemnation) 'Confounded', execrable, detestable.

She said nothing further till the paroxysm¹ was over; then she continued more kindly

—
‘I’m not wishing you greater torment than I have, Heathcliff! I only wish us never to be parted—and should a word of mine distress you hereafter, think I feel the same distress underground, and for my own sake, forgive me! Come here and kneel down again! You never harmed me in your life. Nay, if you nurse² anger, that will be worse to remember than my harsh words! Won’t you come here again? Do!’

Heathcliff went to the back of her chair and leant over, but not so far as to let her see his face, which was livid with emotion. She bent round to look at him; he would not permit it; turning abruptly, he walked to the fire-place, where he stood, silent, with his back towards us.

Mrs Linton’s glance followed him suspiciously: every movement woke a new sentiment in her. After a pause, and a prolonged gaze, she resumed, addressing me in accents of indignant disappointment.

‘Oh, you see, Nelly! he would not relent³ a moment, to keep me out of the grave! *That* is how I’m loved! Well, never mind. That is not *my* Heathcliff. I shall love mine yet⁴; and take him with me—he’s in my soul. And,’ added she, musingly⁵, ‘the thing that irks me most is this shattered prison⁶, after all. I’m tired of being enclosed here. I’m wearying⁷ to escape into that glorious world, and to be always there; not seeing it dimly through tears, and yearning for it through the walls of an aching heart; but really with it, and in it. Nelly, you think you are better and more fortunate than I; in full health and strength—you are sorry for me—very soon that will be altered. I shall be sorry for *you*. I

¹ paroxysm: [pærəksɪz(ə)m] a violent temporary access of disease; a violent access of action or emotion; a fit, convulsion (e.g. of laughter, excitement, rage, terror, etc. (病気の) 発作、(感情の) 激発。(p. 177 注 11 参照)

² nurse: to foster or cherish (a feeling, etc.) in one’s own heart. (感情などを) 心に抱く。

³ relent: to soften in temper; to grow more gentle or forgiving; to give up a harsh intention or inclination to severity. 私をこの世に生かしておきたければ、もっとやさしくしてくれた方がいいのに、という気持。

⁴ yet: 未来の ‘yet’ はちょっとやっかいだが、長くなるのでうんと乱暴に言えば、まだ実現 (実行) していないことについて、「この先 (いつかは、結局は、まだ間に合ううちに、など)」という意味を持つ。‘shall, will’ を伴って「以前のように (as previously) これからも」という用例があればそれを取りたいところだが、調べた範囲では確認できなかった。強いて解釈すれば、そこにいる Heathcliff ではなく、これからは心の中の (昔に変らぬ) 彼を愛するの、ということか。

⁵ musingly:

⁶ this shattered prison: this wrecked body of mine.

⁷ weary: (chiefly Sc.) to suffer weariness from long waiting or deferred hope; to wait wearily for or to do (something), or through (a period of time); to long or languish for something. ～を待ちくたびれる、(早く) ～したい。

shall be incomparably beyond and above you all. I *wonder* he won't be near me!' She went on to herself. 'I thought he wished it. Heathcliff dear! you should not be sullen now. Do come to me, Heathcliff.'

In her eagerness she rose, and supported herself on the arm of the chair. At that earnest appeal, he turned to her, looking absolutely desperate. His eyes wide, and wet, at last, flashed fiercely on her; his breast heaved¹ convulsively². An instant they held³ asunder; and then how they met I hardly saw, but Catherine made a spring, and he caught her, and they were locked in an embrace from which I thought my mistress would never be released alive. In fact, to my eyes, she seemed directly⁴ insensible. He flung himself into the nearest seat, and on my approaching hurriedly to ascertain if she had fainted, he gnashed⁵ at me and foamed like a mad dog, and gathered⁶ her to him with greedy jealousy⁷. I did not feel as if I were in the company of a creature of my own species; it appeared that he would not understand, though I spoke to him; so I stood off, and held my tongue, in great perplexity⁸.

A movement of Catherine's relieved me a little presently: she put up her hand to clasp his neck, and bring her cheek to his, as he held her: while he, in return, covering her with frantic caresses, said wildly—

'You teach me now how cruel you've been—cruel and false. *Why* did you despise me? *Why* did you betray your own heart, Cathy? I have not one word of comfort⁹—you deserve this. You have killed yourself. Yes, you may kiss me, and cry; and wring out¹⁰ my kisses and tears. They'll blight¹¹ you—they'll damn you. You loved me—then what *right* had

¹ heave: to rise with alternate falling, as waves, or an object floating on them, the breast in deep breathing, etc. (胸が) 波打つ。

² convulsively: in a convulsive manner; spasmodically. 痙攣するように、発作的な勢いで。

³ hold: to keep (the body, or a member) in a particular position or attitude; to 'carry', sustain, bear. 'they held asunder' 二人の体は離れていた。asunder: (of two or more things) apart or separate from each other. (p. 109 注 9、p. 166 注 12 参照)

⁴ directly: immediately (in time); straightway; at once.

⁵ gnash: to strike together or 'grind' the teeth, esp. from rage or anguish.

⁶ gather: 抱き寄せる。ここでは 'to draw' の意味。

⁷ jealousy: vigilance in guarding a possession from loss or damage. 失ってなるものかという警戒心。

⁸ perplexity: inability to determine what to think, or how to act, owing to the involved, intricate, or complicated condition of circumstances, or of the matters to be dealt with, generally also involving mental perturbation and anxiety; puzzled condition, embarrassment, bewilderment, distraction. 判断不能の状態、途方に暮れること。

⁹ comfort: relief or support in mental distress or affliction; consolation, solace, soothing. 慰め。

¹⁰ wring out: to force out (moisture) by or as by twisting; to squeeze out. ここでは比喩的に、むりやりしぼり出す、引き出す。

¹¹ blight: to exert a baleful influence on; to destroy the brightness, beauty, or promise of.

you to leave me?¹ What right—answer me—for the poor fancy you felt for Linton? Because misery, and degradation, and death, and nothing that God or Satan could inflict² would have parted us, *you*, of your own will, did it. I have not broken your heart—*you* have broken it—and in breaking it, you have broken mine. So much the worse for me, that I am strong.³ Do I want to live? What kind of living will it be when you—Oh God! would *you* like to live with your soul in the grave?⁴

‘Let me alone. Let me alone!’ sobbed Catherine. ‘If I’ve done wrong, I’m dying for it. It is enough! You left me too; but I won’t upbraid⁵ you! I forgive you. Forgive me!’

‘It is hard to forgive, and to look at those eyes, and feel those wasted hands,’ he answered. ‘Kiss me again, and don’t let me see your eyes! I forgive what you have done to me. I love *my* murderer—but *yours*!’⁶ How can I?’

They were silent—their faces hid against each other, and washed by each other’s tears. At least, I suppose the weeping was on both sides; as it seemed Heathcliff *could* weep on a great occasion like this.

I grew very uncomfortable, meanwhile; for the afternoon wore fast away, the man whom I had sent off returned from his errand, and I could distinguish⁷, by the shine of the westering sun up the valley, a concourse⁸ thickening outside Gimmerton chapel porch.

‘Service is over,’ I announced. ‘My master will be here in half-an-hour.’

¹ what right had you to leave me?: どんな権利があつておれを捨てたのだ?

² nothing that God or Satan could inflict: 神や悪魔の下すどんな災いも (～しない)

³ So much ... strong.: おれは丈夫なだけにかえって始末に負えぬ。

⁴ would *you* ... grave: 最愛の人を墓に葬っておいて自分は生きたいなどとだれが思うものか。

PENGUIN 版注: は参考として次の詩を引用している。

So, if a tear, when thou art dying,	死の床のあなたを前に涙がひとしく
Should haply fall from me,	私の目からふとこぼれ落ちたら
It is but that my soul is sighing,	私の魂がそとこういつているの
To go and rest with thee.	あなたとともに眠りにつきたいと

(*Emily Brontë: The complete Poems*, p. 29.)

本文中の ‘your soul’ を「自分の魂にも等しい存在＝最愛の人」と取れば、ここの ‘you’ は ‘denoting any hearer or reader; hence as an indef. pers. pron.: one, any one.’ つまり不定人称代名詞。ここは疑問文なので ‘any one’ (だれか)。

⁵ upbraid: to reproach, reprove, censure (a person, etc.).

⁶ I love *my* murderer—but *yours*!: *my murderer* = Catherine; *yours* = Catherine (‘You have killed yourself.’).

⁷ distinguish: to perceive distinctly or clearly (by sight, hearing, or other bodily sense); to ‘make out’ by looking, listening, etc.; to recognize. (p. 68 注 10、p. 132 注 8 参照)

⁸ concourse: a crowd, throng.

Heathcliff groaned a curse, and strained¹ Catherine closer—she never moved.

Ere long² I perceived a group of the servants passing up the road towards the kitchen wing³. Mr Linton was not far behind; he opened the gate himself, and sauntered⁴ slowly up, probably enjoying the lovely afternoon, that breathed⁵ as soft as summer.

‘Now he is here!’ I exclaimed. ‘For Heaven’s sake, hurry down! You’ll not meet any one on the front stairs. Do be quick; and stay among the trees till he is fairly⁶ in.’

‘I must go, Cathy,’ said Heathcliff, seeking to extricate⁷ himself from his companion’s arms. ‘But, if I live, I’ll see you again before you are asleep. I won’t stray⁸ five yards from your window.’

‘You must not go!’ she answered, holding him as firmly as her strength allowed. ‘You shall not, I tell you⁹.’

‘For one hour,’ he pleaded earnestly.

‘Not for one minute,’ she replied.

‘I *must*—Linton will be up immediately,’ persisted the alarmed intruder.

He would have risen¹⁰, and unfixed her fingers by the act—she clung fast, gasping; there was mad resolution in her face.

‘No!’ she shrieked. ‘Oh, don’t, don’t go! It is the last time! Edgar will not hurt us. Heathcliff, I shall die! I shall die!’

‘Damn the fool! There he is!’ cried Heathcliff, sinking back into his seat. ‘Hush, my

¹ strain: to hug or squeeze tightly.

² ere long: = before long: before the lapse of much time; soon. ふつう未来のことについていう。このように過去についていうのは古風 (Of future time; also (arch.) of past.)。

³ wing: a subordinate part of a building on one side of the main or central part.

⁴ saunter: to walk with a leisurely and careless gait; to stroll.

⁵ breathe: (of wind, air, etc.) to blow softly. ここは明示されていないが、心地よい「風」であろう。

⁶ fairly: completely, fully, quite, ‘clean’.

⁷ extricate: to disentangle (a person or thing); to disengage, set free *from*, *out of* (anything that entangles, a state of confinement, difficulty, or entanglement).

⁸ stray: to wander away from a place, one’s companions, etc. (*from*, *into*, *abroad*, *away*, *off*).

⁹ I tell you.:ほんとに、きっと、など。挿入的に強調表現 (expression of emphasis) として。

¹⁰ would have risen: 実際にはしがみつかれたので実現しなかった。‘by the act’は「立ち上がることによって」。

darling! Hush, hush, Catherine! I'll stay. If he shot me so¹, I'd expire² with a blessing on my lips.'

And there they were fast³ again. I heard my master mounting the stairs—the cold sweat ran from my forehead; I was horrified.

'Are you going to listen to her ravings?' I said, passionately. 'She does not know what she says. Will you ruin her, because she has not wit⁴ to help herself? Get up! You could be free instantly. That is the most diabolical deed that ever you did. We are all done for—master, mistress, and servant.'

I wrung my hands, and cried out; and Mr Linton hastened his step at the noise. In the midst of my agitation, I was sincerely glad to observe that Catherine's arms had fallen relaxed, and her head hung down.

'She's fainted or dead,' I thought; 'so much the better. Far better that she should be dead, than lingering⁵ a burden, and a misery-maker to all about her.'

Edgar sprang to his unbidden guest, blanched⁶ with astonishment and rage. What he meant to do I cannot tell; however, the other stopped all demonstrations⁷, at once, by placing the lifeless-looking form in his arms.

'Look there!' he said. 'Unless you be a fiend, help her first—then you shall speak to me!'

He walked into the parlour, and sat down. Mr Linton summoned me, and with great

¹ If he shot me so: おれを撃つならそれでいい、撃つがいい。'so' は 'for that reason, on that account' (それを理由に) の意味では文頭に来るから、古い用法とされる '(obs.) Let it be so; it is well.' (それならそれでよい) の意味であろう。【参考】If that will content him, so. それで彼が満足するならそれでいい。(研究社『新英和大辞典』昭和 26 年 7 月改訂増補第 6 版)

² expire: (of a person or animal) to breathe one's last; to die.

³ fast: (*lit.* and *fig.* both of persons and things) firmly attached to something else; that cannot easily escape or be extricated. ここでは比喩的に、ひしと抱き合った。

⁴ wit: the understanding or mental faculties in respect of their condition; chiefly = 'right mind', 'reason', 'senses', sanity. 正気。

⁵ linger: to remain long in languor and pain; to continue alive, though oppressed by sickness or other distress. ここは 'lingering as a burden' (お荷物の病人として生きながらえる) と考えておく。'(he) come back a gentleman' (130 頁注 6 参照) も同様。

⁶ blanch: to make pale with fear, cold, hunger, etc. ふつうカッとなれば Catherine のように赤くなる (p.101 'her ears red with rage') ものだが、顔面蒼白になるところが Edgar らしい。作者の計算であろう。

⁷ the other ... demonstrations: Heathcliff は (ぐったりとした Catherine の体を預けて) Edgar の行動を一切制止した (Edgar はまったく動きが取れなくなった)。

difficulty, and after resorting¹ to many means, we managed to restore her to sensation²; but she was all bewildered; she sighed, and moaned, and knew nobody. Edgar, in his anxiety for her, forgot her hated friend. I did not. I went, at the earliest opportunity, and besought³ him to depart, affirming that Catherine was better, and he should hear from me in the morning, how she passed the night.

‘I shall not refuse to go out of doors,’ he answered; ‘but I shall stay in the garden; and, Nelly, mind you keep your word to-morrow. I shall be under those larch⁴ trees, mind! or I pay another visit, whether Linton be in or not.’

He sent a rapid glance through the half-open door of the chamber, and, ascertaining that what I stated was apparently⁵ true, delivered the house of his luckless⁶ presence.

¹ resort: to have recourse to something for assistance or furtherance of an object. ～に頼る、～を用いる。

² sensation: an operation of any of the senses; a physical ‘feeling’ considered apart from the resulting ‘perception’ of an object. 五感の働き、認識をもたらす感覚。

³ beseech: to supplicate, entreat, implore a person *to do* a thing.

⁴ larch: カラマツ。

⁵ apparently: so far as one can judge; seemingly. 見たところでは、どうやら。(p. 115 注 2, p. 140 注 14 参照)

⁶ luckless: presaging or foreboding evil, ominous of ill.

Chapter II (XVI)

About twelve o'clock, that night, was born the Catherine you saw at Wuthering Heights, a puny¹, seven months' child; and two hours after the mother died, having never recovered sufficient consciousness to miss² Heathcliff, or know Edgar.

The latter's distraction³ at his bereavement⁴ is a subject too painful to be dwelt on⁵; its after effects⁶ showed how deep the sorrow sunk.

A great addition⁷, in my eyes, was his being left without an heir. I bemoaned⁸ that, as I gazed on the feeble orphan; and I mentally abused old Linton for, what was only natural partiality⁹, the securing his estate to his own daughter, instead of his son's¹⁰.

An unwelcomed infant it was, poor thing ! It might have wailed out of life¹¹, and nobody cared a morsel¹², during those first hours of existence. We redeemed¹³ the neglect afterwards; but its beginning was as friendless as its end is likely to be¹⁴.

Next morning—bright and cheerful out of doors—stole softened in¹⁵ through the blinds of the silent room, and suffused¹⁶ the couch and its occupant with a mellow, tender glow.

¹ puny: of small growth and feeble vitality; undersized and weakly.

² miss: to perceive that (a person or thing) is not in the expected or accustomed place. いるべき場所に人がいないことに気づく。

³ distraction: violent perturbation or disturbance of mind or feelings, approaching to temporary madness. 気も狂わんばかりの心の乱れ。

⁴ bereavement: the fact or state of being bereaved or deprived by death of a near relative, or of one connected by some endearing tie. 近親者や愛する者を死によって失うこと。

⁵ dwell on: to treat at length or with insistence, in speech or writing. (p. 192 注 5 参照)

⁶ after effect: a delayed effect; an effect following after an interval. 後遺症など、あとになって現れる影響。

⁷ a great addition: a great addition to the sorrow.

⁸ bemoan: to moan for; to lament, weep for. ～を嘆く。

⁹ what was only natural partiality: 娘可愛さの親心。

¹⁰ instead of his son's: (PENGUIN 版注 :) In the event of Edgar having no male offspring, the Grange estate would pass to Isabella and subsequently to her male offspring after Edgar's death. Edgar に授かったのは女兒だから Heathcliff の計画のひとつは実現したことになる (152 頁注 1 参照)。

¹¹ wail out of life: 泣きつづけて死ぬ。

¹² morsel: a small piece (of anything), esp. a portion cut or broken from a mass; a little piece; a fragment. かけら、ほんの少し。

¹³ redeem: to make amends or atonement for, to compensate (an error, fault, etc.).

¹⁴ its end is likely to be (friendless): この予言が当たるかどうかはともかく、Nelly は当然この娘の現状を念頭に置いてそういつている。

¹⁵ stole softened in: そっと射しこんできた。'softened' は光がブラインドを通過したため。

¹⁶ suffuse: to overspread as with a fluid, a colour, a gleam of light. どこどここの上一面に～を広げる (*with*)。

Edgar Linton had his head laid on the pillow, and his eyes shut. His young and fair features were almost as death-like as those of the form¹ beside him, and almost as fixed; but *his* was the hush² of exhausted anguish, and *hers* of perfect peace. Her brow smooth, her lids closed, her lips wearing the expression of a smile. No angel in heaven could be more beautiful than she appeared; and I partook³ of the infinite calm in which she lay. My mind was never in a holier frame⁴, than while I gazed on that untroubled image of Divine rest. I instinctively⁵ echoed⁶ the words she had uttered, a few hours before. 'Incomparably beyond and above us all! Whether still on earth or now in Heaven, her spirit is at home with God!'

I don't know if it be a peculiarity⁷ in me, but I am seldom otherwise than happy⁸ while watching in the chamber of death, should no frenzied⁹ or despairing mourner share the duty with me. I see a repose that neither earth nor hell can break; and I feel an assurance of the endless and shadowless hereafter¹⁰—the Eternity they¹¹ have entered—where life is boundless in its duration, and love in its sympathy¹², and joy in its fullness. I noticed on that occasion how much selfishness there is even in a love like Mr Linton's, when he so regretted Catherine's blessed release!

To be sure one might have doubted, after the wayward and impatient existence¹³ she had led, whether she merited¹⁴ a haven¹⁵ of peace at last. One might doubt in seasons of

¹ form: the shape or figure of the body as distinguished from the face; a body considered in respect to its outward shape and appearance. 体 (の輪郭、外形)。ここは単に「遺体」でもよい。

² hush: silence (where noise has been or might be); stillness, quiet.

³ partake: to take a part or share in some action or condition; to have a portion or lot in common with others; to participate (*in, of* the thing; *with* the person sharing). ～を (*in, of*) または～と (*with*) 共にする。(p. 45 注 10 参照)

⁴ frame: temporary posture of mind, state of feeling, mood, condition of temper. 気分、気持 (= frame of mind)。

⁵ instinctively: by instinct; by some innate prompting; without conscious thought or purpose. ここでは「おのずと、無意識のうちに」などが適当。

⁶ echo: to repeat (sounds, words) in the manner of an echo.

⁷ peculiarity: the quality of being *sui generis* or unlike others; singularity, uncommonness, oddity; also, an instance of this, an odd trait or characteristic. 人となりがうところ。'that which is peculiar to a single person or thing.' (個人特有のもの) と表裏をなす定義だが、遺体の番をするのが好きというのは風変りと考えていいだろう。

⁸ otherwise than happy: not happy. ここは現在形だから、私はいつもそうなんです、ということ。

⁹ frenzied: distracted, frantic. ここでは、(悲しみのあまり) 取り乱した。

¹⁰ hereafter: the world to come. 来世。

¹¹ they: the dead. 死者。

¹² love in its sympathy: = love *is boundless* in its sympathy. 愛は無限に通い合う。

¹³ existence: continuance of being as a living creature; life. (Sometimes in disparaging sense: 'a mere existence not worthy the name of life'.) 生存、生活。ここは故人だから、生涯。

¹⁴ merit: to be or become entitled to or worthy of (reward, punishment, good or evil fortune or estimation, etc.) ～の資格がある、～に値する。

¹⁵ haven: (fig.) a place of shelter, safety, or retreat. 安住 (安息) の地。

cold reflection¹, but not then, in the presence of her corpse. It asserted its own tranquillity, which seemed a pledge of equal quiet to its former inhabitants².

Do you believe such people *are* happy in the other world, sir? I'd give a great deal to know.³

I declined answering Mrs Dean's question, which struck me as something heterodox⁴. She proceeded:

'Retracing the course of Catherine Linton, I fear we have no right to think she is⁵: but we'll leave her with her Maker.

The master looked asleep, and I ventured soon after sunrise to quit the room and steal out to the pure, refreshing air. The servants thought me gone to shake off the drowsiness of my protracted watch; in reality my chief motive was seeing Mr Heathcliff. If he had remained among the larches all night he would have heard nothing of the stir at the Grange, unless⁶, perhaps, he might catch the gallop of the messenger going to Gimmerton. If he had come nearer he would probably be aware, from the lights flitting⁷ to and fro, and the opening and shutting of the outer doors, that all was not right within.

I wished yet feared to find him. I felt the terrible news must be told, and I longed to get it over⁸; but *how* to do it I did not know.

¹ in seasons of cold reflection: 冷静に考えられるときには。 *season*: the right, proper, due or appointed time; a fit or favourable occasion, an opportunity.

² inhabitants: 'the former inhabitant' とは生前遺骸に宿っていた住人 (= 魂) のことだが、ここは「おや、なぜ複数？」と疑問に思う箇所。(PENGUIN 版注:) Modern editions have tended to normalize this sentence by printing 'inhabitant'. However both the 1847 first edition and Charlotte's 1850 amended edition use the plural of the noun, which is richly suggestive of the shared identity of Catherine and Heathcliff. だとすれば、次の 'such people *are*' にも注意。

³ I'd give a great deal to know: 知るためならいくらでもさしあげます、ぜひとも知りたいのです。

⁴ heterodox: not in accordance with established doctrine or opinions, or those generally recognized as right or 'orthodox'. (キリスト教の) 教えに反する。

⁵ she is: she is happy in the other world.

⁶ unless ...: 'unless' を境に前半と後半がつながりにくい。しかし 'unless ...' は基本的に「～でないかぎり」は」という意味だから、後半は前半の例外を示す。「もっとも、ひょっとしてギマトンへ知らせに走る馬の音を聞きつけたかもしれず、それなら話は別ですが」ということ。時ならぬ馬の音を聞けば当然異変を察知し、用心深い Heathcliff もカラマツの木立を出て屋敷に接近したはずだから、次の 'If he had come nearer ...' へとすんなりつながる。

⁷ flit: (both of material and immaterial things) to move along, pass, proceed; to pass lightly or softly and (usually) with rapidity or suddenness (*about, away, by, to and fro, etc.*). 'the lights flitting to and fro' あわただしく行ったり来たりする灯火。

⁸ get over: to finish with, have done with (esp. something troublesome or disagreeable). やっかいなことをすませる、終らせる。

He was there—at least a few yards farther in the park; leant against an old ash¹ tree, his hat off, and his hair soaked² with the dew that had gathered on the budded³ branches, and fell pattering⁴ round him. He had been standing a long time in that position, for I saw a pair of ousels⁵ passing and repassing scarcely three feet from him, busy in building their nest, and regarding his proximity⁶ no more than that of a piece of timber. They flew off at my approach, and he raised his eyes and spoke:

‘She's dead!’ he said. ‘I've not waited for you to learn that. Put your handkerchief away—don't snivel⁷ before me. Damn you all! she wants none of *your* tears!’

I was weeping as much for him as her⁸: we do sometimes pity creatures that have none of the feeling either for themselves or others; and when I first looked into his face I perceived that he had got intelligence of the catastrophe⁹; and a foolish notion struck me that his heart was quelled¹⁰, and he prayed, because his lips moved, and his gaze was bent on the ground.

‘Yes, she's dead!’ I answered, checking my sobs and drying¹¹ my cheeks. ‘Gone to heaven, I hope, where we may, every one, join her, if we take due warning¹², and leave our evil ways to follow good!’

‘Did *she* take due warning, then?’ asked Heathcliff, attempting a sneer. ‘Did she die like a saint? Come, give me a true history of the event. How did—’

He endeavoured to pronounce the name, but could not manage it; and compressing his

¹ ash: トネリコ。

² soak: to lay or place in, to wet with, a liquid so as to produce thorough saturation; to steep. ずぶ濡れにする。

³ budded: in bud, budding; furnished with buds. 芽吹いた、芽の出た。

⁴ patter: to make a rapid succession of pats, taps, or slight sounding strokes, such as those of rain-drops against a window-pane; often referring mainly to the sound produced. ‘pat, pat’ (ポタポタ、パタパタ、パラパラ) とつづけざまに音を立てる。

⁵ ousel: [‘u:zl] an old name of the blackbird. (ツグミの仲間クロウタドリ)

⁶ proximity; the fact, condition, or position of being near or close by; nearness, neighbourhood.

⁷ snivel: to make a sniffing or snuffling sound expressive of real or assumed emotion; to be in, or affect, a tearful state. めそめそする。

⁸ as much ... as: equally...with; no less...than; in the same way...as; both...and. どちらも同じくという意味だが、この場合、力点は Heathcliff のほうに置かれているように感ずる。

⁹ catastrophe: a final event; a conclusion generally unhappy; a disastrous end. 悲劇的結末。(p. 115 注 1 参照)

¹⁰ quell: to crush or overcome (a person or thing); to subdue, vanquish, reduce to subjection or submission. 打ち負かす、鎮める。

¹¹ dry: to make dry by wiping. めぐう。(p. 205 注 3 参照)

¹² take due warning: 行いを改める。take warning: to alter one's course of action when warned of its danger (by another's ill-fortune, etc.). (p. 102 注 4、p. 108 注 6 参照)

mouth, he held a silent combat with his inward agony, defying, meanwhile, my sympathy with an unflinching¹, ferocious stare.

‘How did she die?’ he resumed at last—fain², notwithstanding his hardihood³, to have a support behind him, for, after the struggle, he trembled, in spite of himself⁴, to his very finger-ends.

‘Poor wretch!’ I thought, ‘you have a heart and nerves the same as your brother men! Why should you be anxious⁵ to conceal them? Your pride cannot blind God. You tempt him to wring⁶ them till he forces a cry of humiliation!’

‘Quietly as a lamb!’ I answered aloud. ‘She drew a sigh, and stretched herself, like a child reviving⁷, and sinking again to sleep; and five minutes after I felt one little pulse at her heart, and nothing more!’

‘And—did she ever mention me?’ he asked, hesitating, as if he dreaded the answer to his question would introduce details that he could not bear to hear.

‘Her senses never returned—she recognized nobody from the time you left her,’ I said. ‘She lies with a sweet smile on her face; and her latest ideas wandered back to pleasant early days. Her life closed in a gentle dream—may⁸ she wake as kindly⁹ in the other world!’

‘May she wake in torment!’ he cried with frightful vehemence, stamping his foot and groaning in a sudden paroxysm of ungovernable passion. ‘Why, she’s a liar to the end. Where is she? Not *there*—not in heaven—not perished—where? Oh! you¹⁰ said you cared nothing for my sufferings! And I pray one prayer—I repeat it till my tongue stiffens—Catherine Earnshaw, may you not rest as long as I am living! You said I killed you—haunt me, then! The murdered *do* haunt their murderers. I believe—I know that ghosts

¹ unflinching: steadfast, unwavering. ここでは、しっかりこちらを見すえた。

² fain: necessitated, obliged. ～せざるをえない。

³ hardihood: boldness, hardiness; audacity.

⁴ in spite of oneself: though one would rather have done otherwise. そうしたくはなかったのに。

【参考】I laughed **in spite of myself**. (笑ふまいと思つても) 思はず (我知らず) 吹き出した。(齋藤秀三郎『英和中辞典』)

⁵ anxious: full of desire and endeavour; solicitous; earnestly desirous (*to effect* some purpose). (熱心に) ～したがる。

⁶ wring: to cause anguish or distress to (a person, his heart, etc.); to vex, distress, rack.

⁷ revive: to return to consciousness; to recover from a swoon or faint.

⁸ may: in exclamatory expressions of wish. 願望の表現。【参考】May you be happy! (= I hope you will be happy!) ご多幸を祈ります。(研究社『実例英文法』)

⁹ kindly: agreeably, pleasantly. 心地よく。

¹⁰ you: = Catherine.

have wandered on earth. Be with me always—take any form—drive me mad! only *do* not leave me in this abyss, where I cannot find you! Oh, God! it is unutterable!¹ I *cannot* live without my life! I *cannot* live without my soul!”

He dashed his head against the knotted trunk; and, lifting up his eyes, howled, not like a man, but like a savage beast being goaded² to death with knives and spears.

I observed several splashes of blood about the bark of the tree, and his hand and forehead were both stained; probably the scene I witnessed was a repetition of others acted during the night. It hardly moved my compassion—it appalled³ me; still I felt reluctant to quit him so. But the moment he recollected⁴ himself enough to notice me watching, he thundered a command for me to go, and I obeyed. He was beyond my skill to quiet or console!

Mrs Linton's funeral was appointed to take place on the Friday following her decease⁵; and till then her coffin remained uncovered, and strewn with flowers and scented leaves, in the great drawing-room. Linton spent his days and nights there, a sleepless guardian; and—a circumstance⁶ concealed from all but me—Heathcliff spent his nights, at least, outside, equally a stranger to repose⁷.

I held no communication with him; still, I was conscious of his design to enter, if he could; and on the Tuesday, a little after dark, when my master, from sheer fatigue, had been compelled to retire a couple of hours, I went and opened one of the windows, moved⁸ by his perseverance⁹ to give him a chance of bestowing¹⁰ on the faded image of his idol one final adieu.

¹ unutterable: transcending utterance; inexpressible, ineffable. 言葉ではいいつくせぬ。

² goad: to prick with a goad (先のとがった棒) or other pointed instrument

³ appal, appall: to cause the heart of (anyone) to sink; to dismay, shock, discomfit, terrify. (p. 176 注 1 参照)。

⁴ recollect: (*now rare*, refl.) to bring (oneself) back to a state of composure; to compose, recover (oneself) ‘recollect oneself’ で、落ち着きを取りもどす。(p. 19 注 1 参照)

⁵ the Friday following her decease: Catherine が死んだのは 1784 年 3 月 20 日 (曜日を計算すると土曜日) だから Catherine が埋葬された金曜日は 3 月 26 日である。18～19 世紀 London の Spitalfields では、死後 1～21 日 (ふつうは 12 日以内、夏は 8 日以内) に埋葬が行われたという記録があるから、遺体を一週間安置していたとしてもおかしくはない。

⁶ circumstance: an incident, an occurrence; a matter or fact (properly of a secondary or subordinate kind). (p. 66 注 3、p. 183 注 2 参照)

⁷ a stranger to repose: 休むことなく (休息とは無縁のものとして)。

⁸ move: to affect with emotion; to rouse or excite feeling in (a person); to stir (the feelings, etc.); often *spec.* to affect with tender or compassionate emotion.

⁹ perseverance: 粘り強さ。(p. 2 注 7、p. 193 注 10 参照)

¹⁰ bestow: [bɪstəʊ] to confer as a gift, present, give (*on, upon* a person).

He did not omit¹ to avail himself of the opportunity, cautiously and briefly; too cautiously to betray² his presence by the slightest noise; indeed, I shouldn't have discovered that he had been there, except for the disarrangement of the drapery about the corpse's face, and for observing on the floor a curl of light hair, fastened with a silver thread, which, on examination, I ascertained to have been taken from a locket³ hung round Catherine's neck. Heathcliff had opened the trinket⁴, and cast out its contents, replacing them by a black lock of his own. I twisted the two, and enclosed them together.

Mr Earnshaw was, of course, invited to attend⁵ the remains⁶ of his sister to the grave; and he sent no excuse, but he never came; so that, besides her husband, the mourners were wholly composed of tenants and servants. Isabella was not asked.

The place of Catherine's interment⁷, to the surprise of the villagers, was neither in the chapel, under the carved monument of the Lintons, nor yet⁸ by the tombs of her own relations, outside. It was dug on a green slope, in a corner of the kirkyard, where the wall is so low that heath and bilberry⁹ plants have climbed over it¹⁰ from the moor; and peat mould¹¹ almost buries it. Her husband lies in the same spot, now; and they have each a simple headstone¹² above, and a plain¹³ gray block at their feet, to mark the graves.

¹ omit: to fail or forbear to use or perform; to let alone, pass over, neglect, leave undone. ～しそこなう、～せずにおく (to do)。

² betray: to reveal, disclose or show incidentally; to exhibit, show signs of.

³ locket: a small case of gold or silver, containing a miniature portrait, a lock of hair, etc., and worn (usually, suspended from the neck) as an ornament.

⁴ trinket: a small ornament or fancy article, usually an article of jewellery for personal adornment.

⁵ attend: to accompany, go with.

⁶ remains: (pl.) that which is left of a person when life is extinct; the (dead) body, corpse.

⁷ interment: burial.

⁸ nor yet: and also not. ～でもない。‘yet’ は強調語。

⁹ bilberry: the fruit of a dwarf hardy shrub (*Vaccinium Myrtillus*), abundant on heaths, on stony moors, and in mountain woods, in Great Britain and Northern Europe; the berry is of a deep blue black, and about a quarter of an inch in diameter. コケモモ。

¹⁰ have climbed over it: ‘it = the wall’ だが、現在完了形だから、もちろん埋葬当時ではなく「いまでは」ということ。

¹¹ mould: loose, broken, or friable earth.

¹² headstone: an upright stone at the head of a grave; a gravestone. (p. 181 注 2 参照)

¹³ plain: without embellishment, addition, or decorative pattern or colouring; unembellished, not ornate; simple, bare, bald.

Chapter III (XVII)

That Friday¹ made the last of our fine days, for a month. In the evening, the weather broke; the wind shifted from south to north-east, and brought, rain, first, and then sleet² and snow.

On the morrow one could hardly imagine that there had been three weeks of summer³: the primroses and crocuses were hidden under wintry drifts: the larks were silent, the young leaves of the early trees smitten and blackened—And dreary, and chill, and dismal that morrow did creep over!⁴ My master kept his room—I took possession of the lonely parlour, converting it into a nursery; and there I was sitting, with the moaning doll of a child⁵ laid on my knee; rocking it to and fro, and watching, meanwhile, the still driving flakes⁶ build up the uncurtained window, when the door opened, and some person entered, out of breath and laughing !

My anger was greater than my astonishment for a minute; I supposed it one of the maids, and I cried,

‘Have done!’⁷ How dare you show your giddiness⁸ here ? What would Mr Linton say if he heard you ?

‘Excuse me!’ answered a familiar voice, ‘but I know Edgar is in bed, and I cannot stop myself.’

With that, the speaker came forward to the fire, panting and holding her hand to her side.

¹ that Friday: 雪が降ったり ‘primroses’ (早春に開花) や “young leaves of the early trees” などがあるからにはやはり春、つまり ‘that Friday’ は Catherine が埋葬された 3 月 26 日を指す(237 頁注 5 参照)。

² sleet: snow which has been partially thawed by falling through an atmosphere of a temperature a little above freezing-point, usually accompanied by rain or snow. みぞれ。

³ three weeks of summer: みぞれが降るような時期に ‘summer’ を季節としての「夏」とするのは無理だから、もちろん ‘summery or warm weather’ (夏を思わせる暖かい天候) のこと。またいくら日中暖かかったとはいえ、Catherine 臨終の夜を戸外で明かした Heathcliff は相当の寒さに耐えたはず。

⁴ creep over: ゆっくり (のろのろ) と過ぎてゆく。‘over’ は「経過・終結」(past, gone by, finished, done with, at an end)。

⁵ the moaning doll of a child: 悲しげに泣く人形のような子。この表現は頻出し、詳しくは p. 85 注 3 を参照のこと。

⁶ flakes: = snowflakes.

⁷ Have done!: やめなさい ! (have done: to make an end.)

⁸ giddiness: thoughtless folly, flightiness; fickleness.

'I have run the whole way from Wuthering Heights!' she continued, after a pause. 'Except where I've flown—I couldn't count the number of falls I've had—Oh, I'm aching¹ all over! Don't be alarmed—There shall be an explanation as soon as I can give it—only just have the goodness to step out², and order the carriage to take me on to Gimmerton, and tell a servant to seek up³ a few clothes in my wardrobe.'

The intruder was Mrs Heathcliff—she certainly seemed in no laughing predicament⁴: her hair streamed on her shoulders, dripping with snow and water; she was dressed in the girlish dress she commonly wore, befitting her age more than her position⁵; a low⁶ frock, with short sleeves, and nothing on either head or neck. The frock was of light silk, and clung to her with wet; and her feet were protected merely by thin slippers⁷; add to this a deep cut under one ear, which only the cold prevented from bleeding profusely, a white face scratched and bruised, and a frame⁸ hardly able to support itself through fatigue, and you may fancy my first fright was not much allayed⁹ when I had had leisure to examine her.

'My dear young lady,' I exclaimed, 'I'll stir nowhere, and hear nothing, till you have removed every article of your clothes, and put on dry things; and certainly you shall not go to Gimmerton to-night; so it is needless to order the carriage.'

'Certainly I shall,' she said; 'walking or riding—yet I've no objection to dress myself decently; and—ah, see how it¹⁰ flows down my neck now! The fire does make it smart.'

She insisted on my fulfilling her directions, before she would let me touch her; and not till after the coachman had been instructed to get ready, and a maid set to pack up some necessary attire¹¹, did I obtain her consent for binding the wound, and helping to change

¹ ache: [éik] to be in pain, to have the sensation of pain continuous or prolonged; to throb with pain. ずきずき痛む。

² step out: to go or come out from a place, usually for a short distance or for a short time; esp. to leave the house, go out of doors.

³ seek up: 'seek out' (探し出す) とほぼ同じであろう。たくさんある中から季節・天候に応じた服を探して、という含み。

⁴ predicament: an unpleasant, trying, or dangerous situation. (p. 26 注 4、p. 47 注 4 参照)

⁵ befitting her age more than her position: 年相応ではあっても人妻にはふさわしからぬ。

⁶ low: (of a woman's dress) cut so as to leave the neck exposed. 襟ぐりの深い、首がむき出しになった。

⁷ slipper: a light and usually heelless covering for the foot, capable of being easily slipped on, and chiefly employed for indoor wear. ここでは室内履きの靴。

⁸ frame: applied to the animal, esp. the human body, with reference to its make, build, or constitution.

⁹ allay: to subdue, quell (any trouble, as care, pain, thirst); to abate, assuage, relieve, alleviate.

¹⁰ it: = blood.

¹¹ attire: [ətáɪə] dress, apparel. 衣裳。(古くは 'attires' と複数でも用いられたが、不可算名詞)。

her garments¹.

‘Now, Ellen,’ she said, when my task was finished, and she was seated in an easy chair on the hearth, with a cup of tea before her, ‘You sit down opposite me, and put poor Catherine’s baby away.—I don’t like to see it. You mustn’t think I care little for Catherine, because I behaved so foolishly on entering—I’ve cried, too, bitterly—yes, more than any one else has reason to cry. We parted unreconciled, you remember, and I shan’t forgive myself. But, for all that², I was not going to sympathize with him—the brute beast! O, give me the poker! This is the last thing of his I have about me.’ She slipped the gold ring from her third finger³, and threw it on the floor. ‘I’ll smash it!’ she continued, striking it with childish spite. ‘And then I’ll burn it!’ and she took and dropped the misused⁴ article among the coals. ‘There! he shall buy another if he gets me back again. He’d be capable⁵ of coming to seek me, to tease Edgar—I dare not⁶ stay, lest that notion should possess his wicked head! And besides, Edgar has not been kind, has he? And I won’t come suing⁷ for his assistance; nor will I bring him into more trouble—Necessity compelled me to seek shelter here; though if I had not learned he was out of the way⁸, I’d have halted at the kitchen, washed my face, warmed myself, got you to bring what I wanted, and departed again to anywhere out of the reach of my accursed⁹—of that incarnate¹⁰ goblin! Ah, he was in such a fury!—if he had caught me!¹¹ It’s a pity Earnshaw is not his match in strength—I wouldn’t have run, till I’d seen him all but demolished¹², had Hindley been able to do it.’

¹ garment: (now somewhat rhetorical) any article of dress: in *sing.* esp. an outer vestment, a gown or cloak; in *pl.* = clothes..

² for all that: notwithstanding (that), although.

³ third finger: 薬指。※‘finger’ は通常親指以外の指。

⁴ misused: [mɪsjuːzd] improperly used or employed; ill-treated. ここでは、ひどい目に会った。

⁵ capable (of): (in a bad sense) having the effrontery, depravity, wickedness for. ～しかねない。

⁶ dare not (do): とても～できない, ～する勇気がない。※ ‘dare not do’ のかたちでは助動詞として使われている(従って三人称でも ‘dares not’ とはしない)。本動詞としてなら ‘don’t dare (to) do’ になる。助動詞としても本動詞としても使われるのは ‘need’ も同じ。

⁷ sue: to make one’s petition or supplication to a person *for* a person or a thing; to plead, appeal, supplicate. なお ‘come suing’ (お願いに来る) の用法については *Webster 3rd* の定義がもっとも詳しい。長文なので簡単にまとめると、「(目的を示す (1) to 不定詞、(2) 現在分詞または (3) ‘come and’ + 動詞を伴い) その目的にかなった場に向かう (または入る)」例文: (1) he *came to see* us. (2) a man *came asking* after wisdom. (3) *come and help* us set the table.

⁸ out of the way: away from the resort or society of other persons; in a position remote or inconvenient to get at. Edgar は ‘kept his room.’ とあるから、この部屋にはいない(自分の前には現れない)ということ。兄とは顔を合わせたくなかったから好都合だった。

⁹ accursed: execrable, damnable; detestable, hateful. ‘goblin’ にかかる。

¹⁰ incarnate: clothed or invested with flesh; embodied in flesh; in a human (or animal) bodily form. 人間に化けた。

¹¹ he was ... caught me!: ひどく怒っていた。(だから) もし捕まったらどんな目に会うことか! ‘I wonder what would happen (if he had caught me).’ が隠れている。

¹² till I’d ... demolished: (可能なら) 彼 (= Heathcliff) が半殺しの目に会うのを見届けるまでは。

‘Well, don’t talk so fast, Miss,’ I interrupted, ‘you’ll disorder the handkerchief I have tied round your face, and make the cut bleed again—Drink your tea, and take breath, and give over laughing—Laughter is sadly out of place under this roof, and in your condition!’

‘An undeniable truth,’ she replied. ‘Listen to that child! It maintains¹ a constant wail—Send it out of my hearing, for an hour; I shan’t stay any longer.’

I rang the bell, and committed² it to a servant’s care; and then I inquired what had urged her to escape from Wuthering Heights in such an unlikely³ plight⁴—and where she meant to go, as she refused remaining with us?

‘I ought, and I wish to remain,’ answered she, ‘to cheer Edgar and take care of the baby, for two things, and because the Grange is my right home—but I tell you, he wouldn’t let me! Do you think he could bear to see me grow fat, and merry; could bear to think that we were tranquil, and not resolve on poisoning our comfort? Now, I have the satisfaction of being sure that he detests me to the point of its annoying him seriously to have me within ear-shot or eye-sight—I notice, when I enter his presence, the muscles of his countenance are involuntarily distorted into an expression of hatred; partly arising from his knowledge of the good causes I have to feel that sentiment⁵ for him, and partly from original aversion—It is strong enough to make me feel pretty certain that he would not chase me over England, supposing I contrived a clear escape; and therefore I must get quite away. I’ve recovered from my first desire to be killed by him. I’d rather he’d kill himself! He has extinguished my love effectually, and so I’m at my ease. I can recollect yet⁶ how I loved him; and can dimly imagine that I could still be loving him, if—No, no! Even if he had doted⁷ on me, the devilish nature would have revealed its existence, somehow. Catherine had an awfully perverted⁸ taste to esteem him so dearly, knowing him so well—Monster! would that⁹ he could be blotted out¹⁰ of creation, and out of my memory!’

‘Hush, hush! He’s a human being,’ I said. ‘Be more charitable; there are worse men

¹ maintain: to keep up; to continue.

² commit: to give to some one to take care of, keep, or deal with. 託する、任せる。

³ unlikely: improbable, unbelievable.

⁴ plight: a condition, state, or situation, esp. an unfavourable or unfortunate one.

⁵ that sentiment: hatred. (Heathcliff に対する憎しみ)

⁶ yet: still.

⁷ dote: to bestow excessive love or fondness *on* or *upon*; to be foolishly in love (with *upon*, *on*). (p. 57 注 4、p. 92 注 7、p. 149 注 1 参照)

⁸ perverted: turned from the right way, from the proper use, from truth to error, etc.; wicked; distorted; misapplied.

⁹ would that: = (arch.) I wish.

¹⁰ blot out: (fig.) to efface, wipe out of existence, sight, or memory; to annihilate, destroy.

than he is yet!¹

‘He’s not a human being,’ she retorted; ‘and he has no claim on my charity—I gave him my heart, and he took and pinched² it to death; and flung it back to me—people feel with their hearts, Ellen, and since he has destroyed mine, I have not power to feel for him, and I would not, though³ he groaned from this⁴, to his dying day; and wept tears of blood for Catherine! No, indeed⁵, indeed, I wouldn’t!’ And here Isabella began to cry; but, immediately dashing⁶ the water from her lashes, she recommenced.

‘You asked, what has driven me to flight at last? I was compelled to attempt it, because I had succeeded in rousing his rage a pitch⁷ above his malignity⁸. Pulling out the nerves with red-hot pincers⁹ requires more coolness than knocking on the head. He was worked up¹⁰ to forget the fiendish prudence he boasted¹¹ of, and proceeded to murderous violence; I experienced pleasure in being able to exasperate¹² him: the sense of pleasure woke my instinct of self-preservation¹³; so, I fairly¹⁴ broke free, and if ever I come into his hands again, he is welcome¹⁵ to a signal¹⁶ revenge.

¹ yet: used to strengthen a comparative: now more commonly expressed by *even* or *still*. 比較級を強調して「もっと、さらに」

² pinch: to compress between the tips of the finger and thumb, with the teeth, etc., or with any instrument having two jaws or parts between which something may be grasped; to nip, squeeze. (間にはさんで) つぶす (など)。

³ though: even if. この文章は仮定法過去。

⁴ this: ‘this time’; i.e. either, the present time, the time of speaking or writing; or, in narrative, the time just mentioned.

⁵ indeed: in dialogue, used to emphasize the reply (affirmative or negative) to a question or remark: e.g. ‘Yes, indeed!’, ‘No, indeed!’

⁶ dash: to knock, drive, throw, or thrust (away, down, out, etc.) with a violent stroke or collision. (涙を) ぬぐい去る。

⁷ pitch: comparative height or intensity of any quality or attribute; degree, elevation, stage, status, level. Almost always used of a high or intense degree. (より以上の) 程度、度合い。

⁸ malignity: [məˈlɪɡnɪti] Wicked and deep-rooted ill-will or hatred; intense and persistent desire to cause suffering to another person. (根深い) 悪意、憎悪。

⁹ pincers: (pl.) tool for tightly grasping or nipping anything, consisting of two limbs pivoted together, forming a pair of jaws with a pair of handles or levers by which they can be pressed tightly together. ペンチ、やっこのたぐい。

¹⁰ work up: to stir up, arouse, excite, incite (the mind, imagination, etc., or the person) to or into a state or action.

¹¹ boast: to speak vaingloriously, extol oneself; to vaunt, brag; to brag *of*, *about*, glory *in*. 自慢する、得意げに話す。

¹² exasperate: to irritate (a person); to provoke to anger; to enrage, incense.

¹³ self-preservation: the preservation of one’s existence; esp. applied to the natural law or instinct which impels living creatures to take measures to prolong life and avoid injury. ここは「防衛本能」でいいだろう。

¹⁴ fairly: moderately, passably, tolerably. どうかこうにか。

¹⁵ welcome: freely permitted or allowed, cordially invited, (*to do or to have something*). (好きなように) ～してよい。

¹⁶ signal: striking, remarkable, notable, conspicuous.

‘Yesterday, you know, Mr Earnshaw should have been at the funeral¹. He kept himself sober for the purpose—tolerably sober; not going to bed mad², at six o'clock, and getting up drunk at twelve. Consequently, he rose, in suicidal low spirits, as fit for the church, as for a dance³; and instead, he sat down by the fire, and swallowed gin or brandy by tumblerfuls⁴.

‘Heathcliff—I shudder to name him! has been a stranger⁵ in the house from last Sunday till to-day—Whether the angels have fed him, or his kin beneath⁶, I cannot tell; but, he has not eaten a meal with us for nearly a week—He has just come home at dawn, and gone upstairs to his chamber; locking himself in—as if anybody dreamt of coveting⁷ his company! There he has continued, praying like a methodist⁸; only the deity he implored⁹ is senseless dust and ashes; and God, when addressed, was curiously confounded¹⁰ with his own black father! After concluding these precious orisons¹¹—and they lasted generally till he grew hoarse, and his voice was strangled in his throat—he would be off again; always straight down to the Grange! I wonder Edgar did not send for a constable¹², and give him into custody¹³! For me, grieved as I was¹⁴ about Catherine, it was impossible to avoid regarding this season of deliverance from degrading oppression as a holiday.¹⁵

¹ Mr Earnshaw ... funeral: (実際は行かなかったが) 葬式に出るはずだった。【参考】「**should** + 完了不定詞」は、過去において当然行われるべきであった事柄が行われなかったことを表す。(『実例英文法』研究社) ※ここは「～すべき」というより「～するはず」のほうがしっくりする。

² going to bed mad: ‘mad’ な状態で床につく。

³ he rose...dance: 起きたときには自殺しかねないほどの気の沈みようで、舞踏会はもちろん教会へだって行けそうになかった。

⁴ by tumblerfuls: ‘tumbler’ で何杯も。‘by’ は量を示す名詞の複数形を伴い「連続」を表す。
tumbler: a drinking cup, originally having a rounded or pointed bottom, so that it could not be set down until emptied; often of silver or gold; now, a tapering cylindrical, or barrel-shaped, glass cup without a handle or foot, having a heavy flat bottom.

⁵ stranger: ここでは家族に顔を見せなかったこと。

⁶ his kin beneath: fiends in hell. (beneath: beneath the earth; in hell)

⁷ covet: [kái vit] o desire; *esp.* to desire eagerly, to wish *for*, long *for*.

⁸ methodist: a member of any of several Protestant religious bodies (now united) originating in the 18th century evangelistic movement of Charles and John Wesley and George Whitefield.

⁹ the deity he implored: 彼のすがる神 = 故 Catherine. *implore*: to beg or pray for (aid, favour, pardon, etc.) with tearful or touching entreaties; to ask for in supplication; to beseech.

¹⁰ confound: to mix up or mingle so that the elements become difficult to distinguish or impossible to separate; = confuse.

¹¹ orison: a prayer (in late use chiefly in pl.).

¹² constable: an officer of the peace. ここではたぶん ‘Petty or Parish Constable’ (教区の治安ほかいくつかの行政的任務を担当する治安官。1872年に州警察組織に編入されて廃止)。

¹³ custody: the keeping of the officers of justice (for some presumed offence against the law); confinement, imprisonment, duration.

¹⁴ grieved as I was: though I was grieved.

¹⁵ regarding ... oppression: Heathcliff がいないおかげでみじめな目に会わなくてもすむから、こんな日はお休みみたいなものだと考えること。

‘I recovered spirits sufficient to hear Joseph's eternal lectures without weeping; and to move up and down the house, less with the foot of a frightened thief, than formerly. You wouldn't think that I should cry at anything Joseph could say, but he and Hareton are detestable companions. I'd rather sit with Hindley, and hear his awful talk, than with “t' little maister,” and his staunch¹ supporter, that odious² old man!

‘When Heathcliff is in, I'm often obliged to seek the kitchen, and their society, or starve³ among the damp, uninhabited chambers; when he is not, as was the case this week⁴, I establish⁵ a table and chair at one corner of the house fire, and never mind how Mr Earnshaw may occupy himself; and he does not interfere with my arrangements: he is quieter now than he used to be, if no one provokes him; more sullen and depressed, and less furious. Joseph affirms he's sure he's an altered man; that the Lord has touched his heart, and he is saved “so as by fire.”⁶ I'm puzzled to detect⁷ signs of the favourable change, but it is not my business.

‘Yester-evening, I sat in my nook⁸ reading some old books, till late on towards twelve. It seemed so dismal to go upstairs, with the wild snow blowing outside, and my thoughts continually reverting⁹ to the kirkyard and the new-made grave! I dared hardly lift my eyes from the page before me, that melancholy scene so instantly usurped¹⁰ its place.

‘Hindley sat opposite; his head leant on his hand¹¹, perhaps meditating on the same subject. He had ceased drinking at a point below irrationality, and had neither stirred nor

¹ staunch: standing firm and true to one's principles or purpose, not to be turned aside, determined.

² odious: deserving of hatred, hateful; causing or exciting hatred or repugnance, disagreeable, offensive, repulsive; exciting odium.

³ starve: (chiefly *pass. obs. exc. dial*) to cause to die of cold, to kill with cold; also hyperbolically, to numb with cold. 飢えたのではなく凍えたのである。

⁴ as was the case this week: 今週がそうであったように、今週のように。 *case*: an instance or example of the occurrence or existence of a thing (fact, circumstance, etc.). ここでは Heathcliff 不在の「具体例」。

⁵ establish: to place in a secure or permanent position. テーブルと椅子を置くだけにしてはやや大層な表現かと思うが、いったん座ったら当分はてこでも動かぬという構えを示したのだろう。

⁶ “so as by fire”: [Corinthians 3:15] If any man's work shall be burned, he shall suffer loss: but he himself shall be saved; yet so as by fire. (其の工^{わざ}焼けなば損すべし。然れど己^{おのれ}は火より^{のが}脱れ出づる如くして救はれん)

⁷ detect: to discover, find out, ascertain the presence, existence, or fact of (something apt to elude observation). (見逃しがちなこと) の存在を発見する、～に気づく。

⁸ nook: a corner in a room or other enclosed space.

⁹ revert: to return to a subject of thought. 再び～のことを思う。

¹⁰ usurp: to seize or obtain possession of (territory, land, etc.) in an unjust or illegal manner. ここでは比喩的に、(もの悲しい景色が) いやでもそこに浮かんでくる。

¹¹ lean on one's hand: 頭を手にもたせかける、頬杖をつく (両手なら ‘on one's hands’).

spoken during two or three hours. There was no sound through the house, but the moaning wind, which shook the windows every now and then, the faint crackling¹ of the coals, and the click of my snuffers² as I removed at intervals the long wick of the candle. Hareton and Joseph were probably fast asleep in bed. It was very, very sad, and while I read, I sighed, for it seemed as if all joy had vanished from the world, never to be restored.

‘The doleful³ silence was broken, at length, by the sound of the kitchen latch — Heathcliff had returned from his watch earlier than usual, owing, I suppose, to the sudden storm.

‘That entrance was fastened; and we heard him coming round to get in by the other. I rose with an irrepressible expression of what I felt on my lips, which induced my companion, who had been staring towards the door, to turn and look at me.

“‘I’ll keep him out five minutes,” he exclaimed. “You won’t object?”

“No, you may keep him out the whole night, for me⁴,” I answered. “Do! put the key in the lock, and draw the bolts.”

‘Earnshaw accomplished this, ere his guest reached the front; he then came and brought his chair to the other side of my table, leaning over it, and searching in my eyes for a sympathy with the burning hate that gleamed from his: as he both looked and felt like an assassin⁵, he couldn’t exactly find that; but he discovered enough to encourage him to speak.

“You and I,” he said, “have each a great debt⁶ to settle with the man out yonder! If we were neither of us cowards, we might combine⁷ to discharge⁸ it. Are you as soft as your

¹ crackling: the production of a rapid succession of slight cracking sounds. パチパチ小さな音を立てること。

² snuffers: an instrument used for snuffing, or snuffing out, candles, etc. (in later use only in plur. form. (棒の先にベル状の金具のついた蠟燭消しもあるが、ここでは炎の大きさを調整するための) 芯切りばさみ。 (also *a pair of snuffers*). 複数形なのは ‘scissors’ と同じ理屈。

³ doleful: distressful, gloomy, dreary, dismal.

⁴ for me: 私にかまわないわ。 *for*: so far as concerns (a person or thing). (he may do it) for me, i.e. with no opposition from me.

⁵ assassin: [əsæsin] one who undertakes to put another to death by treacherous violence. 刺客、殺し屋。

⁶ debt: that which is owed or due; anything (as money, goods, or service) which one person is under obligation to pay or render to another. ここでは晴らしていない恨みという意味での「借り」。

⁷ combine: to unite together for a common purpose, to co-operate for some end. ここは、二人で組む (組んで~する)。

⁸ discharge: to clear off, or acquit oneself of (an obligation) by fulfilment or performance; to pay (a debt, vow, etc.). 借りを返す。

brother? Are you willing to endure to the last, and not once attempt a repayment¹?”

“I’m weary of enduring now,” I replied, “and I’d be glad of a retaliation² that wouldn’t recoil³ on myself; but treachery⁴, and violence are spears pointed at both ends.—they wound those who resort⁵ to them, worse than their enemies.”

“Treachery and violence are a just return for treachery and violence!” cried Hindley. “Mrs Heathcliff, I’ll ask you to do nothing, but sit still and be dumb—Tell me now, can you? I’m sure you would have as much pleasure as I, in witnessing the conclusion of the fiend’s existence: he’ll be *your* death unless you overreach⁶ him—and he’ll be *my* ruin—Damn the hellish villain! He knocks at the door, as if he were master here already! Promise to hold your tongue, and before that clock strikes—it wants three minutes of one—you’re a free woman!”

‘He took the implements which I described to you in my letter from his breast, and would have turned down⁷ the candle—I snatched it away, however, and seized his arm.

“I’ll not hold my tongue,” I said, “you mustn’t touch him ... Let the door remain shut, and be quiet!”

“No! I’ve formed my resolution, and by God, I’ll execute it!” cried the desperate being. “I’ll do you a kindness in spite of yourself, and Hareton justice!⁸ And you needn’t trouble your head to screen⁹ me, Catherine is gone—Nobody alive would regret me, or be ashamed, though I cut my throat this minute—and it’s time to make an end!”

‘I might as well have struggled with a bear, or reasoned with a lunatic.¹⁰ The only

¹ repayment: the (or an) act of repaying; payment back (of money lent, etc.).

² retaliation: requital, reprisal. 報復。(p. 25 注 3 参照)

³ recoil: to rebound, spring back, or return, to the starting-point or source. (now with on). ‘recoil on me’ わが身に報いの返る。

⁴ treachery: [trétʃəri] deceit, cheating, perfidy; violation of faith or betrayal of trust; perfidious conduct.

⁵ resort: to have recourse to something for assistance or furtherance of an object.

⁶ overreach: to gain an advantage over, get the better of, outdo; to outwit.

⁷ turn down: ランプなら ‘to lower (a lamp, gas) by turning the handle or stop-cock’ (火を弱める)とも取れるが、‘extinguish’ (火を消す) という意味は確認できない。暖炉には石炭が盛んに燃えているのに蠟燭を一本消して存在を隠さねばならぬというのは疑問で、ここは文字どおりに解し、ピストルを取り出したはずみに蠟燭を倒してしまいそうになったことであろう。

⁸ do Hareton justice: Hareton を (この家の後継ぎとして) まっとうに扱ってやる。

⁹ screen: to shield or protect from hostility or impending danger; esp. to save (an offender) from punishment or exposure; to conceal (a person’s offence).

¹⁰ I might...lunatic: Hindley を相手に争ったり説得したりするのは、熊と争ったり狂人を説得したりするようなもの、ということ。

resource left me was to run to a lattice, and warn his intended victim of the fate which awaited him.

“You'd better seek shelter somewhere else to-night!” I exclaimed, in rather¹ a triumphant tone. “Mr Earnshaw has a mind to shoot you, if you persist in endeavouring to enter.”

“You'd better open the door, you—” he answered, addressing me by some elegant term that I don't care to repeat.

“I shall not meddle in the matter,” I retorted again. “Come in and get shot, if you please! I've done my duty.”

With that I shut the window, and returned to my place by the fire; having too small a stock of hypocrisy at my command² to pretend any anxiety for the danger that menaced him.

Earnshaw swore passionately at me; affirming that I loved the villain yet; and calling me all sorts of names³ for the base spirit I evinced⁴. And I, in my secret heart (and conscience⁵ never reproached me) thought what a blessing it would be for *him*, should Heathcliff put him out of misery; and what a blessing for *me*, should he send Heathcliff to his right abode!⁶ As I sat nursing⁷ these reflections, the casement behind me was banged on to the floor by a blow⁸ from the latter individual, and his black countenance looked blighting⁹ through. The stanchions¹⁰ stood too close to suffer¹¹ his shoulders to follow, and I smiled, exulting¹² in my fancied security. His hair and clothes were whitened with snow, and his sharp cannibal¹³ teeth, revealed by cold and wrath, gleamed through the

¹ rather: in a certain degree or measure; to some extent; somewhat, slightly.

² at my command (= at command): under one's control; at one's service or disposal; available to use, spend, etc.

³ call (a person) names: to apply opprobrious names or epithets to (a person). (人を) 口汚くのしる。

⁴ evince: to give tokens of possessing; to reveal the presence of (a quality, condition, feeling); to display, exhibit, manifest. (性質などを) あらわにする、見せる。

⁵ conscience: consciousness of right and wrong; moral sense. 善悪の意識、良心。

⁶ his right abode: つまり地獄 (hell)。

⁷ nurse: to foster or cherish (a feeling, etc.) in one's own heart. (p. 226 注 2 参照)

⁸ was banged on to the floor by a blow: 一撃をくらい ‘bang’ と音を立てて床に叩き落とされた。

⁹ blighting: destroying (as a destroyer, destructively.) 希望を打ち砕くように、ほどの意味か。

¹⁰ stanchion: an upright bar, stay, prop or support of a window. 窓の縦仕切り (mullion)。

¹¹ suffer: to allow or permit a person, animal, or inanimate thing to be or to do so-and-so.

¹² exult: to rejoice exceedingly, be elated or glad; to triumph (*in*).

¹³ cannibal: (attrib.) pertaining to a cannibal, cannibal-like; bloodthirsty. 血に飢えた。名詞だが、後の名詞を修飾し、形容詞的に用いられている。

dark.

“Isabella, let me in, or I'll make you repent!” he “girned¹,” as Joseph calls it.

“I cannot commit murder,” I replied. “Mr Hindley stands sentinel² with a knife, and loaded pistol³.”

“Let me in by the kitchen door!” he said.

“Hindley will be there before me,” I answered. “And that's a poor love of yours⁴, that ⁵cannot bear a shower of snow! We were left at peace in our beds, as long as the summer moon shone, but the moment a blast of winter returns, you must run for shelter! Heathcliff, if I were you, I'd go stretch⁶ myself over her grave, and die like a faithful dog ... The world is surely not worth living in now, is it? You had distinctly impressed on me, the idea that Catherine was the whole joy of your life—I can't imagine how you think of surviving her loss.”

“He's there ... is he?” exclaimed my companion, rushing to the gap. “If I can get my arm out I can hit him!”

‘I'm afraid, Ellen, you'll set me down⁷ as really wicked—but you don't know all, so don't judge! I wouldn't have aided or abetted⁸ an attempt on even⁹ *his* life, for anything¹⁰—Wish that he were dead, I must¹¹; and therefore, I was fearfully disappointed, and

¹ girn: (now only north and Sc.) to show the teeth in rage, pain, disappointment, etc.; to snarl as a dog.

² sentinel: (= sentry) an armed soldier or marine posted at a specified point to keep guard and to prevent the passing of an unauthorized person; (fig.) one who or something which keeps guard like a military sentry. (武装して) 見張る。

³ a knife, and loaded pistol: ‘a curiously constructed pistol, having a double-edged spring knife attached to the barrel’ (p. 197 に登場) ナイフとピストル別々ではなく一体型。

⁴ that's a poor love of yours: あんたの (Catherine への) 愛情もたいしたことがないわね。

⁵ surviving her loss: 彼女に先立たれてもなお生きている。

⁶ stretch: to prostrate (oneself, one's body); to extend (one's limbs) in a reclining posture; refl. to recline at full length. (‘recline oneself’ で) 大の字に手足を伸ばして寝そべる

⁷ set down: to regard (a person) as, take (him) for, consider (him) to be (so-and-so). (p. 170 注 12 参照)

⁸ abet: to encourage, instigate, countenance a crime or offence, or anything disapproved of.

⁹ even: used to introduce an extreme case. ‘even his life’ 命までも。

¹⁰ for anything: for は「交換」。前の wouldn't have と呼応して、(なにと引き換えにしても、なにをもらっても) 決して～しやなかった。

¹¹ Wish that ... I must: ここは「命まで取ろうというのを黙って手助けするつもりなんてなかった」にすぐつついているので、「(でも) 死んでくれたらとは思った、それはたしかよ」というほどの意味であろう。

unnerved¹ by terror for the consequences² of my taunting³ speech, when he flung himself on Earnshaw's weapon and wrenched it from his grasp.

'The charge⁴ exploded, and the knife, in springing back⁵, closed into its owner's wrist. Heathcliff pulled it away by main force, slitting⁶ up the flesh as it passed on, and thrust it dripping⁷ into his pocket. He then took a stone, struck down the division between two windows, and sprang in. His adversary⁸ had fallen senseless with excessive pain, and the flow of blood that gushed from an artery, or a large vein⁹.

'The ruffian kicked and trampled on him, and dashed¹⁰ his head repeatedly against the flags; holding me with one hand, meantime, to prevent me summoning Joseph.

'He exerted preter-human self-denial in abstaining from finishing him, completely; but getting out of breath, he finally desisted¹¹, and dragged the apparently inanimate¹² body on to the settle.

There he tore off the sleeve of Earnshaw's coat, and bound up the wound with brutal roughness, spitting and cursing, during the operation, as energetically as he had kicked before.

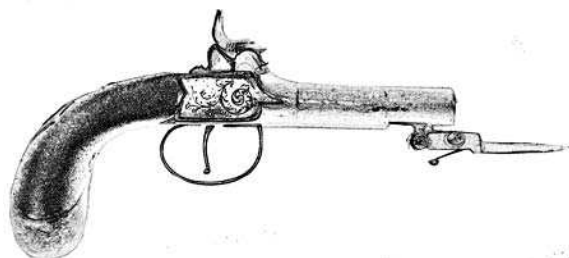
¹ unnerve: to deprive (the mind, etc., or a person) of firmness or courage; to render incapable of acting with ordinary firmness or energy. 気をくじく。

² consequence: a thing or circumstance which follows as an effect or result from something preceding.

³ taunting: that taunts, or reproaches provokingly. あざけるような、挑発的な。

⁴ charge: the quantity of powder, or (more loosely, with sportsmen, etc.) of powder and shot, with which a fire-arm is loaded for one discharge. (一発分の) 火薬 (および弾丸)、弾薬。

⁵ springing back: 銃身に付いたバネ式のナイフ ('a double-edged spring knife attached to the barrel' 前頁注 3 参照) が衝撃でパチンと戻ったこと。下図のごときものか。



⁶ slit: to cut into, or cut open, by means of a sharp instrument or weapon.

⁷ dripping: dripping with blood.

⁸ adversary: an enemy, foe.

⁹ an artery, or a large vein: 動脈か大静脈 (= vena cava [vínə kéivi]).

¹⁰ dash: to strike violently against.

¹¹ desist: [di'zist] to cease (from some action or procedure); to stop, leave off, give over, forbear.

¹² inanimate: [iænimət] (lit. and fig.) without the activity or motion of life; spiritless, inactive, dull. ぐったりとした。

‘Being at liberty¹, I lost no time in seeking the old servant; who, having gathered² by degrees the purport³ of my hasty tale, hurried below, gasping, as he descended the steps two at once.

“Whet is thur tuh do, nah? whet is thur tuh do, nah?”⁴

“‘There’s this to do,” thundered Heathcliff, “that your master’s mad; and should he last another month, I’ll have⁵ him to an asylum⁶. And how the devil did you come⁷ to fasten me out, you toothless hound? Don’t stand muttering and mumbling there. Come, I’m not going to nurse⁸ him. Wash that stuff⁹ away; and mind the sparks of your candle—it is more than half brandy!”

“Und soa, yah been murthering¹⁰ on him?” exclaimed Joseph, lifting his hands and eyes in horror. “If iver Aw seed a seeght loike this!¹¹ May the Lord—”

‘Heathcliff gave him a push on to his knees, in the middle of the blood, and flung a towel to him; but instead of proceeding to dry it up, he joined his hands, and began a prayer which excited my laughter from its odd phraseology¹². I was in the condition of mind to be shocked at nothing; in fact, I was as reckless¹³ as some malefactors¹⁴ show themselves at the foot of the gallows.

“Oh, I forgot you,” said the tyrant. “You shall do that. Down with¹⁵ you! And you

¹ at liberty: free from captivity or restraint.

² gather: 意味を汲み取る、察する。(p. 223 注 2 参照)

³ purport: meaning, substance, sense.

⁴ whet is thur tuh do, now?: what is there to do, now? こりゃあなんの騒ぎだ? (to do: ado, work, business, bustle, fuss. p. 183 注 7 参照)

⁵ have: to ‘get’ into a place or state; to cause to come or go.

⁶ asylum: [əˈsaɪləm] a benevolent institution affording shelter and support to some class of the afflicted, the unfortunate, or destitute; e.g. a ‘lunatic asylum,’ to which the term is sometimes popularly restricted.

⁷ come: to be brought in the course of events; to grow, arrive at, attain to (a specified state or stage). ‘to come to do’ のかたちで、～するに至る。

⁸ nurse: to wait upon, attend to (a person who is ill).

⁹ that stuff: Hindley’s blood.

¹⁰ yah been murthering: you’ve been murdering.

¹¹ If iver ... this!: If ever I saw a sight like this! まさかこんなざまを見ようとは (とても信じられない) ! 【類例】JOHN O’KEEFFE *The Highland Reel* Well, if ever I saw such capers!

¹² phraseology: the choice or arrangement of words and phrases in the expression of ideas; manner or style of expression. ことばづかい、いい回し。

¹³ reckless: disregarding the consequences or danger etc. ここは「ふてぶてしい」が適切か。

¹⁴ malefactor: a felon, a criminal.

¹⁵ down with: on or toward the ground or into a lower position. 体を ‘down’ させること。(仕事にとりかかると同時に) さっさとしゃがめ!

conspire¹ with him against me, do you, viper²? There, that is work fit for you!”

‘He shook me till my teeth rattled³, and pitched⁴ me beside Joseph, who steadily concluded his supplications⁵, and then rose, vowing he would set off for the Grange directly. Mr Linton was a magistrate, and though he had fifty wives dead⁶, he should inquire into this.

‘He was so obstinate in his resolution that Heathcliff deemed⁷ it expedient⁸ to compel, from my lips, a recapitulation⁹ of what had taken place; standing over me, heaving with malevolence, as I reluctantly delivered the account in answer to his questions.

‘It required a great deal of labour to satisfy the old man that Heathcliff was not the aggressor¹⁰; especially with my hardly wrung replies¹¹. However, Mr Earnshaw soon convinced him that he was alive still; Joseph hastened to administer¹² a dose of spirits, and by their succour¹³ his master presently regained motion and consciousness.

‘Heathcliff, aware that his opponent was ignorant of the treatment received while insensible, called him deliriously¹⁴ intoxicated; and said he should not notice¹⁵ his atrocious conduct further, but advised him to get to bed. To my joy, he left us, after giving this judicious counsel¹⁶, and Hindley stretched himself on the hearth-stone. I departed to

¹ conspire: to combine privily for an evil or unlawful purpose; to agree together to do something criminal, illegal, or reprehensible (esp. to commit treason or murder, excite sedition, etc.); to plot (*with, against, to do something*). ぐるになって (悪事) をたくらむ。

² viper: any venomous, dangerous, or repulsive snake or serpent; (fig.) a venomous, malignant, or spiteful person; a villain or scoundrel.

³ rattle: to give out a rapid succession of short sharp sounds, usually in consequence of rapid agitation and of striking against each other or against some hard dry body. (固いもの同士が当たって) ガタガタ (ここは歯だから、ガチガチ) 音を立てる。

⁴ pitch: to put (anything) in a fixed or definite place or position, so as to stand, lie, or remain firmly or permanently; to set, fix, plant, place. さすがに放り投げたのではなく、むりやり Joseph のとなりまで引っばっていき、押さえつけてしゃがませたのだろう。

⁵ supplication: (a) humble prayer addressed to God (or a deity); chiefly *pl.* (p. 119 注 8 参照)

⁶ though he had fifty wives dead: Edgar が妻に死なれて喪中であることをおおげさにいったもの。

⁷ deem: to form the opinion, to be of opinion; to judge, conclude, think, consider, hold.

⁸ expedient: conducive to advantage in general, or to a definite purpose; fit, proper, or suitable to the circumstances of the case. 話が早い。

⁹ recapitulation: a summing up or brief repetition.

¹⁰ aggressor: he who sets upon, attacks, or assails another; he who makes the first attack, or takes the first step in provoking a quarrel. 先に手を出した者。

¹¹ my hardly wrung replies: replies forcibly wrung from me.

¹² administer: to give (medicine to). ここではたぶん ‘brandy’ を飲ませたのだろう。

¹³ succour: [sʌkə] aid, help, assistance.

¹⁴ deliriously: madly, frantically.

¹⁵ notice: to make mention of; to remark upon; to refer to, speak of (something observed). ‘he should not notice his atrocious conduct’ の ‘he = Heathcliff’、‘his = Hindley’s’。

¹⁶ counsel: advice, direction.

my own room, marvelling¹ that I had escaped so easily.

‘This morning, when I came down, about half-an-hour before noon, Mr Earnshaw was sitting by the fire, deadly sick; his evil genius², almost as gaunt and ghastly, leant against the chimney. Neither appeared inclined to dine; and, having waited till all was cold on the table, I commenced alone.

‘Nothing hindered me from eating heartily; and I experienced a certain sense of satisfaction and superiority, as, at intervals, I cast a look towards my silent companions, and felt the comfort of a quiet conscience within me.

‘After I had done, I ventured on³ the unusual liberty of drawing near the fire, going round Earnshaw's seat, and kneeling in the corner beside him.

‘Heathcliff did not glance my way, and I gazed up, and contemplated⁴ his features, almost as confidently as if they had been turned to stone. His forehead, that I once thought so manly, and that I now think so diabolical, was shaded with a heavy cloud; his basilisk⁵ eyes were nearly quenched⁶ by sleeplessness—and weeping, perhaps, for the lashes were wet then: his lips devoid of their ferocious sneer⁷, and sealed in an expression of unspeakable sadness. Had it been another⁸, I would have covered my face in the presence of such grief. In his case, I was gratified; and, ignoble⁹ as it seems to insult a fallen enemy, I couldn't miss this chance of sticking in a dart¹⁰; his weakness was the only time when I could taste the delight of paying wrong for wrong.’

‘Fie¹¹, fie, Miss!’ I interrupted. ‘One might suppose you had never opened a Bible in

¹ marvel: (now only literary) to be filled with wonder or astonishment; to be struck with surprise. (In mod. use a stronger word than *wonder*.)

² his evil genius: i.e. Heathcliff. (Hindley にとりついた悪魔)

³ venture on: to attempt or undertake (something of a dangerous or difficult nature) without assurance of success; to accept or take the risk of (an action, course, or proceeding); to dare to do, make, or take (something), realizing that a risk is being run.

⁴ contemplate: to look at with continued attention, gaze upon, view, observe. (p. 180 注 10 参照)

⁵ basilisk: [bæz(s)ɪlɪsk] a fabulous reptile, also called a cockatrice, alleged to be hatched by a serpent from a cock's egg; ancient authors stated that its hissing drove away all other serpents, and that its breath, and even its look, was fatal. (バジリスクの目のように) 射すくめるような。

⁶ quench: to put out, extinguish (fire, flame, or light, *lit.* or *fig.*).

⁷ sneer: a look or expression implying derision, contempt, or scorn.

⁸ another: another person. つまり、Heathcliff でなく別の人だったら。

⁹ ignoble: (of persons, their actions, aims, desires, etc.) not noble in disposition, nature, or quality; mean, base, sordid; dishonourable.

¹⁰ dart: a pointed missile weapon thrown by the hand; a light spear or javelin; also applied to pointed missiles in general, including arrows, etc.

¹¹ Fie!: an exclamation expressing, in early use, disgust or indignant reproach.

your life. If God afflict¹ your enemies, surely that ought to suffice² you. It is both mean and presumptuous to add your torture to his!

‘In general I’ll allow that it would be, Ellen,’ she continued. ‘But what misery laid on Heathcliff could content me, unless I have a hand in it? I’d rather he suffered *less*, if I might cause his sufferings, and he might *know* that I was the cause.³ Oh, I owe him so much! On only one condition⁴ can I hope to forgive him. It is, if I may take an eye for an eye, a tooth for a tooth, for every wrench⁵ of agony, return a wrench, reduce him to my level. As he was the first to injure, make him the first to implore pardon; and then—why, then, Ellen, I might show you some generosity. But it is utterly impossible I can ever⁶ be revenged, and therefore I cannot forgive him. Hindley wanted some water, and I handed him a glass, and asked him how he was.

“Not as ill as I wish,” he replied. “But leaving out⁷ my arm, every inch of me is as sore as if I had been fighting with a legion⁸ of imps⁹.”

“Yes, no wonder,” was my next remark. “Catherine used to boast that she stood between you and bodily harm—she meant that certain persons would not hurt you, for fear of offending her. It’s well people don’t *really* rise from their grave, or, last night, she might have witnessed¹⁰ a repulsive¹¹ scene! Are not you bruised¹², and cut over your chest and shoulders?”

¹ afflict: to distress with bodily or mental suffering; to trouble grievously, torment.

² suffice: (arch.) to be enough for; to meet the desires, needs, or requirements of (a person); to satisfy.

³ I’d rather...the cause.: Isabella 自身が彼を苦しめ、そのことを彼にわからせることさえできれば、彼の苦しみが今のそれより少なくともいい、ということ。

⁴ condition: something demanded or required as a prerequisite to the granting or performance of something else; a provision, a stipulation. ～に必要な前提条件。

⁵ wrench: a sudden or sharp twist or jerk causing pain or injury to a limb, person, etc.; a sprain, strain.

⁶ ever: at any time; throughout all time, eternally; throughout all past or all future time. ‘utterly impossible’ とあるから結局 ‘never’ で、未来永劫恨みを晴らせない。

⁷ leaving out: except.

⁸ legion: [lɪːdʒən] (Rom. Antiq.) a body of infantry in the Roman army, composed of different numbers at different periods, ranging from 3,000 in early times to 6,000 under Marius, and combined usually with a considerable complement of cavalry; a vast host or multitude (of persons or things): freq. of angels or spirits, with reminiscence of Matt. xxvi. 53 (Thinkest thou that I cannot now pray to my Father, and he shall presently give me more than twelve legions of angels? 我が父に請ひて、十二軍に餘る御使を今あたへらるること能はずと思ふか)。

⁹ imp: a little devil or demon, an evil spirit.

¹⁰ witness: to experience by personal (esp. ocular) observation; to be present as an observer at; to see with one’s own eyes. (In loose writing often used merely as a synonym of ‘see’.)

¹¹ repulsive: repellent to the mind; disgusting.

¹² bruise: [brúːz] to injure by a blow which discolours the skin but does not lacerate it, and breaks no bones; to contuse. (鋭利なものではなく鈍器様のもので) 打撲傷を与える。

“I can't say,” he answered; “but what do you mean? Did he dare to strike me when I was down?”

“He trampled on, and kicked you, and dashed you on the ground¹,” I whispered. “And his mouth watered² to tear you with his teeth; because he's only half a man—not so much³.”

Mr Earnshaw looked up, like me, to the countenance of our mutual foe⁴; who, absorbed in his anguish, seemed insensible to anything around him; the longer he stood, the plainer his reflections⁵ revealed their blackness through his features.

“Oh, if God would but give me strength to strangle him in my last agony, I'd go to hell with joy,” groaned the impatient man, writhing to rise, and sinking back in despair, convinced of his inadequacy for the struggle.

“Nay, it's enough that he has murdered one of you,” I observed aloud⁶. “At the Grange, every one knows your sister would have been living now, had it not been for Mr Heathcliff. After all, it is preferable to be hated than loved by him. When I recollect how happy we were—how happy Catherine was before he came—I'm fit⁷ to curse the day⁸.”

Most likely Heathcliff noticed more the truth of what was said, than the spirit⁹ of the person who said it. His attention was roused, I saw, for his eyes rained down tears among the ashes, and he drew his breath in suffocating¹⁰ sighs.

¹ ground: the floor. (p. 116 注 1 参照)

² water: (of the mouth) to secrete abundant saliva in the anticipation of appetizing food or delicacies.

³ not so much: less than half.

⁴ foe: one who hates and seeks to injure another; a personal enemy. 他人に憎悪・害意を抱く者、敵。

⁵ reflection: a thought or idea occurring to, or occupying, the mind.

⁶ I observed aloud: 思ったことを口に出した。‘Nay, it's enough’ は「あなたたち兄妹のうち一人をあの人が殺しただけでもうたくさん。あなたまで死ぬことはないわ」ということ。

⁷ fit: inclined, disposed; (now chiefly *colloq.* and *dial.* in stronger sense) angry or troubled enough to (do something desperate or violent)

⁸ the day: the day he came back.

⁹ spirit: mettle; vigour of mind; ardour; courage; disposition or readiness to assert oneself or to hold one's own; the disposition, feeling, or frame of mind with which something is done, considered, or viewed. ここでは、思ったことをずばりといつてのけた度胸。

¹⁰ suffocating: that causes suffocation; stifling. ここは、息を吸うたびに喉で止まりそのまま溜息として出るのだから、「あえぐような」に近い。

I stared full¹ at him, and laughed scornfully. The clouded windows² of hell flashed a moment towards me; the fiend which usually looked out, however, was so dimmed³ and drowned⁴ that I did not fear to hazard⁵ another sound of derision⁶.

“Get up, and begone out of my sight,” said the mourner⁷.

I guessed he uttered those words, at least, though his voice was hardly intelligible⁸.

“I beg your pardon,” I replied. “But I loved Catherine too; and her brother requires attendance⁹ which, for her sake, I shall supply. Now that she's dead, I see her in Hindley; Hindley has exactly her eyes, if you had not tried to gouge¹⁰ them out, and made them black and red, and her—”

“Get up, wretched idiot, before I stamp you to death!” he cried, making a movement that caused me to make one¹¹ also.

“But, then,” I continued, holding myself ready to¹² flee; “if poor Catherine had trusted you, and assumed¹³ the ridiculous, contemptible, degrading title of Mrs Heathcliff, she would soon have presented a similar picture! *She* wouldn't have borne your abominable behaviour quietly; her detestation and disgust must have found voice¹⁴.”

The back of the settle and Earnshaw's person interposed between me and him; so

¹ full: (of position and direction) exactly, directly, straight. つまり、目をそらさずまっすぐに。

² windows: = eyes.

³ dim: to make dim, obscure, or dull; to render less clear, or distinct; to becloud (the eyes).

⁴ drown: to lay under or cover with water, etc.

⁵ hazard: to venture upon; to venture to offer (a statement, conjecture, or the like).

⁶ another sound of derision: = another derisive laughter.

⁷ mourner: one who mourns, laments, or grieves; spec. one who mourns the death of a friend or relation. (親しい人の死を) 悼む人。(p. 66 注 4 参照)

⁸ intelligible: capable of being understood; that may be apprehended by the intellect; comprehensible. ここでは、聞こえなかったのではなく、なにをいっているのか不明瞭でよくわからなかったのである。

⁹ attendance: the action or condition of waiting upon, accompanying, or escorting a person, to do him service; ministration, assiduous service. (怪我をした Hindley に) 付き添って手当すること、介抱すること。

¹⁰ gouge: [gáudʒ] to cut or force out with or as with a gouge (= a chisel with a concave blade); to push out (a person's eye) with the thumb (*out*). 目玉をえぐり出す。

¹¹ one: = movement. Heathcliff が迫ってきたので、そのぶん Isabella が後退した。

¹² hold oneself ready to (do): ~しようと身構える。手元の英米の辞書には熟語としては見あたらないが、‘hold: to tense muscles in order to brace (oneself) <had to ~ himself against the swaying and bumping of the coach>’ という *Webster 3rd* の定義がもっとも近い。

¹³ assume: to take to oneself formally (the insignia of office or symbol of a vocation); to undertake (an office or duty). ここでは、夫人という肩書をつけること。

¹⁴ her detestation ... voice: 嫌気がさしてうんざりしたとはっきりいったにちがいないわ。

instead of endeavouring to reach me, he snatched a dinner knife from the table and flung it at my head. It struck beneath my ear, and stopped the sentence I was uttering; but, pulling it out, I sprang to the door, and delivered another¹ which I hope went a little deeper than his missile.

The last glimpse I caught of him was a furious rush, on his part, checked by the embrace of his host; and both fell locked together on the hearth.

In my flight through the kitchen I bid Joseph speed to his master; I knocked over Hareton, who was hanging a litter² of puppies from a chair-back in the doorway; and, blest³ as a soul escaped from purgatory⁴, I bounded, leaped, and flew down the steep road: then, quitting⁵ its windings⁶, shot direct across the moor, rolling over banks, and wading⁷ through marshes; precipitating myself⁸, in fact, towards the beacon light⁹ of the Grange. And far rather would I be condemned¹⁰ to a perpetual dwelling in the infernal regions¹¹, than even for one night, abide beneath the roof of Wuthering Heights again.'

Isabella ceased speaking, and took a drink of tea; then she rose, and bidding me put on her bonnet, and a great shawl I had brought, and turning a deaf ear to¹² my entreaties for her to remain another hour, she stepped on to a chair¹³, kissed Edgar's and Catherine's portraits, bestowed a similar salute¹⁴ on me, and descended to the carriage, accompanied by Fanny, who yelped wild with joy at recovering her mistress. She was driven away, never to revisit this neighbourhood; but a regular correspondence was established between her and my master when things were more settled.

¹ another: another sentence.

² litter: the whole number of young brought forth at a birth.

³ blest: (= blessed) enjoying supreme felicity; happy, fortunate.

⁴ purgatory: a condition or place of spiritual purging and purification. 死後罪が浄化されるまでとどまる煉獄。

⁵ quit: to leave, go away or depart from (a place or person); to part or separate from (a thing).

⁶ winding: a curved, sinuous, or meandering line, path, passage, or the like; esp. *pl.* meanderings, twists and turns.

⁷ wade: to walk through water or any liquid or soft substance which impedes motion.

⁸ precipitate: to cause to move, pass, act, or proceed very rapidly; to hasten, hurry, urge on.

⁹ beacon light: 目印となる明かり。

¹⁰ condemn: to give judicial sentence against, esp. with the penalty expressed, as *condemn to death*, *condemn to be beheaded*.

¹¹ infernal regions: hell. 嵐が丘でもう一晩でも過ごすより、永久に地獄に住めと宣告されたほうがずっとまし、ということ。

¹² turning a deaf ear to: not giving (an) ear to. ~には耳を貸そうともせず。 *deaf* [dɛf] lacking, or defective in, the sense of hearing.

¹³ stepped on to a chair: 肖像画に届かないので椅子に乗った

¹⁴ salute: a kiss, by way of salutation. 挨拶としてのキス。ここでは別れのキス。

I believe her new abode was in the south, near London; there she had a son born, a few months subsequent to her escape. He was christened Linton, and, from the first, she reported him to be an ailing, peevish¹ creature.

Mr Heathcliff, meeting me one day in the village, inquired where she lived. I refused to tell. He remarked that it was not of any moment², only she must beware of coming to her brother; she should not be with him, if he had to keep her himself.³

Though I would give no information, he discovered, through some of the other servants, both her place of residence, and the existence of the child. Still he didn't molest⁴ her; for which forbearance⁵ she might thank his aversion, I suppose.

He often asked about the infant, when he saw me; and on hearing its name, smiled grimly, and observed:

‘They wish me to hate it⁶ too, do they?’

‘I don't think they wish you to know any thing about it,’ I answered.

‘But I'll have it,’ he said, ‘when I want it. They may reckon on⁷ that!’

Fortunately, its mother died before the time arrived, some thirteen years after the decease of Catherine, when Linton was twelve, or a little more.

On the day succeeding Isabella's unexpected visit, I had no opportunity of speaking to my master: he shunned⁸ conversation, and was fit for discussing nothing. When I could get him to listen, I saw it pleased him that his sister had left her husband, whom he abhorred⁹ with an intensity which the mildness of his nature would scarcely seem to allow.

¹ peevish: morose, querulous, irritable, ill-tempered, childishly fretful.

² moment: importance. ‘of (great, little, any, etc.) moment’ のかたちで使われる。

³ she should ... himself: (あいつが戻ってきたら義務として) おれ (Heathcliff) が面倒をみなくちゃならないとしても、やつ (Edgar) のところにだけはやらん、ということ。

⁴ molest: [məlést] (now almost exclusively in negative contexts.) to interfere or meddle with (a person) injuriously or with hostile intent.

⁵ forbearance: indulgence, lenity. ここでは、放任。

⁶ it: (ここでは性別は明らかだが) 性別が特定できぬか問題とならぬ場合、人にも ‘it’ を用いることがある。これにつづくセリフ中の ‘it’ も同じ。「その子」あたりが適当。

⁷ reckon on: to count, depend, or rely, as in expectation. きっとそうするから待っているがいい→覚悟しておくがいい。

⁸ shun: to avoid (in mod. prose use always to avoid persistently or habitually) from repugnance, fear, or caution.

⁹ abhor: [ə(æ)bhó:] to regard with horror, extreme repugnance or disgust; to hate utterly, loathe, abominate. 忌み嫌う。

So deep and sensitive was his aversion¹, that he refrained from going anywhere where he was likely to see or hear of Heathcliff. Grief, and that² together, transformed him into a complete hermit³: he threw up his office of magistrate, ceased even to attend church, avoided the village on all occasions⁴, and spent a life of entire seclusion within the limits of his park and grounds: only varied⁵ by solitary rambles on the moors, and visits to the grave of his wife, mostly at evening, or early morning, before other wanderers were abroad⁶.

But he was too good⁷ to be thoroughly unhappy long. *He* didn't pray for Catherine's soul to haunt him: Time brought resignation, and a melancholy⁸ sweeter than common joy. He recalled her memory with ardent⁹, tender love, and hopeful aspiring¹⁰ to the better world, where he doubted not she was gone.

And he had earthly consolation and affections, also. For a few days, I said, he seemed regardless of the puny successor to the departed: that coldness melted as fast as snow in April, and ere the tiny thing could stammer¹¹ a word or totter¹² a step, it wielded a despot's sceptre¹³ in his heart.

It was named Catherine, but he never called it the name in full, as he had never called the first Catherine short, probably because Heathcliff had a habit of doing so. The little one was always Cathy, it formed to him a distinction from the mother, and yet, a connection with her; and his attachment sprang from its relation to her, far more than

¹ aversion: [əvəːʃən] a fixed, habitual dislike; an antipathy. 目をそむけることから、嫌悪、反感。

² that: 前文の内容を指す。

³ hermit: a person living in solitude.

⁴ on all occasions: at all times, without exception.

⁵ vary: to cause to change or alter; to introduce changes or alterations into (something). ここでは、'only varied by' で、「その習慣を破るのは～するときだけ」。

⁶ abroad: out of one's house or abode; out of doors; out in the open air.

⁷ good: (of state or condition, health, order, etc.) sound, unimpaired; (of state of mind, courage, spirits) not depressed or dejected. (善良な、ではなく) 健全な。

⁸ melancholy: a tender or pensive sadness. 物思いにふけること。

⁹ ardent: glowing with passion, animated by keen desire.

¹⁰ aspiring: aspiration, steadfast upward desire, longing.

¹¹ stammer: *vi.* to falter or stumble in one's speech; esp. to make one or more involuntary repetitions of a consonant or vowel before being able to pass from it to the following sound; *vt.* to utter or say with a stammer. ここは後者 (他動詞)。どもってということだが、ここでは赤ん坊から舌が回らず片言をいうこと。

¹² totter: *vi.* to walk or move with unsteady steps; to go shakily or feebly; to toddle; *vt.* to make (one's way) tottering. よちよち歩きをする。'stammer a word or totter a step' は、それぞれ 'a word' (まだ一言も) と 'a step' (まだ一歩も) を強調するために他動詞を使ったもの。

¹³ wielded a despot's sceptre: 暴君の権杖をふるった、つまり暴君のように支配した。sceptre: an ornamental rod or wand (いずれも「杖」often of gold and jewelled) borne in the hand as a symbol of regal or imperial authority.

from its being his own.¹

I used to draw² a comparison between him, and Hindley Earnshaw, and perplex myself to explain satisfactorily, why their conduct was so opposite in similar circumstances. They had both been fond husbands, and were both attached to their children; and I could not see how they shouldn't both have taken the same road, for good or evil³. But, I thought in my mind, Hindley, with apparently the stronger head⁴, has shown himself sadly the worse and the weaker man. When his ship struck, the captain abandoned his post; and the crew, instead of trying to save her, rushed into riot, and confusion, leaving no hope for their luckless vessel. Linton, on the contrary, displayed the true courage of a loyal and faithful soul: he trusted God; and God comforted him. One hoped, and the other despaired: they chose their own lots, and were righteously⁵ doomed to endure them⁶.

But you'll not want to hear my moralizing⁷, Mr Lockwood: you'll judge as well as I can, all these things; at least, you'll think you will, and that's the same.

The end of Earnshaw was what might have been expected; it followed fast on his sister's; there were scarcely six months between them. We at the Grange, never got a very succinct⁸ account of his state preceding it; all that I did learn, was on occasion of going to aid in the preparations for the funeral. Mr Kenneth came to announce the event to my master.

'Well, Nelly,' said he, riding into the yard, one morning, too early not to alarm me with an instant presentiment of bad news⁹. 'It's yours and my turn¹⁰ to go into mourning at

¹ his attachment ... own: わが子だからというより、'its relation to her' (その子が亡き妻の子であること) ゆえに愛着が湧いたのだということ。

² draw: to frame, make, formulate, lay down, institute (comparisons, contrasts, distinctions, etc.) 比較する、対比する。つまり線を引いて (draw) ちがいを明らかにすること。

³ for good or evil: 良きにつけ悪しきにつけ。

⁴ a stronger head: (二人のうちでは) よりしっかりした人物。OEDは '*head*: put for the person himself: in reference to his mind or disposition, or to some quality or attribute.' と定義する。ランダムハウス英和第2版は「《能力・気質・地位などを表す語と共に用いて》人: wise [dull] ~s 賢明 [愚か] な人々」とする。

⁵ righteously: (now *rare*) rightfully, properly, deservedly. ここでは、自ら選択した以上、それにふさわしくそれぞれの運命に耐える定めであったということ。

⁶ them: = their own lots.

⁷ moralizing: moral reflection; an instance of this. 説教めいた話。

⁸ succinct: expressed in few words; brief and concise.

⁹ too early ... bad news: あまりにも早い時間でしたから、すぐに悪い知らせだとピンときてドキドキしました。

¹⁰ turn: the time for action or proceeding of any kind which comes round to each individual of a series in succession; (each or any one's) recurring occasion of action, etc. in a series of acts done, or to be done, by (or to) a number in rotation. 回り持ちでやってくることをするとき、(誰々の) 番。

present. 'Who's given us the slip¹ now, do you think?'

'Who?' I asked in a flurry².

'Why, guess!' he returned, dismounting, and slinging his bridle on a hook³ by the door. 'And nip⁴ up the corner of your apron. I'm certain you'll need it.'

'Not Mr Heathcliff, surely?' I exclaimed.

'What! would you have tears for him?' said the doctor. 'No, Heathcliff's a tough young fellow; he looks blooming⁵ to-day—I've just seen him. He's rapidly regaining flesh since he lost his better half⁶.'

'Who is it, then, Mr Kenneth?' I repeated impatiently.

'Hindley Earnshaw! Your old friend Hindley—' he replied. 'And my wicked gossip⁷, though he's been too wild for me this long while. There! I said we should draw water⁸— But cheer up! He died true to his character⁹—drunk as a lord¹⁰. Poor lad; I'm sorry, too. One can't help missing an old companion; though he had the worst tricks¹¹ with him that ever man imagined and has done me many a rascally turn¹²—he's barely twenty-seven, it seems, that's your own age; who would have thought you were born in one¹³ year!'

I confess this blow was greater to me than the shock of Mrs Linton's death: ancient associations lingered round my heart; I sat down in the porch, and wept as for a blood

¹ give (one) the slip: to evade or escape from (a person). ここでは、われわれのもとを去ってあの世へ行った、この世を去った。

² in a flurry: あわてて、狼狽して。

³ hook: a bridle-hook. (p. 182 注 9 参照)

⁴ nip: to pinch, squeeze sharply, bite. エプロンの端っこをつまんで (涙を拭く用意を下さい)。

⁵ blooming: (fig.) in the bloom of health and beauty, in the prime of youth; flourishing.

⁶ better half: *orig. my better half*, the more than half of my being; said of a very close and intimate friend; esp. (after Sidney) used for 'my husband' or 'wife'; now, jocularly appropriated to the latter.

⁷ gossip: a familiar acquaintance, friend, chum. (formerly applied to both sexes, now only to women.)

⁸ draw water: to shed tears.

⁹ true to his character: あの男らしく。 *true to*: consistent with, exactly agreeing with.

¹⁰ drunk as a lord: completely intoxicated.

¹¹ trick: 「愚行」 (usually contemptuous or depreciative.) a capricious, foolish, or stupid act; a thing done without full thought or consideration. 飲酒癖などの「悪癖」 (usually, a bad or unpleasant habit.) a particular habit, way, or mode of acting; a characteristic quality, trait, practice, or custom. とも取れよう。

¹² turn: an act of good or ill will, or that does good or harm to another. 'to do me a rascally turn' なら、私をひどい目に会わせる。(p. 60 注 8、p. 125 注 6、p. 165 注 3 参照)

¹³ one: the same.

relation, desiring Mr Kenneth to get another servant to introduce him to the master.

I could not hinder¹ myself from pondering on the question—‘Had he had fair play?’² Whatever I did, that idea would bother me: it was so tiresomely pertinacious³ that I resolved on requesting leave⁴ to go to Wuthering Heights, and assist in the last duties to the dead. Mr Linton was extremely reluctant to consent, but I pleaded eloquently for the friendless condition in which he lay; and I said my old master and foster-brother⁵ had a claim⁶ on my services as strong as his own. Besides, I reminded him that the child, Hareton was his wife's nephew; and, in the absence of nearer kin, he ought to act as its guardian; and he ought to and must inquire how the property was left, and look over the concerns⁷ of his brother-in-law.

He was unfit for attending⁸ to such matters then, but he bid me speak to his lawyer; and, at length, permitted me to go. His lawyer had been Earnshaw's also: I called at the village, and asked him to accompany me. He shook his head, and advised that Heathcliff should be let alone; affirming, if the truth were known⁹, Hareton would be found little else than a beggar¹⁰.

‘His father died in debt¹¹,’ he said; ‘the whole property is mortgaged¹², and the sole chance for the natural¹³ heir is to allow¹⁴ him an opportunity of creating some interest in the creditor's heart, that he may be inclined to deal leniently towards him.’

¹ hinder: to keep back, delay, or stop in action; to put obstacles in the way of; to impede, deter, obstruct, prevent. ‘to hinder a person from or in doing something’ のかたちで、人が～するのをさまたげる。

² fair play: reasonable treatment or behaviour. つまり ‘foul play’ (暴力沙汰) が原因で死んだのではないかと疑ったのである。

³ pertinacious: [pəːtɪnɪʃəs] persistent or stubborn in holding to one's own opinion or design; resolute; obstinate.

⁴ leave: permission asked for or granted to do something. (～してよいという) 許可。

⁵ foster-brother: a male child nursed at the same breast as, or reared together with, another of different parentage. 乳兄弟。

⁶ claim: a right or title to a thing (*to, on*).

⁷ concerns: *pl.* affairs. 諸事、雑事。

⁸ attend: to turn the mind to, give consideration or pay heed to, regard, consider (*to*).

⁹ if the truth were known: 真実が (世間に) 知れると。

¹⁰ little else than a beggar: ほとんど乞食以外のものではない、乞食も同然。

¹¹ died in debt: 借金 (負債) を残して死んだ。

¹² mortgage: [mɔːɡɪdʒ] to make over (property, esp. houses or land) as security for a money debt, on condition that if the debt is discharged the grant shall be void. 抵当に入れる。

¹³ natural: *obs.* (of children) actually begotten by one (in contrast to adopted, etc.), and especially in lawful wedlock; hence freq. = legitimate. この語義は ‘obsolete’ (廃用) とされるが、‘In later use denoting a mere blood-kinship not legally recognized; hence, illegitimate, bastard.’ 「(私生児であれ) 血のつながった、庶出の」は該当しないから「嫡出の」が適切だろう。

¹⁴ allow: to give, or let any one have, as his share, or as appropriate to his needs. ここは「債権者 (Heathcliff) がいくらかでも Hareton の身の上を案ずる機会をもうけて、情けをかけようという気にさせる」ということ。

When I reached the Heights, I explained that I had come to see¹ everything carried on decently, and Joseph, who appeared in sufficient distress, expressed satisfaction at my presence. Mr Heathcliff said he did not perceive that I was wanted, but I might stay and order the arrangements for the funeral, if I chose.

‘Correctly,’ he remarked, ‘that fool’s body should be buried at the cross-roads², without ceremony of any kind—I happened to leave him ten minutes, yesterday afternoon; and in that interval, he fastened the two doors of the house³ against me, and he has spent the night in drinking himself to death deliberately!⁴ We broke in this morning, for we heard him snorting like a horse; and there he was, laid over the settle—flaying⁵ and scalping⁶ would not have wakened him—I sent for Kenneth, and he came; but not till the beast had changed into carrion⁷—he was both dead and cold, and stark⁸; and so you’ll allow⁹, it was useless making more stir about him!’

The old servant confirmed this statement, but muttered,

‘Aw’d rayther he’d goan hisseln fur t’ doctor! Aw sud uh taen tent uh t’ maister better nur him—un he warn’t deead when Aw left, nowt o’ t’ soart!’¹⁰

I insisted on the funeral being respectable—Mr Heathcliff said I might have my own way¹¹ there too; only, he desired me to remember, that the money for the whole affair came out of his pocket.

He maintained a hard, careless deportment¹², indicative of neither joy nor sorrow; if

¹ see: to ensure by supervision or vigilance that something shall be done or not done. 手ばかりのないうように面倒を見る。

² cross-roads: (PENGUIN 版注:) the place of burial for those who commit suicide.

³ house: くだいようだが、ここでは「家」ではなく ‘the family sitting-room’ (p. 4 参照)。

⁴ deliberately: of set purpose. 故意に、わざと。

⁵ flay: to strip or pull off the skin or hide of; to skin.

⁶ scalp: to cut off the scalp (頭皮) of (a person): chiefly said of the North American Indians.

⁷ carrion: dead putrefying flesh of man or beast. 腐肉。

⁸ stark: rigid, stiff (in death).

⁹ allow: to admit something claimed; to acknowledge, grant, concede;

¹⁰ Aw’d rather...t’soart!: I’d rather he’d (he = Heathcliff) gone himself for the doctor! I should have taken tent (= *Sc. and north dial.* care) of the master better nor (= than) him—and he wasn’t dead when I left, naught of the sort! 「(どうせすぐに死んだのだから) もうなにをしたってムダだったのさ」(‘it was useless making more stir about him!’) という Heathcliff に対し、医師の到着までに適切な手当を施せば助かった可能性を Joseph は示唆している。

¹¹ have one’s (own) way: to be allowed to follow or to enforce on others the course of action on which one is resolved. (制約なしに) 思いどおりにする。

¹² deportment: (referring to merely external manner) carriage, bearing, demeanour, address. (見た目の) 態度。

anything¹, it expressed a flinty² gratification³ at a piece of difficult work, successfully executed. I observed once, indeed, something like exultation⁴ in his aspect⁵. It was just when the people were bearing the coffin from the house; he had the hypocrisy to represent a mourner⁶; and previous to following with Hareton, he lifted the unfortunate child on to the table and muttered, with peculiar gusto⁷,

‘Now, my bonny lad, you are *mine*! And we’ll see if one tree won’t grow as crooked⁸ as another, with the same wind to twist it!’

The unsuspecting thing was pleased at this speech; he played with Heathcliff’s whiskers, and stroked his cheek, but I divined its meaning, and observed tartly⁹,

‘That boy must go back with me to Thrushcross Grange, sir—There is nothing in the world less yours than he is!’¹⁰

‘Does Linton say so?’ he demanded.

‘Of course—he has ordered me to take him,’ I replied.

‘Well,’ said the scoundrel, ‘we’ll not argue the subject now; but I have a fancy to try my hand at rearing a young one, so intimate¹¹ to your master, that I must supply the place of this with my own¹², if he attempt to remove it; I don’t engage¹³ to let Hareton go, undisputed¹⁴; but I’ll be pretty sure to make the other come! Remember to tell him.’

¹ if anything: if in any degree, perhaps even. (ほとんど五分五分だが) どちらかといえば。

² flinty: (*fig.* of a person or his heart) obdurate, unfeeling, hard-hearted.

³ gratification: (an instance of) enjoyment, satisfaction, pleasurable feeling.

⁴ exultation: the action or state of exulting or rejoicing greatly; triumph, joyousness, rapturous delight; an instance of the same.

⁵ aspect: the look which one wears; expression of countenance; countenance, face.

⁶ had the hypocrisy to represent a mourner: 猫をかぶって会葬者らしくみせかけた。

⁷ gusto: keen relish or enjoyment displayed in speech or action; zest.

⁸ crooked: **a.** bent from the straight form; having (one or more) bends or angles; curved, bent, twisted, tortuous, wry. **b.** (*fig.*) the reverse of ‘straight’ in figurative senses (*esp.* with reference to moral character and conduct); deviating from rectitude or uprightness; not straightforward; dishonest, wrong, perverse. どちらの意味でも ‘straight’ の対義語。

⁹ tartly: sharply; with acidity. (p. 168 注 5 参照)

¹⁰ There is ... he is!: その子ほどあなたのものでないものはない、つまり、その子は絶対にあなたのものなんかじゃありません!

¹¹ intimate: to make known or communicate by any means however indirect. ‘that I must ...’ と伝えておけ。(p. 44 注 7、p. 58 注 3 参照)

¹² I must...my own: (こいつを連れ去るんなら) おれの子をこいつの代りに据えなくちゃならぬ。my own = my own son. ‘to make the other come’ の ‘the other’ も同じ。

¹³ engage: to pledge oneself. 請け合う。

¹⁴ undisputed: not disputed; unchallenged, unquestioned. ここでは副詞的に「(議論せず) おとなしく、黙って」ほどの意味。

This hint was enough to bind our hands¹. I repeated its substance², on my return, and Edgar Linton, little interested at the commencement³, spoke no more of interfering. I'm not aware that he could have done it to any purpose⁴, had he been ever so willing.

The guest was now the master of Wuthering Heights: he held firm possession⁵, and proved to the attorney—who, in his turn, proved it to Mr Linton, that Earnshaw had mortgaged every yard of land he owned for cash to supply his mania⁶ for gaming⁷: and he, Heathcliff, was the mortgagee⁸.

In that manner⁹, Hareton, who should now be the first gentleman in the neighbourhood, was reduced¹⁰ to a state of complete dependence on his father's inveterate¹¹ enemy, and lives in his own house as a servant deprived of the advantage¹² of wages, and quite unable to right himself¹³, because of his friendlessness, and his ignorance that he has been wronged.

¹ bind our hands: 手を縛る→手出しできなくする。

² substance: the meaning or purport of what is expressed in writing or speech; what a writing or speech amounts to. 要旨, 趣旨。

³ at the commencement: 'from the beginning' に同じ。

⁴ not...to any purpose: 結局 to no purpose: with little or no effect or result; in vain. に同じ。

⁵ possession: (Law.) the visible possibility of exercising over a thing such control as attaches to lawful ownership (but which may also exist apart from lawful ownership); the relation of a person to a thing over which he may at his pleasure exercise such control as the character of the thing admits, to the exclusion of other persons; esp. the having of such exclusive control over land. 占有権、所有権。

⁶ mania: [méniə] great excitement or enthusiasm resembling madness. (chiefly with *a* or *the*) a vehement passion or desire; also, in weaker sense (after F. *manie*), a 'craze', 'rage' (*for*, *of*).

⁷ gaming: the action or habit of playing at games of chance for stakes; gambling.

⁸ mortgagee: [mɔːɡɪdʒi:] the person to whom property is mortgaged; one who lends money on mortgage. 抵当権者。

⁹ manner: the way in which something is done or takes place. 「どんなふうに」の「ふう」、「どのように」の「よう」。

¹⁰ reduce: to bring down *to* a lower rank or position, dignity, etc. 受動態で、～に身を落とす。

¹¹ inveterate: (now mostly of things evil) firmly established by long continuance; long-established; deep-rooted; obstinate. 'inveterate enemy' 宿敵。

¹² advantage: benefit, profit.

¹³ right oneself: to return to a proper or normal condition. 立ち直る。

Chapter IV (XVIII)

The twelve years, continued Mrs Dean, following that dismal period, were the happiest of my life: my greatest troubles, in their passage¹, rose from our little lady's trifling illnesses, which she had to experience in common with all children, rich and poor.

For the rest, after the first six months, she grew like a larch²; and could walk and talk too, in her own way³, before the heath blossomed a second time over Mrs Linton's dust⁴.

She was the most winning⁵ thing that ever brought sunshine into a desolate⁶ house—a real beauty in face—with the Earnshaws' handsome dark eyes, but the Lintons' fair skin, and small features⁷, and yellow curling hair. Her spirit was high, though not rough, and qualified by a heart, sensitive and lively⁸ to excess⁹ in its affections. That capacity for intense attachments reminded me of her mother, still she did not resemble her; for she could be soft and mild as a dove, and she had a gentle voice, and pensive¹⁰ expression: her anger was never furious; her love never fierce; it was deep and tender.

However, it must be acknowledged¹¹, she had faults to foil¹² her gifts. A propensity¹³ to be saucy was one; and a perverse¹⁴ will that indulged children invariably¹⁵ acquire, whether they be good tempered or cross. If a servant chanced to vex her, it was always: 'I shall tell papa!' And if he reproved her, even by a look, you would have thought it a heart-breaking business: I don't believe he ever did speak a harsh word to her.

¹ passage: the passing or lapse of time. 時の経過。

² larch: カラマツ。

³ in one's own way: 自分なりに、自己流で。ここは、なんとかそれなりに。

⁴ before ... dust: Catherine が死んだのは3月。ヒースと呼ばれる植物はいくつかあるが、いずれも花期は5月～10月の間だから、このとき娘は一歳と少し。dust: that to which anything is reduced by disintegration or decay; spec. the 'ashes', or mouldered remains of a dead body. 遺骸のことだが、ここは「墓」でよい。

⁵ winning: attractive.

⁶ desolate: [désələt] dreary, dismal, cheerless.

⁷ features: *pl.* the lineaments of the face, the form or mould of its various parts.

⁸ lively: vivid, intense, strong.

⁹ to excess: (= in excess) exceeding the proper amount or degree. 並はずれて。

¹⁰ pensive: sorrowfully thoughtful, sorrowful; mournfully serious; melancholy.

¹¹ acknowledge: to recognize or admit as true.

¹² foil: to foul, defile, pollute. 汚す、損ねる。もともとの意味は「踏みにじる (trample down)」。

¹³ propensity: inclination, disposition, tendency, bent (*to, towards*).

¹⁴ perverse: [pəvɜ:s] selfwilled or stubborn (in error).

¹⁵ invariably: without variation, unchangingly, constantly; without exception, in every case alike.

He took her education entirely on himself¹, and made it an amusement: fortunately, curiosity, and a quick intellect² urged her into an apt³ scholar⁴; she learnt rapidly and eagerly, and did honour to⁵ his teaching.

Till she reached the age of thirteen, she had not once been beyond the range of the park by herself. Mr Linton would⁶ take her with him, a mile or so outside, on rare occasions; but he trusted⁷ her to no one else. Gimmerton was an unsubstantial⁸ name in her ears; the chapel, the only building she had approached, or entered, except her own home; Wuthering Heights and Mr Heathcliff did not exist for her; she was a perfect recluse⁹; and, apparently, perfectly contented. Sometimes, indeed, while surveying the country from her nursery window, she would observe—

‘Ellen, how long will it be before I can walk to the top of those hills? I wonder what lies on the other side—is it the sea?’

‘No, Miss Cathy,’ I would answer, ‘it is hills again just like these.’

‘And what are those golden rocks like, when you stand under them?’ she once asked.

The abrupt descent of Penistone Craggs¹⁰ particularly attracted her notice, especially when the setting sun shone on it, and the topmost Heights, and the whole extent of landscape besides lay in shadow.

I explained that they were bare masses of stone, with hardly enough earth in their clefts to nourish a stunted¹¹ tree.

‘And why are they bright so long after it is evening here?’ she pursued.

¹ take on (*or upon*) oneself: to assume as a responsibility or obligation. ～を自分の責任として負う、引き受ける。

² quick intellect: 飲み込みが早いこと。

³ apt: susceptible to impressions; ready to learn; intelligent, quick-witted, prompt.

⁴ scholar: (now arch. or rhetorical) one who is receiving, or has received, his instruction or training from a particular master; a pupil (of a master).

⁵ do honour to: to do credit to. ～の名誉となる。ここは、生徒の出来がいいから教えるほうも得意になること。

⁶ would: いわゆる「過去の習慣」。「Sometimes ... she *would* observe—’ も同じ。

⁷ trust: to commit the safety of (something) with confidence *to* a place, etc., *to or with* a person; to entrust. 安心して～にゆだねる。ここでは、他人任せにする。

⁸ unsubstantial: lacking in substance or solidity. 中身のない、実感のわかない。

⁹ recluse: [riklú:s] one who mixes little with society.

¹⁰ Craggs: Crag が複数形で表記されるのはここから。またテキストによっては Craggs。

¹¹ stunted: checked in growth or development; diminutive, dwarf.

‘Because they are a great deal higher up than we are,’ replied I; ‘you could not climb them, they are too high and steep. In winter the frost is always there before it comes to us; and, deep into summer, I have found snow under that black hollow¹ on the north-east side!’

‘Oh, you have been on them!’ she cried gleefully. ‘Then I can go, too, when I am a woman. Has papa been, Ellen?’

‘Papa would tell you, miss,’ I answered, hastily, ‘that they are not worth the trouble of visiting. The moors, where you ramble² with him, are much nicer; and Thrushcross Park is the finest place in the world.’

‘But I know the park, and I don’t know those,’ she murmured to herself. ‘And I should delight³ to look round me, from the brow⁴ of that tallest point—my little pony, Minny, shall take me some time⁵.’

One of the maids mentioning the Fairy Cave, quite turned her head with a desire to fulfil this project; she teased⁶ Mr Linton about it; and he promised she should have the journey when she got older; but Miss Catherine measured her age by months, and—

‘Now, am I old enough to go to Penistone Craggs?’ was the constant question in her mouth.

The road thither⁷ wound close by Wuthering Heights. Edgar had not the heart⁸ to pass it, so she received as constantly the answer,

‘Not yet, love, not yet.’

¹ hollow: a surface concavity, more or less deep, an excavation, a depression on any surface. 凹みのことだが、古くは「穴 (hole)、洞穴 (cave)」などを指すこともあった。

² ramble: to wander, travel, make one's way about (now usually to walk) in a free unrestrained manner and without definite aim or direction. (p. 16 注 3 参照)

³ delight: to be highly pleased, take great pleasure, rejoice (*in* or *to do* anything).

⁴ brow: the projecting edge of a cliff or hill, standing over a precipice or steep.

⁵ some time: ここでは漠然と「いつか」。‘one day (= on some day in the future)’ に同じ。

⁶ tease: to worry or irritate by persistent action which vexes or annoys. ここは、しつこくせがんで閉口させた。

⁷ thither: [ðɪðə] to or towards that place. (Now almost exclusively literary; in ordinary speech superseded by *there*.)

⁸ have the heart: to be courageous or spirited enough, to prevail upon oneself (to do something); also (in mod. use and chiefly in negative sentences), to find it in one's heart, to be hard-hearted enough. ここでは、(気乗りせぬこと) をする気になる。「～する度胸がある、(主に否定文で) 冷酷にも～する」という意味もある。

I said Mrs Heathcliff lived above a dozen years after quitting her husband.¹ Her family were of a delicate constitution²: she and Edgar both lacked the ruddy³ health that you will generally meet in these parts. What her last illness was, I am not certain; I conjecture they died of the same thing, a kind of fever, slow at its commencement, but incurable, and rapidly consuming life towards the close⁴.

She wrote to inform her brother of the probable conclusion of a four months' indisposition⁵, under which she had suffered, and entreated him to come to her, if possible, for she had much to settle, and she wished to bid him adieu, and deliver Linton safely into his hands. Her hope was, that Linton might be left with him, as he had been with her; his father, she would fain⁶ convince herself, had no desire to assume the burden of his maintenance⁷ or education.

My master hesitated not a moment in complying with her request. Reluctant as he was to leave home at ordinary calls⁸, he flew to answer this; commending⁹ Catherine to my peculiar vigilance¹⁰, in his absence, with reiterated¹¹ orders that she must not wander out of the park, even under my escort; he did not calculate¹² on her going unaccompanied.

He was away three weeks: the first day or two, my charge¹³ sat in a corner of the library, too sad for either reading or playing: in that quiet state she caused me little

¹ Mrs Heathcliff ... her husband.: ここでいう Mrs Heathcliff は Isabella のこと。Isabella が結婚後まもなく Heathcliff のもとを去ったのは 1784 年 3 月下旬で、死んだのが 1797 年 7 月だから Nelly の計算は正しい。above: surpassing in quantity, amount, or number; more than. ※定義より明らかだが、数学でいう「以上」とはちがひ、基準となる数を上回っていること。

² constitution: physical nature or character of the body in regard to healthiness, strength, vitality, etc. 体質。

³ ruddy: (of the face, complexion, etc.) naturally suffused with a fresh or healthy redness. (of persons) having a fresh red complexion. (顔の) 血色がよい。

⁴ close: [kləʊz] conclusion, termination, end.

⁵ indisposition: disordered bodily condition; ill health, illness, ailment; esp. of a slight or passing character. ここは、病にかかって四ヶ月になるがもう先は知れている。

⁶ would fain: gladly, willingly, with pleasure. ここでは「〜だと信じたがった」。つまり確信し切っていたわけではなく、一抹の不安を拭えなかったのである。【参考】(would fain = willingly—would be glad to) (出来ることなら) 悦んで (何々せん)。(齋藤秀三郎『英和中辞典』)

⁷ maintenance: the action of providing (a person) with the requisites of life; that which supports or maintains a person with livelihood, means of subsistence; the amount provided for a person's livelihood. 扶養、生計 (費)。

⁸ call: summons, invitation, bidding.

⁹ commend: to give in trust or charge, deliver to one's care or keeping; to commit, entrust.

¹⁰ vigilance: watchfulness against danger or any action on the part of others; alertness or closeness of observation. 目を離さずに用心すること。

¹¹ reiterated: repeated.

¹² calculate: to reckon or count upon or on. ここでは、考え (勘定) に入れる、つまり (お嬢さんがひとりで出かけることがあろうとは) 考えてもいなかった。

¹³ charge: thing or person entrusted to the care or management of any one. 預かった子、など。

trouble; but it was succeeded by an interval of impatient, fretful¹ weariness; and being too busy, and too old then, to run up and down amusing her, I hit on² a method by which she might entertain herself.

I used to send her on her travels round the grounds³—now on foot, and now on a pony, indulging her with a patient audience of⁴ all her real and imaginary adventures, when she returned.

The summer shone in full prime⁵; and she took such a taste for this solitary rambling that she often contrived to remain out from breakfast till tea; and then the evenings were spent in recounting her fanciful tales. I did not fear her breaking bounds, because the gates were generally locked, and I thought she would scarcely venture forth alone, if they had stood wide open.

Unluckily, my confidence proved misplaced. Catherine came to me, one morning at eight o'clock, and said she was that day an Arabian merchant, going to cross the Desert with his caravan⁶; and I must give her plenty of provision⁷ for herself, and beasts: a horse, and three camels, personated⁸ by a large hound and a couple of pointers.

I got together good store of dainties⁹, and slung them in a basket on one side of the saddle; and she sprang up as gay as a fairy, sheltered by her wide-brimmed hat and gauze¹⁰ veil from the July sun, and trotted¹¹ off with a merry laugh, mocking my cautious counsel to avoid galloping¹², and come back early.

¹ fretful: irritable, peevish, ill-tempered.

² hit on (or upon): to come upon, light upon, meet with, get at, reach, find, esp. something aimed at. (p. 65 注 5、p. 161 注 1 参照)

³ grounds: *pl.* an enclosed portion of land of considerable extent surrounding or attached to a dwelling-house or other building, serving chiefly for ornament or recreation. (広い) 庭。

⁴ indulging her with a patient audience of: ～を辛抱強く聞いて、彼女の機嫌を取る。

⁵ prime: (of things, material or immaterial) the best or most flourishing stage or state; the state of full perfection. 最高潮、絶頂、真っ盛り。

⁶ caravan: a company of merchants, pilgrims, or others, in the East or northern Africa, travelling together for the sake of security, esp. through the desert. 隊商。

⁷ provision: a supply of food; food supplied or provided. 現在ではふつう複数形を用いる。

⁸ personate: to act or play the part of (a character in a drama or the like).

⁹ dainty: anything pleasing or delicious to the palate; a choice viand, a delicacy. おいしいもの、ごちそう。

¹⁰ gauze: [gɔːz] a very thin, transparent fabric of silk, linen, or cotton. 薄織物 (包帯用のガーゼも含まれる)

¹¹ trot: to ride, drive, or proceed at a trot. (人が馬に乗って) 'trot' (だく足) で行く。馬の速度については p. 287 注 3 参照。

¹² gallop: (of a horseman) to ride at full speed.

The naughty¹ thing never made her appearance at tea. One traveller, the hound, being an old dog, and fond of its ease, returned; but neither Cathy, nor the pony, nor the two pointers were visible in any direction; and I dispatched emissaries² down this path, and that path, and, at last, went wandering in search of her myself.

There was a labourer working at a fence round a plantation³, on the borders of the grounds. I inquired of him if he had seen our young lady.

‘I saw her at morn⁴,’ he replied; ‘she would have me to cut her a hazel switch⁵, and then she leapt her galloway⁶ over the hedge yonder, where it is lowest, and galloped out of sight.’

You may guess how I felt at hearing this news. It struck⁷ me directly she must have started for Penistone Craggs.

‘What will become of her?’ I ejaculated⁸, pushing through a gap which the man was repairing, and making straight to the high road⁹.

I walked as if for a wager¹⁰, mile after mile, till a turn brought me in view of the Heights; but no Catherine could I detect far or near.

¹ naughty: [nó:ti] (of children) wayward, disobedient, given to doing wrong.

² emissary: a person sent on a mission to gain information, or to gain adherents to, or promote the interests of a cause. 密命を帯びてこそこそ行動する使者という含みがあり、もともとはよい意味では使われなかった。日本でいえば忍びの者ごときもの。この場面ではややおおげさか。

³ plantation: an assemblage of growing plants of any kind which have been planted; (now, esp.) a wood of planted trees. 植えこみ、植林地。

⁴ at morn: = in the morning.

⁵ would have...switch: 鞭にするハシバミの枝を切ってほしいといった。have: (with will, would, or the like) to wish, will, require that something be done (to oneself or others). ‘have me cut’ でなく「to 不定詞」になっているのは方言に古いかたちが残ったのだろう。※なお齋藤秀三郎『英和中辞典』は、「(will have = insist) 主張する」とし、「If you will have me stay, I shall stay. 是非留れとの仰せなら留ります。」という例文を挙げる。Cathy が作ってちょうだいといってきかなかったと考えれば納得できる。

⁶ galloway: one of a small but strong breed of horses peculiar to Galloway; hence a small-sized horse, esp. for riding. スコットランドの Galloway 地方は小型の丈夫な馬を産する。

⁷ strike: (of a thought, an idea) to come into the mind of, occur to (a person). しばしば ‘it strikes (or it struck) me that —’ のかたちで、ほぼ ‘I think that—’ に同じ。

⁸ ejaculate: to utter suddenly (a short prayer; now in wider sense, any brief expression of emotion). (p. 21 注 10、p. 48 注 10 参照)

⁹ high road: a chief or main road; a highway.

¹⁰ wager: bet. 賭け (競争) でもしているように。※ここでは「賭け」というよりも ‘a contest for a prize’ または obs. (廃用) とはされているけれど ‘the prize to be won in a contest’ がぴったりのように思う。つまり競争に勝って賞金をもらおうという勢いで。

The Craggs lie about a mile and a half beyond Mr Heathcliff's place, and that¹ is four from the Grange, so I began to fear night would fall ere I could reach them.

And what if² she should have slipped in clambering³ among them,' I reflected, 'and been killed, or broken some of her bones?'

My suspense⁴ was truly painful; and, at first, it gave me delightful relief to observe, in hurrying by the farmhouse, Charlie, the fiercest of the pointers, lying under a window, with swelled head, and bleeding ear.

I opened the wicket, and ran to the door, knocking vehemently for admittance. A woman whom I knew, and who formerly lived at Gimmerton, answered—she had been servant there since the death of Mr Earnshaw.

'Ah,' said she, 'you are come a⁵ seeking your little mistress! don't be frightened. She's here safe—but I'm glad it isn't the master.'

'He is not at home, then, is he?' I panted, quite breathless with quick walking and alarm.

'No, no,' she replied, 'both he and Joseph are off, and I think they won't return this hour or more. Step in and rest you a bit.'

I entered, and beheld my stray lamb, seated on the hearth, rocking⁶ herself in a little chair that had been her mother's, when a child. Her hat was hung against the wall, and she seemed perfectly at home, laughing and chattering, in the best spirits imaginable, to Hareton, now a great, strong lad of eighteen—who stared at her with considerable curiosity and astonishment; comprehending⁷ precious¹ little of the fluent succession of

¹ that: = Mr Heathcliff's place. つまり the Grange—4 miles—Wuthering Heights—1.5 miles—the Craggs. 'ere I could reach them' の 'them = the Craggs'.

² what if ...?: what is or would be the case if ...? what will or would happen if ...? what does it matter if ...? etc.; often expressing a hypothesis or proposal: = 'suppose ...', 'supposing ...'. などさまざまな意味合いに用いられる。ここでは、～していたらどうしよう。

³ clamber: to climb by catching hold with hands and feet; to creep or crawl up (or down); to climb with difficulty and effort. (苦勞して) よじ登る。

⁴ suspense: a state of mental uncertainty, with expectation of or desire for decision, and usually some apprehension or anxiety; the condition of waiting, esp. of being kept waiting, for an expected decision, assurance, or issue. (どうしたらいいか決めかね不安を抱えた) 不安定な心理状態、じりじり (はらはら) と結果を待っている状態。

⁵ a: (*arch.* or *dial.* with verb of motion) to, into. 前置詞。ほかに 'go a fishing' など。

⁶ rock: to cause to sway to and fro or from side to side; to move backwards and forwards.

⁷ comprehend: to grasp with the mind, conceive fully or adequately, understand, 'take in'. (p. 78 注 11、p. 117 注 6 参照)

remarks and questions which her tongue never ceased pouring forth.

‘Very well, Miss!’ I exclaimed, concealing my joy under an angry countenance. ‘This is your last ride, till papa comes back. I’ll not trust² you over the threshold again, you naughty, naughty girl!’

‘Aha, Ellen!’ she cried, gaily, jumping up, and running to my side. ‘I shall have a pretty story to tell tonight—and so you’ve found me out. Have you ever been here in your life before?’

‘Put that hat on, and home³ at once,’ said I. ‘I’m dreadfully⁴ grieved at you, Miss Cathy, you’ve done extremely wrong! It’s no use pouting and crying; that won’t repay⁵ the trouble I’ve had, scouring⁶ the country after⁷ you. To think how Mr Linton charged⁸ me to keep you in⁹; and you stealing off so; it shows you are a cunning little fox, and nobody will put faith in you any more.’

‘What have I done?’ sobbed she, instantly checked¹⁰. ‘Papa charged me nothing—he’ll not scold me, Ellen—he’s never cross, like you!’

‘Come, come!’ I repeated. ‘I’ll tie the riband¹¹. Now, let us have no petulance¹². Oh, for shame!¹³ You thirteen years old, and such a baby!’

This exclamation¹⁴ was caused by her pushing the hat from her head, and retreating to the chimney out of my reach.

¹ precious: (colloq.) extremely, very.

² trust: to place or allow (a person or thing) to be in a place or condition, or to do some action, with expectation of safety, or without fear of the consequences. 安心して～をどこどこへ出す(置く)、何々をさせる。

³ home: to go home.

⁴ dreadfully: (colloquially used as a strong intensive) = exceedingly, ‘terribly’, ‘awfully’, ‘abominably’. とんでもなく、ひどく、など。

⁵ repay: to make return or recompense for, requite (an action, etc.) ～に報いる、償いをする。

⁶ scour: to pass rapidly over or along (a tract of land or water); esp. to traverse in quest of something. (一帯を) 探し回る。

⁷ after: in search of, in quest of, to find.

⁸ charge: to lay a command or injunction upon; to command, order, enjoin.

⁹ in: within a certain space; esp. inside a house or other enclosed place, inside the usual place of abode, shelter, or safety.

¹⁰ check: to make a sudden stop.

¹¹ riband: = ribbon.

¹² petulance: a petulant or saucy expression; peevishness, pettishness.

¹³ Oh, for shame!: まあ、はずかしいこと! (p. 146 注 13 参照)

¹⁴ exclamation: the action of exclaiming or crying out; the loud articulate expression of pain, anger, surprise, etc.; clamour, vociferation; an instance of this, an outcry; an emphatic or vehement speech or sentence.

‘Nay,’ said the servant; ‘don’t be hard on the bonny lass, Mrs Dean. We made her stop — she’d fain have ridden forwards, afeard you should be uneasy.¹ But Hareton offered to go with her, and I thought he should. It’s a wild road over the hills.’

Hareton, during the discussion, stood with his hands in his pockets, too awkward² to speak, though he looked as if he did not relish my intrusion.

‘How long am I to wait?’ I continued, disregarding the woman’s interference. ‘It will be dark in ten minutes. Where is the pony, Miss Cathy? And where is Phoenix? I shall leave you, unless you be quick, so please yourself³.’

‘The pony is in the yard,’ she replied, ‘and Phoenix is shut in there. He’s bitten — and so is Charlie. I was going to tell you all about it; but you are in a bad temper, and don’t deserve⁴ to hear.’

I picked up her hat, and approached to reinstate⁵ it; but perceiving that the people of the house took her part⁶, she commenced capering⁷ round the room; and on my giving chase, ran like a mouse, over and under, and behind the furniture, rendering⁸ it ridiculous for me to pursue.

Hareton and the woman laughed; and she joined them, and waxed⁹ more impertinent¹⁰ still¹¹; till I cried, in great irritation.

‘Well, Miss Cathy, if you were aware whose house this is, you’d be glad enough to get out.’

¹ she’d fain ... uneasy: あなたが心配するといけないからといって、(馬から下りて休まずに) そのまま行こうとした (しかし私たちが引き留めたからそうできなかった)。‘would fain’については p. 269 注 6 参照。

² awkward: ここでは ‘not at one’s ease; embarrassed’ (きまりがわるい) ではなく、この場面でなにかいいたいのだが、‘(of persons) lacking dexterity or skill in performing their part’ その能力がない、つまり「口べたな」が適切だろう。

³ please yourself: 好きなように (勝手に) なさい。

⁴ deserve: to be entitled to, in return for services or meritorious actions, or sometimes for ill deeds and qualities; to be worthy to have. (なにかの報いとして) ~する資格 (権利) がある。

⁵ reinstate: to reinstall or re-establish (a person or thing) in a place, station, condition, etc. ここでは、帽子を元どおりかぶせようとした。

⁶ take one’s part: (= take the part of) to espouse the side of, to support, second, back up.

⁷ caper: to dance or leap in a frolicsome manner, to skip for merriment.

⁸ render: to make, to cause to be or become, of a certain nature, quality, etc.

⁹ wax: (with adj. complement) to become gradually, grow. (p. 32 注 15、p. 102 注 1 参照)

¹⁰ impertinent: behaving without proper respect or deference to superiors or strangers; insolent or saucy in speech or behaviour. 無礼な、生意気な。

¹¹ still: in a further degree. (比較級を強めて) さらに、いっそう。

‘It’s *your* father’s, isn’t it?’ said she, turning to Hareton.

‘Nay,’ he replied, looking down, and blushing bashfully¹.

He could not stand a steady gaze from her eyes, though they were just his own.

‘Whose, then—your master’s?’ she asked.

He coloured deeper, with a different feeling, muttered an oath², and turned away.

‘Who is his master?’ continued the tiresome³ girl, appealing⁴ to me. ‘He talked about “our house,” and “our folk.” I thought he had been the owner’s son. And he never said, Miss; he should have done, shouldn’t he, if he’s a servant?’

Hareton grew black as a thunder-cloud at this childish speech. I silently shook my questioner, and, at last, succeeded in equipping⁵ her for departure.

‘Now, get my horse,’ she said, addressing her unknown kinsman as she would one of the stable-boys at the Grange. ‘And you may⁶ come with me. I want to see where the goblin hunter rises⁷ in the marsh, and to hear about the *fairishes*⁸, as you call them—but make haste! What’s the matter? Get my horse, I say.’

‘I’ll see thee damned before I be *thy* servant!’ growled the lad.

‘You’ll see me *what?*’ asked Catherine in surprise.

‘Damned—thou saucy witch!’ he replied.

‘There, Miss Cathy! you see you have got into pretty company⁹,’ I interposed. ‘Nice

¹ bashfully: in a shy or shamefaced manner.

² oath: a curse. (p. 105 注 2 参照)

³ tiresome: (colloq.) irksome, annoying, vexatious.

⁴ appeal: to call for a favour of any kind; to make supplication, entreaty, or earnest request, *to* a person *for* a thing. 私に答を求めた。

⁵ equip: to dress, accoutre, fit out (for a journey). ここでは、出かける身支度をさせる。

⁶ may: ～しなさい。許可または容認と取れないこともないが、ここでは Hareton を下男扱いしているのだから、「おまえも一緒においで」という一種の命令であろう。【参考】[命令法代用] Mr. A. B., **you may** read. 阿部さんお読みなさい。(齋藤秀三郎『英和中辞典』)

⁷ rise: to come up to the surface of the ground or water.

⁸ fairishes: = fairies.

⁹ got into pretty company: いい人とお友だちになった。

words to be used to a young lady! Pray don't begin to dispute¹ with him—Come, let us seek for Minny ourselves, and begone².'

'But, Ellen,' cried she, staring, fixed³ in astonishment. 'How dare he speak so to me? Mustn't he be made to do as I ask him? You wicked creature, I shall tell papa what you said—Now then!⁴

Hareton did not appear to feel this threat; so the tears sprung into her eyes with indignation. 'You bring the pony,' she exclaimed, turning to the woman, 'and let my dog free this moment!'

'Softly, Miss,' answered the addressed. 'You'll lose nothing, by being civil. Though Mr Hareton, there, be not the master's son, he's your cousin; and I was never hired to serve you.'

'*He* my cousin!' cried Cathy, with a scornful laugh.

'Yes, indeed,' responded her reprover.

'O Ellen! don't let them say such things,' she pursued in great trouble⁵. 'Papa is gone to fetch my cousin from London—my cousin is a gentleman's son—That my—' she stopped, and wept outright⁶, upset at the bare⁷ notion of relationship with such a clown⁸.

'Hush, hush!' I whispered; 'people can have many cousins, and of all sorts, Miss Cathy, without being any the worse for it⁹; only they needn't keep their company, if they be disagreeable and bad.'

¹ dispute: to contend with opposing arguments or assertions; to discuss, argue, hold disputation; often, to debate in a vehement manner or with altercation about something.

² begone: to go away; depart.

³ fix: to make (a person) motionless with astonishment or other feeling, to hold spellbound. 'fixed in astonishment' びっくりして体がすくみ。

⁴ Now then!: 「さあ、いったとおりにしてよ」ほどの意味。この副詞 'now' について、*OED* は 'In sentences expressing a command or request, with the purely temporal sense weakened or effaced.' とする。(p. 150 注 1 参照)

⁵ in great trouble: すっかり動揺して。 *trouble*: disturbance of mind or feelings; worry, vexation; affliction; grief; perplexity; distress.

⁶ outright: to the full extent, fully out, completely, entirely, quite; without reservation or limitation; openly, without reserve of manner or expression. 思い切り、なりふりかまわず。

⁷ bare: without addition, mere, simple; — and nothing else, — only. ただそれだけの。つまり 'upset at the bare notion of ...' は、～と考えただけで気が動揺し。

⁸ clown: an ignorant, rude, uncouth, ill-bred man. (p. 18 注 2、p. 113 注 2 参照)

⁹ any the worse for it: だからといっていけないことはない。

‘He’s not, he’s not my cousin, Ellen!’ she went on, gathering fresh grief from reflection, and flinging herself into my arms for refuge from the idea.

I was much vexed at her and the servant for their mutual revelations¹; having no doubt of Linton’s approaching arrival, communicated by the former, being reported to Mr Heathcliff; and feeling as confident that Catherine’s first thought on her father’s return, would be to seek an explanation of the latter’s assertion, concerning her rude-bred kindred.

Hareton, recovering from his disgust² at being taken for³ a servant, seemed moved by her distress; and having fetched the pony round to the door, he took, to propitiate⁴ her, a fine crooked-legged⁵ terrier whelp from the kennel, and putting it into her hand, bid her wisht!⁶ for he meant naught⁷.

Pausing in her lamentations, she surveyed him a glance of awe⁸ and horror, then burst forth⁹ anew.

I could scarcely refrain from smiling at this antipathy to the poor fellow; who was a well-made¹⁰, athletic¹¹ youth, good-looking in features, and stout¹² and healthy, but

¹ their mutual revelations: Cathy は父が Linton を迎えにいったことを、女中は Hareton がいここであることを、それぞれ明かしたこと。

² disgust: strong repugnance, aversion, or repulsion excited by that which is loathsome or offensive, as a foul smell, disagreeable person or action, disappointed ambition, etc. むかむかする気持、嫌悪。

³ take ... for: to suppose to be, consider as; often, with implication of error, to suppose to be (what it is not), to mistake for. だれだれを～だと思う、～と間違える。ここでは Hareton を下男と誤解した。「～だと思う」という意味では、よく使われるのが ‘What do you take me for?’ (おれを何だと思っている)。

⁴ propitiate: to appease, conciliate (one offended).

⁵ crooked-legged: 「脚の曲った」ということだが、テリア犬には ‘(short and) crook(ed)-legged’ と ‘(long and) straight-legged’ の二種類があるらしいので、病気や奇形ではない。

⁶ wisht: hush.

⁷ mean naught: = mean nothing. 【参考】He means no offence—means you no harm—means you no evil. 悪気は無い。(齋藤秀三郎『英和中辞典』)

⁸ awe: dread mingled with veneration, reverential or respectful fear; the attitude of a mind subdued to profound reverence in the presence of supreme authority, moral greatness or sublimity, or mysterious sacredness; the feeling of solemn and reverential wonder, tinged with latent fear, inspired by what is terribly sublime and majestic in nature, *e.g.* thunder, a storm at sea. 神様、王様、雷様などを畏れ敬う気持、畏怖。ここは Cathy が Hareton を鬼神とでも思ったものか、それとも作者が滑稽味をねらって ‘awe’ としたものか。

⁹ burst forth: = burst out crying.

¹⁰ well-made: (of a person or animal) well-proportioned, of good build. 均整のとれた。

¹¹ athletic: of the nature of, or befitting, an athlete; physically powerful, muscular, robust.

¹² stout: **a.** valiant, brave; undaunted and vigorous in conflict or resistance; **b.** (of persons) thick in the body, not lean or slender; usually in unfavourable sense, inclined to corpulence; often *euphemistically* = corpulent, fat. 身体的意味とすれば **b** だが、遠回しに「肥満した」を意味するとあるように、ほめことばとは思われない。**a** (勇敢な、気概のある、など) より、ここでは「男らしい」あたりが適当であろう。次頁の ‘his fearless nature’ にも対応する。

attired in garments befitting his daily occupations of working on the farm, and lounging among the moors after¹ rabbits and game². Still, I thought I could detect in his physiognomy³ a mind owning better qualities than his father ever possessed. Good things lost amid a wilderness of weeds, to be sure, whose rankness⁴ far over-topped their neglected growth; yet, notwithstanding, evidence of a wealthy soil that might yield⁵ luxuriant crops, under other and favourable circumstances. Mr Heathcliff, I believe, had not treated him physically ill; thanks to his fearless nature, which offered no temptation to that course of oppression; it had none of the timid susceptibility⁶ that would have given zest to ill-treatment, in Heathcliff's judgment. He appeared to have bent⁷ his malevolence on making him a brute: he was never taught to read or write, never rebuked for any bad habit which did not annoy his keeper; never led a single step towards virtue⁸, or guarded by a single precept⁹ against vice. And from what I heard, Joseph contributed much to his deterioration by a narrow-minded partiality¹⁰ which prompted him to flatter, and pet him, as a boy¹¹, because he was the head of the old family. And as he had been in the habit of accusing Catherine Earnshaw and Heathcliff, when children, of putting the master past his patience, and compelling him to seek solace in drink, by what he termed their "offalld¹² ways," so at present, he laid the whole burden of Hareton's faults on the shoulders of the usurper¹³ of his property.

If the lad swore, he wouldn't correct him; nor however culpably¹⁴ he behaved. It gave

¹ after: pursuing, in pursuit of. ～を追って。(p. 273 注 7 参照)

² game: (collect.) wild animals or birds such as are pursued, caught or killed in the chase. (狩りの) 獲物。

³ physiognomy: the face or countenance, especially viewed as an index to the mind and character; expression of face. ここではまさにこの定義どおり。(p. 8 注 9、p. 129 注 5 参照)

⁴ rankness: the quality of being rank (=covered or filled with a luxuriant and coarse growth of grass or plants).

⁵ yield: to give forth or produce by a natural process or in return for cultivation.

⁶ susceptibility: capability of being, or disposition to be, affected by something. 'timid susceptibility' は「臆病さ (timidity)」にほぼ同じ。

⁷ bend: trans. to direct, apply, or bring to bear strenuously (one's mind, energies, etc.) *on, upon*.

⁸ virtue: conformity of life and conduct with the principles of morality; voluntary observance of the recognized moral laws or standards of right conduct; abstention on moral grounds from any form of wrong-doing or vice. 道徳を守り悪徳を慎むこと。

⁹ precept: ['pri:sept] an instruction, direction, or rule for action or conduct; esp. an injunction as to moral conduct.

¹⁰ partiality: 'unequal state of the judgment and favour of one above the other, without just reason' (Johnson); prejudicial or undue favouring of one person or party, or one side of a question. えこひいき、偏愛。

¹¹ as a boy: when he was a boy.

¹² offalld: (PENGUIN 版注:) wicked. (参考 *of-fall*: *obs.* to fall upon; to kill, destroy)

¹³ usurper: one who illegally or unjustly seizes, appropriates, or intrudes into any office, property, rights, etc. (もともと王権など) を不当に奪う者、篡奪者。(p. 56 注 9 参照)

¹⁴ culpably: in a culpable (= deserving blame or censure) or blameworthy manner; to a culpable degree. ふらちに。

Joseph satisfaction, apparently, to watch him go the worst lengths¹. He allowed that the lad was ruined; that his soul was abandoned to perdition²; but then, he reflected that Heathcliff must answer for it. Hareton's blood would be required at his hands³; and there lay immense consolation in that thought.

Joseph had instilled⁴ into him a pride of name and of his lineage⁵. He would, had he dared, have fostered hate between him and the present owner of the Heights, but his dread of that owner amounted to superstition; and he confined his feelings, regarding him, to muttered innuendoes⁶ and private comminations⁷. I don't pretend to be intimately⁸ acquainted with the mode of living customary in those days, at Wuthering Heights. I only speak from hearsay⁹; for I saw little. The villagers affirmed Mr Heathcliff was *near*,¹⁰ and a cruel hard landlord to his tenants; but the house, inside, had regained its ancient aspect of comfort under female management; and the scenes of riot common in Hindley's time were not now enacted¹¹ within its walls. The master was too gloomy to seek companionship with any people, good or bad, and he is yet—¹²

This, however, is not making progress with my story. Miss Cathy rejected the peace-offering of the terrier, and demanded her own dogs, Charlie and Phoenix. They came limping¹³, and hanging their heads; and we set out¹⁴ for home, sadly out of sorts¹,

¹ go to the worst length: とことんまで悪いことをする、どんな悪いことでもする。 *length*: he degree of extremity to which something is 'carried'

² perdition: eternal death; damnation; hell.

³ Hareton's blood ... hands: ここはちょっとわかりにくい。(責任は Heathcliff にあり、という前文を受けて) Hareton の blood (流した血=払った犠牲) の償いは Heathcliff に求められる (Heathcliff が償うことになる)、ということ。 *at one's hands* (= *at the hands of*: from the hands of; from. (Expressing the immediate source, after such verbs as *receive, take, find, seek, require*, etc.) 【参考】an explanation must be *required from* Mr.... ...氏から説明を求めねばならない。(勝俣銓吉郎『研究社 新英和活用大辞典』)

⁴ instil: to introduce (some immaterial principle, notion, feeling, or quality) little by little into the mind, soul, heart, etc.; to cause to enter by degrees; to insinuate. 少しずつ教え込む。(p. 97 注 4 参照)

⁵ lineage: [lɪnɪdʒ] lineal descent from an ancestor; ancestry, pedigree. 血統。

⁶ innuendo: an oblique hint, indirect suggestion; an allusive remark concerning a person or thing, esp. one of a depreciatory kind. ここでは、ブツブツあてこすりをいうこと。

⁷ commination: denunciation of punishment or vengeance, esp. threatening of Divine punishment or vengeance. ここでは、こっそり (神罰が下るぞという) 脅し文句を吐くこと。

⁸ intimately: in a manner involving close acquaintance; so as to be very familiar. たとえば「だれそれさんのことはよく存じております」の「よく」に相当。

⁹ hearsay: that which one hears or has heard some one say; information received by word of mouth, usually with implication that it is not trustworthy; oral tidings; report, tradition, rumour, common talk, gossip. 又聞き、うわさ。

¹⁰ near: niggardly, stingy, mean.

¹¹ be enacted: (fig.) happen, take place.

¹² he is yet—: he is still too gloomy ... now.

¹³ limp: to walk lamely. びっこを引いて歩く。

¹⁴ set out: to begin or start on a journey; to start on one's way.

every one of us.

I could not wring² from my little lady how she had spent the day; except that, as I supposed, the goal of her pilgrimage was Penistone Craggs; and she arrived without adventure to the gate of the farmhouse, when Hareton happened to issue forth³, attended by some canine⁴ followers, who attacked her train⁵.

They had a smart⁶ battle, before their owners could separate them: that formed an introduction⁷. Catherine told Hareton who she was, and where she was going; and asked him to show her the way; finally beguiling⁸ him to accompany her.

He opened the mysteries of⁹ the Fairy cave, and twenty other queer places; but, being in disgrace¹⁰, I was not favoured with a description of the interesting objects she saw.

I could gather, however, that her guide had been a favourite till she hurt his feelings by addressing him as a servant, and Heathcliff's housekeeper hurt hers, by calling him her cousin.

Then the language he had held¹¹ to her rankled in her heart; she who was always 'love,' and 'darling,' and 'queen,' and 'angel,' with everybody at the Grange; to be insulted so shockingly by a stranger! She did not comprehend¹² it; and hard work I had, to obtain a promise that she would not lay the grievance before¹³ her father.

¹ out of sorts: ub a low-spirited, irritable, or peevish state, esp. through physical discomfort.

² wring: to obtain or draw (something) from another by pressure, application, or art; to extract, elicit, bring out. ここでは「(いろんな手を使って) 聞き出す」。

³ issue forth: to come out.

⁴ canine: [kémàm, kænàm] of, belonging to, or characteristic of, a dog

⁵ her train: お供の犬たち。 *train*: a body of attendants, retainers, or followers; a retinue.

⁶ smart: brisk or vigorous; having a certain degree of intensity, force, strength, or quickness. ここは、派手に一戦を交えたこと。

⁷ introduction: the action of introducing or making known personally. 知り合いになるきっかけ。

⁸ beguile: to win the attention or interest of (any one) by willing means; to wile (one) on, or into any course. うまいことをいって人の気を引く、だまして～させる。

⁹ opened the mysteries of ...: ～の神秘のとばりを開いた。

¹⁰ being in disgrace: 不興を買っていたので。 *disgrace*: the disfavour of one in a powerful or exalted position, with the withdrawal of honour, degradation, dishonour, or contumely, which accompanies it.

¹¹ hold: to use (language) habitually or constantly.

¹² comprehend: to grasp with the mind, conceive fully or adequately, understand, 'take in'. (p. 78 注 11、p. 117 注 6、p. 272 注 7 参照)

¹³ lay ... before: to place in front of, to bring to the sight of; hence, to bring to the notice of, to submit to the consideration of. なになにをだれだれに提出する、見せる、注目させる (そして考慮を求める)。これもややおおげさな表現の部類に入ると思う。

I explained how he objected¹ to the whole household at the Heights, and how sorry he would be to find she had been there; but I insisted most on the fact, that if she revealed my negligence of his orders, he would perhaps be so angry that I should have to leave; and Cathy couldn't bear that prospect²: she pledged her word, and kept it, for my sake—after all, she was a sweet little girl.

¹ object: to express, or merely to feel, disapproval of; to have an objection *to*, disapprove of, dislike. ～に反感（不満）を示す、～を嫌う（*to*）。

² prospect: a mental looking forward; consideration or knowledge of, or regard to something future; (often pl.) that which one has to look forward to. ここでは将来に起こることへの「心配」。

Chapter V (XIX)

A letter, edged with black, announced the day of my master's return. Isabella was dead; and he wrote to bid me get mourning¹ for his daughter, and arrange a room, and other accommodations², for his youthful nephew.

Catherine ran wild with joy at the idea of welcoming her father back; and indulged most sanguine³ anticipations of the innumerable excellencies⁴ of her 'real' cousin.

The evening of their expected arrival came. Since early morning, she had been busy, ordering her own small affairs; and now, attired in her new black frock—poor thing! her aunt's death impressed her with no definite sorrow—she obliged me, by constant worrying, to walk with her, down through the grounds⁵, to meet them.

'Linton is just six months younger than I am,' she chattered, as we strolled leisurely over the swells and hollows of mossy turf, under shadow of the trees. 'How delightful it will be to have him for a playfellow! Aunt Isabella sent papa a beautiful lock of his hair; it was lighter than mine—more flaxen⁶, and quite as fine⁷. I have it carefully preserved in a little glass box; and I've often thought what pleasure it would be to see its owner—Oh! I am happy—and papa, dear, dear papa! Come, Ellen, let us run! come run!'

She ran, and returned and ran again, many times before my sober footsteps reached the gate, and then she seated herself on the grassy bank beside the path, and tried to wait patiently; but that was impossible; she couldn't be still⁸ a minute.

'How long⁹ they are!' she exclaimed. 'Ah, I see some dust on the road—they are coming! No! When will they be here? May we not go a little way—half a mile, Ellen,

¹ mourning: the dress or customary garment (now usually black) worn by mourners. 喪服 (弔意の象徴)。

² accommodation: (mostly in *pl.*) room and suitable provision for the reception of people; entertainment; lodgings.

³ sanguine: (of persons and expectations, etc.) hopeful or confident with reference to some particular issue. 楽観的な。

⁴ excellence: that in which a person or thing excels; an excellent feature or quality. 長所、美点。

⁵ down through the grounds: 次頁の 'up the park' に対応し、'the grounds = the park' (広い庭園)。屋敷から離れる方向が 'down'、近づくのが 'up' だが、土地の高低が関係している可能性もある。'grounds' については p. 270 注 3 参照。

⁶ flaxen: of the colour of dressed flax; chiefly in reference to the hair. 亜麻色の。

⁷ fine: very thin or slender.

⁸ still: motionless; not moving from one place, stationary; also, remaining in the same position or attitude, quiescent.

⁹ long: taking a long time; slow.

only just half a mile? Do say yes, to that clump¹ of birches at the turn!’

I refused staunchly²: and, at length, her suspense was ended: the travelling carriage rolled³ in sight.

Miss Cathy shrieked⁴, and stretched out her arms, as soon as she caught her father's face, looking from the window. He descended, nearly as eager as herself; and a considerable interval elapsed, ere they had a thought to spare for any but themselves.

While they exchanged caresses, I took a peep in to see after Linton. He was asleep, in a corner, wrapped in a warm, fur-lined cloak, as if it had been winter. A pale, delicate, effeminate⁵ boy, who might have been taken for⁶ my master's younger brother, so strong was the resemblance, but there was a sickly peevishness in his aspect, that Edgar Linton never had.

The latter saw me looking; and having shaken hands, advised me to close the door and leave him undisturbed; for the journey had fatigued him.

Cathy would fain have taken one glance⁷; but her father told her to come on, and they walked together up the park⁸, while I hastened before, to prepare the servants.

‘Now, darling,’ said Mr Linton, addressing⁹ his daughter, as they halted at the bottom of the front steps. ‘Your cousin is not so strong or so merry as you are, and he has lost his mother, remember, a very short time since, therefore, don't expect him to play and run about with you directly. And don't harass¹⁰ him much by talking—let him be quiet this evening, at least, will you?’

¹ clump: a cluster of trees.

² staunchly: [stɔːntʃlɪ] in a staunch (=standing firm and true to one's principles or purpose) manner; determinedly. 断固として。

³ roll: (of vehicles) to move or run on wheels.

⁴ shriek: to utter a loud sharp shrill cry.

⁵ effeminate: [iˈfemin •t] (of a man) feminine in appearance or manner; unmasculine.

⁶ take ... for : to suppose to be, consider as; often, with implication of error, to suppose to be (what it is not), to mistake for. ‘take A for B’ のかたちで、A を（誤って）B だと思う。(p. 277 注 3 参照)

⁷ Cathy would ... glance: (できれば) 一目見たいところだった。‘would fain’ については p. 269 注 6 参照。

⁸ park: a large ornamental piece of ground, usually comprising woodland and pasture, attached to or surrounding a country house or mansion, and used for recreation, and often for keeping deer, cattle, or sheep. 屋敷に付属する広大な庭園のことである。‘grounds’ に同じ。

⁹ address: to speak directly to.

¹⁰ harass: [hærəs] to trouble and annoy continually or repeatedly.

‘Yes, yes, papa,’ answered Catherine; ‘but I do want to see him; and he hasn’t once looked out.’

The carriage stopped; and the sleeper, being roused, was lifted to the ground by his uncle.

‘This is your cousin Cathy, Linton,’ he said, putting their little hands together. ‘She’s fond of you already; and mind you don’t grieve her by crying to-night. Try to be cheerful now; the travelling is at an end, and you have nothing to do but rest and amuse yourself as you please.’

‘Let me go to bed, then,’ answered the boy, shrinking¹ from Catherine’s salute²; and he put up his fingers to remove incipient³ tears.

‘Come, come, there’s a good child⁴,’ I whispered, leading him in. ‘You’ll make her weep too—see how sorry she is for you!’

I do not know whether it were sorrow for him, but his cousin put on as sad a countenance as himself, and returned to her father. All three entered, and mounted to the library, where tea was laid ready.

I proceeded to remove Linton’s cap and mantle, and placed him on a chair by the table; but he was no sooner seated than he began to cry afresh. My master inquired what was the matter.

‘I can’t sit on a chair,’ sobbed the boy.

‘Go to the sofa, then, and Ellen shall⁵ bring you some tea,’ answered his uncle patiently.

He had been greatly tried⁶ during the journey, I felt convinced, by his fretful,⁷ ailing¹

¹ shrink: to draw back or give way so as to avoid physical contact or conflict; to recoil through physical weakness or lack of courage or with abhorrence *from*. 触れられるのをいやがってあとずさりする。

² salute: a kiss, by way of salutation. 挨拶のキス。(p. 257 注 14 参照)

³ incipient: coming into, or in an early stage of, existence; in an initial stage. ここは、出かかった涙。

⁴ there’s a good child: いい子ですから。(p. 106 注 8 参照)

⁵ shall: 何度も登場しているのでくどいようだが、この ‘shall’ は話者の意志。したがって「Ellen にお茶を持ってこさせよう」。

⁶ try: to subject to a severe test or strain; to strain the endurance or patience of, put to straits, afflict. 試練にさらす、忍耐を強いる、つらい目に会わせる。

⁷ fretful: irritable, peevish, ill-tempered. (p. 270 注 1 参照)

charge.

Linton slowly trailed² himself off, and lay down. Cathy carried a foot-stool and her cup to his side.

At first she sat silent; but that could not last³; she had resolved to make a pet of her little cousin, as she would have⁴ him to be; and she commenced stroking⁵ his curls, and kissing his cheek, and offering him tea in her saucer, like a baby. This pleased him, for he was not much better⁶; he dried his eyes, and lightened⁷ into a faint smile.

‘Oh, he’ll do very well,’ said the master to me, after watching them a minute. ‘Very well, if we can keep him, Ellen. The company of a child of his own age will instil⁸ new spirit into him soon: and by wishing for strength he’ll gain it.’

‘Aye, if we can keep him!’ I mused⁹ to myself, and sore¹⁰ misgivings came over me that there was slight hope of that. And then, I thought, however¹¹ will that weakling¹² live at Wuthering Heights, between his father and Hareton? what playmates and instructors they’ll be.

Our doubts were presently decided¹³; even earlier than I expected. I had just taken the children upstairs, after tea was finished, and seen Linton asleep—he would not suffer¹⁴

¹ ailing: afflicted, affected with illness, suffering.

² trail oneself: to move along slowly and painfully, drag oneself along, crawl. 大儀そうに体をひきずって行く。

³ last: (of a state of things, a process, period of time) to continue, endure, go on.

⁴ have: (with *will*, *would*, or the like) to wish, will, require that something be done (to oneself or others). ‘as she would have him to be’ は「望みどおり、望んでいたように」。

⁵ stroke: to rub (a surface) softly with the hand or some implement; esp. to pass the hand softly in one direction over (the head, body, hair, of a person or animal) by way of caress or as a method of healing. なでる、さする。

⁶ not much better: = not much better than a baby.

⁷ lighten: (of the countenance or looks) to light up with lively expression, etc. (表情が) 明るくなる。

⁸ instil: to introduce (some immaterial principle, notion, feeling, or quality) little by little into the mind, soul, heart, etc.; to cause to enter by degrees; to infuse slowly or gradually; to insinuate. ここでは、少しずつ元気にさせる。(p. 97 注 4、p. 279 注 4 参照)

⁹ muse: to say or murmur meditatively. ‘to myself’ とあるから、自分の胸の内ではつぶやいた。

¹⁰ sore: causing great mental pain, distress, or sorrow. とても心の痛む、たいへん悲しい。

¹¹ however: (*colloq.* as an emphatic) in what way, by what means. いったいどのように、どうやって。‘how’ を ‘ever’ で強調したもの。

¹² weakling: a person who is physically or morally weak.

¹³ decide: to bring to a settlement, settle, resolve (a matter in dispute, doubt, or suspense). (議論・疑いなど) 決着をつける、解決する。

¹⁴ suffer: to allow or permit a person, animal, or inanimate thing to be or to do so-and-so. この意味では多用されている。(p. 248 注 11 など参照)

me to leave him till that was the case¹—I had come down, and was standing by the table in the hall, lighting a bed-room candle for Mr Edgar, when a maid stepped out of the kitchen and informed me that Mr Heathcliff's servant, Joseph, was at the door, and wished to speak with the master.

‘I shall ask him what he wants first,’ I said, in considerable trepidation². ‘A very unlikely hour to be troubling people, and the instant they have returned from a long journey. I don't think the master can see him.’

Joseph had advanced through the kitchen, as I uttered these words, and now presented himself in the hall. He was donned³ in his Sunday garments, with his most sanctimonious⁴ and sourest⁵ face; and, holding his hat in one hand, and his stick in the other, he proceeded to clean his shoes on the mat.

‘Good evening, Joseph,’ I said coldly. ‘What business brings you here to-night?’

‘It's Maister Linton Aw mun spake tull⁶,’ he answered, waving⁷ me disdainfully⁸ aside.

‘Mr Linton is going to bed; unless you have something particular to say, I'm sure he won't hear it now,’ I continued. ‘You had better sit down in there, and entrust your message to me.’

‘Which is his rahm?’ pursued the fellow, surveying the range⁹ of closed doors.

I perceived he was bent¹⁰ on refusing my mediation¹¹; so very reluctantly, I went up to the library, and announced the unseasonable¹² visitor, advising that he should be

¹ case: the actual state or position of matters; the fact. ここは= ‘till he was actually asleep’.

² trepidation: tremulous agitation; confusion; flurry.

³ don: to dress (a person) in a garment.

⁴ sanctimonious: of pretended or assumed sanctity or piety, making a show of sanctity, affecting the appearance of sanctity. 信心家ぶった、まじめくさった。

⁵ sour: austere; morose; peevish.

⁶ Aw mun spake tull: = I must speak to.

⁷ wave: to motion (a person, etc.) *aside, away, back, in, off* by a movement of the hand, etc. ここでは、あっちへ行つてろと手を振る。

⁸ disdainfully: [disdèinful] in a disdainful manner; with disdain; scornfully, contemptuously

⁹ range: a row, line, or series of things.

¹⁰ be bent: to be intent, determined, resolved (*on* or *upon* an object or action). ～する決心である。

¹¹ mediation: agency as an intermediary; the state or fact of serving as an intermediate agent. 間に入ること、仲介、取次ぎ。

¹² unseasonable: not suited to, not in accordance with, the time or occasion; untimely, inopportune. 時ならぬ、時間をわきまえぬ。

dismissed till next day.

Mr Linton had no time to empower¹ me to do so, for he² mounted close at my heels, and pushing into the apartment, planted himself at the far side of the table, with his two fists clapped³ on the head of his stick, and began in an elevated tone, as if anticipating opposition.

‘Hathecliff has sent me for his lad, un Aw munn’t goa back baht him.’⁴

Edgar Linton was silent a minute; an expression of exceeding sorrow overcast⁵ his features; he would have pitied the child on his own account⁶; but, recalling Isabella’s hopes and fears, and anxious wishes for her son, and her commendations⁷ of him to his care, he grieved bitterly at the prospect of yielding⁸ him up, and searched in his heart how it might be avoided. No plan offered itself⁹; the very exhibition of any desire to keep him would have rendered the claimant¹⁰ more peremptory¹¹; there was nothing left but to resign¹² him. However, he was not going to rouse him from his sleep.

‘Tell Mr Heathcliff,’ he answered calmly, ‘that his son shall come to Wuthering Heights to-morrow. He is in bed, and too tired to go the distance now. You may also tell him that the mother of Linton desired him to remain under my guardianship; and, at present, his health is very precarious’¹³.

‘Noa!’ said Joseph, giving a thud¹⁴ with his prop¹⁵ on the floor, and assuming an

¹ empower: to impart or bestow power to an end or for a purpose; to enable, permit.

² he: 別のテキストには Joseph と明記。

³ clap: to apply, place, put, set, or ‘stick’, with promptness and effect. さっと (すばやく) 置く。‘put, place’ を動的に生き活きと表す語とされる (‘a vivid or picturesque equivalent of ‘put’, ‘place’, with the implication of energetic action easily performed.’ – *OED*)。

⁴ Aw munn’t goa back baht him.: I mustn’t go back without him.

⁵ overcast: to cover or overspread with clouds, or with something that darkens or dulls the surface; (fig.) to overshadow, render gloomy, darken..

⁶ on his own account: 彼自身としても。たとえ Isabella の希望がなかったとしても、ということ。

⁷ commendation: giving in charge, entrusting, committal.

⁸ yield: (arch. or poet.) to hand over, give up, relinquish possession of, surrender, resign. 引き渡す。すぐあとでは ‘resign’ と言い換えている。

⁹ No plan offered itself.: No plan occurred. これといった策は思い浮かばなかった。

¹⁰ claimant: one who makes or enters a claim.

¹¹ peremptory: intolerant of refusal or opposition; insisting on compliance or obedience; imperious, dictatorial. 有無をいわせぬ。

¹² resign: to relinquish, surrender, give up, or hand over (something). (本頁注 8 参照)

¹³ precarious: liable to fail, insecure, unstable, uncertain.

¹⁴ thud: a dull heavy sound without resonance, such as is produced when a heavy stone strikes the ground. (Orig. *north. dial.*) ドスン、ドンという音。

¹⁵ prop: a stick.

authoritative¹ air. ‘Noa! that manes nowt—Hathecliff maks noa 'cahnt uh t' mother, nur yah norther, but he'll hev his lad; und Aw mun tak him; soa nah yah know!’²

‘You shall not to-night!’ answered Linton decisively. ‘Walk downstairs at once, and repeat to your master what I have said. Ellen, show him down. Go—’

And, aiding the indignant elder with a lift by the arm, he rid the room of him, and closed the door.

‘Varrah weell!’ shouted Joseph, as he slowly drew off³. ‘Tuh morn, he's come hisseln, and thrust *him* aht, if yah darr!’⁴

¹ authoritative: [ɔ:θɔːrɪtətɪv] of authority, of the nature of authority, exercising or assuming power; imperative, dictatorial, commanding. ‘assuming an authoritative air’ かさにかかった態度を見せて。

² Noa!...yah know!: No! that means naught (=nothing)—Heathcliff makes no count of (= takes no notice of) the mother, nor you neither—but he’ll have his lad; and I must take him—so now you know!

³ draw off: to move off, withdraw, retire, retreat.

⁴ Tuh morn...darr!: To-morn, he’s come himself, and thrust him out, if you dare! 明日はHeathcliff がやってくるから、やれるものなら、やつを追い返してみるがええ。

Chapter VI (XX)

To obviate¹ the danger of this threat being fulfilled, Mr Linton commissioned² me to take the boy home early, on Catherine's pony, and, said he—

‘As we shall now have no influence over his destiny³, good or bad, you must say nothing of where he is gone to my daughter; she cannot associate⁴ with him hereafter; and it is better for her to remain in ignorance of his proximity⁵, lest she should be restless, and anxious to visit the Heights—merely tell her, his father sent for him suddenly, and he has been obliged to leave us.’

Linton was very reluctant to be roused from his bed, at five o'clock, and astonished to be informed that he must prepare for further travelling: but I softened off⁶ the matter by stating that he was going to spend some time with his father, Mr Heathcliff, who wished to see him so much, he did not like to defer⁷ the pleasure till he should recover from his late journey.

‘My father?’ he cried, in strange perplexity. ‘Mamma never told me I had a father. Where does he live? I'd rather stay with uncle.’

‘He lives a little distance from the Grange,’ I replied, ‘just beyond those hills—not so far, but you may walk over here, when you get hearty. And you should be glad to go home, and to see him. You must try to love him, as you did your mother, and then he will love you.’

‘But why have I not heard of him before?’ asked Linton; ‘why didn't mamma and he live together, as other people do?’

‘He had business to keep him in the north,’ I answered; ‘and your mother's health

¹ obviate: to prevent by anticipatory measures. あらかじめ手段を講じて回避する。(p. 27 注 5, p. 190 注 7 参照)

² commission: to give authority to act; to empower, authorize; to entrust with an office or duty. 委任する。

³ destiny: that which is destined to happen to a particular person, country, institution, etc. (in weakened sense) what in the course of events will become or has become of a person or thing. 運命、先々どうなるか。

⁴ associate: to keep company or have intercourse (*with*). ～とつきあう (*with*)。

⁵ proximity: the fact, condition, or position of being near or close by; nearness, neighbourhood.

⁶ soften off: to mitigate, assuage, or diminish; to render less painful or more easy to bear. やわらげる。‘off’ がなくても同じ。

⁷ defer: to put off (action, procedure) to some later time; to delay, postpone.

required her to reside in the south.'

'And why didn't mamma speak to me about him?' persevered the child. 'She often talked of uncle, and I learnt¹ to love him long ago. How am I to love papa? I don't know him.'

'Oh, all children love their parents,' I said. 'Your mother, perhaps, thought you would want to be with him, if she mentioned him often to you. Let us make haste. An early ride on such a beautiful morning is much preferable to an hour's more sleep.'

'Is *she* to go with us,' he demanded. 'The little girl I saw yesterday?'

'Not now,' replied I.

'Is uncle?' he continued.

'No, I shall be your companion there,' I said.

Linton sank back on his pillow, and fell into a brown study².

'I won't go without uncle,' he cried at length. 'I can't tell where you mean to take me.'

I attempted to persuade him of the naughtiness³ of showing reluctance to meet his father: still he obstinately resisted any progress towards dressing; and I had to call for my master's assistance, in coaxing⁴ him out of bed.

The poor thing was finally got off with several delusive⁵ assurances that his absence should be short; that Mr Edgar and Cathy would visit him; and other promises, equally ill-founded, which I invented and reiterated⁶, at intervals, throughout the way.

¹ learn: to acquire knowledge of (a subject) or skill in (an art, etc.) as a result of study, experience, or teaching. 英米の辞書を参照しても、一見この用例にぴったりの語義はみあたらないが、ここでは母から叔父について何度も話を聞かされた「結果として」好きになったということ。

【参考】(= *come to do something*—何々するやうになる) **Learn to be** (= *become*) a good reader. 読書家になれ。You will **learn to** love him. 今に可愛くなる。(齋藤秀三郎『英和中辞典』)

² brown study: a state of mental abstraction or musing: 'gloomy meditations'. 物思い。

³ naughtiness: waywardness, disobedience. 聞き分けがないこと。

⁴ coax: to influence or persuade by caresses, flattery, or blandishment. Johnson says 'To wheedle, to flatter, to humour: a low word'. 'coaxing him out of bed' 機嫌を取って(なだめすかして) ベッドから出す。

⁵ delusive: having the attribute of deluding, characterized by delusion, tending to delude, deceptive.

⁶ reiterate: to repeat (a request, statement, word, etc.)

The pure heather-scented air, the bright sunshine, and the gentle canter¹ of Minny relieved his despondency², after a while. He began to put questions concerning his new home, and its inhabitants, with greater interest and liveliness.

‘Is Wuthering Heights as pleasant a place as Thrushcross Grange?’ he inquired, turning to take a last glance into the valley, whence³ a light mist mounted and formed a fleecy⁴ cloud on the skirts⁵ of the blue.

‘It is not so buried in trees,’ I replied, ‘and it is not quite so large, but you can see the country beautifully all round; and the air is healthier for you—fresher and dryer. You will, perhaps, think the building old and dark, at first—though it is a respectable house, the next best in the neighbourhood. And you will have such nice rambles on the moors! Hareton Earnshaw—that is Miss Cathy’s other cousin; and so yours in a manner—will show you all the sweetest spots; and you can bring a book in fine weather, and make a green hollow your study; and, now and then, your uncle may join you in a walk; he does, frequently, walk out on the hills.’

‘And what is my father like?’ he asked. ‘Is he as young and handsome as uncle?’

‘He’s as young,’ said I, ‘but he has black hair, and eyes; and looks sterner, and he is taller and bigger altogether⁶. He’ll not seem to you so gentle and kind at first, perhaps, because it is not his way⁷—still, mind you be frank and cordial⁸ with him; and naturally, he’ll be fonder of you than any uncle, for you are his own.’

‘Black hair and eyes!’ mused Linton. ‘I can’t fancy him. Then I am not like him, am I?’

‘Not much,’ I answered ... Not a morsel⁹, I thought: surveying with regret the white

¹ canter: a Canterbury gallop; an easy gallop. 馬の速度 : gallop (最高速度) > canter (普通駆け足) > trot (速足・だく足 slow trot と fast trot とがある) > amble (側対歩。滑らかでゆったりとしたペース) > walk (並足)。

² despondency: depression or dejection of spirits through loss of resolution or hope.

³ whence: from which place; from or out of which.

⁴ fleecy: resembling a fleece in colour or conformation; woolly. 羊毛のようにふわふわした。

⁵ skirts: (chiefly in pl.) the border, boundary, or outlying part of a territory, country, kingdom, etc. ここでは青空と大地の境目あたり。

⁶ altogether: in all respects, in every particular; entirely, wholly, totally.

⁷ way: a habitual or characteristic manner of action, behaviour, expression, or the like. 流儀。

⁸ cordial: warm and hearty.

⁹ morsel: a small piece (of anything), esp. a portion cut or broken from a mass; a little piece; a fragment. ‘Not a morsel.’ ちっとも (似ていない)。

complexion, and slim frame of my companion, and his large languid¹ eyes ... his mother's eyes save² that, unless a morbid³ touchiness⁴ kindled them, a moment, they had not a vestige⁵ of her sparkling spirit.

‘How strange that he should never come to see mamma and me,’ he murmured. ‘Has he ever seen me? If he has, I must have been a baby—I remember not a single thing about him!’

‘Why, Master Linton,’ said I, ‘three hundred miles is a great distance: and ten years seem very different in length, to a grown up person, compared with what they do to you. It is probable Mr Heathcliff proposed going, from summer to summer, but never found a convenient opportunity: and now it is too late—Don't trouble him with questions on the subject: it will disturb him for no good⁶.’

The boy was fully occupied with his own cogitations⁷ for the remainder of the ride, till we halted before the farm-house garden gate. I watched to catch his impressions in his countenance. He surveyed the carved front, and low-browed⁸ lattices, the straggling⁹ gooseberry bushes, and crooked firs, with solemn intentness, and then shook his head: his private feelings entirely disapproved of¹⁰ the exterior of his new abode; but he had sense to postpone complaining—there might be compensation within.

Before he dismounted, I went and opened the door. It was half-past six; the family had just finished breakfast; the servant was clearing and wiping down¹¹ the table; Joseph stood by his master's chair telling some tale concerning a lame horse; and Hareton was preparing for the hay-field¹².

¹ languid: wanting in vigour or vitality. 生気のない。

² save: *conj.* introducing a sentence which states an exception; now only in the full form **save that**.

³ morbid: (of mental conditions, ideas, etc.) unwholesome, sickly: chiefly applied to unreasonable feelings of gloom, apprehension, or suspicion. 病的な。

⁴ touchiness: sensitiveness of temper, irritability, testiness. 怒りっぽさ。

⁵ vestige: a very small or slight trace, indication, or amount (of something); a particle, a scrap. ごくわずかの痕跡、かすかに～を思わせるもの。この意味では通例否定語とともに使われる。

⁶ it will disturb him for no good: そんなことをしてもお父様を困らせるだけでなにもいいこと（人の利益になること）はありません。

⁷ cogitation: an act of thinking or consideration, a thought or reflection. (with pl.).

⁸ low-browed: (of a building, doorway, etc.) having a low entrance; hence, dark, gloomy. ここでは「うす暗い、陰気な」。

⁹ straggling: (of hair, plants, a hedge, etc.) growing irregularly or dispersedly.

¹⁰ disapprove of: to regard with disfavour or moral condemnation; to feel or express disapprobation of. ～に不満（不同意）を示す。

¹¹ wipe down: to clean a surface thoroughly with a cloth. (Macmillan Dictionary)

¹² hay(-)field: a field in which haymaking is going on, or in which grass is standing to be cut for hay. 干し草畑。

‘Hullo, Nelly!’ said Mr Heathcliff when he saw me. ‘I feared I should have to come down and fetch my property myself—You’ve brought it, have you? Let us see what we can make of it’¹.

He got up and strode² to the door: Hareton and Joseph followed in gaping curiosity³. Poor Linton ran a frightened eye over the faces of the three.

‘Sure-ly,’ said Joseph, after a grave inspection, ‘he’s swopped wi’ ye, maister, an’ yon’s his lass!’⁴ Heathcliff, having stared his son into an ague⁵ of confusion, uttered a scornful laugh.

‘God! what a beauty! what a lovely, charming thing’ he exclaimed. ‘Haven’t they reared⁶ it on snails and sour milk, Nelly? Oh, damn my soul! but that’s worse than I expected—and the devil knows I was not sanguine!’⁷

I bid the trembling and bewildered child get down, and enter. He did not thoroughly comprehend the meaning of his father’s speech, or whether it were intended for him: indeed, he was not yet certain that the grim, sneering stranger was his father; but he clung to me with growing trepidation; and on Mr Heathcliff’s taking a seat, and bidding him ‘come hither,’ he hid his face on my shoulder and wept.

‘Tut, tut!’ said Heathcliff, stretching out a hand and dragging him roughly between his knees, and then holding up his head by the chin. ‘None of that nonsense! We’re not going to hurt thee, Linton—isn’t that thy name? Thou art thy mother’s child entirely! Where is *my* share in thee, puling⁸ chicken?’

¹ what we can make of it: そいつを材料になにをこしらえられるか→どんな人間に仕立てられるか。つまり品定めをしようということ。

² stride: to walk with long or extended steps. 大股に歩く。

³ in gaping curiosity: 好奇心にかられ口をぽかんと開けて。

⁴ he’s swopped ... his lass!: he’s swapped with ye (= you), master, and yon’s (= that’s) his lass! 「やつは旦那と取り替えっこしたんだ。(とても男には見えないから) あれはやつの娘っこではねえか!」ということだろう。swop (= swap): to exchange (a thing) with another person. つまり「Edgar が Heathcliff と (こどもを) 交換した」と取っておく。

⁵ ague: [éigju:] (loosely or fig.) any fit of shaking or shivering, like the cold stage of ague; quaking.

⁶ rear: to bring up (a person), to foster, nourish, educate. 育てる。‘on snails and sour milk’ は、カタツムリと腐った牛乳を食わせて。‘on’ は ‘the means of sustenance’ (生命を維持する手段、つまり食べもの) を示す。

⁷ the devil knows I was not sanguine!: 期待なんぞしちゃいなかったが、それにしてもなあ! ‘the devil knows’ は、ここではいまいしさを強調表現だろう。sanguine: hopeful or confident with reference to some particular issue.

⁸ puling: crying as a child, whining, feebly wailing.

He took off the boy's cap and pushed back his thick flaxen curls, felt his slender arms, and his small fingers; during which examination, Linton ceased crying, and lifted his great blue eyes to inspect the inspector.

'Do you know me?' asked Heathcliff, having satisfied himself that the limbs were all equally frail and feeble.

'No!' said Linton, with a gaze of vacant¹ fear.

'You've heard of me, I dare say?'

'No,' he replied again.

'No? What a shame of your mother, never to waken your filial² regard for me! You are my son, then, I'll tell you; and your mother was a wicked slut³ to leave you in ignorance of the sort of father you possessed—Now, don't wince,⁴ and colour up⁵! Though it *is* something⁶ to see you have not white blood⁷—Be a good lad; and I'll do for you.—Nelly, if you be tired, you may sit down, if not, get home again—I guess you'll report what you hear, and see, to the cipher⁸ at the Grange; and this thing⁹ won't be settled while you linger about it.'

'Well,' replied I, 'I hope you'll be kind to the boy, Mr Heathcliff, or you'll not keep him long, and he's all you have akin in the wide world that you will ever know—remember.'

'I'll be *very* kind to him, you needn't fear!' he said, laughing. 'Only nobody else must be kind to him—I'm jealous¹⁰ of monopolizing his affection—And, to begin my kindness,

¹ vacant: characterized by, exhibiting, or proceeding from, absence of intelligence or thought; expressionless, meaningless; inane. (思考力を失って) ぼーっとした。

² filial: (of sentiments, duty, etc.) due from a child to a parent.

³ slut: a woman of a low or loose character; a hussy, jade. (p. 212 注 6 参照)

⁴ wince: to start or make an involuntary shrinking movement in consequence of or in order to avoid pain, or when alarmed or suddenly affected.

⁵ colour up: to turn red in the face, to blush.

⁶ something: (in more emphatic use) a thing, fact, person, etc., of some value, consideration, or regard. たいしたもの (こと)。

⁷ you have not white blood: (顔が赤くなれば) まともな赤い血が流れている、ということ。

⁸ cipher: (fig.) a person who fills a place, but is of no importance or worth, a nonentity, a 'mere nothing'.

⁹ this thing: = Linton. 最後の 'it' も同じ。

¹⁰ jealous: zealous or solicitous for the preservation or well-being of something possessed or esteemed; vigilant or careful in guarding; suspiciously careful or watchful. (p. 159 注 7 参照)

Joseph! bring the lad some breakfast.—Hareton, you infernal calf¹, begone to your work. Yes, Nell,’ he added, when they had departed, ‘my son is prospective² owner of your place, and I should not wish him to die till I was certain of being his successor. Besides, he's *mine*, and I want the triumph³ of seeing *my* descendant⁴ fairly lord of their estates⁵; my child hiring their children, to till their father's lands for wages—That is the sole consideration⁶ which can make me endure the whelp⁷—I despise him for himself⁸, and hate him for the memories he revives! But, that consideration is sufficient⁹; he's safe with me, and shall be tended as carefully as your master tends his own—I have a room upstairs, furnished for him in handsome style—I've engaged a tutor, also, to come three times a week, from twenty miles distance, to teach him what he pleases to learn. I've ordered Hareton to obey him: and in fact, I've arranged every thing with a view to preserve the superior¹⁰ and the gentleman in him, above his associates—I do regret, however, that he so little deserves the trouble—if I wished any blessing in the world, it was to find him a worthy object of pride¹¹, and I'm bitterly disappointed with the whey-faced¹² whining wretch!¹³

¹ calf: the young of any bovine animal, esp. of the domestic cow; (applied to human beings) a stupid fellow, a dolt.

² prospective: that looks forward or is looked forward to; that is in prospect; expected, hoped for; future. ～になる見込みの、将来の。

³ triumph: the exultation of victory or success; elation; joy; rapturous delight. 勝利（成功）の喜び。

⁴ descendant: one who ‘descends’ or is descended from an ancestor; issue, offspring (in any degree near or remote). 子孫。

⁵ seeing my descendant fairly lord of their estate: ‘see’ + 目的語 + 原形不定詞（なにがどうするのを見る）のかたちとすれば ‘lord’ は動詞で、‘fairly’ はそれにかかる副詞だが、「(地所を) 所有（支配）する」の意味では ‘to lord of’ という用例をみかけず疑問が残る。あるいは ‘be lord’ の ‘be’ が省略されているか？ いずれにしても、Heathcliff は周到な計画に基づいて行動する男だから、‘fairly’ は ‘by proper or lawful means, legitimately; opposed to foully.’ と解しておく。

⁶ consideration: the taking into account of anything as a motive or reason; a fact or circumstance taken, or to be taken, into account; a reason considered. 事情や理由を考慮すること、または考慮の対象たる事情や理由。ここでは「理由・わけ」でよいだろう。

⁷ whelp: ガキ。(p. 123 注 8 参照)

⁸ for himself: こいつそのものがこんなだから。この ‘for’ は次の ‘for the memories’ 同様 ‘because of, on account of’ で「理由」。

⁹ that consideration is sufficient: (こんなガキは大嫌いだが) それだけ理由があれば十分だ (ちゃんと面倒はみてやる)、ということ。

¹⁰ superior: a person of higher rank or dignity; one who is above another or others in social or official station. ここを「すぐれたところ (面)」とする解釈もあるが、Linton には不適當。すぐあとに ‘the gentleman’ とあるから「地位的に上である人、目上 (の者)」と取り、「あいつの目上の紳士としての体面を保つ」とするのがよいだろう。

¹¹ to find him a worthy object of pride: Linton が自慢できるほどのやつであること。

¹² whey-faced: ‘whey’ は ‘The serum or watery part of milk which remains after the separation of the curd by coagulation, esp. in the manufacture of cheese.’ (チーズ製造の際、固形物を凝固させて分離したあとに残る液体。乳漿) 昔は廃棄されていた。‘whey-faced’ は辞書にはないが、‘wheyish: like or resembling whey in consistence, colour, or other quality; watery, thin; palish.’ (乳漿のように水っぽい、青白い) より、青白い顔をしたということだろう。

¹³ wretch: a vile, sorry, or despicable person; one of opprobrious or reprehensible character; a mean or contemptible creature. なさけないやつ。

While he was speaking, Joseph returned, bearing a basin of milk-porridge, and placed it before Linton. He stirred round the homely¹ mess with a look of aversion, and affirmed he could not eat it.

I saw the old man-servant shared² largely³ in his master's scorn of the child, though he was compelled to retain⁴ the sentiment in his heart, because Heathcliff plainly meant his underlings⁵ to hold him in honour.

'Cannot ate it?' repeated he, peering⁶ in Linton's face, and subduing⁷ his voice to a whisper, for fear of being overheard. 'But Maister Hareton nivir ate nowt else, when he wer a little un; und what wer gooid eneugh for him's gooid eneugh fur yah, Aw's rayther think!'⁸

'I *shan't* eat it!' answered Linton, snappishly. 'Take it away.'

Joseph snatched⁹ up the food indignantly, and brought it to us.

'Is there owt ails th' victuals?'¹⁰ he asked, thrusting the tray under Heathcliff's nose.

'What should ail them?' he said.

'Wah!' answered Joseph, 'yon dainty chap says he cannut ate 'em. Bud Aw guess it's raight! His mother wer just soa—we wer a'most too mucky to sow t' corn for makking her breed.'¹¹

¹ homely: simple, plain.

² share: to have a share (*in* something); to participate *in*, to take part *in*. ～を共にする、～に加わる (*in*).

³ largely: in a large measure; to a great extent; extensively, greatly, considerably, much.

⁴ retain: to keep hold or possession of; to continue having or keeping. ここでは、(出さずに) しまっておく。

⁵ underling: one who is subject or subordinate to another; in later use esp. a subordinate agent or official, an understrapper. 部下、小役人、下っぱ。ここでは使用人。

⁶ peer: to look narrowly, esp. in order to discern something indistinct or difficult to make out. (見えにくいものを識別しようと) じっと見る。

⁷ subdue: to reduce the intensity, force, or vividness of (sound, colour, light)

⁸ But Maister ... think!: But Master Hareton never ate nothing [anything] else when he was a little one; and what was good enough for him is good enough for you, I'd rather think!

⁹ snatch: to catch, pick, or take *up*, suddenly or smartly. いきなり取り上げる、ひったくる。

¹⁰ Is there ... victuals?: Is there aught (= anything) ails the victuals? この食べ物になにか悪いところでもあるかね?

¹¹ yon dainty ... breed.: that dainty chap says he cannot eat them. But I guess it's right! His mother was just so—we were almost too mucky [= dirty] to sow the corn for making her bread. きたねえわしらの播いた麦でこせえたパンは食えねえ (と抜かしたからな)。

‘Don't mention his mother to me,’ said the master, angrily. ‘Get him something that he can eat, that's all. What is his usual food, Nelly?’

I suggested boiled milk or tea; and the housekeeper received instructions to prepare some.

Come¹, I reflected, his father's selfishness may contribute to² his comfort. He perceives his delicate constitution³, and the necessity of treating him tolerably⁴. I'll console⁵ Mr Edgar by acquainting⁶ him with the turn⁷ Heathcliff's humour has taken.

Having no excuse for lingering longer, I slipped out, while Linton was engaged in timidly rebuffing⁸ the advances of a friendly sheep-dog. But he was too much on the alert to be cheated—as I closed the door, I heard a cry, and a frantic⁹ repetition of the words—

‘Don't leave me! I'll not stay here! I'll not stay here’

Then the latch was raised and fell—they did not suffer him to come forth. I mounted Minny, and urged her to a trot¹⁰; and so my brief guardianship ended.

¹ come: pay attention—used only in the imperative and often intensified by repetition to imply rebuke, impatience, or encouragement (*Webster 3rd*) ここでは、「よしよし（この分だとだいじょうぶ）」という感じ。

² contribute to: [kən'trɪbjʊ:t] to be an important factor in; help to cause. なになにのおかげ（せい、助け）でどうなる。ここではよいことにつながるが、悪いことにも用いる。

³ constitution: physical nature or character of the body in regard to healthiness, strength, vitality, etc. （健康・不健康、丈夫・虚弱についていう）体、体質。なお気質（nature, character, or condition of mind; mind, disposition, temperament, temper.）についても用いられる。

⁴ tolerably: in a way that may be borne, endured, or permitted; bearably, supportably; allowably, permissibly. ここでは ‘permissibly’ （大目に見て、寛大に）が適当。あまりきびしくせずに、ということ。

⁵ console: to comfort in mental distress or depression; to alleviate the sorrow of (any one); ‘to free from the sense of misery’. 慰める。

⁶ acquaint: to inform (a person) of (a thing); to make cognizant or aware (*with, that*).

⁷ turn: direction, tendency, drift, trend. Heathcliff の気分がどっちに向いているか、つまりどんな方針を取るつもりか。

⁸ rebuff: to repel bluntly or ungraciously; to give a rude check or repulse to (one). じゃけんに追い払う、はねつける。

⁹ frantic: affected by wild and ungovernable excitement; ‘mad’ with rage, pain, grief, etc.

¹⁰ trot: 速歩、だく足。馬の速度については p. 291 注 1 参照。

Chapter VII (XXI)

We had sad work with little Cathy that day: she rose in high glee¹, eager to join her cousin; and such passionate tears and lamentations² followed the news of his departure, that Edgar, himself, was obliged to sooth her, by affirming he should come back soon; he added, however, 'if I can get him;' and there were no hopes of that.

This promise poorly pacified³ her; but time was more potent⁴; and though still, at intervals, she inquired of her father, when Linton would return, before she did see him again, his features had waxed so dim in her memory that she did not recognise him.

When I chanced to encounter the housekeeper of Wuthering Heights, in paying business-visits to Gimmerton, I used to ask how the young master got on⁵; for he lived almost as secluded⁶ as Catherine herself, and was never to be seen. I could gather⁷ from her that he continued in weak health, and was a tiresome⁸ inmate. She said Mr Heathcliff seemed to dislike him ever longer⁹ and worse, though he took some trouble to conceal it. He had an antipathy¹⁰ to the sound of his voice, and could not do at all with¹¹ his sitting in the same room with him many minutes together.

There seldom passed much talk between them; Linton learnt his lessons, and spent his evenings in a small apartment they called the parlour; or else lay in bed all day; for he was

¹ glee: mirth, joy, rejoicing; in modern use, a lively feeling of delight caused by special circumstances and finding expression in appropriate gestures and looks.

² lamentation: (an instance of) the action of lamenting; the passionate or demonstrative expression of grief; mourning; a lament.

³ pacify: [pæ'sɪfaɪ] To allay the anger, excitement or agitation of (a person); to calm, quiet; to appease.

⁴ potent: [pəʊ'tənt] having great authority or influence; effective, convincing.

⁵ get on: 'get on' のみで使われると案外わかりにくいだが、基本的には「(順調に) 先へ進む (to advance, make progress)」という意味。この文では 'get along' に同じく、進みぶり＝暮らしぶりについていう。【参考】 **get along** 進む。(世を) 渡る。How are you **getting along**? 如何御暮らし。(齋藤秀三郎『英和中辞典』) How are you *getting on*? いかがお過ごしですか。(研究社『リーダーズ英和辞典』)

⁶ seclude: to remove or guard from public view; to withdraw from opportunities of social intercourse.

⁷ gather: to collect (knowledge) by observation and reasoning; to infer, deduce, conclude. (p. 223 注 2、p. 251 注 2 参照)

⁸ tiresome: (colloq.) troublesome, disagreeable, unpleasant; irksome, annoying, vexatious.

⁹ ever longer: ここでは 'more than ever (before)' (ますます、これまで以上に) または 'more than formerly' (以前にもまして) ということだろうが、この意味では手元の辞書に類例を見ない。

¹⁰ antipathy: feeling against, hostile feeling towards; constitutional or settled aversion or dislike. (抜きがたい) 反感、嫌悪。

¹¹ do with: to get on with, put up with, manage with. (人と) うまくやる、我慢する。

constantly getting coughs, and colds, and aches¹, and pains of some sort.

‘And I never knew such a faint-hearted creature,’ added the woman; ‘nor one so careful of hisselsn. He *will*² go on³, if I leave the window open, a bit late in the evening. Oh! it's killing, a breath of night air! And he must have a fire in the middle of summer; and Joseph's 'bacca [= tobaccos] pipe is poison; and he must always have sweets and dainties, and always milk, milk for ever—heeding naught⁴ how the rest of us are pinched⁵ in winter—and there he'll sit, wrapped in his furred cloak in his chair by the fire, and some toast and water, or other slop⁶ on the hob to sip at; and if Hareton, for pity, comes to amuse him—Hareton is not bad-natured, though he's rough—they're sure to part, one swearing, and the other crying. I believe the master would relish Earnshaw's thrashing him to a mummy⁷, if he were not his son: and, I'm certain, he would be fit to turn him out of doors⁸, if he knew half the nursing he gives hisselsn⁹. But then, he won't go into danger of temptation; he never enters the parlour, and should Linton show those ways in the house¹⁰ where he is, he sends him upstairs directly.’

I divined¹¹ from this account that utter lack of sympathy had rendered young Heathcliff selfish and disagreeable, if he were not so originally; and my interest in him, consequently, decayed¹²; though still I was moved with a sense of grief at his lot, and a

¹ ache: [eik] a pain; in later usage, a continuous or abiding pain, in contrast to a sudden or sharp one. (いつまでもつづく疼くような) 痛み。心身両方に用いられる。

² will: (expressing natural disposition to do something, and hence habitual action) has the habit, or ‘a way’, of –ing; is addicted or accustomed to –ing; habitually does; sometimes connoting ‘may be expected to’ 傾向・習慣的行為を表す。

³ go on: (colloq.) to talk volubly; to rail, storm at; also, to talk excessively or tiresomely about (a subject). ここでは、くどくどと文句をいう。次の ‘Oh! it's killing, a breath of night air!’ は Linton のセリフ。上の注のとおり ‘will’ があるから、きつと (きまって) 文句をいう。

⁴ heeding naught: = heeding nothing. 一顧だにせず、まったくおかまいなしに。heed: (In Engl. now chiefly literary; in common use in Sc.) to care for, concern oneself about; to take notice of, give attention to, to mind; to regard.

⁵ pinch: (of cold, hunger, etc.) grip (a person) painfully. ここでは、寒さで縮み上がらせる。

⁶ slop: (now usually pl.) liquid or semi-liquid food of a weak, unappetizing kind; applied contemptuously to invalids' spoon-food, tea, etc. 流動食、飲み物。

⁷ thrush a person to a mummy: 人をめちゃくちゃに (フニャフニャになるまで) 打ちのめす。
mummy: a pulpy substance or mass.

⁸ he would ... doors: Heathcliff はカンカンになって Linton を外へ追い出してしまうだろう。fit: inclined, disposed.; (now chiefly colloq. and dial. in stronger sense) angry or troubled enough to (do something desperate or violent).

⁹ the nursing he gives hisselsn (= himself): Linton が自分の体を (必要以上に) 大事に扱う、自分を甘やかすこと。

¹⁰ should Linton show those ways in the house: もし house (= the family sitting-room) で Lintons が those ways (そんなわがままぶり) を見せると。

¹¹ divine: to make out by sagacity, intuition, or fortunate conjecture (that is, in some other way than by actual information); to conjecture, guess. 直感的に理解する (見抜く)、推測する。

¹² decay: to fall off (in quality or condition); to deteriorate or become impaired; to lose its characteristic quality, strength, or excellence; to be in a failing condition.

wish that he had been left with us.

Mr Edgar encouraged me to gain information; he thought a great deal about him, I fancy, and would have run some risk to see him; and he told me once to ask the housekeeper whether he ever came into the village?

She said he had only been twice, on horseback, accompanying his father: and both times he pretended to be quite knocked up¹ for three or four days afterwards.

That housekeeper left, if I recollect rightly, two years after he came; and another, whom I did not know, was her successor: she lives there still.

Time wore on² at the Grange in its former pleasant way, till Miss Cathy reached sixteen. On the anniversary³ of her birth we never manifested⁴ any signs of rejoicing, because it was, also, the anniversary of my late mistress's death. Her father invariably spent that day alone in the library; and walked, at dusk, as far as Gimmerton kirkyard, where he would frequently prolong his stay beyond midnight. Therefore Catherine was thrown on⁵ her own resources for amusement.

This twentieth of March was a beautiful spring day, and when her father had retired⁶, my young lady came down dressed for going out, and said she had asked to have a ramble on the edge of the moor with me; and Mr Linton had given her leave⁷, if we went only a short distance, and were back within the hour⁸.

'So make haste, Ellen!' she cried. 'I know where I wish to go; where a colony⁹ of moor

¹ knocked up: exhausted.

² wear: (of time, a period of time) to pass on or advance gradually to its conclusion; to pass away (with adv., *asaway, on, out, through*).

³ anniversary: the day in any year which agrees in date with a particular day in a former year; hence, the yearly return of any remarkable date, the day on which some event of ecclesiastical, national, or personal interest, is annually celebrated; formerly called *year-day, mind-day, mune-day*. (例年の) 記念日。

⁴ manifest: to display (a quality, condition, feeling, etc.) by one's action or behaviour. ここでは (パーティや特別の食事などをして) 祝意を表すこと。

⁵ throw on: ここは 'throw back on: to compel to fall back upon, or recur to' と同義だろう。つまり受動態では、やむなく～に頼らざるをえなかった。

⁶ retire: to withdraw to one's usual place of abode, or some customary occupation; to withdraw from company and betake oneself to rest or bed. ここでは前者。すぐ前にあるように 'the library' (書斎) に引きこもったのである。

⁷ leave: permission asked for or granted to do something. (p. 262 注 4 参照)

⁸ within the hour: after less than an hour. 一時間以内に。

⁹ colony: (Ecol.) a group of organisms of the same kind living or growing in close association. 同種の動植物の集団、群落。

game¹ are settled²; I want to see whether they have made their nests yet.'

'That must be a good distance up,' I answered; 'They don't breed³ on the edge of the moor.'

'No, it's not,' she said. 'I've gone very near with papa.'

I put on my bonnet, and sallied⁴ out, thinking nothing more of the matter. She bounded⁵ before me, and returned to my side, and was off again like a young greyhound; and, at first, I found plenty of entertainment in listening to the larks singing far and near; and enjoying the sweet, warm sunshine; and watching her, my pet, and my delight, with her golden ringlets flying loose behind⁶, and her bright cheek, as soft and pure in its bloom as a wild rose, and her eyes radiant with cloudless pleasure. She was a happy creature, and an angel, in those days. It's a pity she could not be content.

'Well,' said I, 'where are your moor-game, Miss Cathy? We should be at them—the Grange park-fence is a great way off now.'

'Oh, a little farther—only a little farther, Ellen,' was her answer, continually. 'Climb to that hillock⁷, pass that bank, and by the time you reach the other side, I shall have raised⁸ the birds.'

But there were so many hillocks and banks to climb and pass, that, at length, I began to be weary, and told her we must halt, and retrace⁹ our steps.

I shouted to her, as she had outstripped¹⁰ me, a long way; she either did not hear, or did not regard, for she still sprang on, and I was compelled to follow. Finally, she dived into a

¹ moor game: the red grouse. アカライチョウ。

² settle: (in *pass.*) to be installed in a residence, to have completed one's arrangements for residing. (受動態で) 住まいに落ち着く、住まいの支度を終える。ここでは鳥についてだから、「巢に就く、巢を作り終える」。すぐあとで 'they have made their nests' といい換えている。

³ breed: to produce offspring. 子を産む、繁殖する。

⁴ sally: (of a person or party of persons) to set out boldly, to go forth (from a place of abode); to set out on a journey or expedition (*forth, off, out*).

⁵ bound: to spring upwards, leap; to advance with leaps or springs: said both of inanimate and animate objects. 飛びはねながら行く。

⁶ with her golden ringlets flying loose behind: 金色の巻き毛をふわりとなびかせて。髪を束ねていない状態 (loose) なのである。

⁷ hillock: a little hill.

⁸ raise: to rouse (a beast or bird) from a lair, retreat, or covert. ここでは鳥を巢から飛び立たせる。

⁹ retrace: to go back upon (one's steps, way, etc.).

¹⁰ outstrip: get ahead of, or leave behind, in any kind of competition. 人より先へ行く。(p. 155 注 7 参照)

hollow; and before I came in sight of her again, she was two miles nearer Wuthering Heights than her own home¹; and I beheld a couple of persons arrest her, one of whom I felt convinced was Mr Heathcliff himself.

Cathy had been caught in the fact² of plundering³, or, at least hunting out⁴ the nests of the grouse.

The Heights⁵ were Heathcliff's land, and he was reproving the poacher⁶.

'I've neither taken any nor found any,' she said, as I toiled⁷ to them, expanding her hands in corroboration of⁸ the statement. 'I didn't mean to take them; but papa told me there were quantities up here, and I wished to see the eggs.'

Heathcliff glanced at me with an ill-meaning smile, expressing his acquaintance with the party⁹, and, consequently, his malevolence¹⁰ towards it, and demanded who 'papa' was.

'Mr Linton of Thrushcross Grange,' she replied. 'I thought you did not know me, or you wouldn't have spoken in that way.'

'You suppose papa is highly esteemed and respected, then?' he said, sarcastically¹¹.

'And what are you?' inquired Catherine, gazing curiously on the speaker. 'That man I've seen before. Is he your son?'

¹ she was ... home.: 算数の問題みたいな文章だが、すでに明らかなように Wuthering Heights と Thrushcross Grange との間は 4 マイル。計算してみると、現在地点から Wuthering Heights までの距離は、Grange までの 3 マイルよりも 2 マイル少ない (近い) 1 マイルである。しかしすぐあとを読むと、Cathy はあつという間に嵐が丘の屋敷まで駆けていくから、実際には 1 マイルどころかつい目と鼻の先にいたことがわかる。

² fact: (obs.) the making, doing, or performing. *in the (very) fact* = in the (very) act. ～しているところ (現場) を。

³ plunder: to take by robbery, steal.

⁴ hunt out: to arrive at or discover by investigation. 突きとめる、探し出す。

⁵ height: a high or lofty rising ground; an eminence. *OED* には明記されていないが、*RH 2nd* は 'often heights' として 'a high place above a level; a hill or mountain' と定義し、ランダムハウス英和第 2 版は《しばしば～s で単数扱い》と注記する。つまり 'heights' は単複両様の扱いが可能。ここは明らかに特定の地所を指しているから 'the Heights was' でもよいだろう。

⁶ poacher: one who poaches or trespasses in pursuit of game; one who takes or kills game unlawfully. 密猟者。

⁷ toil: to move or advance toilsomely or with struggling and labour. 苦勞して進む。

⁸ in corroboration of: ～を裏づけるために。corroboration: the confirmation (of a statement, etc.) by additional evidence.

⁹ party: the individual person concerned or in question. 当事者。つまり Cathy を指す。

¹⁰ malevolence: the wishing or the disposition to wish evil to others; ill-will.

¹¹ sarcastically: in a sarcastic (= bitterly cutting or caustic.) manner; with sarcasm. 辛辣に。

She pointed to Hareton, the other individual, who had gained nothing but increased bulk and strength by the addition of two years to his age: he seemed as awkward¹ and rough as ever.

‘Miss Cathy,’ I interrupted, ‘it will be three hours instead of one that we are out presently. We really must go back.’

‘No, that man is not my son,’ answered Heathcliff, pushing me aside. ‘But I have one, and you have seen him before too; and, though your nurse is in a hurry, I think both you and she would be the better² for a little rest. Will you just turn this nab³ of heath and walk into my house? You’ll get home earlier for the ease⁴, and you shall receive a kind welcome.’

I whispered Catherine that she mustn’t, on any account⁵, accede⁶ to the proposal: it was entirely out of the question⁷.

‘Why?’ she asked aloud. ‘I’m tired of running, and the ground is dewy⁸—I can’t sit here. Let us go, Ellen! Besides, he says I have seen his son. He’s mistaken, I think; but I guess where he lives, at the farm-house I visited in coming from Penistone Craggs⁹. Don’t you?’

‘I do—Come, Nelly, hold your tongue—it will be a treat¹⁰ for her to look in¹¹ on us. Hareton, get forwards¹² with the lass. You shall walk with me, Nelly.’

‘No, she’s not going to any such place,’ I cried, struggling to release my arm, which he

¹ awkward: ungraceful, ungainly in action or form; uncouth. あかぬけしない、やばな。(p. 274 注 2 参照)。

² be the better: (arch. and dial.) to be profited or advantaged. [古・方言] (へが) ためになる、とくだ。ここでは、ちょっと休んでいったほうが身のためだ。

³ nab: (chiefly north. and Sc.) a projecting or jutting out part of a hill or rock; a peak or promontory; a rocky or outstanding hill, a summit, etc. 丘・岩 (の突き出た角・端)、崖。

⁴ ease: tranquil rest. ここでは、休んでいったほうが (疲れが取れて) 早く帰れる。

⁵ not ... on any account: なにがあろうとも絶対に～しない。(p. 105 注 11 参照)

⁶ accede: to join oneself, become a party, give one's adhesion; hence, to assent, agree to.

⁷ out of the question: foreign to the subject; hence, not to be considered or thought of. もつてのほかだ、考えられない。

⁸ dewy: abounding with dew; covered or wet with dew. 露で濡れている。

⁹ the farm-house ... Craggs: Penistone Craggs の帰り道に寄った農家。

¹⁰ treat: something highly enjoyable; a great pleasure, delight, or gratification.

¹¹ look in: to make a call, to call (*upon* a person); to ‘drop in’ for a short stay or interview. だれだれを訪問する (*on*)、ちょっと立ち寄る。

¹² forwards: (= forward) in advance, in front, ahead. (たとえば本隊より) 先に。

had seized; but she was almost at the door-stones already, scampering¹ round the brow² at full speed. Her appointed companion did not pretend³ to escort her; he shied off⁴ by the road side and vanished.

‘Mr Heathcliff, it's very wrong,’ I continued, ‘you know you mean no good; and there she'll see Linton, and all will be told, as soon as ever we return; and I shall have the blame.’

‘I want her to see Linton,’ he answered. ‘He's looking better these few days; it's not often he's fit to be seen. And we'll soon persuade her to keep the visit secret—where is the harm of it?’

‘The harm of it is, that her father would hate me, if he found I suffered her to enter your house; and I am convinced you have a bad design in encouraging her to do so,’ I replied.

‘My design is as honest as possible. I'll inform you of its whole scope⁵,’ he said. ‘That the two cousins may⁶ fall in love, and get married. I'm acting generously to your master; his young chit⁷ has no expectations⁸, and should she second⁹ my wishes, she'll be provided for¹⁰, at once, as joint successor¹¹ with Linton.’

‘If Linton died,’ I answered, ‘and his life is quite uncertain, Catherine would be the heir.’

‘No, she would not,’ he said. ‘There is no clause in the will to secure it so¹²; his property would go to me; but, to prevent disputes, I desire their union, and am resolved to

¹ scamper: to run or caper about nimbly.

² brow: the projecting edge of a cliff or hill, standing over a precipice or steep. 丘や崖の端(はな)。前頁注 3 の ‘nab’ がこれ。

³ pretend: to take upon one, to undertake; to venture, presume; to attempt, endeavour, try (*to do*). ここは否定だから、～しようとししない、しようという気がない。

⁴ shy off: to slip away in order to avoid a person or thing. こっそり離れる、去る。

⁵ scope: the distance to which the mind reaches in its workings or purpose; reach or range of mental activity; extent of view, outlook, or survey. 「目的、ねらい」(‘an object, purpose, aim’ という意味もあるが現代では「まれ」とされる。ここでは、どこまで計画しているかそっくり、ということ。

⁶ may: ここでは ‘shall’ に近く、二人を結婚させる、というのである。

⁷ chit: a person considered as no better than a child. ‘Generally used of young persons in contempt’ (J.); now, mostly of a girl or young woman.

⁸ expectations: *pl.* prospects of inheritance or of profiting by testament.

⁹ second: to support, back up, assist, encourage (a person, his actions, aims, etc.).

¹⁰ provide for: to make provision for a person, his needs, etc.; to supply means of support. (将来)に備える、(人)を扶養する。

¹¹ joint successor: 共同相続人。

¹² There is ... so.: 遺言の条項を熟知していたのは、すでに Edgar の弁護士を抱き込んでいたからであろう。

bring it about¹.'

'And I'm resolved she shall never approach your house with me again,' I returned, as we reached the gate, where Miss Cathy waited our coming.

Heathcliff bid me be quiet; and preceding us up the path, hastened to open the door. My young lady gave him several looks, as if she could not exactly make up her mind what to think of him; but now he smiled when he met her eye, and softened his voice in addressing her, and I was foolish enough to imagine the memory of her mother might disarm him from desiring her injury.

Linton stood on the hearth. He had been out, walking in the fields, for his cap was on, and he was calling to Joseph to bring him dry shoes.

He had grown tall of his age², still wanting some months of sixteen. His features were pretty yet, and his eye and complexion³ brighter than I remembered them, though with merely temporary lustre borrowed from the salubrious⁴ air and genial⁵ sun.

'Now, who is that?' asked Mr Heathcliff, turning to Cathy. 'Can you tell?'

'Your son?' she said, having doubtfully surveyed, first one, and then the other.

'Yes, yes,' answered he; 'but is this the only time you have beheld⁶ him? Think! Ah! you have a short memory. Linton, don't you recall your cousin, that you used to tease us so, with wishing to see?'

'What, Linton!' cried Cathy, kindling⁷ into joyful surprise at the name. 'Is that little Linton? He's taller than I am! Are you Linton?'

¹ bring about: to cause to happen, bring to pass, occasion, accomplish, effect. なしとげる。

² of his age: 彼の年にしては (= for his age)。【類例】1818 M. Shelley *Frankenstein* (Chap. 6) he is very tall *of his age*, with sweet laughing blue eyes, dark eyelashes, and curling hair.

³ complexion: the natural colour, texture, and appearance of the skin, esp. of the face. 顔色。なお 'features' が「顔（立ち）」であることは p. 14 注 2 以下何度か取り上げた。

⁴ salubrious: [səluːbrɪəs] favourable or conducive to health.

⁵ genial: conducive to growth (to); (now chiefly of air, climate, sunshine) pleasantly warm, mild. 「成長を助ける」という意味より、(心地よく) 温暖な、温和な。

⁶ behold: **a.** (arch.) to hold or keep in view, to watch; to regard or contemplate with the eyes; to look upon, look at (implying active voluntary exercise of the faculty of vision). **b.** to receive the impression of (anything) through the eyes, to see. ここでは **a** (よく見る、見ようとして見る)ではなく、**b** (目にする、見る)。

⁷ kindle: to become inflamed, ardent, or warm; to glow with passion or excitement; to become eager or animated. 興奮して顔（目）がパッと輝く。

The youth stepped forward, and acknowledged¹ himself: she kissed him fervently², and they gazed with wonder at the change time had wrought³ in the appearance of each.

Catherine had reached her full height; her figure was both plump and slender, elastic⁴ as steel, and her whole aspect sparkling with health and spirits⁵. Linton's looks and movements were very languid, and his form extremely slight; but there was a grace in his manner that mitigated these defects, and rendered him not unpleasing.

After exchanging numerous marks of fondness with him, his cousin went to Mr Heathcliff, who lingered by the door, dividing his attention between the objects inside, and those that lay without, pretending, that is, to observe the latter, and really noting the former alone.

‘And you are my uncle, then!’ she cried, reaching up to salute⁶ him. ‘I thought I liked you, though you were cross, at first. Why don't you visit at the Grange with Linton? To live all these years such close neighbours, and never see us, is odd. What have you done so for?’⁷

‘I visited it once or twice too often before you were born,’ he answered. ‘There—damn it! If you have any kisses to spare⁸, give them to Linton—they are thrown away on me⁹.’

‘Naughty Ellen!’ exclaimed Catherine, flying to attack me next with her lavish¹⁰ caresses. ‘Wicked Ellen, to try to hinder me from entering. But, I'll take this walk every morning in future—may I, uncle?—and sometimes bring papa? Won't you be glad to see us?’

¹ acknowledge: to recognize or confess (a person or thing to be something).

² fervently: (now *rare* exc. in expressions of love, desire, prayer, etc.) with warmth of feeling; ardently, earnestly, hotly, passionately.

³ work: to effect, bring about, bring to pass; to accomplish, achieve; to cause, produce. (変化)をもたらす、引き起こす。この意味ではしばしば過去・過去分詞に ‘wrought’ が用いられる。

⁴ elastic: (of material substances, whether solid, liquid, or gaseous) that spontaneously resumes (after a longer or shorter interval) its normal bulk or shape after having been contracted, dilated, or distorted by external force. 外力を加えて変形・変化させても元の状態に戻る、つまり弾力(弾性)のある。

⁵ spirits: (pl.) vigour or animation of mind; cheerfulness, vivacity, liveliness. 活力、元気、生氣。

⁶ salute: (arch.) to kiss, or greet with a kiss. 名詞としては p. 257 注 14、p. 284 注 2 参照。

⁷ What have you done so for?: = Why have you done so?

⁸ spare: to part with, to give or grant, lend, etc., to another or others, esp. without inconvenience or loss to oneself.

⁹ they are thrown away on me: 私にキスしたってむだに捨てるようなものだ。

¹⁰ lavish: expended, bestowed, or produced in unstinted profusion; profuse, abundant.

‘Of course!’ replied the uncle, with a hardly suppressed grimace¹, resulting from his deep aversion to both the proposed visitors. ‘But stay²,’ he continued, turning towards the young lady. ‘Now I think of it, I’d better tell you. Mr Linton has a prejudice against me; we quarrelled at one time of our lives, with unchristian ferocity³; and, if you mention coming here to him, he’ll put a veto on⁴ your visits altogether. Therefore, you must not mention it, unless you be careless⁵ of seeing your cousin hereafter. — you may come, if you will, but you must not mention it,’

‘Why did you quarrel?’ asked Catherine, considerably crestfallen⁶.

‘He thought me too poor to wed his sister,’ answered Heathcliff, ‘and was grieved that I got her — his pride was hurt, and he’ll never forgive it.’

‘That’s wrong!’ said the young lady: ‘some time⁷, I’ll tell him so; but Linton and I have no share in your quarrel. I’ll not come here, then, he shall come to the Grange.’

‘It will be too far for me,’ murmured her cousin, ‘to walk four miles would kill me. No, come here, Miss Catherine, now and then, not every morning, but once or twice a week.’

The father launched towards his son a glance of bitter contempt.

‘I am afraid, Nelly, I shall lose my labour,’ he muttered to me. ‘Miss Catherine, as the ninny⁸ calls her, will discover his value, and send him to the devil⁹. Now, if it had been Hareton — do you know that, twenty times a day, I covet¹⁰ Hareton, with all¹¹ his

¹ **grimace**: [gríméis] a distortion of the countenance whether spontaneous or involuntary, expressive of some feeling (esp. annoyance, embarrassment, ill-humour or pain) or tending to excite laughter; a wry face. (意識的・無意識的を問わず、不快・困惑・苦痛から、または人を笑わせようとして) 顔をゆがめること、しかめつら。

² **stay**: in *imp.* used as an injunction to pause, arrest one's course, not to go on doing something. まあ待ちなさい。

³ **ferocity**: savage fierceness.

⁴ **put a veto on**: ～を禁止する、～に拒否権を行使する。veto: [ví:təu] a prohibition having for its object or result the prevention of a proposed or intended act; the power of thus preventing or checking action by prohibition.

⁵ **careless**: not solicitous. 熱心ではない、どうでもいい。

⁶ **crestfallen**: with drooping crest; hence, cast down in confidence, spirits, or courage; humbled, abashed, disheartened, dispirited, dejected. うなだれた、しょんぼりした。

⁷ **some time**: at some future time; on a future occasion. いつか。

⁸ **ninny**: a simpleton; a fool.

⁹ **send him to the devil**: (愛想をつかして) 放り出す、捨てる。

¹⁰ **covet**: to desire eagerly; to long for (what belongs to another). (自分のものではない) Hareton をわがものにしたい。

¹¹ **with all**: in spite of. 【参考】 **With all** (= *in spite of*) his faults, he is a great man. 欠点は有るけれども偉い。(齋藤秀三郎『英和中辞典』)

degradation? I'd have loved the lad had he been some one else. But I think he's safe from *her* love. I'll pit¹ him against that paltry² creature, unless it bestir itself³ briskly. We calculate it will scarcely last till it is eighteen. Oh, confound⁴ the vapid⁵ thing! He's absorbed in drying his feet, and never looks at her. — Linton!

'Yes, father,' answered the boy.

'Have you nothing to show your cousin, anywhere about; not even a rabbit, or a weasel's⁶ nest? Take her into the garden, before you change your shoes; and into the stable to see your horse.'

'Wouldn't you rather sit here?' asked Linton, addressing Cathy in a tone which expressed reluctance⁷ to move again.

'I don't know,' she replied, casting a longing look to the door, and evidently eager to be active.

He kept his seat, and shrank⁸ closer to the fire.

Heathcliff rose, and went into the kitchen, and from thence to the yard, calling out for Hareton.

Hareton responded, and presently the two re-entered. The young man had been washing himself, as was visible by the glow on his cheeks, and his wetted hair.

'Oh, I'll ask *you*, uncle,' cried Miss Cathy, recollecting the housekeeper's assertion. 'That is not my cousin, is he?'

“Yes,” he replied, ‘your mother's nephew. Don't you like him?’

¹ pit: (fig.) to set in opposition or rivalry; to match, oppose (persons or things) (against). 闘鶏場 (cockpit) など動物を闘わせる囲い (pit) に入れるようにして、人を争わせることをいう。

² paltry: worthless. (p. 217 注 2 参照)

³ bestir oneself: to begin to move actively, to manifest activity, to busy oneself. 奮起する。

⁴ confound: in curses or imprecations, used in the imperative 3rd pers. sing. as an equivalent or substitute for 'bring to perdition'. 「ええいくそ、いまいまいい」ほどの呪いの文句。命令法の三人称単数とあるが、結局動詞の原形を用いる。‘God confound you!’ の例より、ここは ‘God’ が略されていると考える。

⁵ vapid: devoid of animation, zest, or interest; dull, flat, lifeless, insipid.

⁶ weasel: イタチ。

⁷ reluctance: unwillingness, disinclination.

⁸ shrink: to draw the limbs together, bring the body into a small compass; to cower, huddle together; (of the body) to contract as with pain or cold. ここでは席から移動していないので、体を丸くして暖炉に寄せたのだろう。

Catherine looked queer¹.

‘Is he not a handsome lad?’ he continued.

The uncivil² little thing³ stood on tiptoe, and whispered a sentence in Heathcliff’s ear.

He laughed; Hareton darkened; I perceived he was very sensitive to suspected⁴ slights, and had obviously a dim notion of his inferiority. But his master or guardian chased⁵ the frown by exclaiming—

‘You’ll be the favourite among us, Hareton! She says you are a—What was it? Well, something very flattering⁶—Here! you go with her round the farm. And behave like a gentleman, mind! Don’t use any bad words; and don’t stare, when the young lady is not looking at you, and be ready to hide your face when she is; and, when you speak, say your words slowly, and keep your hands out of your pockets. Be off, and entertain her as nicely as you can.’

He watched the couple walking past the window. Earnshaw had his countenance completely averted from his companion. He seemed studying⁷ the familiar landscape with a stranger’s and an artist’s interest.

Catherine took a sly⁸ look at him, expressing small admiration. She then turned her attention to seeking out objects of amusement for herself, and tripped⁹ merrily on, lilting¹⁰ a tune to supply the lack of conversation.

‘I’ve tied his tongue,’ observed Heathcliff. ‘He’ll not venture a single syllable, all the time! Nelly, you recollect me at his age—nay, some years younger—Did I ever look so stupid—so “gaumless¹¹,” as Joseph calls it?’

¹ queer: strange, odd, peculiar, eccentric, in appearance or character.

² uncivil: not civil or courteous, impolite; rough, rude, lacking in manners.

³ the uncivil little thing: = Catherine.

⁴ suspected: that one suspects to exist, or to be such; imagined possible or likely.

⁵ chase: (arch.) to put to flight, scatter in flight, rout; to dispel. 追い散らす、追い払う。

⁶ flattering: (of a person, his actions, utterances, etc.) that flatters or tries to please by praise, generally insincere; adulatory.

⁷ study: to scrutinize (a visible object) in order to ascertain its nature or to be familiar with or interpret its appearance; *loosely*, to look at as if examining minutely.

⁸ sly: marked or characterized by secrecy or stealth; working, moving, etc., in a stealthy or underhand manner. ‘take a sly look at’ ～をこっそりと見る。

⁹ trip: to go, walk, skip, or run with a light and lively motion; to move with a quick light tread.

¹⁰ lilt: to sing cheerfully or merrily.

¹¹ gaumless = gormless: (orig. dial.) wanting sense, or discernment. 鈍い、とろい。

‘Worse,’ I replied, ‘because more sullen with it¹.’

‘I’ve a pleasure in him,’ he continued, reflecting aloud². ‘He has satisfied my expectations—If he were a born fool I should not enjoy it half so much—But he’s no fool; and I can sympathize³ with all his feelings, having felt them myself.—I know what he suffers now, for instance, exactly—it is merely a beginning of what he shall suffer, though. And he’ll never be able to emerge from his bathos⁴ of coarseness, and ignorance. I’ve got him faster than his scoundrel of a father secured⁵ me, and lower; for he takes a pride in his brutishness. I’ve taught him to scorn everything extra-animal⁶ as silly and weak—Don’t you think Hindley would be proud of his son, if he could see him—almost as proud as I am of mine?—But there’s this difference, one is gold put to the use of paving-stones, and the other is tin polished to ape⁷ a service⁸ of silver—*Mine* has nothing valuable about it, yet I shall have the merit of making it go as far as such poor stuff can go. *His* had first-rate qualities, and they are lost—rendered worse than unavailing⁹—I have nothing to regret; he would have more than any, but I, are aware of¹⁰—And the best of it is, Hareton is damnably fond of me! You’ll own¹¹ that I’ve out-matched¹² Hindley there—If the dead villain could rise from his grave to abuse me for his offspring’s wrongs, I should have the fun of seeing the said offspring fight him back again, indignant that he should dare to rail¹³ at the one friend he has in the world.’

Heathcliff chuckled a fiendish laugh at the idea; I made no reply, because I saw that he expected none¹⁴.

¹ because more sullen with it: 鈍く見えたうえに (Hareton よりも) もっとむつつりしていたから。

² reflecting aloud: 思いにふけていることを口にして。 *reflect*: to turn one's thoughts (back) *on*, to fix the mind or attention *on* or *upon* a subject; to ponder, meditate *on*. つまり半分ひとりごと。

³ sympathize: to have a fellow-feeling; to share the feelings of another or others. ここでは、気持を察する。

⁴ bathos: depth; lowest place, bottom. どん底。

⁵ secure: to get hold or possession of (something desirable) as the result of effort or contrivance; to seize and confine. 掌握する、わがものにする。

⁶ extra-animal: (PENGUIN 版注:) beyond the physical; the realm of the emotional, intellectual or spiritual. 精神的な世界の。

⁷ ape: to imitate, mimic pretentiously, irrationally, or absurdly.

⁸ service: assistance or benefit afforded by an animal or thing (or by a person as involuntary agent); the work which an animal or thing is made to do. 役、役目。

⁹ unavailing: futile, useless.

¹⁰ he would ... aware of: Hindley ならおれにしかわからんくらいくやしがることだろう。

¹¹ own: to acknowledge (a thing) to be what is claimed, or to be the fact; to confess to be valid, true, or actual; to admit. (p. 10 注 1、p. 94 注 7、p. 200 注 9 参照)

¹² out(-)match: to be more than a match for; to prove superior to; to surpass, outdo.

¹³ rail: to utter abusive language.

¹⁴ none: no reply.

Meantime, our young companion, who sat too removed from us to hear what was said, began to evince symptoms of uneasiness: probably repenting that he had denied himself the treat¹ of Catherine's society, for fear of a little fatigue.

His father remarked the restless glances wandering to the window, and the hand irresolutely² extended towards his cap.

‘Get up, you idle boy!’ he exclaimed, with assumed heartiness. ‘Away after them ... they are just at the corner, by the stand of hives³.’

Linton gathered his energies, and left the hearth. The lattice was open and, as he stepped out, I heard Cathy inquiring of her unsociable attendant, what was that inscription over the door?

Hareton stared up, and scratched his head like a true clown⁴.

‘It's some damnable writing,’ he answered. ‘I cannot read it.’

‘Can't read it?’ cried Catherine. ‘I can read it ... it's English ... but I want to know why it is there.’

Linton giggled⁵—the first appearance of mirth⁶ he had exhibited.

‘He does not know his letters,’ he said to his cousin. ‘Could you believe in the existence of such a colossal⁷ dunce⁸?’

‘Is he all as he should be?’⁹ asked Miss Cathy seriously, ‘or is he simple ... not right?’

¹ treat: something highly enjoyable; a great pleasure, delight, or gratification. (p. 303 注 10 参照)

² irresolutely: In an irresolute (= unresolved or undecided as to a course of action.) manner.

³ hive: an artificial receptacle for the habitation of a swarm of bees; a beehive. ミツバチの巣箱。もともとは藁などで円錐またはドーム状のかたちに作ったが、現在ではしばしば蜂蜜を取り出せる構造の四角い箱。

⁴ clown: an ignorant, rude, uncouth, ill-bred man. (p. 18 注 2、p. 113 注 2・p. 276 注 8 参照)

⁵ giggle: to laugh continuously in a manner not uproarious, but suggestive either of foolish levity or uncontrollable amusement. 「はしたなく、またはおかしくてしょうがなく、大笑いするわけではなく連続的に」というのだから、結局クスクス、クックッ、フフフなどと笑う。

⁶ mirth: gaiety of mind, as manifested in jest and laughter; merriment, hilarity. (冗談や笑いにあらわれるような) 愉快的気分。

⁷ colossal: immense, tremendous; stupendous.

⁸ dunce: one who shows no capacity for learning; a dull-witted, stupid person; a dullard, blockhead. 詳しくは p. 352 注 5 参照。

⁹ Is he all as he should be?: あの人だいじょうぶなのかしら？

I've questioned him twice now, and each time he looked so stupid I think he does not understand me; I can hardly understand *him*, I'm sure.'

Linton repeated his laugh, and glanced at Hareton tauntingly¹, who certainly did not seem quite clear² of comprehension at that moment.

'There's nothing the matter, but laziness, is there, Earnshaw?' he said. 'My cousin fancies you are an idiot ... There³ you experience the consequence of scorning 'book-larning,' as you would say ... Have you noticed, Catherine, his frightful Yorkshire pronunciation?'

'Why, where the devil is the use on't?' growled Hareton, more ready in answering his daily companion. He was about to enlarge⁴ further, but the two youngsters broke into a noisy fit of merriment⁵; my giddy⁶ Miss being delighted to discover that she⁷ might turn his strange talk to matter of amusement.

'Where is the use of the devil in that sentence?' tittered⁸ Linton. 'Papa told you not to say any bad words, and you can't open your mouth without one ... Do try to behave like a gentleman, now do!'

'If thou wern't more a lass than a lad, I'd fell⁹ thee this minute, I would; pitiful lath¹⁰ of a crater¹¹!' retorted the angry boor¹², retreating, while his face burned with mingled rage and mortification¹³; for he was conscious of being insulted, and embarrassed¹⁴ how to resent¹⁵ it.

¹ tauntingly: in a taunting manner (あざけるように) ; with derisive or insulting reproach.

² clear: (of persons) having a vivid or distinct impression or opinion; certain, convinced, confident, positive, determined. ここでは、よく理解していないようだった。

³ there: in that fact or circumstance; in that respect. ここは、「学問をばかにするとどうなるか、それでわかるだろう」「学問をばかにするからそんな目に会うのさ」。

⁴ enlarge: to speak at large, expatiate. 長々と話す。

⁵ merriment: the action (or †an act) of merry-making, or of 'making merry' over something; hilarious enjoyment or jocularly; mirth, fun. ここでは、おかしように吹き出した。

⁶ giddy: light-headed, frivolous, flighty.

⁷ she: PENGUIN 版テキストでは、'he' だが、他のテキストどおり、ここは明らかに 'she' 。

⁸ titter: to utter or say with suppressed laughter.

⁹ fell: to cut, knock, or strike down (a man or animal).

¹⁰ lath: a thin narrow strip of wood; applied to what is slender or fragile.

¹¹ crater: = creature.

¹² boor: a peasant, a rustic, with lack of refinement implied; a country clown.

¹³ mortification: the feeling of humiliation caused by a disappointment, a rebuff or slight, or an untoward accident; the sense of disappointment or vexation. 屈辱。

¹⁴ embarrass: to perplex, throw into doubt or difficulty. 受動態で、まごつく、困惑する。

¹⁵ resent: [rɪzɛnt] to show that one is displeased or angry at (some wrong, injury, etc. sustained).
～に対する怒りを表す。

Mr Heathcliff having overheard the conversation as well as I, smiled when he saw him go, but immediately afterwards cast a look of singular¹ aversion² on the flippant³ pair, who remained chattering in the door-way: the boy finding animation enough while discussing Hareton's faults, and deficiencies, and relating anecdotes⁴ of his goings on⁵, and the girl relishing his pert⁶ and spiteful sayings, without considering the ill-nature they evinced: but I began to dislike, more than to compassionate⁷, Linton, and to excuse his father, in some measure, for holding⁸ him cheap.

We staid till afternoon: I could not tear Miss Cathy away⁹, before¹⁰: but happily my master had not quitted his apartment, and remained ignorant of our prolonged absence.

As we walked home, I would fain have¹¹ enlightened¹² my charge on the characters of the people we had quitted; but she got it into her head that¹³ I was prejudiced against them.

‘Aha!’ she cried, ‘you take papa's side, Ellen—you are partial¹⁴ ... I know, or else you wouldn't have cheated me so many years, into the notion that Linton lived a long way from here. I'm really extremely angry, only, I'm so pleased I can't show it! But you must hold your tongue about my uncle ... he's *my* uncle, remember, and I'll scold papa for quarrelling with him.’

¹ singular: remarkable; extraordinary, unusual, uncommon.

² aversion: a fixed, habitual dislike; an antipathy. (p. 139 注 7、p. 259 注 1 参照)

³ flippant: displaying unbecoming levity in the consideration of serious subjects or in behaviour to persons entitled to respect. 軽率な、軽薄な。

⁴ anecdote: [ænikdəʊt] a short account of a particular incident or event of an interesting or amusing nature, often biographical. (個人にまつわる) ちょっとしたおもしろい話、逸話。

⁵ going on (going-on): proceedings, actions, doings (usually with implied censure); questionable proceedings, extravagances, frolics. (よからぬ) ふるまい、行状。

⁶ pert: forward in speech and behaviour; unbecomingly ready to express an opinion or give a sharp reply; saucy, bordering upon ‘cheeky’ (口のきき方や態度が) 生意気な、出すぎた。特にこども・若者・目下の者についていう。

⁷ compassionate: to pity, commiserate (a person, or his distress, etc.).

⁸ hold: to think, consider, esteem, regard as.

⁹ tear [tɛə] away: (fig.) to take away or remove by force or violence. むりやり (力づくで) 引き離す。

¹⁰ before: before afternoon.

¹¹ I would fain have: できれば～したいところだった。(p. 269 注 6 参照)

¹² enlighten: (fig.) to supply with intellectual light; to impart knowledge or wisdom to; to instruct; (in mod. use often humorously in trivial sense.) to inform, remove (one's) ignorance of something.

¹³ get it into one's head that: to come to have (a notion, impression, etc.). ～と思い込む。

¹⁴ partial: unduly favouring one party or side in a suit or controversy, or one set or class of persons rather than another; prejudiced; biased; interested; unfair. 不当に一方の肩を持つ、不公平な。

And so she ran on, till I dropped endeavouring¹ to convince her of her mistake.

She did not mention the visit that night, because she did not see Mr Linton. Next day it all came out², sadly to my chagrin³; and still I was not altogether sorry: I thought the burden of directing and warning would be more efficiently borne⁴ by him than me, but he was too timid in giving satisfactory reasons for his wish that she would shun⁵ connection with the household of the Heights, and Catherine liked good reasons for every restraint that harassed her petted⁶ will.

‘Papa!’ she exclaimed, after the morning’s salutations, ‘guess whom I saw yesterday, in my walk on the moors ... Ah, papa, you started⁷! you’ve not done right, have you, now? I saw—But listen, and you shall hear how I found you out⁸, and Ellen, who is in league with you, and yet pretended to pity me so, when I kept hoping, and was always disappointed about Linton’s coming back!’

She gave a faithful account of her excursion⁹ and its consequences¹⁰; and my master, though he cast more than one reproachful look at me, said nothing, till she had concluded. Then he drew her to him, and asked if she knew why he had concealed Linton’s near neighbourhood from her? Could she think it was to deny her a pleasure that she might harmlessly enjoy?¹¹

‘It was because you disliked Mr Heathcliff,’ she answered.

‘Then you believe I care more for my own feelings than yours, Cathy?’ he said. ‘No, it

¹ dropped endeavouring: ‘relinquished the endeavour’ とするテキストもある。

² come out: to come into public view or notice, as from concealment; to become public. (隠しごとが) 知れる、明るみに出る。

³ chagrin: [ʃəɡri:n; ʃægri:n] acute vexation, annoyance, or mortification, arising from disappointment, thwarting, or failure. くやしき。

⁴ bear: to accept or have, as an obligation. 義務として (責任・重荷を) 負う。

⁵ shun: to avoid (in mod. prose use always to avoid persistently or habitually) from repugnance, fear, or caution; to keep away from (a person or his society, a place, etc.) (p. 166 注 1、p. 258 注 8 参照)

⁶ petted: indulged.

⁷ start: to undergo a sudden involuntary movement of the body, resulting from surprise, fright, sudden pain, etc. ビクリ (ギクリ) とする。(p. 66 注 6、p. 155 注 2 参照)

⁸ find out: to discover (what is hidden). ここは、あなたの隠しごとを知った。

⁹ excursion: a journey, expedition, or ramble from one’s home, or from any place with the intention of returning to it.

¹⁰ consequence: a thing or circumstance which follows as an effect or result from something preceding. 結果、なりゆき。

¹¹ Could she ... enjoy?: つまり「(いどこに会うという) 罪のない楽しみをおまえに与えぬために (Linton が近くにいることを) 隠していたのだと思うかね?」ということ。

was not because I disliked Mr Heathcliff; but because Mr Heathcliff dislikes me; and is a most diabolical man, delighting to wrong and ruin those he hates, if they give him the slightest opportunity. I knew that you could not keep up an acquaintance with your cousin, without being brought into contact with him; and I knew he would detest¹ you, on my account²; so, for your own good, and nothing else, I took precautions that you should not see Linton again—I meant to explain this, some time as you grew older, and I'm sorry I delayed it!

‘But Mr Heathcliff was quite cordial³, papa,’ observed Catherine, not at all convinced; ‘and *he* didn't object to our seeing each other: he said I might come to his house, when I pleased, only I must not tell you, because you had quarrelled with him, and would not forgive him for marrying aunt Isabella. And you won't—*you* are the one to be blamed—he is willing to let *us* be friends, at least; Linton and I—and you are not.’

My master, perceiving that she would not take his word for⁴ her uncle-in-law's evil disposition, gave a hasty sketch of his conduct to Isabella, and the manner in which Wuthering Heights became his property. He could not bear to discourse⁵ long upon the topic, for though he spoke little of it, he still felt the same horror, and detestation of his ancient enemy that had occupied his heart ever since Mrs Linton's death. ‘She might have been living yet, if it had not been for him!’ was his constant bitter reflection; and, in his eyes, Heathcliff seemed a murderer.

Miss Cathy, conversant⁶ with no bad deeds except her own slight acts of disobedience, injustice, and passion, arising from hot temper, and thoughtlessness, and repented of on the day they were committed, was amazed at the blackness of spirit that could brood on, and cover⁷ revenge for years; and deliberately⁸ prosecute⁹ its plans, without a visitation¹⁰

¹ detest: to feel abhorrence of; to hate or dislike intensely; to abhor, abominate.

² on my account: on account of (*or* because of) me. ‘because of my (*or* me) being your father’ と考えればわかりやすい。p. 62 注 10 参照。

³ cordial: warm and friendly in manner.

⁴ take a person's word for: だれだれが～についていうことを信ずる、いうとおりに受け取る。

⁵ discourse: (usu. foll. by *of, on, upon*) to speak or write learnedly or at length (on a subject). 詳しく話す、詳述する。学問的・専門的な話題についてという含みのある固いことば。気楽な世間話をするのではない。

⁶ conversant: familiar or intimately acquainted with (anything).

⁷ cover: to conceal or screen (actions, facts, qualities, and other immaterial objects).

⁸ deliberately: with careful consideration; not hastily or rashly; of set purpose. じつくりと、計画的に。

⁹ prosecute: [prɒ'sɪkjʊ:t] to follow up, pursue; to persevere or persist in, follow out, go on with (some action, undertaking, or purpose) with a view to completing or attaining it. (計画など)を着々と実行に移す、遂行する。

¹⁰ visitation: the fact of some immaterial power or influence acting or operating on the mind. ここでは ‘remorse’ (良心の呵責) が心に働きかける、つまり良心の呵責に悩むこと。

of remorse. She appeared so deeply impressed and shocked at this new view of human nature—excluded¹ from all her studies and all her ideas till now—that Mr Edgar deemed it unnecessary to pursue the subject. He merely added,

‘You will know hereafter, darling, why I wish you to avoid his house and family—now return to your old employments² and amusements, and think no more about them!’

Catherine kissed her father, and sat down quietly to her lessons for a couple of hours, according to custom: then she accompanied him into the grounds, and the whole day passed as usual: but in the evening, when she had retired to her room, and I went to help her to undress, I found her crying, on her knees by the bedside.

‘Oh, fie³, silly child!’ I exclaimed. ‘If you had any real griefs you’d be ashamed to waste a tear on this little contrariety⁴. You never had one shadow of substantial sorrow⁵, Miss Catherine. Suppose, for a minute, that master and I were dead, and you were by yourself in the world—how would you feel then? Compare the present occasion⁶ with such an affliction⁷ as that, and be thankful for the friends you have, instead of coveting more.’

‘I’m not crying for myself, Ellen,’ she answered, ‘it’s for him—He expected to see me again, to-morrow, and there⁸, he’ll be so disappointed—and he’ll wait for me, and I shan’t come!’

‘Nonsense!’ said I, ‘do you imagine he has thought as much of you, as you have of him? Hasn’t he Hareton for a companion? Not one in a hundred would weep at losing a relation⁹ they had just seen twice, for two afternoons—Linton will conjecture how it is¹,

¹ exclude: (with an immaterial thing as obj.) to shut out, give no place to; to prevent the existence, occurrence, or use of (*from*). たとえば会話において不適切な話題を上せないことなどをいう。ここでは、これまでまったく学ぶ機会もなければ考えたこともなかったこと。

² employment: a person’s regular occupation or business. こどもの勤めは「勉強」だから、次の行に ‘sat down quietly to her lessons for a couple of hours’ とある。

³ fie: an exclamation expressing, in early use, disgust or indignant reproach. No longer current in dignified language; said to children to excite shame for some unbecoming action. ここではまさに辞書の説明どおり「おや、まあ、困った子ですこと！」。

⁴ contrariety: [kɒntrəˈrɪəti] opposition of one thing to another in nature, quality, or action; diametrical difference, repugnancy, contrariness. 食い違い、行き違い。

⁵ You never ... sorrow: 本当の悲しみというものをまるでご存じない。shadow: a slight or faint appearance, a small insignificant portion, a trace.

⁶ occasion: a particular casual occurrence or juncture; a particular time marked by some occurrence or by its special character.. 特別の思いがけぬ出来事・場合、(なにかの行事など) 特別のとき。ここでは前者で、今度起こったこと。

⁷ affliction: a pain, calamity, grief, distress.

⁸ there: in that thing, matter, or business; in that respect, as to that.

⁹ relation: a person related to one by blood or marriage; a kinsman or kinswoman; a relative.

and trouble himself no further about you.'

'But may I not write a note to tell him why I cannot come?' she asked, rising to her feet. 'And just send those books, I promised to lend him—his books are not as nice as mine, and he wanted to have them extremely, when I told him how interesting they were—May I not, Ellen?'

'No, indeed, no, indeed!' replied I, with decision. 'Then he would write to you, and there'd never be an end of it—No, Miss Catherine, the acquaintance must be dropped² entirely—so papa expects, and I shall see³ that it is done.'

'But how can one little note — ' she recommenced, putting on an imploring⁴ countenance.

'Silence!' I interrupted. 'We'll not begin with your little notes⁵—Get into bed!'

She threw at me a very naughty⁶ look, so naughty that I would not kiss her good-night at first⁷: I covered her up, and shut her door, in great displeasure—but repenting⁸ half-way⁹, I returned softly, and lo!¹⁰ there was Miss, standing at the table with a bit of blank paper before her, and a pencil in her hand, which she guiltily¹¹ slipped¹² out of sight, on my re-entrance.

'You'll get nobody to take that, Catherine,' I said, 'if you write it; and at present I shall put out your candle.'

I set the extinguisher¹³ on the flame, receiving as I did so, a slap on my hand, and a

¹ how it is: how it is that (= why) you do not come. どうして来ないのかという理由・わけ。

² drop: to break off acquaintance or association with. 関係を絶つ。

³ see: to ensure by supervision or vigilance that something shall be done or not done; to take care, see to it that one does so and so.

⁴ imploring: that implores or supplicates. 哀願するような。訴えるような、でもよいと思う。

⁵ We'll not begin with your little notes.: 手紙の話なんてしやしませんよ。

⁶ naughty: ここでは 'disobedient' (反抗的な)。

⁷ at first: ここでは「最初は」というより「すぐには」が適切だろう。

⁸ repent: to feel contrition, compunction, sorrow or regret for something one has done or left undone; to change one's mind with regard to past action or conduct through dissatisfaction with it or its results. 後悔する, まずかったと思ひ直す。

⁹ half(-)way: at or to half the distance. 途中で、中ほどで。

¹⁰ lo!: (arch.) Look! See! Behold!

¹¹ guiltily: in a guilty manner or condition; like one that is guilty. うしろめたそうに。

¹² slip: to cause to move with a sliding motion; to draw or pull in this manner. ここでは、さっと隠した。

¹³ extinguisher: a hollow conical cap for extinguishing the light of a candle or lamp.

petulant¹ ‘cross thing!’² I then quitted³ her again, and she drew the bolt in one of her worst, most peevish humours.

The letter was finished and forwarded to its destination by a milk-fetcher⁴ who came from the village, but that I did not learn till some time afterwards. Weeks passed on, and Cathy recovered her temper, though she grew wondrous⁵ fond of stealing off to corners by herself, and often, if I came near her suddenly while reading, she would start and bend over the book, evidently desirous to hide it; and I detected edges of loose paper sticking out⁶ beyond the leaves.

She also got a trick⁷ of coming down early in the morning, and lingering about the kitchen, as if she were expecting the arrival of something; and she had a small drawer in a cabinet in the library which she would trifle⁸ over for hours, and whose key she took special care to remove when she left it.

One day, as she inspected this drawer, I observed that the playthings, and trinkets⁹, which recently formed its contents, were transmuted¹⁰ into bits of folded paper.

My curiosity and suspicions were roused; I determined to take a peep at her mysterious treasures; so, at night, as soon as she and my master were safe¹¹ upstairs, I searched and readily¹² found among my house keys, one that would fit the lock. Having opened, I emptied the whole contents into my apron, and took them with me to examine at leisure¹³

¹ petulant: displaying peevish or pettish impatience and irritation, especially on slight occasion. (ささいなことで) いらいらす、すねる。

² cross thing!: いじわる! ‘cross’ はもともと人と交差する、つまり人のじゃまをする、意向に逆らう。

³ quit: to leave, go away or depart from (a place or person). (p. 257 注 5 参照)

⁴ milk-fetcher: 牛乳集配人。次頁に ‘the dairy-maid filled his can’ とあるから、屋敷で牛乳を受け取って村に届ける小僧。

⁵ wondrous: (arch.) *adv.* wonderfully; remarkably.

⁶ stick out: to jut out, project, protrude.

⁷ trick: a particular habit, way, or mode of acting. (Usually, a bad or unpleasant habit.) (よからぬ) くせ、習慣。ここは、朝早く降りてきて～するのが習慣になった。少し後に ‘Following her habit, my young lady descended early, and visited the kitchen’ とある。

⁸ trifle: to toy, play (with a material object); to handle or finger a thing idly. いじくる。

⁹ trinket: a small ornament or fancy article, usually an article of jewellery for personal adornment. 小間物、小さな装身具。

¹⁰ transmute: to alter or change in nature, properties, appearance, or form; to transform, convert, turn. ここでは引き出しの中身が小間物から折りたたんだ紙の束に姿を変えていたこと。

¹¹ safe: secured, kept in custody; unable to escape; hence, not likely to come out, intervene, or do hurt. もともとは囚人などについていうようだが、ここは「部屋から出てきてじゃますることがない」という意味だから、この語義が適切だろう。

¹² readily: promptly, in respect of the time of action; quickly, without delay; also, without difficulty, with ease or facility.

¹³ at leisure: without haste, with deliberation. ゆっくりと、じっくりと。

in my own chamber.

Though I could not but suspect, I was still surprised to discover that they were a mass of correspondence, daily almost, it must have been, from Linton Heathcliff, answers to documents forwarded by her. The earlier dated were embarrassed¹ and short; gradually, however, they expanded into copious² love-letters, foolish, as the age of the writer rendered natural³, yet with touches, here and there, which I thought were borrowed from a more experienced source.

Some of them struck me as singularly odd compounds⁴ of ardour⁵, and flatness; commencing in strong feeling, and concluding in the affected⁶, wordy⁷ way that a school-boy might use to a fancied, incorporeal⁸ sweetheart.

Whether they satisfied Cathy, I don't know, but they appeared very worthless trash to me.

After turning over as many as I thought proper, I tied them in a handkerchief, and set them aside, re-locking the vacant drawer.

Following her habit, my young lady descended early, and visited the kitchen: I watched her go to the door on the arrival of a certain⁹ little boy; and, while the dairy-maid filled his can, she tucked¹⁰ something into his jacket pocket, and plucked¹¹ something out.

¹ embarrassed: (of expressions, narratives, etc.) involved, confused.

² copious: profuse in speech; diffuse or exuberant in style or treatment. 饒舌な。

³ as the age of the writer rendered natural: 書き手の年齢からして ('foolish' なのは) あたりまえですが。

⁴ compound: a union, combination, or mixture of elements. 組み合わせ、混合物。

⁵ ardour: heat of passion or desire, vehemence, ardent desire; warmth of emotion, zeal, fervour, eagerness, enthusiasm.

⁶ affected: assumed or displayed artificially; put on for effect: non-natural, artificial, stilted, 'got up.' 気取った。

⁷ wordy: (of speech or writing) consisting of or containing many words

⁸ incorporeal: [ɪnˈkɔːpəriəl] having no bodily or material structure; not composed of matter; immaterial. 実体のない。ここでは、実際にいもしない。

⁹ certain: used to define things which the mind definitely individualizes or particularizes from the general mass, but which may be left without further identification in description; thus often used to indicate that the speaker does not choose further to identify or specify them: : in *sing.* = a particular, in *pl.* = some particular, some definite. 特定はできるのだが、だれそれ・なになにと詳しくいうに及ばぬものを指す。ここでは「例の、件 (くだん) の」が適當。

¹⁰ tuck: to thrust or put away (an object) into a close place where it is snugly held or concealed. おさまりのいい (うまく隠れる) 狭いところに押し込む。

¹¹ pluck: (arch.) to pull or draw with a forcible effort; to drag; to snatch; (with various adverbs and prepositions) to pull *away, in, out, off, on, up*, etc. arch. 現在この意味ではふつう 'pull' を用いる。

I went round by the garden, and laid wait¹ for the messenger, who fought valorously² to defend his trust³, and we spilt the milk between us; but I succeeded in abstracting⁴ the epistle⁵; and threatening serious consequences if he did not look sharp⁶ home, I remained under the wall, and perused⁷ Miss Cathy's affectionate⁸ composition. It was more simple and more eloquent than her cousin's, very pretty and very silly. I shook my head, and went meditating into the house.

The day being wet, she could not divert herself⁹ with rambling about the park; so, at the conclusion of her morning studies, she resorted to the solace of the drawer. Her father sat reading at the table; and I, on purpose¹⁰, had sought a bit of work in some unripped fringes of the window curtain¹¹, keeping my eye steadily fixed on her proceedings¹².

Never did any bird flying back to a plundered nest which it had left brim-ful¹³ of chirping young ones, express more complete despair in its anguished cries, and flutterings¹⁴, than she by her single 'Oh!' and the change that transfigured her late happy countenance. Mr Linton looked up.

'What is the matter, love? Have you hurt yourself?' he said.

His tone and look assured her *he* had not been the discoverer of the hoard¹⁵.

¹ lay wait: (= lie in wait) to lurk in ambush. 待ち伏せする (*for*).

² valorously: bravely, valiantly.

³ trust: a duty or office, also a thing or person, entrusted to one. ここでは、託された手紙。

⁴ abstract: to withdraw, deduct, remove, or take away (something); *euphem.* to take away secretly, slyly, or dishonestly; to purloin. ここでは「奪い取る」だが、婉曲的には「盗み取る」。

⁵ epistle: [ɪpɪs(ə)l] a letter. もともとは文学的性格を有する書簡や公的な書簡を指し、現在では冗談・皮肉などをこめていう場合を除いて、ふつうの「手紙」には用いられない。(p.207 注 1 参照)

⁶ look sharp: to bestir oneself briskly, to lose no time. 'look sharp home' は、さっさと家に帰る。

⁷ peruse: [pəˈrúːz] to read through or over; to read thoroughly or carefully; hence (loosely) to read. (p. 40 注 7、p. 207 注 1 参照)

⁸ affectionate: [əfɛkʃənət] expressing or indicating love or affection; tender.

⁹ divert oneself: (now rare) to entertain, amuse, recreate oneself; to give oneself to diversion. 楽しむ、気晴らしをする。(p. 20 注 7、p. 221 注 9 参照)

¹⁰ on purpose: by design, as opposed to chance or accident; purposely, designedly, intentionally. 意図的に、計画的に、わざと。

¹¹ a bit ... curtain: 'fringe' はカーテンの縁の房飾り。'some unripped fringes' とあるからには、すでにある房飾りのいくつかが切れたかしてバラバラになっていた (unripped) のを補修してもとの房に戻すこと。縁の糸を抜いて房をつけるとする解釈もあるが、疑問。

¹² proceeding: a particular action or course of action; a piece of conduct or behaviour: (most usually in *pl.*) doings, actions. 挙動、ふるまい。(p. 191 注 4 参照)

¹³ brim(-)ful: full to the brim; on the point of overflowing. あふれんばかりの。

¹⁴ fluttering: 羽ばたくこと。ここでは比喩的に、動揺、うろたえぶり。

¹⁵ hoard: an accumulation or collection of anything valuable hidden away or laid by for preservation or future use; a stock, store, esp. of money; a treasure.

‘No, papa—’ she gasped. ‘Ellen! Ellen! come upstairs!—I’m sick!’

I obeyed her summons, and accompanied her out.

‘O Ellen! you have got them,’ she commenced immediately, dropping on her knees, when we were enclosed alone¹. ‘O, give them to me, and I’ll never, never do so again! Don’t tell papa—You have not told papa, Ellen, say you have not! I’ve been exceedingly naughty, but I won’t do it any more!’

With a grave severity in my manner, I bid her stand up.

‘So,’ I exclaimed, ‘Miss Catherine, you are tolerably² far³ on⁴, it seems; you may well be ashamed of them! A fine bundle of trash you study⁵ in your leisure hours, to be sure—Why, it’s good enough to be printed! And what do you suppose the master will think, when I display it before him? I haven’t shown it yet, but you needn’t imagine I shall keep your ridiculous secrets—For shame! And you must have led the way⁶ in writing such absurdities. He would not have thought of beginning, I’m certain.’

‘I didn’t! I didn’t!’ sobbed Cathy, fit to break her heart. ‘I didn’t once think of loving him till—’

‘*Loving!*’ cried I, as scornfully as I could utter the word. ‘*Loving!* Did anybody ever hear the like? I might just as well⁷ talk of loving the miller who comes once a year to buy our corn. Pretty loving, indeed, and both times together⁸ you have seen Linton hardly four hours, in your life! Now here is the babyish trash. I’m going with it to the library; and we’ll see what your father says to such *loving*.’

She sprang at her precious epistles, but I held them above my head; and then she poured out further frantic entreaties that I would burn them—do anything rather than show them. And being really fully as much inclined to laugh as scold, for I esteemed⁹ it

¹ alone: without other companions; isolated from others. このように、いつも「一人きり」を意味するとはかぎらない。

² tolerably: in a moderate or passable degree; fairly. ここは「かなり」。

³ far: (*fig.* with reference to progressive action or condition) to a great length or degree.

⁴ on: gone onward or ahead. 先へ進んで。

⁵ study: to read (a book, a passage, an author) with close attention.

⁶ lead the way: to go in advance of others, take the lead in an expedition or course of action. こんな愚にもつかぬ手紙のやりとりを始めたのはあなたが先に決まっています、ということ。

⁷ might just as well: ～するのとまるでいっしょ。すでに何度も登場している (p. 9 注 7、p. 140 注 13、217 注 3 参照)。

⁸ both times together: 二度会った時間を足しても (いっしょにしても)。

⁹ esteem: to account, consider, think, hold (a thing to be so and so).

all girlish vanity¹, I at length relented in a measure, and asked,

‘If I consent to burn them, will you promise faithfully, neither to send nor receive a letter again, nor a book, for I perceive you have sent him books, nor locks of hair, nor rings, nor playthings?’

‘We don't send playthings!’ cried Catherine, her pride overcoming her shame.

‘Nor anything at all then, my lady,’ I said. ‘Unless you will, here I go.’

‘I promise, Ellen!’ she cried, catching my dress. ‘Oh, put them in the fire, do, do!’

But when I proceeded to open a place² with the poker, the sacrifice was too painful to be borne³—She earnestly supplicated⁴ that I would spare her one or two.

‘One or two, Ellen, to keep for Linton's sake!’

I unknotted the handkerchief, and commenced dropping them in from an angle⁵, and the flame curled up the chimney.

‘I will have one, you cruel wretch,’ she screamed, darting her hand into the fire, and drawing forth some half-consumed fragments, at the expense of her fingers.

‘Very well—and I will have some to exhibit to papa!’ I answered, shaking⁶ back the rest into the bundle, and turning anew⁷ to the door.

She emptied her blackened pieces into the flames, and motioned me to finish the immolation⁸. It was done; I stirred up the ashes, and interred⁹ them under a shovelful of coals; and she mutely, and with a sense of intense injury, retired to her private apartment.

¹ vanity: vain and unprofitable conduct or employment of time. 無益な行い、時間の空費。

² to open a place: つまり灰や燃えさしをよけて手紙を燃やすための凹みをつくること。

³ bear: to sustain (anything painful or trying); to suffer, endure, pass through.

⁴ supplicate: to beg, pray, or entreat humbly; to present a humble petition. (どうかお願いですからと) 頼む、泣きつく。

⁵ angle: (arch.) a corner or area near a corner. つまり暖炉の正面からではなく、右か左の隅から斜めに投げこんだのだろう。

⁶ shake: to reduce by shaking to a specified condition. ゆすって、ある状態にまとめる。ここではばらけた手紙をハンカチごとゆすって束にもどした。

⁷ anew: a second time as a new trial or action, over again, afresh, once more.

⁸ immolation: sacrifice.

⁹ inter: [inté:] to deposit (a corpse) in the earth, or in a grave or tomb; to inhume, bury.

I descended to tell my master that the young lady's qualm¹ of sickness was almost gone, but I judged it best for her to lie down a while.

She wouldn't dine; but she reappeared at tea, pale, and red about the eyes, and marvellously subdued² in outward aspect.

Next morning I answered the letter by a slip of paper inscribed³, 'Master Heathcliff is requested to send no more notes to Miss Linton, as she will not receive them.' And, thenceforth, the little boy came with vacant pockets.

¹ qualm: [kwa:m] a (sudden) feeling or fit of faintness, illness, or sickness. (Now restricted to cases in which the seat of the disorder is in the stomach, but formerly in somewhat wider use.)

² subdue: to get the upper hand of by intimidation, persuasion, etc.; to render (a person or animal) submissive; to prevail over, get the better of. ここは「(さんざんやりこめられたため) おとなしくなって、しゅんとして」

³ inscribe: to mark (a surface, column, sheet, etc.) with writing or other characters, esp. in a durable or conspicuous way. (くつきりと) しるす。

Chapter VIII (XXII)

Summer drew to an end, and early Autumn—it was past Michaelmas¹, but the harvest was late that year, and a few of our fields were still uncleared.

Mr Linton and his daughter would frequently walk out among the reapers²: at the carrying of the last sheaves³, they stayed till dusk, and the evening happening to be chill and damp, my master caught a bad cold that, settling obstinately on⁴ his lungs, confined him indoors throughout the whole of the winter, nearly without intermission⁵.

Poor Cathy, frightened from⁶ her little romance, had been considerably sadder and duller since its abandonment: and her father insisted on her reading less, and taking more exercise. She had his companionship no longer: I esteemed it a duty to supply its lack, as much as possible, with mine: an inefficient⁷ substitute, for I could only spare two or three hours, from my numerous diurnal occupations⁸, to follow her footsteps, and then, my society was obviously less desirable than his.

On an afternoon in October, or the beginning of November, a fresh⁹ watery¹⁰ afternoon, when the turf and paths were rustling¹¹ with moist, withered¹² leaves, and the cold, blue

¹ Michaelmas: [míkəlməs] The feast of St. Michael, 29 Sept., one of the four quarter-days of the English business year. ミカエル祭 (地代などの四季支払い日のひとつ)。

² reaper: one who reaps. 刈り手。

³ sheaf: one of the large bundles in which it is usual to bind cereal plants after reaping.

⁴ settle on: (of pain or disease) to establish itself in or on a definite part of the body. (病が～に) 居すわる、取りつく。

⁵ intermission: a temporary pause, cessation, or breach of continuity in an action, state, etc. (freq. in phr. **without intermission**). spec. in *Path.*, of a fever or the pulse. つまり、熱が一時的に下がることなど。

⁶ frightened from her little romance: 恐くなってほのかな恋から身を引いた。‘from’を原因・理由と取り「恋におびえた」とする解釈もあるが、Nellyにこっぴどく叱られ、父に告げ口されるのが恐さに恋から遠ざかった、と取るのが自然であろう。【参考】‘birds *frightened from* their nest’ おびえて巣から逃げ出した鳥たち。

⁷ inefficient: (of a person) not effecting or accomplishing something; deficient in the ability or industry required for what one has to do; not fully capable.

⁸ diurnal occupations: 日々の勤務。これも Maugham は「勿体ぶった言葉づかい」とする。

⁹ fresh: chilly. 「風があって寒い」(研究社『リーダーズ英和辞典』)、「冷たくて風の強い」(ランダムハウス英和第2版)が適切であろう。

¹⁰ watery: (of clouds, wind, etc.) full of moisture which is ready to fall as rain. 湿気が多くいまにも雨になりそうな、雨もよいの。

¹¹ rustle: to give forth a continuous succession of light, rapid, crisp sounds, as the result of some kind of movement. サラサラ (カサカサ) という音を立てる。

¹² withered: (of a plant, fruit, etc.) shrivelled or shrunken through lack of moisture, and so deprived of its natural colour, freshness, or bloom; hence, of fields, or stretches of country, and *gen.*: dried up, arid. ‘withered leaves’ 枯葉。

sky was half hidden by clouds, dark grey streamers¹, rapidly mounting² from the west, and boding³ abundant rain; I requested my young lady to forego⁴ her ramble because I was certain of showers. She refused; and I unwillingly donned a cloak, and took my umbrella to accompany her on a stroll to the bottom⁵ of the park; a formal⁶ walk which she generally affected⁷ if low-spirited; and that she invariably was when Mr Edgar had been worse than ordinary; a thing never known from his confession, but guessed both by her and me from his increased silence, and the melancholy of his countenance.

She went sadly on; there was no running or bounding now, though the chill wind might well have tempted her to a race⁸. And often, from the side of my eye, I could detect her raising a hand, and brushing something off her cheek.

I gazed round for a means of diverting her thoughts. On one side of the road rose a high, rough bank, where hazels and stunted oaks, with their roots half exposed, held uncertain tenure⁹. The soil was too loose for the latter, and strong winds had blown some nearly horizontal. In summer, Miss Catherine delighted to climb along these trunks, and sit in the branches, swinging¹⁰ twenty feet above the ground; and I, pleased with her agility¹¹, and her light¹², childish heart, still considered it proper to scold every time I caught her at such an elevation; but so that¹³ she knew there was no necessity for descending. From dinner to tea she would lie in her breeze-rocked cradle¹⁴, doing nothing except singing old songs — my nursery lore¹⁵ — to herself, or watching the birds, joint

¹ streamer: a long narrow strip of vapour, snow, etc. 細長くたなびく雲霧など。

² mount: to go upwards, ascend.

³ bode: (arch.) to announce beforehand, foretell, predict, prognosticate, presage.

⁴ forego = forgo: to abstain from (some action or procedure).

⁵ bottom: the deepest or most remote part of a recess, bay, or the like; the farthest point, or inmost part.

⁶ formal: done or adopted for the sake of form or convention; perfunctory; having the form without the spirit or substance. かたちだけの、気のない。

⁷ affect: (a thing touching one's own practice) to like to practise, use, wear, or frequent.

⁸ though the chill wind ... a race: 冷たい風に誘われて駆け出してもおかしくはなかったのに。race: (now *Sc.*) the act of running; a run.

⁹ hold uncertain tenure: (地盤がゆるく根がむき出しになっているので) いつまで立っていられるか知れぬ。tenure: the period or term of holding something. (職なら在任期間、土地なら保有期間など)

¹⁰ swing: to oscillate (without suspension); to move to and fro, or from side to side; to sway. 猿のように枝からぶら下がっていたのではないからこの意味。(本頁注 14 参照)

¹¹ agility: the quality of being agile; readiness for motion; nimbleness, activity, dexterity in motion. 敏捷、すばしこさ。

¹² light: free from the weight of care or sorrow; cheerful, merry (Obs. exc. in *light heart*). 気苦労のない、快活な。

¹³ so that: in order that. そうしたら当然の結果として that 以下になるように (→目的)。つまり、降りなくてもいいのだとわかる (結果となる) ようにかたちだけ叱ってみせた、ということ。

¹⁴ her breeze-rocked cradle: そよ風に揺れるゆりかご (= the branches)

¹⁵ lore: the body of traditional facts, anecdotes, or beliefs relating to some particular subject (語源的には learn から、教え・知識)。ここでは古くから伝わる物語などの一節であろう。

tenants, feed and entice¹ their young ones to fly, or nestling with closed lids², half thinking, half dreaming, happier than words can express.

‘Look, Miss!’ I exclaimed, pointing to a nook³ under the roots of one twisted tree. ‘Winter is not here yet. There’s a little flower, up yonder, the last bud from the multitude of bluebells that clouded⁴ those turf steps in July with a lilac mist. Will you clamber up, and pluck it to show to papa?’

Cathy stared a long time at the lonely blossom trembling in its earthy shelter, and replied at length—

‘No, I’ll not touch it.—but it looks melancholy, does it not, Ellen?’

‘Yes,’ I observed, ‘about as starved⁵ and sackless⁶ as you—your cheeks are bloodless; let us take hold of hands and run. You’re so low, I dare say I shall keep up with you.’

‘No,’ she repeated, and continued sauntering⁷ on, pausing, at intervals, to muse⁸ over a bit of moss, or a tuft of blanched⁹ grass, or a fungus¹⁰ spreading its bright orange among the heaps of brown foliage¹¹; and, ever and anon¹², her hand was lifted to her averted face.

‘Catherine, why are you crying, love?’ I asked, approaching and putting my arm over her shoulder. ‘You mustn’t cry, because papa has a cold; be thankful it is nothing worse.’

She now put no further restraint on her tears; her breath was stifled¹³ by sobs.

‘Oh, it *will* be something worse!’ she said. ‘And what shall I do when papa and you

¹ entice: to allure insidiously or adroitly. (巧みに) 誘う。

² nestling with closed lids: まぶたを閉じて心地よく体を休め。 *nestle*: (of persons:) to settle down as in a nest, or in a snug or comfortable manner.

³ nook: any small corner or recess. くぼみ、引込んだところ。

⁴ cloud: (fig.) to overshadow, throw into the shade. 影を落とす、影で覆う。

⁵ starved: (now chiefly dial. and poet.) perished with cold. (p. 245 注 3 参照)

⁶ sackless: (Sc. and north. dial.) feeble-minded; lacking energy, dispirited.

⁷ saunter: to walk with a leisurely and careless gait; to stroll. ぶらぶらと歩く。

⁸ muse: to gaze meditatively; to look thoughtfully or intently.

⁹ blanched: whitened (now, chiefly, by loss of colour).

¹⁰ fungus: a mushroom, toadstool, or one of the allied plants, including the various forms of mould. キノコ、カビも含めた菌類。なおふつう mushroom は食用、toadstool は毒キノコ。

¹¹ foliage: [fóulndʒ] the leaves (of a plant or tree) collectively; leafage. ‘after the foliage has died down’ のごとく単数扱いにする。

¹² ever and anon: ever and again, every now and then; continually at intervals.

¹³ stifle: to stop the passage of (the breath). 息を通わなくさせる、つまらせる。

leave me, and I am by myself? I can't forget your words, Ellen, they are always in my ear. How life will be changed, how dreary the world will be, when papa and you are dead!

'None can tell, whether you won't die before us,' I replied. 'It's wrong to anticipate evil—we'll hope there are years and years to come before any of us go—master is young, and I am strong, and hardly forty-five. My mother lived till eighty, a canty¹ dame to the last. And suppose Mr Linton were spared² till he saw sixty, that would be more years than you have counted, Miss. And would it not be foolish to mourn a calamity³ above twenty years beforehand?'

'But Aunt Isabella was younger than papa,' she remarked, gazing up with timid⁴ hope to seek further consolation.

'Aunt Isabella had not you and me to nurse her,' I replied. 'She wasn't as happy as master; she hadn't as much to live for.⁵ All you need do, is to wait well on⁶ your father, and cheer him by letting him see you cheerful; and avoid giving him anxiety on any subject—mind that, Cathy! I'll not disguise⁷, but you might kill him, if you were wild and reckless, and cherished⁸ a foolish, fanciful affection for the son of a person who would be glad to have⁹ him in his grave—and allowed him to discover that you fretted¹⁰ over the separation, he has judged it expedient¹¹ to make.'

'I fret about nothing on earth except papa's illness,' answered my companion. 'I care¹²

¹ canty: (Sc. and north. dial.) lively, brisk, active.

² spare: to leave (a person) unhurt, unharmed, or uninjured. (人を損なわずにおく) より、'to preserve or save (life) in place of destroying; to allow to continue or last.' (生かしておく)。

³ calamity: a grievous disaster, an event or circumstance causing loss or misery; a distressing misfortune. 不幸 (なできごと)。

⁴ timid: hesitant, tentative. 自信なげな、おずおず (おどおど) とした。

⁵ she hadn't as much to live for: おばさまには旦那様 (にとつてのあなた) ほどの生きがいがあったのです。

⁶ wait on: to attend as or in the manner of a servant to the personal requirements of; to minister to the comfort of.

⁷ disguise: to conceal or cloak the real state or character of (anything) by a counterfeit show or appearance. たとえば、怒っているのにニコニコして本心を隠すなど。

⁸ cherish: to entertain in the mind, harbour fondly, encourage, cling to (a hope, feeling, design, etc.). 心に抱く、執着する。

⁹ have: (arch.) to cause to come or go; to bring, lead, convey, take, put. 来させる、行かせる、運ぶ、入れる、など。ここでは、墓に押しこめる (死なせる)。

¹⁰ fret: to distress oneself with constant thoughts of regret or discontent; to vex oneself, chafe, worry. (p. 180 注 3 参照)

¹¹ expedient: fit, proper, or suitable to the circumstances of the case. ここは「(あなたが愚かな恋心を捨て切れずにいて) ご自分がよかれと思って別れさせたことをあなたが気に病んでいるとお知りになれば、そのせいでお父様はお命を失ってしまいかねませんよ」ということ。

¹² care: to have a regard, liking, or inclination for (a thing); to have regard, fondness, or attachment for (a person). (ものを) 好む、(人を) 尊敬する、愛する。主に否定文・疑問文で。

for nothing in comparison with papa. And I'll never—never—oh, never, while I have my senses¹, do an act, or say a word to vex him. I love him better than myself, Ellen; and I know it by this—I pray every night that I may live after him; because I would rather be miserable than that he should be—that proves I love him better than myself.'

'Good words,' I replied. 'But deeds must prove it also; and after he is well, remember you don't forget resolutions² formed in the hour of fear.'

As we talked, we neared a door that opened on the road; and my young lady, lightening into sunshine again³, climbed up, and seated herself on the top of the wall, reaching over to gather some hips⁴ that bloomed⁵ scarlet on the summit branches of the wild rose trees, shadowing the highway side: the lower fruit had disappeared, but only birds could touch the upper, except from Cathy's present station.

In stretching⁶ to pull them, her hat fell off; and as the door was locked, she proposed scrambling⁷ down to recover it. I bid her be cautious lest she got a fall, and she nimbly⁸ disappeared.

But the return was no such easy matter; the stones were smooth and neatly cemented⁹, and the rosebushes and blackberry stragglers¹⁰ could yield¹¹ no assistance in re-ascending. I, like a fool, didn't recollect¹² that till I heard her laughing, and exclaiming—

'Ellen, you'll have to fetch the key, or else I must run round to the porter's lodge¹³. I

¹ senses: *pl.* the mental faculties in their normal condition of sanity; one's 'reason' or 'wits'. 正気、分別。

² resolution: the (or an) act of resolving or determining; anything resolved upon; a fixed determination. 決心 (したこと)、決定 (したこと)。

³ lightening into sunshine again: 明るい顔を取り戻して。 *lighten*: to brighten or light up, as the eyes or features.

⁴ hip: the fruit of the wild rose, or of roses in general.

⁵ bloom: to glow with warm colour.

⁶ stretch: to extend the hand or to reach, as for something.

⁷ scramble: to make one's way by clambering, crawling, jumping, etc. over difficult ground or through obstructions. ここでは、(塀を) はい降りる。

⁸ nimbly: quickly, actively.

⁹ cement: to unite as with cement; to cause to cohere firmly. セメントで固める、密着させる。

¹⁰ straggler: a plant, branch, etc., that grows irregularly or shoots too far.

¹¹ yield: to give so as to supply a need or serve a purpose; to give or provide for use, furnish, afford.

¹² recollect: to call or bring back (something) to one's mind; to recall the knowledge of (a thing, person, etc.); to remember. 'remember' (意識的であれ無意識的であれ、思い出す) との相違は、記憶を意識的にたどって、無意識的には思い浮かばぬことを思い出すという点にある。

¹³ porter's lodge: 門番小屋。 *porter*: a gate-keeper. 語源は 'porta = door'. (p. 47 注 2 参照)

can't scale¹ the ramparts² on this side!

'Stay where you are,' I answered. 'I have my bundle of keys in my pocket; perhaps I may manage to open it, if not, I'll go.'

Catherine amused herself with dancing to and fro before the door, while I tried all the large keys in succession³. I had applied the last, and found that none would do⁴; so, repeating my desire that she would remain there, I was about to hurry home as fast as I could, when an approaching sound arrested⁵ me. It was the trot of a horse; Cathy's dance stopped; and in a minute the horse stopped also.

'Who is that?' I whispered.

'Ellen, I wish you could open the door,' whispered back my companion, anxiously⁶.

'Ho, Miss Linton!' cried a deep voice (the rider's.) 'I'm glad to meet you. Don't be in haste to enter, for I have an explanation to ask and obtain.'

'I shan't speak to you, Mr Heathcliff!' answered Catherine. 'Papa says you are a wicked man, and you hate both him and me; and Ellen says the same.'

'That is nothing to the purpose⁷,' said Heathcliff. (He it was.) 'I don't hate my son, I suppose, and it is concerning him that I demand your attention. Yes! you have cause to blush. Two or three months since, were you not in the habit of writing to Linton? making love in play, eh? You deserved, both of you, flogging for that! You especially, the elder, and less sensitive⁸, as it turns out⁹. I've got your letters, and if you give me any pertness,

¹ scale: to climb, get over (a wall or the like); to get to or reach the top of. (てっぺんまで) よじ登る。

² rampart: a mound of earth raised for the defence of a place, capable of resisting cannon-shot, wide enough on the top for the passage of troops, guns, etc., and usually surmounted by a stone parapet. 屋敷側の地面が街道側のそれよりも高くなっているから、塀を「塁壁」にたとえた。

³ in succession: one after another in regular sequence, successively. 次から次へと。

⁴ do: to 'work', 'act', operate, or turn out (in some way); to do what is wanted; to succeed, answer, or serve; to be fitting or appropriate; to suffice. 間に合う、用が足りる、ぴったり合う。

⁵ arrest: to cause to stop (the course of) a person; to catch and fix the attention of (a person). (and cause to stop him). ここでは両方の意味がまじっており、「人の注意を引き、その結果としてその人の動作を中止させる」こと。

⁶ anxiously: with painful uncertainty; solicitously. 不安げに、心配そうに。

⁷ to the purpose: with relevancy to the subject or point at issue. (趣旨・論点に) かなう、適する。

⁸ sensitive: (with reference to mental feelings) having quick and acute sensibilities; easily touched to emotion, impressionable; easily wounded by unkindness. すばやく反応する、敏感な。

⁹ as it turns out: 結局のところは(～だった、だとわかった)。turn out: to be ultimately found or known, to prove to be. 「おまえは年上のくせに」については p. 282 の Cathy のセリフ ('Linton is just six months younger than I am') を参照。

I'll send them to your father. I presume you grew weary of the amusement, and dropped it, didn't you? Well, you dropped Linton with it, into a Slough of Despond¹. He was in earnest—in love—really. As true as I live, he's dying for you—breaking his heart at your fickleness²—not figuratively³, but actually. Though Hareton has made him a standing⁴ jest for six weeks, and I have used more serious measures, and attempted to frighten him out of his idiocy, he gets worse daily; and he'll be under the sod⁵ before summer unless you restore⁶ him!

'How can you lie so glaringly⁷ to the poor child?' I called from the inside. 'Pray ride on! How can you deliberately get up⁸ such paltry⁹ falsehoods? Miss Cathy, I'll knock the lock off with a stone, you won't believe that vile nonsense. You can feel in¹⁰ yourself, it is impossible that a person should die for love of a stranger.'

'I was not aware there were eaves-droppers,¹¹' muttered the detected villain. 'Worthy Mrs Dean, I like you, but I don't like your double¹² dealing,' he added aloud. 'How could *you* lie so glaringly as to affirm I hated the "poor child?" And invent bug-bear¹³ stories to terrify her from my door-stones?¹⁴ Catherine Linton (the very name warms me), my bonny lass, I shall be from home all this week, go and see if I have not spoken truth; do, there's a darling! Just imagine your father in my place, and Linton in yours; then think how you would value your careless¹⁵ lover if he refused to stir a step to comfort you, when

¹ Slough of Despond: (PENGUIN 版注 :) state of fear and apprehension into which the pilgrim Christian falls in John Bunyan's *Pilgrim's Progress*. 落胆の沼。

² fickleness: changeableness, inconstancy, variableness.

³ figuratively: by or as a figure of speech; metaphorically. ことばのあやとして。

⁴ standing: that continues in existence or operation that continues to be (what the noun specifies). ここは、Hareton から六週間もの間笑い者にされつづけた、ということ。

⁵ under the sod: dead and buried.

⁶ restore: to bring (a person or part of the body) back to a healthy or vigorous state.

⁷ glaringly: in a glaring (=that displays itself openly; obtrusively evident or conspicuous.) fashion. みえすいたやり方で、ずうずうしく。

⁸ get up: to prepare, make ready, organize, set on foot, bring into existence.

⁹ paltry: [pó:ltri] rubbishy, trashy, worthless; contemptible, despicable; of worthless nature. (p. 217 注 2、308 注 2 参照)

¹⁰ in: belonging to, as an internal quality, attribute, faculty, or capacity, inherent in; hence, within the ability, capacity, thought, etc. of. ここは、(〜だと) 感じるくらいの能力はそなわっているでしょう、つまり、(人にいわれなくてもおのずと) ご自分で感じられますでしょう。

¹¹ eaves-dropper: one who listens secretly to conversation.

¹² double: acting in a double manner, i.e. in two ways at different times, openly and secretly, or in profession and practice; characterized by duplicity; false, deceitful. 裏表のある、二心ある。

¹³ bug(-)bear: (obs.) a sort of hobgoblin (presumably in the shape of a bear) supposed to devour naughty children; hence, generally, any imaginary being invoked by nurses to frighten children. ここでは形容詞的に。おれが化け物だという与太話をでっちあげ、というところ。

¹⁴ terrify her from my door-stones: 彼女を脅してわが家から遠ざける。

¹⁵ careless: not solicitous, regardless. ここでは、相手を気づかわない、つれない。

your father, himself, entreated¹ him; and don't, from pure stupidity, fall into the same error. I swear, on my salvation², he's going to his grave, and none but you can save him!

The lock gave way³, and I issued out⁴.

'I swear Linton is dying,' repeated Heathcliff, looking hard at me. 'And grief and disappointment are hastening his death. Nelly, if you won't let her go, you can walk over yourself. But I shall not return till this time next week; and I think your master himself would scarcely object to her visiting her cousin!'

'Come in,' said I, taking Cathy by the arm and half forcing her to re-enter; for she lingered, viewing, with troubled eyes, the features of the speaker, too stern to express his inward deceit.

He pushed his horse close, and, bending down, observed—

'Miss Catherine, I'll own⁵ to you that I have little patience with Linton—and Hareton and Joseph have less. I'll own that he's with a harsh set⁶. He pines⁷ for kindness, as well as love, and a kind word from you would be his best medicine. Don't mind Mrs Dean's cruel cautions, but be generous, and contrive⁸ to see him. He dreams of you day and night, and cannot be persuaded that you don't hate him, since you neither write nor call.'

I closed the door, and rolled a stone to assist the loosened lock in holding it; and spreading my umbrella, I drew my charge underneath, for the rain began to drive⁹ through the moaning¹⁰ branches of the trees, and warned us to avoid delay.

¹ entreat: to make an earnest prayer or request to; to beseech, implore.

² on my salvation: 'on' は「誓言や断言の基礎・根拠」を示す。わが救済にかけて、とは断言するときの決まり文句のひとつ。

³ give way: (of things, material and immaterial) to yield, be dislodged, break down (under pressure or violence).

⁴ issue out: go out.

⁵ own: to confess to be valid, true, or actual; to admit. (p. 10 注 1 以下頻出)

⁶ set: a number of things or persons that belong together or resemble one another or are usually found together.

⁷ pine: to be consumed with longing; to languish with intense desire, to hunger after something; to long eagerly. ここでは、渴望(切望)する。(p. 143 注 18 参照)

⁸ contrive: to succeed in bringing to pass; to 'manage', to effect (a purpose). うまいこと(なんとかして)～する (to do)。

⁹ drive: to move with vehemence or energy; to move along, impelled by wind, current, or other natural agency. ここは雨だから、激しく叩きつけてきたこと。

¹⁰ moaning: 'moan: to make a low mournful sound indicative of physical or mental suffering.' より、うめくような音を立てる。

Our hurry prevented any comment on the encounter with Heathcliff, as we stretched¹ towards home; but I divined² instinctively³ that Catherine's heart was clouded now in double darkness. Her features were so sad, they did not seem hers: she evidently regarded what she had heard as every syllable true.

The master had retired to rest before we came in. Cathy stole to his room to inquire how he was; he had fallen asleep. She returned, and asked me to sit with her in the library. We took our tea together; and afterwards she lay down on the rug⁴, and told me not to talk, for she was weary.

I got a book, and pretended to read. As soon as she supposed me absorbed in my occupation, she recommenced her silent weeping: it appeared, at present, her favourite diversion. I suffered her to enjoy it a while; then I expostulated⁵; deriding⁶ and ridiculing⁷ all Mr Heathcliff's assertions⁸ about his son, as if I were certain she would coincide⁹. Alas! I hadn't skill to counteract¹⁰ the effect his account had produced; it was just what he intended.

'You may be right, Ellen,' she answered; 'but I shall never feel at ease till I know—and I must tell Linton it is not my fault that I don't write; and convince him that I shall not change.'

What use were anger and protestations¹¹ against her silly credulity¹²? We parted that

¹ stretch: to make one's way (rapidly or with effort).

² divine: to make out by sagacity, intuition, or fortunate conjecture (that is, in some other way than by actual information). (p. 299 注 11 参照)

³ instinctively: in an instinctive manner; by instinct; by some innate prompting; without conscious thought or purpose. 本能的に、直観的に。

⁴ rug: a thick fabric for covering part of a floor, often woven of wool and often having an oblong shape with a border design. (床の一部に敷く厚手の) 敷物。※床全体に敷くのが 'carpet'。

⁵ expostulate: to make friendly remonstrances or representations for the purpose or reprehension or dissuasion; to reason or remonstrate in a friendly manner. (諄々と) 言い聞かせる。(p. 74 注 3、p. 84 注 11、p. 200 注 11 参照)

⁶ deride: to laugh at in contempt or scorn; to laugh to scorn; to make sport of, mock.

⁷ ridicule: to treat with ridicule or mockery; to make fun of, deride, laugh at.

⁸ assertion: a positive statement; a declaration, averment.

⁹ coincide: (of persons) to accord or concur (in opinion, sentiment, etc.). 同意見である。

¹⁰ counteract: to hinder or defeat by contrary action; to neutralize the action or effect of. 対抗して打ち負かす、無効にする。

¹¹ protestation: a solemn affirmation of a fact, opinion, or resolution. (p.149 注 2 参照)

¹² credulity: over-readiness to believe; disposition to believe on weak or insufficient grounds.

night hostile—but next day beheld me on the road to Wuthering Heights¹, by the side of my wilful² young mistress's pony. I couldn't bear to witness her sorrow, to see her pale, dejected countenance, and heavy³ eyes; and I yielded⁴, in the faint hope that Linton himself might prove by his reception of us, how little of the tale was founded on fact.

¹ next day ... Wuthering Heights: 次の日には私は嵐が丘へ向かっているのです。「場所や時が～を見る」という表現については ‘see: (of things, places, etc.) to be contemporary with and in the neighbourhood of, to be the scene of (an event); to be in existence during (a period of time). Also of a period of time: to be marked by (an event).’ つまり、場所については「～の場となる」、時間については「～という（特徴的な）ことが起こる、～が目につく」など。

² wilful: asserting or disposed to assert one's own will against persuasion, instruction, or command; governed by will without regard to reason; determined to take one's own way; obstinately self-willed or perverse. なんといわれても我を通す、強情な、わがままな。

³ heavy: expressing or indicative of grief, doleful.

⁴ yield: to give oneself up, surrender, submit (as overcome in fight). 降参する。

Chapter IX (XXIII)

The rainy night had ushered in¹ a misty morning — half frost², half drizzle³ — and temporary brooks crossed our path, gurgling⁴ from the uplands. My feet were thoroughly wetted; I was cross and low, exactly the humour suited for making the most of⁵ these disagreeable things.

We entered the farm-house by the kitchen way to ascertain⁶ whether Mr Heathcliff were really absent; because I put slight faith in his own affirmation.

Joseph seemed sitting in a sort of elysium⁷ alone, beside a roaring fire; a quart⁸ of ale on the table near him, bristling with⁹ large pieces of toasted oat cake¹⁰; and his black, short pipe in his mouth.

Catherine ran to the hearth to warm herself. I asked if the master were in?

My question remained so long unanswered, that I thought the old man had grown deaf¹¹, and repeated it louder.

‘Na — ay!’ he snarled, or rather screamed through his nose. ‘Na — ay! yah muh goa back whear yah coom frough.’¹²

‘Joseph,’ cried a peevish voice, simultaneously with me, from the inner room. ‘How

¹ usher in: to precede, come or happen immediately before, in order of time; to lead up to. 雨の一夜が明けて、霧の深い朝を迎えた。

² frost: frozen dew or vapour. ここでは氷霧だろう。

³ drizzle: small, fine, spray-like rain. 霧雨。

⁴ gurgle: (of water or other liquid) to flow in a broken irregular current, with intermittent low noises, as water from a bottle, or a stream among stones.

⁵ make the most of: to represent or exhibit at the best or worst. (天気は悪いし、道路は水浸し、しかも気の重いお供と) 不愉快なことの数々をとことんまでかみしめるにふさわしい気分。

⁶ ascertain: to find out or learn for a certainty by experiment, examination, or investigation; to make sure of, get to know.

⁷ elysium: [ilíziəm] the supposed state or abode of the blessed after death in Greek mythology; (fig.) a place or state of ideal or perfect happiness. 極楽、理想郷。

⁸ quart: a vessel holding a quart; a quart-pot or quart-bottle. 1 クォート (one-fourth of a gallon, or two pints. うんとおおざっぱに 1 リットルと考えてよい) 容器。

⁹ bristle with: to be thickly set with (bristly points). (密生する剛毛のように) ～が林立する、～でいっぱいである。オート・ケーキをいくつも並べていた。

¹⁰ oat cake = oat-cake: a cake, usually thin and brittle, made of oatmeal.

¹¹ deaf: lacking, or defective in, the sense of hearing.

¹² Na — ay! ... frough.: No! you must go back where you came from.

often am I to call you?¹ There are only a few red ashes² now. Joseph! come this moment.'

Vigorous puffs, and a resolute stare into the grate declared he had no ear for this appeal. The housekeeper and Hareton were invisible; one gone on an errand, and the other at his work, probably. We knew Linton's tones and entered.

'Oh, I hope you'll die in a garret ! starved to death,' said the boy, mistaking our approach for that of his negligent attendant.

He stopped, on observing his error; his cousin flew to him.

'Is that you, Miss Linton ?' he said, raising his head from the arm of the great chair, in which he reclined. 'No—don't kiss me. It takes my breath—dear me! Papa said you would call,' continued he, after recovering a little from Catherine's embrace; while she stood by looking very contrite³. 'Will you shut the door, if you please? you left it open—and those—those *detestable* creatures won't bring coals to the fire. It's so cold!'

I stirred up the cinders⁴, and fetched a scuttle⁵ full myself. The invalid complained of being covered with ashes; but he had a tiresome⁶ cough, and looked feverish and ill, so I did not rebuke his temper.

'Well, Linton,' murmured Catherine, when his corrugated⁷ brow relaxed. 'Are you glad to see me? Can I do you any good?'

'Why didn't you come before?' he asked. 'You should have come, instead of writing. It tired me dreadfully, writing those long letters. I'd far rather have talked to you. Now, I can neither bear to talk, nor anything else. I wonder where Zillah is! Will you (looking at me) step into the kitchen and see?'

¹ How often am I to call you?: 「be to do」のかたちは命令・指示または計画・予定を表すとされ、「どの<be to+不定詞>であっても、『～することになっている』という意味が基本である」(旺文社『実践ロイヤル英文法』)。つまりどの場合でも「～する」のは主語の意志ではないから、ここは「いったい何度呼ばせるんだ、何度呼べばいいんだ」。

² ashes: 「灰」が複数とは納得しにくい、本文のように複数形で使われることが多い(単数形でも用いられる)。

³ contrite: [kɒ'ntrɪt] (fig.) crushed or broken in spirit by a sense of sin, and so brought to complete penitence. 罪を悔いた、すっかり後悔した。

⁴ cinder: an ember or piece of glowing coal, or similar substance, which has ceased to flame. ここでは燃えつきていないのだから「おき」。燃えつきていれば 'ashes' に同じ。

⁵ scuttle: 石炭入れ。coal-scuttle (p. 11 注 6) 参照。

⁶ tiresome: (colloq.) disagreeable, unpleasant; irksome, annoying, vexatious.

⁷ corrugated: (of the skin) wrinkled, drawn into wrinkles. しわを寄せた。

I had received no thanks for my other service, and being unwilling to run to and fro at his behest¹, I replied—

‘Nobody is out there but Joseph.’

‘I want to drink,’ he exclaimed², fretfully, turning away. ‘Zillah is constantly gadding³ off to Gimmerton since papa went. It's miserable! And I'm obliged to come down here—they resolved never to hear me upstairs.’

‘Is your father attentive⁴ to you, Master Heathcliff?’ I asked, perceiving Catherine to be checked in her friendly advances⁵.

‘Attentive? He makes *them* a little more attentive at least,’ he cried. ‘The wretches! Do you know, Miss Linton, that brute Hareton laughs at me—I hate him—indeed, I hate them all—they are odious⁶ beings.’

Cathy began searching for some water; she lighted on⁷ a pitcher in the dresser, filled a tumbler, and brought it. He bid her add a spoonful of wine from a bottle on the table; and having swallowed a small portion, appeared more tranquil, and said she was very kind.

‘And are you glad to see me?’ asked she, reiterating⁸ her former question, and pleased to detect the faint dawn⁹ of a smile.

‘Yes, I am—It's something new to hear a voice like yours!’ he replied, ‘but I *have* been vexed, because you wouldn't come—And papa swore it was owing to me; he called me a

¹ behest: a command, injunction, bidding.

² exclaim: to cry out suddenly and vehemently; to cry out from pain, anger, delight, surprise, etc. (p. 20 注 4 参照)

³ gad: to wander about with no serious object, stopping here and there, to rove idly. (たいして用事もないのに) ふらふら出歩く。

⁴ attentive: assiduous in ministering to the comfort or pleasure of others; courteous. 思いやりのある、親切にしてくれる。

⁵ perceiving Catherine ... advances: Catherine がやさしく声をかけようとしてもはねつけられるのを見て (私から質問した)。

⁶ odious: deserving of hatred, hateful; causing or exciting hatred or repugnance, disagreeable, offensive, repulsive; exciting odium.

⁷ light on: to happen to come upon, chance upon; to meet with or discover, esp. unexpectedly or by accident; to come across, whether as the result of search or not. ここでは、あちこち探した結果みつけた。

⁸ reiterate: to repeat (a request, statement, word, etc.) (p. 290 注 6 参照)

⁹ dawn: (fig.) the beginning, commencement, rise, first gleam or appearance (of something compared to light); an incipient gleam (of anything). (明るい) 兆し、現れ。

pitiful, shuffling¹, worthless thing; and said you despised me; and if he had been in my place, he would be more the master of the Grange than your father, by this time. But you don't despise me, do you, Miss—'

'I wish you would say Catherine, or Cathy,' interrupted my young lady. 'Despise you? No! Next to papa, and Ellen, I love you better than anybody living. I don't love Mr Heathcliff, though, and I dare not come when he returns; will he stay away many days?'

'Not many,' answered Linton; 'but he goes onto the moors frequently, since the shooting season² commenced, and you might spend an hour or two with me, in his absence—Do! say you will! I think I should not be peevish with you; you'd not provoke me, and you'd always be ready to help me, wouldn't you?'

'Yes,' said Catherine, stroking his long soft hair, 'if I could only get papa's consent, I'd spend half my time with you—Pretty Linton! I wish you were my brother!'

'And then you would like me as well as your father?' observed he more cheerfully. 'But papa says you would love me better than him, and all the world, if you were my wife—so I'd rather you were that!'

'No! I should never love anybody better than papa,' she returned gravely. 'And people hate their wives, sometimes; but not their sisters and brothers, and if you were the latter, you would live with us, and papa would be as fond of you, as he is of me.'

Linton denied that people ever hated their wives, but Cathy affirmed³ they did, and in her wisdom⁴, instanced⁵ his own father's aversion to her aunt.

I endeavoured to stop her thoughtless tongue—I couldn't succeed, till everything she knew was out⁶. Master Heathcliff, much irritated, asserted her relation⁷ was false.

'Papa told me, and papa does not tell falsehoods!' she answered pertly.

¹ shuffling: (of persons) given to shifty or evasive action or behaviour. 煮え切らぬ。

² the shooting season: 狩猟の時期、猟期 (the hunting season). '*shooting*: the sport of killing game with the gun.' 名詞が形容詞の働きをする例。

³ affirm: to make a statement and stand to it; to maintain or assert strongly, to declare or state positively, to aver. 強く主張する、断言する。

⁴ in her (or his, its, etc.) wisdom: (now usually ironic) thinking it would be best. それを最善と心得て (実はそうではないのに、という含み)。ここでは、Cathy が最善と考えていったことを、Nelly は 'thoughtless' (浅はかな) と評している。

⁵ instance: to cite as an instance or example; to mention in illustration..

⁶ out: disclosed, made known, no longer a secret.

⁷ relation: a (or one's) narrative, account, statement.

‘My papa scorns yours!’ cried Linton. ‘He calls him a sneaking¹ fool!’

‘Yours is a wicked man,’ retorted Catherine, ‘and you are very naughty to dare to repeat what he says—He must be wicked to have made Aunt Isabella leave him as she did!’

‘She didn't leave him,’ said the boy: ‘You shan't contradict² me!’

‘She did!’ cried my young lady.

‘Well, I'll tell *you* something!’ said Linton. ‘Your mother hated your father, now then³.’

‘Oh!’ exclaimed Catherine, too enraged to continue.

‘And she loved mine,’ added he.

‘You little liar! I hate you now!’ she panted, and her face grew red with passion.

‘She did! she did!’ sang Linton, sinking into the recess of his chair, and leaning⁴ back his head to enjoy the agitation of the other disputant⁵, who stood behind.

‘Hush, Master Heathcliff!’ I said. ‘That's your father's tale⁶ too, I suppose.’

‘It isn't—you hold your tongue!’ he answered. ‘She did! she did, Catherine! She did! she did!’

Cathy, beside herself⁷, gave the chair a violent push, and caused him to fall against one arm⁸. He was immediately seized by a suffocating cough that soon ended his triumph.

It lasted so long, that it frightened even me. As to his cousin, she wept with all her might⁹, aghast¹ at the mischief she had done, though she said nothing.

¹ sneaking: mean, contemptible.

² contradict: to deny the words or statement of (a person).

³ now then: さあ、どうだ。(p. 150 注 1, p. 276 注 4 参照)

⁴ lean: to bend or incline in a particular direction (usually indicated by an adv. or advb. phr.).
ここは ‘back’ だから、頭を後ろ(たぶん後ろ斜め)にそらして Catherine を見た。

⁵ disputant: one who disputes or argues; esp. a public debater or controversialist.

⁶ tale: a mere story, as opposed to a narrative of fact; a fiction, an idle tale; a falsehood. 作り話。

⁷ beside oneself: out of one's wits, out of one's senses. 度を失って、われを忘れて。

⁸ arm: one of the two rails or projecting supports at the sides of a chair, sofa, etc., on which the arms of one who is using it may rest. 椅子のひじ掛け。

⁹ with all one's might: with all one's powers; to the utmost of one's ability. 全力で、精一杯。

I held him, till the fit exhausted² itself. Then he thrust me away; and leant his head down, silently—Catherine quelled³ her lamentations also, took a seat opposite, and looked solemnly⁴ into the fire.

‘How do you feel now, Master Heathcliff?’ I inquired, after waiting ten minutes.

‘I wish *she* felt as I do,’ he replied, ‘spiteful, cruel thing! Hareton never touches me; he never struck me in his life—And I was better to-day—and there—’ his voice died in a whimper⁵.

‘*I* didn’t strike you!’ muttered Cathy, chewing her lip to prevent another burst of emotion.

He sighed and moaned like one under great suffering; and kept it up for a quarter of an hour, on purpose⁶ to distress his cousin, apparently⁷, for whenever he caught a stifled⁸ sob from her, he put renewed pain and pathos⁹ into the inflexions¹⁰ of his voice.

‘I’m sorry I hurt you, Linton!’ she said at length, racked¹¹ beyond endurance. ‘But *I* couldn’t have been hurt by that little push; and I had no idea that you could either—you’re not much¹², are you, Linton? Don’t let me go home, thinking I’ve done you harm!’¹³

¹ aghast: affrighted, frightened, terrified.; (esp. in mod. usage) seized with the visible or physical signs of terror or horror; struck with amazement.

² exhaust: to use up completely (either a material or immaterial thing); to expend the whole of; to consume entirely. ここは ‘exhaust itself’ だから、(発作が) すっかり治まること。

³ quell: to destroy, put an end to, suppress, extinguish, etc. (a thing or state of things, esp. a bad or disagreeable one, a feeling, disposition, etc.).

⁴ solemnly: gravely, seriously. 思いつめた (深刻そうな) 顔をして。

⁵ whimper: a feeble, broken cry, as of a child about to burst into tears; a fretful cry expressive of complaint or grief. しくしくという泣き声。

⁶ on purpose: by design, as opposed to chance or accident; purposely, designedly, intentionally. わざと。(p. 320 注 10 参照)

⁷ apparently: **a.** clearly, plainly. **b.** so far as one can judge; seemingly. ここは **a** と取れぬこともないが、やはり **b** であろう。つまり ‘for ...’ 以下の理由に基づいて判断するかぎり、ということ。ややまぎらわしい副詞だが、本書中ではこれまですべて **b** の意味で使われている。(p. 115 注 2, p. 140 注 14, p. 231 注 3 参照)

⁸ stifled: suffocated, smothered, suppressed.

⁹ pathos: that quality in speech, writing, music, or artistic representation (or transf. in events, circumstances, persons, etc.) which excites a feeling of pity or sadness

¹⁰ inflexion: (= inflection) modulation of the voice; in speaking or singing: a change in the pitch or tone of the voice. 声の高さや調子の変化、抑揚。

¹¹ rack: to inflict mental pain or torture on (a person); to torture, distract, lacerate (the mind, soul, etc.). ‘rack’ は木枠の両端のローラーに人の手足を縛りつけ、ローラーを回して関節を引っばるという拷問具。(p. 200 注 1)

¹² much: much hurt.

¹³ Don’t ... harm!: あなたをひどい目に会わせたと考えたままでは家に帰りたくないわ。

answer, speak to me.'

'I can't speak to you,' he murmured. 'You've hurt me so, that I shall lie awake all night, choking with this cough! If you had it you'd know what it was—but *you'll* be comfortably asleep, while I'm in agony—and nobody near me! I wonder how you would like to pass those fearful nights!' And he began to wail¹ aloud² for very pity of himself.

'Since you are in the habit of passing dreadful nights,' I said, 'it won't be Miss who spoils your ease; you'd be the same, had she never come³—However, she shall not disturb you⁴, again—and perhaps you'll get quieter when we leave you.'

'Must I go?' asked Catherine dolefully, bending over him. 'Do you want me to go, Linton?'

'You can't alter what you've done,' he replied pettishly, shrinking from her, 'unless you alter it for the worse, by teasing me into a fever.'

'Well, then, I must go?' she repeated.

'Let me alone, at least,' said he. 'I can't bear your talking!'

She lingered, and resisted my persuasions⁵ to departure, a tiresome while, but as he neither looked up, nor spoke, she finally made a movement to the door, and I followed.

We were recalled by a scream—Linton had slid from his seat on to the hearthstone, and lay writhing in the mere perverseness of an indulged plague⁶ of a child, determined to be as grievous and harassing as it can.

I thoroughly gauged⁷ his disposition from his behaviour, and saw at once it would be

¹ wail: (often with reference to funeral lamentations) to express pain or sorrow by prolonged piteous cries. 慟哭する、泣き叫ぶ。

² aloud: (arch.) in a loud voice; with great noise; loudly. ここは明らかにこちらの意味だが、本書中では現在ふつうである「声に出して」の意味でも使われている。(p.54 注 14、p. 255 注 6、p. 310 注 2 参照)

³ had she never come: = if she never come.

⁴ she shall not disturb you: Cathy の意志ではなく、Nelly がそう取りはからうということ。

⁵ persuasion: the addressing of reasonings, appeals, or entreaties to a person in order to induce him to do or believe something. いって聞かせること、説得。

⁶ plague: anything causing trouble, annoyance, or vexation; a nuisance. 疫病神のようなこども。'an angel of a woman' (天使のような女) に類する表現。ここでは、この種のこどもはみなそうだが、という含みがある。(ここの 'of' は頻出するが、p. 85 注 3 参照)

⁷ gauge: to 'take the measure' of (a person, his character, etc.).

folly to attempt humouring him. Not so my companion, she ran back in terror, knelt down, and cried, and soothed, and entreated, till he grew quiet from lack of breath, by no means¹ from compunction² at distressing her.

‘I shall lift him on to the settle,’ I said, ‘and he may roll about as he pleases; we can’t stop to watch him³—I hope you are satisfied, Miss Cathy, that *you* are not the person to benefit⁴ him, and that his condition of health is not occasioned⁵ by attachment⁶ to you. Now then, there he is!⁷ Come away, as soon as he knows there is nobody by to care for his nonsense, he’ll be glad to lie still!’

She placed a cushion under his head, and offered him some water; he rejected the latter, and tossed⁸ uneasily on the former, as if it were a stone, or a block of wood.

She tried to put it more comfortably.

‘I can’t do with⁹ that,’ he said; ‘it’s not high enough!’

Catherine brought another to lay above it.

‘That’s *too* high,’ murmured the provoking¹⁰ thing.

‘How must I arrange it, then?’ she asked despairingly¹¹.

He twined¹² himself up to her, as she half knelt by the settle, and converted her shoulder into a support.

¹ by no means: in no way, not at all.

² compunction: pricking or stinging of the conscience or heart; regret or uneasiness of mind consequent on sin or wrong-doing; remorse, contrition. 良心の呵責、後悔の念。

³ stop to watch him: stop (= stay) and watch him.

⁴ benefit: to do good to, to be of advantage or profit to; to improve, help forward. ~のためになる。

⁵ occasion: to be the occasion or cause of (something); to give ground for, give rise to, cause, bring about, esp. in an incidental or subsidiary manner. (p. 58 注 10、p. 209 注 1 参照)

⁶ attachment: the fact or condition of being attached by sympathy; affection, devotion, fidelity. ここでは「恋慕、恋着」。

⁷ Now then, there he is!: ここでは (Linton を長椅子に寝かせたので、満足げに)「ほうら、坊ちゃんはこちらでよし」というほどの意味。(p. 150 注 1、p. 276 注 4、p. 338 注 3 参照)

⁸ toss: to fling or jerk oneself about; to move about restlessly. 落ち着きなく体をさかんに動かす。

⁹ do with: to get on with, put up with, manage with. ~で我慢する、間に合わせる。

¹⁰ provoking: causing anger or irritation; exasperating, irritating. 腹立たしい、しゃくにさわる。

¹¹ despairingly: in a despairing manner; hopelessly. ここでは、どうしようもなくなって。

¹² twine: to cause (one thing) to encircle or embrace another. ここでは、抱きついて枕がわりに肩に頭を乗せたのである。何本かの糸を撚り合わせて一本の紐にするのが ‘twine’ の第一義。

‘No, that won't do!’ I said. ‘You'll be content with the cushion, Master Heathcliff! Miss has wasted too much time on¹ you, already; we cannot remain five minutes longer.’

‘Yes, yes; we can!’ replied Cathy. ‘He's good and patient now—He's beginning to think I shall have far greater misery than he will, to-night, if I believe he is the worse for my visit; and then, I dare not come again.—Tell the truth about it, Linton—for I mustn't come, if I have hurt you.’

‘You must come², to cure me,’ he answered. ‘You ought to come, because you have hurt me—You know you have, extremely! I was not as ill, when you entered, as I am at present—was I?’

‘But you've made yourself ill by crying, and being in a passion³. I didn't do it all,’ said his cousin. ‘However, we'll be friends now. And you want me—you would wish to see me sometimes, really?’

‘I told you, I did!’ he replied impatiently. ‘Sit on the settle and let me lean on your knee—That's as mamma used to do, whole afternoons together—Sit quite still, and don't talk, but you may sing a song, if you can sing, or you may say a nice long interesting ballad⁴—one of those you promised to teach me, or a story—I'd rather have a ballad, though: begin.’

Catherine repeated the longest she could remember. The employment pleased both mightily. Linton would have another, and after that another, notwithstanding my strenuous⁵ objections; and so, they went on, until the clock struck twelve, and we heard Hareton in the court, returning for his dinner.

‘And to-morrow, Catherine—will you be here tomorrow?’ asked young Heathcliff, holding her frock, as she rose reluctantly.

‘No!’ I answered, ‘nor next day neither.’ She, however, gave a different response,

¹ on: indicating the person or thing to which action, feeling, etc. is directed, or that is affected by it. 多くの動詞とともに用いられ、動作の対象・感情の向け先たる人やものを示す。ここでは「あなたを相手（対象）にして」と考えればわかりやすい。

² ‘must come’ と ‘ought to come’: ‘must come’ は「(ぼくを治すというなら、来なければ治せないから、必要上) 来なければいけない」、‘ought to come’ は「(ぼくをこんなにした責任がある以上、義務として) 来てあたりまえだ」。つまり前者は「必然」後者は「当然」ということになる。

³ passion: an outburst of anger or bad temper.

⁴ ballad: a light, simple song of any kind; now *spec.* a sentimental or romantic composition of two or more verses, each of which is sung to the same melody; a simple narrative poem of folk origin, composed in short stanzas and adapted for singing. 民謡とはかぎらない。

⁵ strenuous: (of action or effort) vigorous, energetic; now with stronger sense, persistently and ardently laborious.

evidently, for his forehead cleared as she stooped and whispered in his ear.

‘You won't go to-morrow, recollect, Miss!’ I commenced, when we were out of the house. ‘You are not dreaming of it, are you?’

She smiled.

‘Oh, I'll take good care,’ I continued. ‘I'll have that lock mended, and you can escape by no way else.’

‘I can get over the wall,’ she said, laughing. ‘The Grange is not a prison, Ellen, and you are not my jailer¹. And besides, I'm almost seventeen; I'm a woman—and I'm certain Linton would recover quickly if he had me to look after him—I'm older than he is, you know, and wiser, less childish, am I not? And he'll soon do as I direct him with some slight coaxing²—He's a pretty little darling when he's good. I'd make such a pet of³ him, if he were mine—We should never quarrel, should we, after we were used to each other? Don't you like him, Ellen?’

‘Like him!’ I exclaimed. ‘The worst-tempered bit of a sickly slip⁴ that ever struggled into its teens!⁵ Happily, as Mr Heathcliff conjectured, he'll not win⁶ twenty! I doubt whether he'll see spring, indeed—and small loss to his family whenever he drops off⁷; and lucky it is for us that his father took him—The kinder he was treated, the more tedious⁸ and selfish he'd be! I'm glad you have no chance of having him for a husband, Miss Catherine!’

My companion waxed serious at hearing this speech—To speak of his death so regardlessly⁹ wounded her feelings.

‘He's younger than I,’ she answered, after a protracted pause of meditation, ‘and he ought to live the longest, he will—he must live as long as I do. He's as strong now as when he first came into the North, I'm positive of that! It's only a cold that ails him, the

¹ jailer: one who has charge of a jail or of the prisoners in it; a jail-keeper. 牢番。

² coax: to persuade or influence a person by gentle urging or flattery.

³ make a pet of: to treat as a pet; to indulge; to fondle.

⁴ slip: a young person of either sex, esp. one of small or slender build.

⁵ struggled into its teens: やつとのことで十代までたどりついた (生き延びた)。 *struggle*: to make progress with difficulty *to, into, out of* (a place, a condition)

⁶ win: to reach, attain, arrive at.

⁷ drop off: to die. ‘whenever he drops off’ いつ死んでも。

⁸ tedious: (obs. exc. dial.) wearisome in general; annoying, irksome, troublesome, disagreeable.

⁹ regardlessly: in a regardless (heedless, indifferent, careless) manner. 無遠慮に。

same as papa has — You say papa will get better, and why shouldn't he?

'Well, well,' I cried, 'after all, we needn't trouble ourselves; for listen, Miss, and mind, I'll keep my word—if you attempt going to Wuthering Heights again, with, or without me, I shall inform Mr Linton, and unless he allow it, the intimacy with your cousin must not be revived.'

'It has been revived!' muttered Cathy sulkily¹.

'Must not be continued, then!' I said.

'We'll see!'² was her reply; and she set off at a gallop, leaving me to toil³ in the rear⁴.

We both reached home before our dinner-time; my master supposed we had been wandering through the park, and therefore, he demanded no explanation of our absence. As soon as I entered, I hastened to change my soaked shoes, and stockings; but sitting such a while at the Heights had done the mischief⁵. On the succeeding morning, I was laid up⁶; and during three weeks I remained incapacitated⁷ for attending to my duties—a calamity never experienced prior to that period, and never, I am thankful to say, since.

My little mistress behaved like an angel in coming to wait on me and cheer my solitude: the confinement brought me exceedingly low⁸—It is wearisome to a stirring⁹, active body—but few have slighter reasons for complaint than I had¹⁰. The moment Catherine left Mr Linton's room she appeared at my bed-side. Her day was divided between us¹¹; no amusement usurped¹² a minute: she neglected her meals, her studies, and her play; and she was the fondest nurse that ever watched: she must have had a warm heart, when she

¹ sulkily: in a sulky manner; with silent or moody ill-humour.

² We'll see!: (We shall see.) 今にわかるわ。 *see*: (chiefly in the future tense), to find, come to know in the course of events.

³ toil: to move or advance toilsomely or with struggling and labour. ここは、やっとの思いでついていく。

⁴ in the rear: at or from the back, behind. うしろを、うしろから。

⁵ mischief: harm or evil considered as the work of an agent or due to a particular cause. ここは嵐が丘に長居したことが災いとなりました。

⁶ be laid up: to be (taken) ill, to keep one's bed.

⁷ incapacitate: to deprive of capacity; to render incapable; to disqualify, unfit.

⁸ bring low: to bring into a low condition, with respect to health, strength, wealth or outward circumstances.

⁹ stirring: moving briskly, active, lively, agile; actively occupied, busy, bustling.

¹⁰ few have ... had: とても文句をいえる筋合いではありませんでした。

¹¹ us: Mr Linton and me. 'was divided between us' は、(一日が) 二人に分配されていたということだが、一日中二人にかかりきりだった、でいいだろう。

¹² usurp: to use without authority or right; employ wrongfully.

loved her father so, to give so much to me!¹

I said her days were divided between us; but the master retired early, and I generally needed nothing after six o'clock, thus the evening was her own.

Poor thing², I never considered what she did with herself after tea. And though frequently, when she looked in to bid me good night, I remarked a fresh colour in her cheeks, and a pinkness over her slender fingers; instead of fancying the hue borrowed³ from a cold ride across the moors, I laid⁴ it to the charge⁵ of a hot fire in the library.

¹ she must ... to me!: あれほどお父様を愛しているのに、この私にもそこまでしてくださるとは...ということ。

² Poor thing: Catherine を指す。

³ borrow: to make temporary use of (something not one's own); used, e.g. of temporal possessions, with notion of their being only *lent* to us, not given. 本来自分のものでないものを一時的に借用する。ここでは、もともと青白い肌に一時的に赤みがさしたことをいう。

⁴ lay: to impute, attribute, ascribe (something objectionable).

⁵ charge: the duty or responsibility of taking care of (a person or thing). Nelly は自分が寝込んでいたため、Cathy みずから書斎の暖炉に石炭をくべる仕事を担当したことが原因だと推定したのであろう ('a pinkness over her slender fingers' が石炭をくべたという推定の根拠になる)。結果的には間近で暖炉の熱い火にあたったせいになるが、火に「責任」があるわけではなく、'charge' はあくまでも「人が他人やものに負うべき責任」。

Chapter X (XXIV)

At the close of three weeks, I was able to quit my chamber, and move about the house. And on the first occasion of my sitting up¹ in the evening, I asked Catherine to read to me, because my eyes were weak. We were in the library, the master having gone to bed: she consented, rather unwillingly, I fancied; and imagining my sort of books did not suit her, I bid her please herself² in the choice of what she perused³.

She selected one of her own favourites, and got forward steadily about an hour; then came frequent questions.

‘Ellen, are not you tired? Hadn't you better lie down now? You'll be sick, keeping up⁴ so long, Ellen.’

‘No, no, dear, I'm not tired,’ I returned, continually.

Perceiving me immovable, she essayed⁵ another method of showing her dis-relish⁶ for her occupation. It changed to yawning⁷, and stretching⁸, and—

‘Ellen, I'm tired.’

‘Give over then and talk,’ I answered.

That was worse; she fretted⁹ and sighed, and looked at her watch till eight; and finally went to her room, completely overdone¹⁰ with sleep, judging by her peevish, heavy¹¹ look,

¹ sit up: **a.** to raise the body from a recumbent to a sitting posture (体を起こす); **b.** to defer the hour for retiring to bed until late. (遅くまで起きている) ここではすでに動き回れるほど回復していたのだから **b.** なお ‘evening: the close of the day; usually, the time from about sunset till bedtime.’ (ふつう日没から就寝時まで) だから「晩」が適当 (‘she ... looked at her watch till eight’).

² please oneself: (colloq.) to do as one likes, take one's own way.

³ (loosely) to read. (p. 40 注 2, p. 207 注 1, p. 320 注 7 参照)

⁴ keep up: to remain out of bed.

⁵ essay: [ɛsɛɪ] to attempt; to try to do, effect, accomplish, or make (anything difficult)

⁶ dis-relish: (= disrelish) distaste, dislike, aversion, some degree of disgust.

⁷ yawn: to make involuntarily a prolonged inspiration with the mouth wide open and the lower jaw much depressed, as from drowsiness or fatigue. あくびする。

⁸ stretch: to straighten the body and extend the arms, as a manifestation of weariness or languor (chiefly coupled with *yawn*). (だるくなって、あくびをしながら) 体と両手を伸ばす。

⁹ fret: to distress oneself with constant thoughts of regret or discontent; to vex oneself, chafe, worry. じれる、いらいらする、やきもきする。 (p. 180 注 2, p. 327 注 10 参照)

¹⁰ overdo: to overtax the strength of; to fatigue, exhaust, overcome.

¹¹ heavy: overcome or dulled with weariness; drowsy, sleepy. 疲れてぼんやりした、眠そうな。

and the constant rubbing she inflicted¹ on her eyes.

The following night she seemed more impatient still²; and on the third from recovering my company³, she complained of a head-ache, and left me.

I thought her conduct odd; and having remained alone a long while, I resolved on going, and inquiring whether she were better, and asking her to come and lie on the sofa, instead of upstairs, in the dark.

No Catherine could I discover upstairs, and none below. The servants affirmed they had not seen her. I listened at Mr Edgar's door—all was silence. I returned to her apartment, extinguished my candle, and seated myself in the window.

The moon shone bright; a sprinkling of snow covered the ground, and I reflected that she might, possibly, have taken it into her head to walk about the garden, for refreshment. I did detect a figure creeping along the inner fence of the park; but it was not my young mistress; on its merging⁴ into the light, I recognized one of the grooms.

He stood a considerable period, viewing the carriage-road through the grounds; then started off at a brisk pace, as if he had detected something, and reappeared, presently, leading Miss's pony; and there she was, just dismounted, and walking by its side.

The man took his charge⁵ stealthily across the grass towards the stable. Cathy entered by the casement-window⁶ of the drawing-room, and glided⁷ noiselessly up to where I awaited her.

She put the door gently to⁸, slipped off her snowy shoes, untied her hat, and was

¹ inflict: to lay on as a stroke, blow, or wound; to impose as something that must be suffered or endured. (打撃や傷などを、ここでは摩擦を) 加える、与える。

² still: in a further degree. (p. 274 注 11 参照)

³ on the third from recovering my company: on the third night from *her* recovering my company ということ。

⁴ merge: to sink and disappear, to be swallowed up and lost to view, lose character or identity by absorption into something else (*in, into*). なにかに吸収されてもとの姿を失う。ここでは「ここでは月明かりといっしょになってもとの姿が変わる」こと。

⁵ his charge: Miss's pony. 'charge' については、p. 269 注 13 参照。

⁶ casement-window: a window with a frame or sash opening on hinges attached to the upright side of the frame. 開き窓。

⁷ glide: to go unperceived, quietly, or stealthily; to insinuate oneself, steal, 'slip' *into, out of* a place. こっそりと (音を立てずに) 進む (入る、出るなど)。

⁸ put to: (now arch. and dial.) to shut.

proceeding, unconscious of my espionage¹, to lay aside² her mantle, when I suddenly rose and revealed myself. The surprise petrified³ her an instant; she uttered an inarticulate⁴ exclamation, and stood fixed.

‘My dear Miss Catherine,’ I began, too vividly impressed by her recent kindness to break into⁵ a scold, ‘where have you been riding out at this hour? And why should you try to deceive me, by telling a tale⁶? Where have you been? Speak!’

‘To the bottom of the park,’ she stammered. ‘I didn’t tell a tale.’

‘And nowhere else?’ I demanded.

‘No,’ was the muttered reply.

‘Oh, Catherine!’ I cried sorrowfully. ‘You know you have been doing wrong, or you wouldn’t be driven⁷ to uttering an untruth to me. That does grieve me. I’d rather be three months ill, than hear you frame⁸ a deliberate lie.’

She sprang forward, and bursting into tears, threw her arms round my neck.

‘Well, Ellen, I’m so afraid of you being angry,’ she said. ‘Promise not to be angry, and you shall know the very truth. I hate to hide it.’

We sat down in the window-seat. I assured her I would not scold, whatever her secret might be, and I guessed it, of course; so she commenced—

‘I’ve been to Wuthering Heights, Ellen, and I’ve never missed going a day since you fell

¹ espionage: [éspiəndʒ, -nɪdʒ] the practice of playing the spy, or of employing spies. スパイ行為、偵察。

² lay aside: to put away from one’s person (as a garment, weapon, or the like); to put on one side..

³ petrify: *fig.* to change as if into stone; to make motionless or rigid with astonishment, horror, or the like; to paralyse, stupefy, strike dumb, confound.

⁴ inarticulate: (of sound or voice) not consisting of distinct parts having each a definite meaning; indistinctly pronounced. なにをいっているのかわからない。

⁵ break into: to proceed or pass into or turn to with or as if with a sudden throwing off of restraint. いきなり (こらえきれずに) ~しはじめる。

⁶ tale: a mere story, as opposed to a narrative of fact; a fiction; a falsehood. 作り話、うそ。(p. 338 注 6 参照)

⁷ drive: to force, compel (*to* or *into* some action, *to do* something; also, *from* a course of action, etc.). ‘be driven to uttering an untruth’ は、うそをつく羽目になる。

⁸ frame: to contrive (a plot, etc.); to devise, invent, fabricate (a rule, story, theory, etc.) (p. 165 注 9 参照)。

ill; except thrice before, and twice after you left your room. I gave Michael books and pictures to prepare Minny every evening, and to put her back in the stable; you mustn't scold *him* either, mind. I was at the Heights by half-past six, and generally stayed till half-past eight, and then galloped home. It was not to amuse myself that I went; I was often wretched¹ all the time. Now and then, I was happy, once in a week perhaps. At first, I expected there would be sad work persuading you to let me keep my word to Linton, for I had engaged² to call again next day, when we quitted him; but, as you stayed upstairs on the morrow, I escaped that trouble; and while Michael was refastening the lock of the park door in the afternoon, I got possession of the key, and told him how my cousin wished me to visit him, because he was sick, and couldn't come to the Grange; and how papa would object³ to my going. And then I negotiated⁴ with him about the pony. He is fond of reading, and he thinks of leaving soon to get married, so he offered, if I would lend him books out of the library, to do what I wished; but I preferred giving him my own, and that satisfied him better.

'On my second visit, Linton seemed in lively spirits; and Zillah, that is their housekeeper, made⁵ us a clean room, and a good fire, and told us that as Joseph was out at a prayer-meeting, and Hareton Earnshaw was off with his dogs, robbing⁶ our woods of pheasants, as I heard afterwards, we might do what we liked.

'She brought me some warm wine and gingerbread⁷; and appeared exceedingly good-natured; and Linton sat in the arm-chair, and I in the little rocking-chair, on the hearthstone, and we laughed and talked so merrily, and found so much to say; we planned where we would go, and what we would do in summer. I needn't repeat that, because you would call it silly.

'One time, however, we were near quarrelling. He said the pleasantest manner of spending a hot July day was lying from morning till evening on a bank of heath in the middle of the moors, with the bees humming dreamily about among the bloom⁸, and the

¹ wretched: sunk in distress or dejection; very miserable or unhappy.

² engage: to pledge oneself. 確約する。

³ object: to bring forward a reason against; to state, and maintain by argument, one's disagreement with or disapproval of; (now usually in weakened sense) to express, or merely to feel, disapproval of; to have an objection to, disapprove of, dislike (*to, against*). (現在ではもともとの意味が弱まり、ふつう) 不満を示す、賛成しない、ほどの意味。

⁴ negotiate: to hold communication or conference (*with* another) for the purpose of arranging some matter by mutual agreement. (人と) 話し合ってなにかを取り決める。

⁵ make: to prepare.

⁶ rob: to plunder, pillage, rifle (a place, house, etc.) *of* that which is taken. 「rob+場所+of+取られるもの」のかたちで、どこどこからなにを奪い取る、盗む。

⁷ gingerbread: a kind of plain cake, compounded with treacle, and highly flavoured with ginger. ショウガ風味のケーキ。かつては人や動物、アルファベットの文字をかたどって作られたという。

⁸ bloom: the blossom or flower of a plant; (collect.) blossom, flowers, florescence.

larks singing high up over head, and the blue sky, and bright sun shining steadily¹ and cloudlessly. That was his most perfect idea of heaven's happiness—mine was rocking in a rustling green tree, with a west wind blowing, and bright, white clouds flitting rapidly above; and not only larks, but throistles², and blackbirds, and linnets, and cuckoos pouring out music on every side, and the moors seen at a distance, broken into cool dusky dells, but close by great swells³ of long grass undulating⁴ in waves to the breeze⁵; and woods and sounding water, and the whole world awake and wild with joy. He wanted all to lie⁶ in an ecstasy of peace; I wanted all to sparkle, and dance in a glorious jubilee⁷.

'I said his heaven would be only half alive, and he said mine would be drunk; I said I should fall asleep in his, and he said he could not breathe in mine, and began to grow very snappish⁸. At last, we agreed to try both as soon as the right weather came; and then we kissed each other and were friends. After sitting still an hour, I looked at the great room with its smooth, uncarpeted floor; and thought how nice it would be to play in, if we removed the table; and I asked Linton to call Zillah in to help us—and we'd have a game at blind-man's buff⁹—she should try to catch us—you used to, you know, Ellen. He wouldn't; there was no pleasure in it, he said; but he consented to play at ball with me. We found two, in a cupboard, among a heap of old toys; tops¹⁰, and hoops¹¹, and battledores¹², and shuttlecocks. One was marked C., and the other H.; I wished to have the C., because that

¹ steadily: in a steady manner; firmly, unwaveringly, steadfastly, uniformly, etc. ここでは、(日が) 陰ることなく。

² throistle: (now only literary and dial.) a thrush; esp. the song-thrush or mavis. ツグミ、特にウタツグミ。'blackbird' はクロウタドリ (ツグミの仲間)、'linnet' はムネアカヒワ。

³ swell: the rising or heaving of the sea or other body of water in a succession of long rolling waves, as after a storm; *concretely*: such a wave, or, more usually, such waves collectively. ここでは草原を海に、揺れ動く草を大波 (うねり) に見立てている。

⁴ undulate: to move in, or after the manner of, waves; to have a wave-like motion. 波のように動く。

⁵ to the breeze: そよ風に吹かれて。この 'to' は 'expressing reaction or responsive action (of an involuntary or inanimate agent); the object of *to* denoting the agent causing this.' つまり 'to+動因' で、その「動因に反応して」と説明される (*OED*)。つまり動因が風なら吹かれて、光なら浴びてどうなるということ。【例】'shake to the cold night-wind' (冷たい夜風に揺れる)、'sparkle to the moonbeams' (月光を浴びてきらきら輝く) など。

⁶ lie: to be kept or remain or be in a specified, esp. concealed, state or place.

⁷ jubilee: exultant joy.

⁸ snappish: (of persons) using, or apt to use, sharp, harsh, or uncivil language; peevish, testy, or ill-natured in speech or reply. (口のきき方が) とげとげしい。

⁹ blind-man's buff: a game in which one player is blindfolded, and tries to catch and identify any one of the others, who, on their part, push him about, and make sport with him. 目隠し遊び。

¹⁰ top: a toy of various shapes (cylindrical, obconic, etc.), but always of circular section, with a point on which it is made to spin, usually by the sudden pulling of a string wound round it. コマ。

¹¹ hoop: a circle of wood or iron (orig. a barrel-hoop), which is trundled along as a plaything by children. こどもが転がして遊ぶ輪 (もとは樽のたが)。

¹² battledoor: an instrument like a small racket used in playing with a shuttlecock. 羽子板。
'battledore and shuttlecock' で羽根つき。

stood for¹ Catherine, and the H. might be for Heathcliff, his name; but the bran² came out of H., and Linton didn't like it.

'I beat him constantly; and he got cross again, and coughed, and returned to his chair: that night, though, he easily recovered his good-humour; he was charmed with two or three pretty songs — *your* songs, Ellen; and when I was obliged to go, he begged and entreated me to come the following evening, and I promised.

'Minny and I went flying home as light as air: and I dreamt of Wuthering Heights, and my sweet darling cousin, till morning.

'On the morrow, I was sad; partly because you were poorly³, and partly that I wished my father knew, and approved of my excursions: but it was beautiful moonlight after tea; and, as I rode on, the gloom cleared.

'I shall have another happy evening, I thought to myself, and what delights me more, my pretty Linton will.

'I trotted up their garden, and was turning round to the back, when that fellow Earnshaw met me, took my bridle, and bid me go in by the front entrance. He patted Minny's neck, and said she was a bonny beast, and appeared as if he wanted me to speak to him. I only told him to leave my horse alone, or else it would kick him.

'He answered in his vulgar accent.

"It wouldn't do mitch [= much] hurt if it did;" and surveyed its legs with a smile.

'I was half inclined to make it try; however, he moved off to open the door, and, as he raised the latch, he looked up to the inscription above, and said, with a stupid mixture of awkwardness⁴, and elation⁵:

¹ stand for: to represent, signify, imply. ～を表す、意味する。

² bran: the husk of wheat, barley, oats, or other grain, separated from the flour after grinding. 麦殻。ここではボールの詰め物にしていた。

³ poorly: (colloq. *always predicative*) somewhat ill; unwell, indisposed.

⁴ awkwardness: lack of composure; embarrassment. 落着きなさ、きまり悪さ。

⁵ elation: elevation of mind arising from success or self-approbation, pride of prosperity; pride, vainglory. (どんなもんだという) 得意顔。つまり決していい意味ではないが、現在ふうには 'elevation of spirits (in neutral or good sense); buoyancy, joyousness, pleasurable self-satisfaction.' (浮き浮きとした気分)。

“Miss Catherine! I can read yon, nah¹.”

“Wonderful!” I exclaimed. “Pray let us hear you²—you *are* grown clever!”

‘He spelt, and drawled over by syllables³, the name—

“Hareton Earnshaw.”

“And the figures?” I cried encouragingly, perceiving that he came to a dead halt⁴.

“I cannot tell them yet,” he answered.

“Oh, you dunce⁵!” I said, laughing heartily at his failure.

‘The fool stared, with a grin hovering⁶ about his lips, and a scowl gathering over his eyes, as if uncertain whether he might not join in my mirth; whether it were not pleasant familiarity, or what it really was⁷, contempt.

‘I settled his doubts by suddenly retrieving my gravity⁸, and desiring him to walk away, for I came to see Linton not him.

‘He reddened—I saw that by the moonlight—dropped his hand from the latch, and skulked⁹ off, a picture¹⁰ of mortified¹¹ vanity. He imagined himself to be as accomplished¹² as Linton, I suppose, because he could spell his own name, and was

¹ I can read yon, nah.: I can read that (name), now.

² let us hear you: この場にいるのは、Hareton と Cathy と馬の Minny だから、聞き手は Cathy と馬。Hareton をからかっていると取れる。

³ drawled over by syllables: 一音節ずつのろのろと読んだ。‘drawl’ については p. 157 注 1 参照。

⁴ came to a dead halt: stopped abruptly.

⁵ dunce: one who shows no capacity for learning; a dull-witted, stupid person; a dullard, blockhead. もともとは神学者・哲学者 Duns Scotus の弟子という意味から蔑称に転じ、本を読んでも勉強したのに愚かなままの者をいうので、この場面では皮肉が効いている。

⁶ hover: to continue in a state of suspense or indecision; to waver as in an indeterminate or irresolute state. いっしょに笑うべきか怒るべきか判断しかねていたのだから、笑うとも顔をしかめるともつかぬ、どっちつかずの表情だったのである。

⁷ what it really was, contempt: ほんとうのところ、つまり軽蔑。

⁸ retrieving my gravity: 真顔に戻って。

⁹ skulk: to move in a stealthy or sneaking fashion, so as to escape notice.

¹⁰ picture: a symbol, type, figure; the concrete representation of an abstraction; an illustration. ～そのもの、(～を絵に描いたらこうなるといふ) 見本。

¹¹ mortified: humiliated deeply; vexed, chagrined. ‘mortified vanity’ は、うぬぼれの鼻をへし折られた無念。

¹² accomplished: complete, perfect; esp. in acquirements, or as the result of training. (教育・訓練によって) 学問(教養・技能など)を完全に身につけた。

marvellously discomfited¹ that I didn't think the same.'

'Stop, Miss Catherine dear!' I interrupted. 'I shall not scold, but I don't like your conduct there. If you had remembered that Hareton was your cousin, as much as Master Heathcliff, you would have felt how improper it was to behave in that way. At least, it was praiseworthy² ambition, for him to desire to be as accomplished as Linton; and probably he did not learn merely to show off³; you had made him ashamed of his ignorance, before, I have no doubt; and he wished to remedy⁴ it and please you. To sneer at his imperfect attempt was very bad breeding⁵—had *you* been brought up in his circumstances, would you be less rude? He was as quick and as intelligent a child as ever you were, and I'm hurt that he should⁶ be despised now, because that base⁷ Heathcliff has treated him so unjustly.'

'Well, Ellen, you won't cry about it, will you?' she exclaimed, surprised at my earnestness. 'But wait, and you shall hear if he conned⁸ his A B C to please me; and if it were worth while being civil to the brute. I entered; Linton was lying on the settle and half got up to welcome me.'

"I'm ill to-night, Catherine, love," he said, "and you must have all the talk, and let me listen. Come and sit by me—I was sure you wouldn't break your word, and I'll make you promise again, before you go."

'I knew now⁹ that I mustn't tease him, as he was ill; and I spoke softly, and put no questions, and avoided irritating him in any way. I had brought some of my nicest books for him; he asked me to read a little of one, and I was about to comply¹⁰, when Earnshaw burst the door open, having gathered venom with reflection¹¹. He advanced direct to us;

¹ discomfit: to throw into perplexity, confusion, or dejection; to cast down utterly; to disconcert.

² praiseworthy: worthy or deserving of praise; laudable, commendable.

³ show off: to display ostentatiously. ひけらかす。

⁴ remedy: to put right, reform (a state of things); to rectify, make good.

⁵ breeding: the results of training as shown in personal manners and behaviour; generally used for 'good breeding', good or proper manners. 'bad breeding' は「無作法」。

⁶ should: この 'should' は、「It is strange," "I am surprised," "I am sorry," "I regret," "It is a (great) pity" 等に續く "should" は裏面に "should not" 「あるまじき」の意味を含む」(齋藤秀三郎『英和中辞典』)という解説が参考になるだろう。つまりあるまじきことが起こったから、奇妙だったり、驚いたり、残念がったりするわけ。「～とは妙だ(ビックリ、がっかりなど)」

⁷ base: low in the moral scale; without dignity of sentiment; reprehensibly cowardly or selfish, despicably mean. (道徳的に) 下等な、卑劣きわまる。

⁸ con: to get to know; to study or learn, esp. by repetition (mental or vocal).

⁹ now: at this time; at the time spoken of or referred to. (話の中でちょうどさしかかった時点を指して) このとき。結局「そのとき」に同じ。

¹⁰ comply: to act in accordance (*with a person's desires, requests, requirements, conditions, etc.*) (希望・要求・条件など)に従う、要求されたとおりにする。(p. 155 注 5 参照)

¹¹ having gathered venom with reflection: さきほどのことを考えて憎しみをつのらせ。

seized Linton by the arm, and swung¹ him off the seat.

“Get to thy own room!” he said, in a voice almost inarticulate with passion², and his face looked swelled and furious. “Take her there if she comes to see thee—thou shalln't keep me out of this.³ Begone wi' ye both!”

‘He swore at us, and left Linton no time to answer, nearly throwing him into the kitchen; and he clenched his fist, as I followed, seemingly longing to knock me down. I was afraid, for a moment, and I let one volume fall; he kicked it after me, and shut us out.

‘I heard a malignant, crackly⁴ laugh by the fire, and turning beheld that odious Joseph⁵, standing rubbing his bony hands, and quivering.

“Aw wer sure he'd sarve ye aht!⁶ He's a grand lad! He's gotten t'raight sperrit in him! He knows—Aye, he knows, as weel as Aw do, who sud be t' aister yonder⁷—Ech, ech, ech! He mad ye skift properly!⁸ Ech, ech, ech!”

“Where must we go?” I said to my cousin, disregarding the old wretch's mockery⁹.

‘Linton was white and trembling. He was not pretty then, Ellen, Oh no! he looked frightful! for his thin face, and large eyes were wrought into¹⁰ an expression of frantic, powerless fury. He grasped the handle of the door, and shook it—it was fastened inside.

“If you don't let me in I'll kill you! If you don't let me in I'll kill you!” he rather shrieked than said. “Devil! devil! I'll kill you, I'll kill you!”

¹ swing: to move (a body held or grasped) with an oscillating or rotatory movement. Linton は長椅子 (settle) に横になっていたから、腕をつかんでぐいと引きずり降ろした。

² passion: impassioned anger, angry feeling. 激しい怒り。

³ thou shalln't keep me out of this.: おめえたちにおれをこの部屋から閉め出させはしないぞ、つまり、ここはおめえたちの部屋じゃねえぞ、ということ。

⁴ crackly: prone to crackle; crisp and brittle. わかりにくい定義だが、短く鋭い連続音を発したこと。すぐあとに ‘Ech, ech, ech!’ とあり、日本なら「ヒッヒッヒ、ヘッヘッヘ」というところか。

⁵ turning beheld ... Joseph: 振り向いて見るとあのいやらしい Joseph がいた。

⁶ Aw wer sure he'd sarve ye aht!: I was sure he'd serve you out! (serve out: to punish, take revenge on.)

⁷ He's gotten ... yonder.: He's getting the right spirit in him! He knows—Aye, he knows, as well as I do, who should be the master yonder.

⁸ He mad ye skift properly!: He made you skift properly! (skift: *obs. exc. dial.* to undergo shifting, change, or removal; to change one's place, etc.) うめえことおめえさんたちを追っ払ったもんだて。

⁹ mockery: derision, ridicule; a derisive utterance or action.

¹⁰ work: to make, form, or fashion *into* something. ここでは、Linton のやせ細った顔と大きな目はやりきれぬ怒りそのものと化していた。

‘Joseph uttered his croaking¹ laugh again.

“‘Thear, that's t' father!” he cried. “That's father! We've allas summut uh orther side in us—Niver heed, Hareton, lad—dunnut be 'feared—he cannot get at thee!”²

‘I took hold of Linton's hands, and tried to pull him away; but he shrieked so shockingly that I dared not proceed. At last, his cries were choked by a dreadful fit of coughing; blood gushed from his mouth, and he fell on the ground.

‘I ran into the yard, sick with terror; and called for Zillah, as loud as I could. She soon heard me; she was milking the cows in a shed behind the barn, and hurrying from her work, she inquired what there was to do?³

‘I hadn't breath to explain; dragging her in, I looked about for Linton. Earnshaw had come out to examine the mischief he had caused, and he was then conveying the poor thing upstairs. Zillah and I ascended after him; but he stopped me at the top of the steps, and said I shouldn't go in, I must go home.

‘I exclaimed that he had killed Linton, and I *would* enter.

‘Joseph locked the door, and declared I should do “no sich [= such] stuff,” and asked me whether I were “bahn [= born] to be as mad as him.”

‘I stood crying, till the housekeeper re-appeared; she affirmed he would be better in a bit⁴; but he couldn't do with⁵ that shrieking, and din⁶; and she took me, and nearly carried me into the house.

‘Ellen, I was ready to tear my hair off my head!⁷ I sobbed and wept so that my eyes were almost blind; and the ruffian⁸ you have such sympathy with stood opposite;

¹ croaking: that croaks. (カラスのように) しわがれた陰気な声を出す。

² That's father! ... thee!: That's father! We've always somewhat of either side in us—Never heed, Hareton, lad—don't be afeared (= afraid)—he cannot get at thee! ありやあ父親の(血の)ほうよ! だれにもちっとは父親か母親似のところがあるもんだ。かまうこたねえぞ、へアトン。怖がることはねえ。どうせかかってくるわけじゃねえからな。

³ what there was to do: なんの騒ぎか、なにごとか。(p. 183 注 7、p. 251 注 4 参照)

⁴ bit: *colloq.* a short while; a short space of time.

⁵ do with: to put up with.

⁶ din: a loud noise; particularly a continued confused or resonant sound, which stuns or distresses the ear. (p. 64 注 4 参照)

⁷ to tear my hair off my head: (悲しみや怒りのあまり) 髪の毛をかきむしる (とは誇張表現)。

⁸ ruffian: a man of a low and brutal character; one habitually given to acts of violence or crime; a cut-throat villain.

presuming¹ every now and then to bid me “wisht²,” and denying that it was his fault; and finally, frightened by my assertions that I would tell papa, and that he should be put in prison and hanged, he commenced blubbering himself³, and hurried out to hide his cowardly agitation.

‘Still, I was not rid of him: when at length they compelled me to depart, and I had got some hundred yards off the premises⁴, he suddenly issued from the shadow of the road-side, and checked Minny and took hold of me.

“Miss Catherine, I'm ill⁵ grieved,” he began, “but it's rayther [= rather] too bad—”

‘I gave him a cut⁶ with my whip, thinking, perhaps he would murder me—He let go, thundering one of his horrid curses, and I galloped home more than half out of my senses⁷.

‘I didn't bid you good-night, that evening; and I didn't go to Wuthering Heights, the next—I wished to go, exceedingly; but I was strangely excited, and dreaded to hear that Linton was dead, sometimes; and sometimes shuddered at the thought of encountering Hareton.

‘On the third day I took courage; at least, I couldn't bear longer suspense and stole off, once more. I went at five o'clock, and walked, fancying I might manage to creep into the house and up to Linton's room, unobserved⁸. However, the dogs gave notice of my approach: Zillah received me, and saying “the lad was mending⁹ nicely,” showed me into a small, tidy, carpeted apartment, where, to my inexpressible joy, I beheld Linton laid on a little sofa, reading one of my books. But he would neither speak to me, nor look at me, through a whole hour, Ellen—He has such an unhappy¹⁰ temper—and what quite confounded me, when he did open his mouth it was to utter the falsehood, that I had occasioned¹¹ the uproar, and Hareton was not to blame!

¹ presume: to be so presumptuous as; to take the liberty; to venture, dare (*to do* something).

² wisht: hush; silent. (Yorkshire 方言) (p. 25 注 15、p. 277 注 6 参照)

³ blubber oneself: to weep effusively; to weep and sob unrestrainedly and noisily. (p. 54 注 13 参照)

⁴ premises: *pl.* a house or building with its grounds or other appurtenances.

⁵ ill: badly.

⁶ cut: a sharp stroke or blow with a whip, cane, etc.

⁷ out of one's senses: out of one's wits, insane, mad.

⁸ unobserved: without being observed. (形容詞だが副詞的に) 人に気づかれずに。

⁹ mend: to regain health; to recover from sickness.

¹⁰ unhappy: causing misfortune or trouble (to oneself or others). つまり自分や他人を不幸にするということで、廃れた語義ながら、‘(obs.) Sc. Ill-natured; bad-tempered.’ (ひねくれた、気むずかしい) に近いと思う。‘He'll never let his friends be at ease... (p. 358)’ を参照のこと。

¹¹ occasion: to be the occasion or cause of (something); to give ground for, give rise to, cause, bring about, esp. in an incidental or subsidiary manner. ～を引き起こす。 (p. 58 注 10、p. 209 注 1、p. 341 注 5 参照)

‘Unable to reply, except¹ passionately, I got up and walked from the room. He sent² after me a faint “Catherine!” He did not reckon on being answered so³—but I wouldn’t turn back; and the morrow was the second day on which I stayed at home, nearly determined to visit him no more.

‘But it was so miserable going to bed, and getting up, and never hearing anything about him, that my resolution melted into air, before it was properly formed. It *had* appeared wrong to take the journey once; now it seemed wrong to refrain⁴. Michael came to ask if he must saddle Minny; I said “Yes,” and considered myself doing a duty as she bore⁵ me over the hills.

‘I was forced to pass the front windows to get to the court; it was no use trying to conceal my presence.

“Young master is in the house⁶,” said Zillah, as she saw me making for the parlour.

‘I went in; Earnshaw was there also, but he quitted the room directly. Linton sat in the great arm chair half asleep; walking up to the fire, I began in a serious tone, partly meaning it to be true⁷.

“As you don’t like me, Linton, and as you think I come on purpose to hurt you, and pretend that I do so every time, this is our last meeting—let us say good-bye; and tell Mr Heathcliff that you have no wish to see me, and that he mustn’t invent any more falsehoods on the subject.”

“Sit down and take your hat off, Catherine,” he answered. “You are so much happier than I am, you ought to be better⁸. Papa talks enough of my defects, and shows enough scorn of me, to make it natural I should doubt myself—I doubt whether I am not

¹ except: *conj.* otherwise than. ‘unable to reply, except passionately’ は、激しい口調以外では返事ができなかったのも、つまり、返事をすればどうしてもきついいいかたになってしまうので。

² send: to give forth or out (sound); to utter (a cry, groan, etc.). (音・声) を発する。

³ He did ... so: そんな反応（呼ばれて振り向きもしなかったこと）が返ってくるとは思ってもいなかった。 *reckon on*: to count, depend, or rely on or upon. ここでは、期待する。

⁴ refrain: to abstain, forbear.

⁵ bear: to support the weight of (anything) whilst moving it from one place to another; to carry. Now usually restricted in prose to the carrying of something weighty or which requires an effort. (重いものを支えて) 運ぶ。日本語なら、「ミニーに乗って丘を越す」とでもいうところ。

⁶ the house: the family sitting-room. すでに何度も登場しているが、またここで念を押しておく。Linton が parlour にはいないから Zillah はわざわざそういったのである。

⁷ partly meaning it to be true: いくぶんは本気で。

⁸ better: (of persons) kinder, more beneficent.

altogether¹ as worthless as he calls me frequently; and then I feel so cross and bitter, I hate everybody! I *am* worthless, and bad in temper, and bad in spirit, almost always—and if you choose you *may* say good-bye; you'll get rid of an annoyance²—Only, Catherine, do me this justice³; believe that if I might be as sweet, and as kind, and as good as you are, I would be, as willingly, and more so, than as happy and as healthy.⁴ And, believe that your kindness has made me love you deeper than if I deserved your love⁵, and though I couldn't, and cannot help showing my nature to you, I regret it, and repent it, and shall regret, and repent it, till I die!”

‘I felt he spoke the truth; and I felt I must forgive him; and though he should quarrel the next moment, I must forgive him again⁶. We were reconciled⁷, but we cried, both of us, the whole time I stayed. Not entirely for sorrow, yet I *was* sorry Linton had that distorted nature. He'll never let his friends be at ease, and he'll never be at ease himself!

‘I have always gone to his little parlour since that night; because his father returned the day after. About three times, I think, we have been merry, and hopeful, as we were the first evening; the rest of my visits were dreary and troubled—now, with his selfishness and spite; and now with his sufferings; but I've learned to endure the former with nearly as little resentment⁸ as the latter.

Mr Heathcliff purposely⁹ avoids me. I have hardly seen him at all. Last Sunday, indeed, coming earlier than usual, I heard him abusing poor Linton, cruelly, for his conduct of the night before. I can't tell how he knew of it, unless he listened. Linton had

¹ not altogether: まったく～というわけではない。いわゆる部分否定。その否定が ‘doubt’ (～ではなさそうだと思う) で疑問視され、結局ここは「よく父がいうとおりのだめな人間なんじゃないかと思う」。

² get rid of an annoyance: やっかい払いする。annoyance: anything annoying or causing trouble, a nuisance. (やっかいのもと)

³ do me this justice: この点は正当に評価してほしい、つまり、これだけは認めてほしい。

⁴ I would ... healthy: ちょっとややこしいが、‘as sweet, and as kind, and as good as you are’ を *A* とし、‘as happy and as healthy (as you are)’ を *B* とすれば、‘I would be *A*, as willingly (as) *B*, and (I would be) more so (= *A*), than *B*’ となろう。つまり「なれるものなら健康にもなりたいが、それ以上に優しい人間になりたいんだ」ということ。willingly: wishfully, eagerly.

⁵ deeper than if I deserved your love: 「君に愛される値打ちがあるとした場合 (に君を愛する) よりも深く」とは、結局「君に愛されるだけの値打ちもないのに (君を深く愛してしまった)」。

⁶ though he should ... again: (この場面ではさすがの Linton もそんなことはしないだろうが) 万一すぐにまた口論をふっかけてくるとしても赦さなくてはいけない (と思った)。though = even if; even supposing that. なおこの文章は仮定法過去 (発話時における現在・未来のことについての仮定) なので、間接話法中でも時制はそのまま変らない。

⁷ reconcile: to bring (a person) again into friendly relations to or with (oneself or another) after an estrangement. 仲直り (和解) させる。

⁸ resentment: the feeling of displeasure or indignation at some act, remark, person, etc.. regarded as causing injury or insult. 不愉快な、または腹立たしい気持。

⁹ purposely: on purpose; by design; designedly; intentionally; deliberately.

certainly behaved provokingly¹; however, it was the business² of nobody but me; and I interrupted Mr Heathcliff's lecture³, by entering, and telling him so. He burst into a laugh, and went away, saying he was glad I took that view of the matter⁴. Since then, I've told Linton he must whisper his bitter⁵ things.

'Now, Ellen, you have heard all; and I can't be prevented from going to Wuthering Heights, except by inflicting misery on two people⁶—whereas, if you'll only not tell papa, my going need disturb the tranquillity of none. You'll not tell, will you? It will be very heartless if you do.'

'I'll make up my mind on that point by to-morrow, Miss Catherine,' I replied. 'It requires some study; and so I'll leave you to your rest, and go think⁷ it over.'

I thought it over aloud, in my master's presence; walking straight from her room to his, and relating the whole story, with the exception of her conversations with her cousin, and any mention of Hareton.

Mr Linton was alarmed⁸ and distressed, more than he would acknowledge to me. In the morning, Catherine learned my betrayal of her confidence, and she learned also that her secret visits were to end.

In vain she wept and writhed⁹ against¹⁰ the interdict¹¹; and implored her father to have pity on Linton: all she got to comfort her was a promise that he would write, and give him leave to come to the Grange when he pleased; but explaining that he must no longer expect to see Catherine at Wuthering Heights. Perhaps, had he been aware of his

¹ provokingly: in an irritating manner; so as to cause irritation; exasperatingly.

² business: a matter that concerns or relates to a particular person or thing; (colloq.) a matter with which one has the right to meddle. (人に) 関わりのあること、口を出すべきこと。

³ lecture: an admonitory speech; esp. one delivered by way of reproof or correction. 小言、説教。

⁴ he was glad I took that view of the matter: (Linton があんたを不愉快にさせたことで叱ったのに、ご当人の) あんたがそう考えてくれるとはありがたい。

⁵ bitter: (of words) stinging, cutting, harsh, keenly or cruelly reproachful, virulent.

⁶ I can't be ... two people.: 'You can't prevent me from going to Wuthering Heights without inflicting misery on two people.' といい換えればわかりやすい。'inflicting misery on two people' は、ふたりの人間 (Linton and Cathy) をみじめにする。

⁷ go think: go and think. この用法を *OED* は 'instead of, or in addition to, the place of destination, the purpose or motive of going is often indicated.' (「どこへ」のかわりに「なにをしに」) と説明する (例: to go get = to go and get)。

⁸ alarm: to disturb, perturb. 動揺させる。

⁹ writhe: [ráɪð] to contort the body, limbs, etc., as from agony, emotion, or stimulation. (苦悩、激怒、憎悪などにより) 身もだえする。

¹⁰ against: in opposition to. 〜に反抗して。

¹¹ interdict: [ɪntəˈdɪkt] an authoritative prohibition; an act of forbidding peremptorily.

nephew's disposition and state of health, he would have seen fit to¹ withhold even that slight consolation.

¹ see fit to ... := see it fit to ... ～するのが適切と気づく。

Chapter XI (XXV)

‘These things happened last winter, sir,’ said Mrs Dean; ‘hardly more than a year ago. Last winter, I did not think, at another twelve months’ end, I should be amusing a stranger to the family¹ with relating² them! Yet, who knows how long you’ll be a stranger? You’re too young to rest³ always contented, living by yourself; and I some way fancy, no one could see Catherine Linton, and not love her. You smile; but why do you look so lively and interested, when I talk about her—and why have you asked me to hang her picture over your fireplace? and why—’

‘Stop, my good friend!’ I cried. ‘It may be very possible that *I* should love her; but would she love me? I doubt it too much to venture⁴ my tranquillity, by running into temptation; and then my home is not here. I’m of the busy world, and to its arms⁵ I must return. Go on. Was Catherine obedient⁶ to her father’s commands?’

‘She was,’ continued the housekeeper. ‘Her affection for him was still the chief sentiment in her heart; and he spoke without anger; he spoke in the deep tenderness of one about to leave his treasure amid perils and foes, where his remembered⁷ words would be the only aid that he could bequeath to guide her.

He said to me, a few days afterwards,

‘I wish my nephew would write, Ellen, or call. Tell me, sincerely, what you think of him—is he changed for the better, or is there a prospect of improvement, as he grows a man?’

‘He’s very delicate, sir,’ I replied; ‘and scarcely likely to reach manhood; but this I can say, he does not resemble his father; and if Miss Catherine had the misfortune to marry

¹ a stranger to the family: ご一家とはゆかりのないお方。

² relate: to recount, narrate, tell, give an account of (actions, events, facts, etc.).

³ rest: to remain or be left in a specified condition. ほかに ‘rest satisfied,’ ‘rest assured’ など。

⁴ venture: to risk the loss of (something); to expose to the chance of loss or injury, esp. in the hope of obtaining some advantage or gain; to hazard, risk, or stake. (なにかを得ようとして) ~を失う危険にさらす。

⁵ arm: that on which one relies for support or assistance; a prop, support, stay. (人の支えとなるもの) この意味で比喩的に腕をもたぬものに腕があるとして用いる (in fig. expressions that attribute arms (in various relations) to things that have none.)。

⁶ obedient: complying with or carrying out a command or commands; doing what one is bidden; subservient; dutiful.

⁷ remembered: recalled to or kept in memory. ‘his remembered words’ は、(娘の) 記憶に残る彼のことば。自分の死後に娘は危険や敵のただ中に身を置くことになるが、そこで娘を導く助けとして与えておけるのは、自分の言い残すことばだけであろう、ということ。

him, he would not be beyond her control, unless she were extremely and foolishly indulgent¹. However, master, you'll have plenty of time to get acquainted with him, and see whether he would suit her—it wants four years and more to his being of age.²

Edgar sighed; and walking to the window, looked out towards Gimmerton Kirk. It was a misty afternoon, but the February sun shone dimly, and we could just distinguish the two fir-trees in the yard³, and the sparely⁴ scattered gravestones.

'I've prayed often,' he half soliloquized⁵, 'for the approach of what is coming⁶; and now I begin to shrink, and fear it. I thought the memory of the hour I came down that glen a bridegroom⁷, would be less sweet than the anticipation that I was soon, in a few months, or possibly, weeks, to be carried up and laid in its lonely hollow! Ellen, I've been very happy with my little Cathy. Through winter nights and summer days she was a living hope at my side—but I've been as happy musing by myself among those stones, under that old church—lying, through the long June evenings, on the green mound of her mother's grave, and wishing, yearning for the time when I might lie beneath it. What can I do for Cathy? How must I quit her? I'd not care one moment for Linton being Heathcliff's son; nor for his taking her from me, if he could console her for my loss. I'd not care that Heathcliff gained his ends⁸, and triumphed in robbing me of my last blessing⁹! But should Linton be unworthy—only a feeble tool¹⁰ to his father—I cannot abandon her to him! And, hard though it be to crush her buoyant¹¹ spirit, I must persevere¹² in making her sad while I live, and leaving her solitary when I die. Darling! I'd rather resign her to God, and lay her in the earth before me.'

¹ indulgent: disposed to gratify by compliance with desire or humour, or to overlook faults or failings; showing or ready to show favour or leniency; disinclined to exercise strictness, severity, or restraint. (人に) 甘い。

² it wants ... age: 成年 (21 歳) に達するまであと四年以上あります。(‘want’ については、p. 130 注 1 参照)

³ the yard: the kirkyard (= churchyard).

⁴ sparely: thinly; sparsely. まばらに。

⁵ soliloquize: [səˈlɪləkwəɪz] to talk to oneself.

⁶ what is coming: death.

⁷ came down that glen a bridegroom: a bridegroom = as a bridegroom.

⁸ end: an intended result of an action; an aim, purpose.

⁹ blessing: a beneficent gift of God, nature, etc.; anything that makes happy or prosperous; a boon.

¹⁰ tool: (fig.) a person used by another for his own ends; one who is, or allows himself to be, made a mere instrument for some purpose; a cat's-paw. 他人の道具として使われる者、手先。

¹¹ buoyant: [bəʊənt] *fig.* (of the spirits) easily recovering from depression, elastic, light. 「屈託のない、はずむような」

¹² persevere: to continue steadfastly in a course of action, esp. in the face of difficulty or obstacles; to continue staunch or constant (*in, with*). (困難に直面しても) ~しつづける。

‘Resign¹ her to God, as it is², sir,’ I answered; ‘and if we should lose you – which may He forbid³ – under His providence⁴, I’ll stand her friend and counsellor⁵ to the last. Miss Catherine is a good girl; I don’t fear that she will go wilfully⁶ wrong; and people who do their duty are always finally rewarded.’

Spring advanced; yet my master gathered no real strength, though he resumed his walks in the grounds, with his daughter. To her inexperienced notions⁷, this itself was a sign of convalescence⁸; and then his cheek was often flushed, and his eyes were bright, she felt sure of his recovering.

On her seventeenth birthday he did not visit the churchyard, it was raining, and I observed –

‘You’ll surely not go out to-night, sir?’

He answered –

‘No, I’ll defer⁹ it, this year, a little longer.’

He wrote again to Linton, expressing his great desire to see him; and, had the invalid been presentable¹⁰, I’ve no doubt his father would have permitted him to come. As it was¹¹, being instructed, he returned an answer, intimating that Mr Heathcliff objected to his calling at the Grange; but his uncle’s kind remembrance¹² delighted him, and he hoped to meet him, sometimes, in his rambles, and personally to petition that his cousin and he might not remain long so utterly divided.

¹ resign: to relinquish, surrender, give up, or hand over (something) *to* a person, *into* one’s hands. ～を人（の手）に引き渡す、ゆだねる。（p. 287 注 12 参照）

² as it is: 現実にあるがまま、今のまま。

³ which may He forbid: そんなことは神様がおゆるしにならぬよう願いますが、滅相もないことです。

⁴ His providence: = providence of God: the foreknowing and beneficent care and government of God; divine direction, control, or guidance. 神の思し召し、お取りはからい。

⁵ stand her friend and counsellor: ‘support her as her friend and counsellor’ ということ。

⁶ wilfully: (chiefly, now always, in bad sense) purposely, on purpose, by design, intentionally, deliberately.

⁷ notion: an idea, view, opinion, theory, or belief, held by one or more persons. 考え、見方。

⁸ convalescence: gradual recovery of health and strength after illness. （p. 221 注 8 参照）

⁹ defer: to put off (action, procedure) to some later time; to delay, postpone.

¹⁰ presentable: suitable, by attire or appearance, to be presented or introduced into society or company; in proper trim; of decent appearance, fit to be seen. 人前に出せる、（体の）調子が良い。

¹¹ as it was: （文頭にあって）しかし実際には（そうでなかったから）。

¹² kind remembrance: 「見捨てずに覚えていてくださったご親切」という意味だろうが、手紙文で使われる「ご配慮のほどまことにかたじけなく」のような定型的表現らしい（p. 191 注 3 参照）

That part of his letter¹ was simple, and probably his own. Heathcliff knew he could plead² eloquently for Catherine's company, then—

‘I do not ask,’ he said, ‘that she may visit here; but am I never to see her, because my father forbids me to go to her home, and you forbid her to come to mine? Do, now and then, ride with her towards the Heights, and let us exchange a few words in your presence! We have done nothing to deserve this separation; and you are not angry with me—you have no reason to dislike me—you allow³ yourself. Dear uncle, send me a kind note to-morrow; and leave⁴ to join you anywhere you please, except at Thrushcross Grange. I believe an interview would convince you that my father's character is not mine; he affirms I am more your nephew than his son; and though I have faults which render me unworthy of Catherine, she has excused them, and, for her sake, you should also. You inquire after⁵ my health—it is better; but while I remain cut off from all hope, and doomed⁶ to solitude, or the society of those who never did, and never will like me, how can I be cheerful and well?’

Edgar, though he felt for⁷ the boy, could not consent to grant his request, because he could not accompany Catherine.

He said, in summer, perhaps they might meet: meantime, he wished him to continue writing at intervals, and engaged to give him what advice and comfort he was able by letter; being well aware of his hard position in his family.

Linton complied⁸; and had he been unrestrained, would probably have spoiled all by filling his epistles with complaints and lamentations; but his father kept a sharp watch over him; and, of course, insisted on every line that my master sent being shown; so, instead of penning⁹ his peculiar¹⁰ personal sufferings, and distresses, the themes

¹ that part of his letter: つまり「Catherine といつまでも引き離されたいくない」という気持ちを述べた最後の部分。

² plead: to make an earnest appeal, entreaty, or supplication; to beg, implore (*for* the thing desired). ‘he’ は Linton で、Heathcliff はその部分を少なくともある程度は自由に書かせた。

³ allow: to acknowledge, admit. ‘..., which you allow yourself.’ と考える。

⁴ leave: to allow (a person or thing) to do something, to be done or dealt with, without interference. (名詞については p. 262 注 4、p. 300 注 7 参照)

⁵ inquire after: ふつう ‘inquire after a person’ のかたちで ‘to ask about the state of health or condition of (a person)’ (お加減はいかがかと) ~ の健康状態をたずねる

⁶ doom: to destine or consign to some adverse fate or lot. 不運または逆境に陥るよう定める。

⁷ feel for: to have compassion for (a person, his sufferings, etc.). ~ を憐れむ。

⁸ comply: to act in accordance with, and fulfilment of, wishes, desires, requests, demands, conditions, or regulations. (p. 155 注 5、p. 353 注 10 参照)

⁹ pen: to write *down* with a pen; to put into writing, set down in writing, write.

¹⁰ peculiar: that belongs or pertains to, or characterizes, an individual person, place, or thing, or group of persons or things, as distinct from others. ひとり自分だけが味わっている苦痛。

constantly uppermost in his thoughts, he harped on¹ the cruel obligation of being held asunder from his friend and love; and gently intimated that Mr² Linton must allow an interview soon, or he should fear he was purposely deceiving him with empty promises.

Cathy was a powerful ally at home: and between them, they, at length, persuaded my master to acquiesce³ in their having a ride or a walk together, about once a week, under my guardianship, and on the moors nearest the Grange; for June found⁴ him still declining; and though he had set aside⁵, yearly, a portion of his income for my young lady's fortune, he had a natural desire that she might retain⁶, or, at least, return, in a short time, to the house of her ancestors; and he considered her only prospect of doing that was by a union with his heir⁷: he had no idea that the latter was failing⁸ almost as fast as himself; nor had any one, I believe; no doctor visited the Heights, and no one saw Master Heathcliff to make report of his condition, among us.

I, for my part, began to fancy my forebodings⁹ were false, and that he must be actually rallying¹⁰, when he mentioned riding and walking on the moors, and seemed so earnest in pursuing his object.

I could not picture a father treating a dying child as tyrannically and wickedly as I afterwards learned Heathcliff had treated him, to compel this apparent¹¹ eagerness; his efforts redoubling the more imminently his avaricious and unfeeling plans were threatened with defeat by death¹².

¹ harp on: to dwell wearisomely upon in speech or writing. くどくどという、書く。

² obligation: something that one is bound to do or forbear. ここは、残酷にも束縛されて愛する友と引き離されていること。

³ acquiesce: [ækwi'es] to agree tacitly to, concur in; to accept (the conclusions or arrangements of others).

⁴ June found him ...: 結局は 'in June he was found to be ...' ということだろうが、p. 333 注 1 の 'see' に類する用法。

⁵ set aside: to separate out for a particular purpose. (特定の目的のため) 別にとっておく。

⁶ retain: to keep hold or possession of; to continue having or keeping.

⁷ his heir: Linton Heathcliff.

⁸ fail: to lose power or strength; to flag, wane; to break down. 衰える。【例】1881 S. COLVIN *Landor* 136 That kind ... old lady had been *failing* since the spring of 1829 and had died in October.

⁹ foreboding: a presentiment of something to happen, esp. of approaching or overhanging evil. 悪い予感。

¹⁰ rally: to recover in part from an illness. (p. 181 注 6 参照)

¹¹ apparent: appearing to the senses or mind, as distinct from (though not necessarily opposed to) what really is; seeming. みせかけの。

¹² the more...by death: Linton が死んで強欲かつ冷酷な計画の頓挫する危険が切迫するにつれてますます。

Chapter XII (XXVI)

Summer was already past its prime¹, when Edgar reluctantly yielded² his assent to their entreaties, and Catherine and I set out on our first ride to join her cousin.

It was a close³, sultry⁴ day; devoid of⁵ sunshine, hut with a sky too dappled⁶ and hazy to threaten rain; and our place of meeting had been fixed at the guide-stone, by the crossroads. On arriving there, however, a little herd-boy⁷, despatched as a messenger, told us that—

‘Maister Linton wer just ut this side th’ Heights: and he’d be mitch obleeged to us to gang⁸ on a bit further.’⁹

‘Then Master Linton has forgot the first injunction¹⁰ of his uncle,’ I observed: ‘he bid us keep on the Grange land, and here we are, off at once¹¹.’

‘Well, we’ll turn our horses’ heads round, when we reach him,’ answered my companion, ‘our excursion shall lie¹² towards home.’

But when we reached him, and that was scarcely a quarter of a mile from his own door, we found he had no horse, and we were forced to dismount, and leave ours to graze¹³.

He lay on the heath, awaiting our approach, and did not rise till we came within a few yards. Then, he walked so feebly, and looked so pale, that I immediately exclaimed—

¹ prime: (of things, material or immaterial) the best or most flourishing stage or state; the state of full perfection. 全盛期、盛り。

² yield: to vouchsafe (an assent) to.

³ close: [kl · us] (of the atmosphere or weather) like that of a closed up room; confined, stifling, without free circulation; the opposite of fresh. 風がなくむっとする。

⁴ sultry: oppressively hot and moist; sweltering.

⁵ devoid of: empty, void, destitute (of some attribute); entirely without or wanting.

⁶ dappled: marked with roundish spots, patches, or blotches of a different colour or shade.

⁷ herd-boy: a boy who acts as a herd or assists a herd. しいて訳せば牧羊児。‘herd’ は、ここでは「家畜(羊)の群れ」ではなく、「羊飼」を指す(‘in Scotland and north of England still a common word for *shepherd*.’—*OED*)。

⁸ gang: (obs. exc. Sc. and dial.) to walk, go.

⁹ Maister Linton ... further: Master Linton were (was) just at this side the Heights: and he’d be much obliged us to go on a bit further.

¹⁰ injunction: an authoritative or emphatic admonition or order. (p. 173 注 5 参照)

¹¹ at once: immediately, straightway.

¹² lie: (of a road, way, journey, etc.) to extend, have a (specified) direction. そこから Linton という所に屋敷の方向へ戻ることになろう、ということ。

¹³ graze: (chiefly of cattle) to feed on growing grass and other herbage.

‘Why, Master Heathcliff, you are not fit for enjoying a ramble, this morning. How ill you do look!’

Catherine surveyed him with grief and astonishment; and changed the ejaculation of joy on her lips, to one of alarm; and the congratulation on their long postponed meeting, to an anxious inquiry, whether he were worse than usual?

‘No—better—better!’ he panted, trembling, and retaining¹ her hand as if he needed its support, while his large blue eyes wandered timidly over her; the hollowness round them², transforming to haggard³ wildness, the languid⁴ expression they once possessed.

‘But you have been worse,’ persisted his cousin, ‘worse than when I saw you last—you are thinner, and—’

‘I’m tired,’ he interrupted hurriedly. ‘It is too hot for walking, let us rest here. And, in the morning, I often feel sick—papa says I grow so fast.’

Badly⁵ satisfied, Cathy sat down, and he reclined⁶ beside her.

‘This is something like your paradise,’ said she, making an effort at⁷ cheerfulness. ‘You recollect the two days we agreed to spend, in the place and way, each thought pleasantest? This is nearly yours, only there are clouds; but then, they are so soft and mellow, it is nicer than sunshine. Next week, if you can, we’ll ride down to the Grange Park and try mine.’

Linton did not appear to remember what she talked of; and he had evidently great difficulty in sustaining⁸ any kind of conversation. His lack of interest in the subjects she

¹ retain: to keep hold or possession of; to continue having or keeping. ここでは、握って放さない。

² the hollowness round them: 目の回りが落ちくぼんでいること。

³ haggard: (of a person) wild-looking; in early use applied esp. to the ‘wild’ expression of the eyes, afterwards to the injurious effect upon the countenance of privation, want of rest, fatigue, anxiety, terror, or worry. (目なら) 狂おしい、(顔なら) やつれた。ここは前者。

⁴ languid: wanting in vigour or vitality. (p. 292 注 1 参照)

⁵ badly: poorly, insufficiently, defectively.

⁶ recline: (of persons or parts of the body) to rest in a recumbent or inclined position, lean or repose on or upon something. 横になって (または、なにかにもたれて) 休む。

⁷ at: of motion or action directed towards the attainment or acquisition of. ～を達成または獲得しよう。

⁸ sustain: to keep going, keep up (an action or process); to keep up without intermission. (途切れることなく) つづける。

started, and his equal incapacity to contribute to¹ her entertainment were so obvious, that she could not conceal her disappointment. An indefinite² alteration had come over his whole person and manner. The pettishness that might be caressed³ into fondness, had yielded⁴ to a listless apathy; there was less of the peevish temper of a child which frets and teases on purpose to be soothed, and more of the self-absorbed⁵ moroseness⁶ of a confirmed⁷ invalid, repelling consolation, and ready to regard the good-humoured mirth of others, as an insult.

Catherine perceived, as well as I did, that he held it rather a punishment, than a gratification, to endure our company; and she made no scruple of⁸ proposing, presently, to depart.

That proposal unexpectedly roused Linton from his lethargy⁹, and threw him into a strange state of agitation. He glanced fearfully towards the Heights, begging she would remain another half-hour, at least.

‘But I think,’ said Cathy, ‘you’d be more comfortable at home than sitting here; and I cannot amuse you to-day, I see, by my tales, and songs, and chatter; you have grown wiser than I, in these six months; you have little taste for my diversions¹⁰ now; or else, if I could amuse you, I’d willingly stay.’

‘Stay to rest yourself,’ he replied. ‘And, Catherine, don’t think, or say that I’m *very* unwell—it is the heavy weather, and heat that make me dull; and I walked about, before you came, a great deal, for me¹¹. Tell uncle, I’m in tolerable health, will you?’

¹ contribute to (anything): to do a part in bringing (it) about; to have a part or share in producing. ここは、自分もいっしょになって彼女を楽しませようとする事。

² indefinite: having no clearly defined or determined character: indeterminate, vague, undefined. はっきりいいがたい、漠然たる。

³ caress: to treat affectionately or blandishingly, to touch, stroke, or pat endearingly; to fondle. 比喩的にも。

⁴ yield: to give way, be subjected, submit; *occas.* to break down, succumb. (やさしくしてやればべたべた甘えてくる) ふくれっ面が影をひそめ、なにをするのもおっくうという無気力さが現れていた事。

⁵ self-absorbed: absorbed in one’s own thoughts, activities, or interests. 自分のことだけにとらわれた (夢中の)。

⁶ moroseness: [məˈrəʊsniːs] the state or quality of being morose (= sour-tempered, sullen, gloomy, and unsocial).

⁷ confirmed: settled, firmly established. 【参考】 a *confirmed* invalid 長わづらいの病人 (研究社『リーダーズ英和辞典』)

⁸ make no scruple of: ためらいなく～する。 *make scruple of* to hesitate to do or allow, etc.

⁹ lethargy: a condition of torpor, inertness, or apathy.

¹⁰ diversion: an amusement, entertainment, sport, pastime.

¹¹ a great deal, for me: ぼくにしては (ぼくの体調を考えれば) ずいぶんと。 *for*: considering the nature or capacity of. (p. 121 注 3 参照)

'I'll tell him that *you* say so, Linton. I couldn't¹ affirm that you are,' observed my young lady, wondering at his pertinacious² assertion of what was evidently an untruth.

'And be here again next Thursday,' continued he, shunning³ her puzzled gaze. 'And give him my thanks for permitting you to come—my best thanks, Catherine. And—and, if you *did* meet my father, and he asked you about me, don't lead him to suppose that I've been extremely silent and stupid—don't look⁴ sad and downcast⁵, as you *are* doing—he'll be angry.'

'I care nothing for his anger,' exclaimed Cathy, imagining she would be its object.

'But I do,' said her cousin, shuddering. '*Don't* provoke him against me, Catherine, for he is very hard.'

'Is he severe to you, Master Heathcliff?' I inquired. 'Has he grown weary of indulgence, and passed from passive⁶, to active hatred?'

Linton looked at me, but did not answer; and after keeping her seat by his side another ten minutes, during which his head fell drowsily⁷ on his breast, and he uttered nothing except suppressed moans of exhaustion⁸, or pain, Cathy began to seek solace⁹ in looking for bilberries, and sharing the produce of her researches¹⁰ with me: she did not offer them to him, for she saw further notice¹¹ would only weary and annoy.

'Is it half an hour now, Ellen!' she whispered in my ear at last. 'I can't tell why we

¹ couldn't: ~しようと思ってもできない。条件法。【参考】I **could** do so (if I **would** = I *can*, but *do not*). しようと思へば出来るのだが (せぬ)。I **could not** do so (if I **would**). 假令 (たとへ) しようと思つても出来ぬ。(齋藤秀三郎『英和中辞典』)

² pertinacious: persistent or stubborn in holding to one's own opinion or design; resolute; obstinate.

³ shun: to avoid (in mod. prose use always to avoid persistently or habitually) from repugnance, fear, or caution. (p. 166 注 1、p. 258 注 8、p. 314 注 5 参照)

⁴ look: to have the appearance of being; to seem to the sight.' つまり他人にどう見えるかをいうから、ここでは「悲しいしょげた顔をする」。基本事項だが念のため。

⁵ downcast: (of looks, etc.) directed downwards; dejected. しょげた。

⁶ passive: suffering or receiving something without resistance or opposition. 'from passive to active' とは、抑えていた憎しみが表に出てきたこと。

⁷ drowsily: sluggishly, inactively. ものうげに。

⁸ exhaustion: [ɪgzɔːstʃən] the state of being exhausted of strength, energy, etc.; extreme loss of strength. 力を使い果たした状態、疲労困憊。

⁹ solace: [sə'læs] comfort, consolation; alleviation of sorrow, distress, or discomfort.

¹⁰ the produce of her researches: (そこいらから) 摘んできた 'bilberry' (コケモモの実)。

¹¹ notice: heed, cognizance, note, attention. ここでは、相手に気を配ること、相手にすること。

should stay. He's asleep, and papa will be wanting us back.'

'Well, we must not leave him asleep,' I answered: 'wait till he wakes, and be patient. You were mighty eager to set off¹, but your longing to see poor Linton has soon evaporated²!'

'Why did *he* wish to see me?' returned Catherine.

'In his crossiest humours, formerly, I liked him better than I do in his present curious mood. It's just as if it were a task he was compelled to perform—this interview—for fear his father should scold him. But, I'm hardly going to come to give Mr Heathcliff pleasure; whatever reason he may have for ordering Linton to undergo³ this penance⁴. And, though I'm glad he's better in health, I'm sorry he's so much less pleasant, and so much less affectionate to me.'

'You think *he is* better in health, then?' I said.

'Yes,' she answered: 'because he always made such a great deal of⁵ his sufferings, you know. He is not tolerably well, as he told me to tell papa; but he's better, very likely.'

'There you differ with me, Miss Cathy,' I remarked: 'I should conjecture⁶ him to be far worse.'

Linton here started from his slumber in bewildered terror, and asked if any one had called his name.

'No,' said Catherine; 'unless in dreams. I cannot conceive⁷ how you manage to doze, out of doors, in the morning.'

¹ You were mighty eager to set off: とても熱心に出かけたがっていた、出がけはとても熱心だった。 *mighty*: *adv.* (now colloq.) in a great degree; greatly; exceedingly; very.

² evaporate: (fig.) to pass off like vapour; to be wasted or dissipated. (蒸気のように) 消え失せる。

³ undergo: to bear, endure, sustain, suffer, go through (pain, suffering, danger, etc.). (ひどい目に) 会う、など。

⁴ penance: a punishment undergone in token of penitence for sin. 贖罪、苦行。ここでは「ひどい目、つらい目」ほどの意味。

⁵ made such a great deal of: さもたいそうなことのように (うんとおおげさに) いった。

⁶ I should conjecture: ~だと思いたがね。 'I should guess' (p. 212 注 3 参照) などに類する表現。【参考】控えめな表現: **I should think** she would be eager to attend. (彼女は喜んで出席するはずだと、私は思いますが…。) (旺文社『実践ロイヤル英文法』)

⁷ conceive: to form a mental representation or idea of; to form or have a conception or notion of; to think of, imagine. ここは否定文なので、想像 (見当) もつかない。

‘I thought I heard my father,’ he gasped, glancing up to the frowning¹ nab² above us. ‘You are sure nobody spoke?’

‘Quite sure,’ replied his cousin. ‘Only Ellen and I were disputing³ concerning your health. Are you truly stronger, Linton, than when we separated in winter? If you be, I’m certain one thing is not stronger—your regard⁴ for me—speak, are you?’

The tears gushed⁵ from Linton’s eyes as he answered—

‘Yes, yes, I am!’

And, still under the spell of⁶ the imaginary voice, his gaze wandered up and down to detect its owner.

Cathy rose.

‘For to-day⁷ we must part,’ she said. ‘And I won’t conceal that I have been sadly disappointed with our meeting, though I’ll mention it to nobody but you—not that⁸ I stand in awe of⁹ Mr Heathcliff!’

‘Hush!’ murmured Linton; ‘for God’s sake, hush! He’s coming.’ And he clung to Catherine’s arm, striving to detain¹⁰ her; but, at that announcement, she hastily disengaged herself, and whistled to Minny, who obeyed her like a dog.

‘I’ll be here next Thursday,’ she cried, springing to the saddle. ‘Good-bye. Quick, Ellen!’

¹ frowning: threatening.

² nab: a projecting or jutting out part of a hill or rock.

³ dispute: to contend with opposing arguments or assertions; to debate or discourse argumentatively; to discuss, argue, hold disputation; often, to debate in a vehement manner or with altercation about something. (なにかをめぐって激しく) 議論する、言い合う。

⁴ regard: esteem, affection, kindly feeling.

⁵ gush: to flow or rush out with violence; to issue suddenly or in copious streams, as water or other fluid when released from confinement, blood from a wound, etc.

⁶ under the spell of: ～にとらわれて (支配されて)。 *spell*: an occult or mysterious power or influence; a fascinating or enthralling charm.

⁷ for to-day: 今日はこれで。【参考】 We will stop the work *for today*. きょうはこれで仕事をやめよう。(研究社『リーダーズ英和辞典』)

⁸ not that: = ‘I do not say this because・’; or ‘One must not suppose that・’

⁹ stand in awe of: to be greatly afraid of, to dread.

¹⁰ detain: to keep from proceeding or going on; to keep waiting; to stop. 引き留める。

And so we left him, scarcely conscious of our departure, so absorbed was he in anticipating¹ his father's approach.

Before we reached home, Catherine's displeasure softened into a perplexed sensation of pity and regret, largely blended with vague, uneasy doubts about Linton's actual circumstances, physical and social²; in which I partook³, though I counselled her not to say much, for a second journey would make us better judges.

My master requested an account of our ongoings⁴; his nephew's offering of thanks was duly delivered, Miss Cathy gently touching on⁵ the rest: I also threw little light⁶ on his inquiries, for I hardly knew what to hide, and what to reveal.

¹ anticipate: to take into consideration before the appropriate or due time. 適当な時が来る前に考慮に入れる、まだ考えなくてもいいのに考える。つまり「見越す、取り越す」に近い。ここでは、「父がいまにも近くに来るという心配で頭がいっぱい（上の空）になり」ということ。

² social: seeking or enjoying the companionship of others; sociable.

³ in which I partook: Catherine のとまといを私も共にしました、それは私も同じ思いでした。

⁴ ongoings: (pl. = goings-on); proceedings, doings (esp. of a notable kind). ことの首尾、なりゆき。

⁵ touch on: to speak or write of, treat of, mention, tell, relate; now always, to mention briefly, casually, or in passing; to refer to, allude to. ～に軽くふれる。

⁶ light: mental illumination or elucidation. 'throw light on' は「～を解明する、説明する」。ここでは、「私もご主人からいろいろ質問されましたが、満足なお答はできませんでした」。

Chapter XIII (XXVII)

Seven days glided¹ away, every one marking its course by the henceforth rapid alteration of Edgar Linton's state.² The havoc³ that months had previously wrought was now emulated⁴ by the inroads⁵ of hours.

Catherine, we would fain have deluded⁶, yet, but her own quick spirit refused to delude her. It divined⁷, in secret, and brooded⁸ on the dreadful probability, gradually ripening into certainty.

She had not the heart to mention her ride, when Thursday came round; I mentioned it for her; and obtained permission to order her out of doors; for the library, where her father stopped a short time daily—the brief period he could bear to sit up—and his chamber, had become her whole world. She grudged⁹ each moment that did not find her bending over his pillow, or seated by his side. Her countenance grew wan¹⁰ with watching¹¹ and sorrow, and my master gladly dismissed her to what he flattered¹² himself would be a happy change of scene and society, drawing comfort from the hope that she would not now be left entirely alone after his death.

He had a fixed idea, I guessed by several observations¹³ he let fall¹⁴, that as his nephew

¹ glide: (of time, one's life, etc.) to pass gently and imperceptibly. (時が) いつの間にか過ぎる。

² every one ... state.: 'every one (of the seven days)' (その七日間の一日一日が) 'its course' (その経過) を Edgar Linton の病状の急変によって示した。つまり、一日経つごとに病状は急速に悪化していった。

³ havoc: devastation, destruction. 'wrought' は 'work: to bring about; to cause, produce.' の過去分詞。(p. 306 注 3 参照)

⁴ emulate: to vie with, rival, equal or closely approach in any quality. ほとんど〜に匹敵する。

⁵ inroad: a powerful or sudden incursion; a forcible encroachment.

⁶ delude: to befool the mind or judgement of, so as to cause what is false to be accepted as true; to bring by deceit into a false opinion or belief. 'would fain' は頻出。詳しくは p. 269 注 6 参照。ここは、できればだましておきたいところだった。

⁷ divine: to make out by sagacity, intuition, or fortunate conjecture (that is, in some other way than by actual information); to conjecture, guess. (p. 299 注 11、p. 332 注 2 参照)

⁸ brood: to meditate moodily, or with strong feeling, *on* or *over*; to dwell closely upon in the mind.

⁹ grudge: to be unwilling to give, grant, or allow (something). ここは、わずかの時間も惜しんで父に付き添ったことをいう。

¹⁰ wan: pallid, faded, sickly; unusually or unhealthily pale.

¹¹ watching: 看病による「寝不足 (want of sleep)」とも取れる。

¹² flatter: (now chiefly *refl.*) to please with the belief, idea, or suggestion *that*. ここでは、いい気晴らしになるだろうと考え、喜んで娘を出してやった。

¹³ observation: an utterance as to something observed; a remark in speech or writing in reference to something.

¹⁴ let fall: (= let drop) to utter casually or by the way. ふと漏らす。

resembled him in person, he would resemble him in mind; for Linton's letters bore few, or no indications of his defective character. And I through pardonable weakness¹ refrained from correcting the error; asking myself what good there would be in disturbing his last moments with information that he had neither power nor opportunity to turn to account².

We deferred our excursion till the afternoon; a golden afternoon of August—every breath³ from the hills so full of life, that it seemed whoever respired⁴ it, though dying, might revive.

Catherine's face was just like the landscape—shadows and sunshine flitting⁵ over it, in rapid succession; but the shadows rested longer and the sunshine was more transient, and her poor little heart reproached itself for even that passing forgetfulness of its cares.

We discerned Linton watching at the same spot he had selected before. My young mistress alighted⁶, and told me that as she was resolved to stay a very little while, I had better hold the pony and remain on horseback; but I dissented⁷, I wouldn't risk losing sight of the charge⁸ committed to me a minute, so we climbed the slope of heath, together.

Master Heathcliff received us with greater animation on this occasion; not the animation of high spirits though, nor yet⁹ of joy, it looked more like fear.

‘It is late!’ he said, speaking short and with difficulty. ‘Is not your father very ill? I thought you wouldn't come.’

‘*Why* won't you be candid¹⁰?’ cried Catherine, swallowing¹¹ her greeting. ‘Why cannot you say at once, you don't want me? It is strange, Linton, that for the second time you

¹ through pardonable weakness: 申し訳は立ちましようが（責められはしますまいが）弱気になって。 *through*: (indicating cause, reason, or motive) in consequence of, by reason of, on account of, owing to; from; for.

² turn to account: turn to one's advantage. 自分の利とする、役立てる。

³ breath: a gentle blowing, a puff; now usually *breath of air* or *breath of wind*, but in early times used absolutely in sense of ‘wind, breeze, air in motion’. 風（のそよぎ）。

⁴ respire: to breathe; to inhale and exhale air.

⁵ flit: to move along, pass, proceed; to pass lightly or softly and (usually) with rapidity or suddenness. ここは、翳ったかと思えば日が射してめまぐるしく変化するありさま。（p. 234 注 7 参照）

⁶ alight: to dismount from a horse or descend out of a conveyance.

⁷ dissent: not to assent; to disagree with or object to an action.

⁸ charge: thing or person entrusted to the care or management of any one. （p. 269 注 13、p. 347 注 5 参照）

⁹ nor yet: = and also not. ‘yet’ は ‘nor’ の強調。

¹⁰ candid: frank, open, ingenuous, straight-forward, sincere in what one says.

¹¹ swallow: to refrain from expressing or uttering; to keep down, repress.

have brought me here on purpose, apparently, to distress us both, and for no reason besides!’

Linton shivered, and glanced at her, half supplicating¹, half ashamed, but his cousin's patience was not sufficient to endure this enigmatical² behaviour.

‘My father *is* very ill,’ she said, ‘and why am I called from his bedside—why didn't you send³ to absolve⁴ me from my promise, when you wished I wouldn't keep it? Come! I desire an explanation—playing and trifling⁵ are completely banished⁶ out of my mind: and I can't dance attendance⁷ on your affectations⁸, now!’

‘My affectations!’ he murmured, ‘what are they? For Heaven's sake, Catherine, don't look so angry! Despise me as much as you please; I am a worthless, cowardly wretch—I can't be scorned enough! but I'm too mean for your anger—hate my father, and spare me, for contempt!’⁹

‘Nonsense!’ cried Catherine in a passion¹⁰. ‘Foolish, silly boy! And there! he trembles, as if I were really going to touch him! You needn't bespeak¹¹ contempt, Linton; anybody will have¹² it spontaneously, at your service¹³. Get off! I shall return home—it is folly dragging you from the hearth-stone, and pretending¹⁴—what do we pretend? Let go my frock—if I pitied you for crying, and looking so very frightened, you should spurn¹⁵ such

¹ supplicating: expressing supplication. 哀願するように、泣きつくように。

² enigmatical: (= enigmatic) containing or resembling an enigma: ambiguous, obscure, perplexing. 謎めいた、不可解な。

³ send: to send a message or messenger. 使いをよこす、知らせてよこす。

⁴ absolve: [əbz(s)ɒ'lv] to set free, discharge (*from*, formerly *of*, obligations, liabilities).

⁵ trifling: jesting or frivolous talk; fooling; idle, foolish, or frivolous conduct or practice; frivolous delay or waste of time. むだ話、つまらぬ時間つぶし。

⁶ banish: to drive away, expel, dismiss (a thing).

⁷ dance attendance: to wait (upon a person) with assiduous attention and ready obsequiousness. ここでは、～のお相手をする。

⁸ affectation: artificial or non-natural assumption of behaviour; artificiality (of manner); putting on of airs. わざとらしいそぶり、気取った様子。

⁹ spare me, for contempt!: to reserve, retain, set aside or store up *for* some particular use or purpose. 「(憎むのは父にして) ぼくは軽蔑のほうに回して (取っておいて) くれ」と解せば、あとの Catherine のセリフ ‘You needn't bespeak contempt.’ (軽蔑してくれと頼んでおく必要なんてないわよ) に呼応する。

¹⁰ in a passion: かつとなつて。 *passion*: a fit or mood marked by stress of feeling or abandonment to emotion; a transport of excited feeling; an outburst of feeling.

¹¹ bespeak: to arrange for, engage beforehand; to stipulate or ask for (a favour or the like). 前もって取り決めて (頼んで) おく。

¹² have: to hold or entertain in the mind (a feeling, opinion, etc.).

¹³ at a person's service: ready to obey his commands.

¹⁴ pretend: to feign in play; to make believe. ～ごっこをする、～のまねごとをして遊ぶ。

¹⁵ spurn: to reject with contempt or disdain; to scorn or despise. ここは、そんな憐れみははねつけるのがあたりまえでしょ。

pity! Ellen, tell him how disgraceful this conduct is. Rise, and don't degrade yourself into an abject¹ reptile²—*don't*.'

With streaming³ face and an expression of agony, Linton had thrown his nerveless⁴ frame⁵ along the ground. He seemed convulsed⁶ with exquisite terror.

'Oh!' he sobbed, 'I cannot bear it! Catherine, Catherine, I'm a traitor too, and I dare not tell you! But leave me and I shall be killed! *Dear* Catherine, my life is in your hands; and you have said you loved me—and if you did, it wouldn't harm you. You'll not go, then? kind, sweet, good Catherine! And perhaps you *will* consent—and he'll let me die with you!'

My young lady, on witnessing his intense anguish, stooped⁷ to raise him. The old feeling of indulgent tenderness overcame her vexation, and she grew thoroughly moved and alarmed.

'Consent to what?' she asked. 'To stay? Tell me the meaning of this strange talk, and I will. You contradict⁸ your own words and distract⁹ me! Be calm and frank, and confess at once, all that weighs on¹⁰ your heart. You wouldn't injure me, Linton, would you? You wouldn't let any enemy hurt me, if you could prevent it? I'll believe you are a coward, for yourself¹¹, but not a cowardly betrayer of your best friend.'

¹ abject: [æbdʒekt] low in regard or estimation, degraded, mean-spirited, despicable.

² reptile: a creeping or crawling animal: *spec.* an animal belonging to the class Reptilia. Linton が二本足で立っていなかったから爬虫類にたとえた。

³ streaming: (of a source, surface, etc.) overflowing, running, or dripping with moisture. 涙で濡れた。

⁴ nerveless: wanting in nerve, incapable of effort, weak, inert. (心身いずれにも用いて) 無力な。

⁵ frame: applied to the animal, esp. the human body, with reference to its make, build, or constitution.

⁶ convulse: (chiefly in *pass.*) to affect with a succession of violent involuntary contractions of the muscles, so as to produce agitation of the limbs or whole body; to throw into convulsions.. 体をガクガクと震わせる、痙攣させる。

⁷ stoop: (of a person) to lower the body by inclining the trunk or the head and shoulders forward, sometimes bending the knee at the same time. (ときに膝をついて) 上体を前にかがめる。

⁸ contradict: to affirm the contrary of; to deny the words or statement of (a person). ここは 'contradict oneself' (矛盾したこと、つじつまの合わぬことをいう) に同じ。

⁹ distract: to throw into a state of mind in which one knows not how to act; to perplex or bewilder greatly.

¹⁰ weigh on: (of a thought, feeling, circumstance) to lie heavy on, depress (a person, his spirits, etc.). (心に) 重くのしかかる、憂鬱にさせる。'confess all that weighs on your heart' は、胸のつかえをすっかり打ち明ける。

¹¹ for yourself: ここは「自分(のこ)については」が適切だろう。

‘But my father threatened me,’ gasped the boy, clasping his attenuated¹ fingers, ‘and I dread him—I dread him! I *dare* not tell!’

‘Oh, well!’ said Catherine, with scornful compassion, ‘keep your secret. *I’m* no coward—save yourself, I’m not afraid!’

Her magnanimity² provoked his tears; he wept wildly, kissing her supporting hands, and yet could not summon courage to speak out³.

I was cogitating⁴ what the mystery might be, and determined Catherine should never suffer to benefit him or any one else, by my goodwill⁵; when⁶, hearing a rustle among the ling⁷, I looked up, and saw Mr Heathcliff almost close upon⁸ us, descending the Heights. He didn’t cast a glance towards my companions, though they were sufficiently near for Linton’s sobs to be audible; but hailing me in the almost hearty tone he assumed⁹ to none besides¹⁰, and the sincerity of which, I couldn’t avoid doubting, he said.

‘It is something¹¹ to see you so near to my house, Nelly! How are you at the Grange? Let us hear! The rumour goes¹²,’ he added in a lower tone, ‘that Edgar Linton is on his deathbed—perhaps they exaggerate his illness?’

‘No, my master is dying,’ I replied; ‘it is true enough. A sad thing it will be for us all, but a blessing for him!’

‘How long will he last, do you think?’ he asked.

‘I don’t know,’ I said.

¹ attenuated: made thin or slender in girth or transverse thickness (by natural shaping, mechanical reduction, starving, or wasting). やせ細った。

² magnanimity: nobility of feeling; superiority to petty resentment or jealousy; generous disregard of injuries.

³ speak out: to talk freely or unreservedly. 遠慮なく（思い切って）話す。

⁴ cogitate: to think, reflect, ponder, meditate.

⁵ by my good will: ここは、私がよかれと思ってしたこと（Catherine が Linton であれだけであれ、人のためになろうとして苦しむことがあってはならない）。

⁶ when: （すると）そのとき。

⁷ ling: heather. 花としての ‘heath’ に同じ。ツツジ科のギョリュウモドキ。

⁸ upon: (= on) to or towards. （動作の方向）～に向かって。つまり動作中と考え、間近に来ている（なおも接近中）。

⁹ assume: to take to oneself in appearance only; to pretend, simulate, feign. ～を装う。

¹⁰ to none besides: to none besides me. 私にだけ、私以外にはだれにも～ない。

¹¹ something: a thing, fact, person, etc., of some value, consideration, or regard.

¹² go: (of a report, tale, etc.) to pass from mouth to mouth, be current.

‘Because,’ he continued, looking at the two young people, who were fixed under his eye — Linton appeared as if he could not venture to stir, or raise his head, and Catherine could not move, on his account¹— ‘Because that lad yonder seems determined to beat me²— and I’d thank his uncle to be quick, and go before him—Hallo! Has the whelp been playing that game long?³ I *did* give him some lessons about snivelling⁴. Is he pretty lively with Miss Linton generally⁵?’

‘Lively? no—he has shown the greatest distress,’ I answered. ‘To see him, I should say⁶, that instead of rambling with his sweetheart on the hills, he ought to be in bed, under the hands of a doctor.’

‘He shall be, in a day or two,’ muttered Heathcliff. ‘But first—get up, Linton! Get up!’ he shouted. ‘Don’t grovel on the ground, there—up, this moment!’

Linton had sunk prostrate⁷ again in another paroxysm⁸ of helpless fear, caused by his father’s glance towards him, I suppose, there was nothing else to produce such humiliation. He made several efforts to obey, but his little strength was annihilated⁹, for the time¹⁰, and he fell back again with a moan.

Mr Heathcliff advanced, and lifted him to lean against a ridge¹¹ of turf.

‘Now,’ said he, with curbed¹² ferocity, ‘I’m getting angry—and if you don’t command¹³

¹ on his account: because of Linton (who could not move).

² to beat me: つまり Linton が先に死ねば Edgar の財産を手に入れる計画が破綻するから。

³ Has the whelp ... long?: あいつはずっとああして（泣いてみせて）いたのか? ‘game’ の解釈は迷うところだが、すぐ次のセリフから考えて、いわゆる「手を使う」の「手」に相当し、Cathy を引き留めるため泣いて哀れを誘うことと取っておく。game: a person’s policy or plan of action (*OED*); a scheme or strategy employed in the pursuit of an object or purpose. (*Webster 3rd*).

⁴ snivel: to make a sniffing or snuffling sound expressive of real or assumed emotion; to be in, or affect, a tearful state. ここでは、めそめそ泣いてみせる。

⁵ generally: in disregard of specific instances and with regard to an overall picture. 全体として見れば。ここでは、（今は泣きべそをかいているが）大体のところは。

⁶ I should say: （こういってはなんですが）～でしょうね、ほどの意味。（p. 88 注 6、p. 212 注 3 参照）

⁷ prostrate: lying at full length or with the body extended flat (on the ground or other surface), in a horizontal position. 全身を伸ばして地面にべったりと（厳密には、うつぶせに）横たわる。

⁸ paroxysm: a violent access of action or emotion; a fit, convulsion. (感情の) 激発、発作。（p. 177 注 11、p. 226 注 1 参照）

⁹ annihilate: to reduce to non-existence, blot out of existence. 無にする。

¹⁰ for the time: (= for the time being) during the period under consideration. その当座は、そのときは。

¹¹ ridge: a narrow elevation or raised part running along or across a surface. 畑の畝など。

¹² curved: (fig.) restrained, checked.

¹³ command: to be master of (oneself, one’s emotions, feelings, etc.); to hold in check, control, restrain (the passions). 制する。

that paltry¹ spirit of yours—*Damn* you! Get up, directly!’

‘I will, father!’ he panted. ‘Only let me alone, or I shall faint²! I’ve done as you wished—I’m sure. Catherine will tell you that I—that I—have been cheerful. Ah! keep by me, Catherine; give me your hand.’

‘Take mine,’ said his father, ‘stand on your feet! There now—she’ll lend you her arm ... that’s right; look at *her*. You would imagine I was the devil himself, Miss Linton, to excite such horror.³ Be so kind as to walk home with him, will you? He shudders⁴, if I touch him.’

‘Linton dear!’ whispered Catherine, ‘I can’t go to Wuthering Heights ... papa has forbidden me ... He’ll not harm you, why are you so afraid?’

‘I can never re-enter that house,’ he answered. ‘I’m *not* to re-enter it without you!’⁵

‘Stop ...’ cried his father. ‘We’ll respect Catherine’s filial⁶ scruples. Nelly, take him in, and I’ll follow your advice concerning the doctor, without delay.’

‘You’ll do well,’ replied I. ‘But I must remain with my mistress. To mind your son is not my business.’

‘You are very stiff!’ said Heathcliff, ‘I know that—but you’ll force me to pinch the baby, and make it scream, before it moves your charity. Come, then, my hero. Are you willing to return, escorted by me?’

He approached once more, and made as if⁷ he would seize the fragile being; but shrinking back, Linton clung to his cousin, and implored⁸ her to accompany him, with a

¹ paltry: worthless; contemptible. (p. 217 注 2、p. 308 注 2、p. 330 注 9 参照)

² faint: to fall into a swoon; to lose consciousness.

³ You would ... horror: こんなに怖がらせると、私をまるで悪魔かと思うだろうね。‘You would imagine as if I were the devil himself ...’ということ。

⁴ shudder: to have a convulsive tremor of the body caused by fear, abhorrence, or cold; hence, to tremble with horror or dread. (恐怖や寒さから) 体がブルブル震える。

⁵ I’m not to re-enter it without you!: 「be+不定詞」は「～することになっている (定められている)」だから、この場合、あらかじめ仕組まれた芝居であることを白状したことにもなる。

⁶ filial: (of sentiments, duty, etc.) due from a child to a parent. 子が当然親に抱く (果たす) べき、子としての。

⁷ make as if: to behave as if; hence, to pretend that.

⁸ implore: to beg or pray for (aid, favour, pardon, etc.) with tearful or touching entreaties; to ask for in supplication; to beseech. (涙ながらに) 頼む、哀願する。

frantic importunity¹ that admitted no denial.

However I disapproved², I couldn't hinder³ her; indeed, how could she have refused him herself? What was filling him with dread, we had no means of discerning⁴, but there he was, powerless under its gripe, and any addition seemed capable⁵ of shocking him into idiocy.

We reached the threshold; Catherine walked in; and I stood waiting till she had conducted⁶ the invalid to a chair, expecting her out immediately; when Mr Heathcliff, pushing me forward, exclaimed –

'My house is not stricken⁷ with the plague, Nelly, and I have a mind to be hospitable to-day; sit down, and allow me to shut the door.'

He shut and locked it also. I started.

'You shall have tea, before you go home,' he added. 'I am by myself. Hareton is gone with some cattle to the Lees⁸, and Zillah and Joseph are off on a journey of pleasure⁹. And, though I'm used to being alone, I'd rather have some interesting company, if I can get it. Miss Linton, take your seat by *him*. I give you what I have; the present is hardly worth accepting; but, I have nothing else to offer. It is Linton, I mean. How she does stare! It's odd what a savage feeling I have to anything that seems afraid of me! Had I been born where laws are less strict, and tastes¹⁰ less dainty¹¹, I should treat myself to¹² a slow

¹ importunity: troublesome pertinacity in solicitation. (ものを頼む) しつこさ。

² However I disapproved: いくらだめですといっても。 *however*: (arch.) however much; notwithstanding that; although.

³ hinder: to keep back, delay, or stop in action; to put obstacles in the way of; to impede, deter, obstruct, prevent.

⁴ discern: to distinguish (one thing or fact) by the intellect; to recognize or perceive distinctly. 識別する、はっきり認識する。

⁵ capable: having the needful capacity, power, or fitness for (some specified purpose or activity). ここは悪い意味で使っているため、「～しかねない」が適当。(p. 241 注 5 参照)

⁶ conduct: to go with, or before, and show the way to (any one); to lead, escort, guide.

⁷ to be stricken: to be attacked (by, with a disease).

⁸ the Lees: Haworth 村内の地名。

⁹ a journey of pleasure: 二人が遠くまで遊山旅に出かけたとは考えにくい、このあと 'Five nights and four days I (= Nelly) remained, altogether, seeing nobody but Hareton.' (p. 389) という事態になるから、Heathcliff が二人に休暇を与えて家から遠ざけておいたことはたしかだろう。Zillah はともかく、Joseph のような男がどこへ行ったのか、やや気になる設定ではある。

¹⁰ tastes: the fact or condition of liking or preferring something; inclination, liking *for*. 好み、趣味。

¹¹ dainty: possessing or displaying delicate taste, perception, or sensibility; nice, fastidious, particular; sometimes, over-nice. 上品な、(好み)がやかましい。

¹² treat a person to: to entertain with (food or drink, or any enjoyment or gratification); also *fig.* (sometimes ironically). 人を～でもてなす。

vivisection¹ of those two as an evening's amusement.'

He drew in his breath, struck the table, and swore to himself.

'By hell! I hate them!'

'I'm not afraid of you!' exclaimed Catherine, who could not hear the latter part of his speech².

She stepped close up³, her black eyes flashing with passion and resolution.

'Give me that key—I will have it!' she said. 'I wouldn't eat or drink here, if I were starving.'

Heathcliff had the key in his hand that remained on the table. He looked up, seized with a sort of surprise at her boldness, or, possibly, reminded by her voice and glance, of the person from whom she had inherited it.

She snatched⁴ at the instrument⁵, and half succeeded in getting it out of his loosened fingers; but her action recalled him to the present⁶; he recovered it speedily.

'Now, Catherine Linton,' he said, 'stand off⁷, or I shall knock you down; and that will make Mrs Dean mad.'

Regardless of⁸ this warning, she captured his closed hand, and its contents⁹ again.

¹ vivisection: the action of cutting or dissecting some part of a living organism. 生体解剖。

² the latter part of his speech: これは “By hell! I hate them!” の後半ということではなく、その直前のセリフのうち ‘How she does stare!’ 以降を指すと考えられる。そのあたりから口調が独白体になっており、声が低くなったのだろう。

³ step up: to come forward for some purpose; to leave one's place and come close to (a person).

⁴ snatch (at): to make a sudden effort to seize something, as with the hand (at). (いきなり) ～をひったくろうとする。この ‘at’ については p. 367 注 7 参照 (‘catch at, reach at’ などと同じ)。

⁵ instrument: a material thing designed or used for the accomplishment of some mechanical or other physical effect; a mechanical contrivance (usually one that is portable, of simple construction, and wielded or operated by the hand); a tool, implement, weapon. ペンをわざわざ筆記用具というようなもの。

⁶ recalled him to the present: 現実に戻した。

⁷ stand off: (chiefly in commands.) to remain at or retire to a distance; to draw back, go farther away. あっちへ行つてろ。

⁸ regardless of: in spite of; without regard for.

⁹ contents: a thing contained; now only in *pl.* (with *of* or possessive). 「中身」が鍵ひとつであっても ‘contents’ と必ず複数形を取る。

‘We *will* go!’ she repeated, exerting her utmost efforts to cause the iron muscles to relax; and finding that her nails made no impression¹, she applied her teeth pretty sharply.

Heathcliff glanced at me a glance that kept me from interfering a moment. Catherine was too intent² on his fingers to notice his face. He opened them, suddenly, and resigned the object of dispute³; but ere, she had well secured it, he seized her with the liberated hand, and, pulling her on his knee, administered⁴, with the other⁵, a shower of terrific slaps on both sides of the head, each sufficient to have fulfilled his threat, had she been able to fall.

At this diabolical⁶ violence, I rushed on him furiously.

‘You villain!’ I began to cry, ‘you villain!’

A touch on the chest silenced me; I am stout⁷, and soon put out of breath; and, what with that and the rage, I staggered dizzily back, and felt ready to suffocate, or to burst a blood-vessel.

The scene⁸ was over in two minutes; Catherine, released, put her two hands to her temples, and looked just as if she were not sure whether her ears were off or on. She trembled like a reed⁹, poor thing, and leant against the table perfectly bewildered.

‘I know how to chastise¹⁰ children, you see,’ said the scoundrel, grimly¹¹, as he stooped

¹ impression: the effective action of one thing upon another; influence; the effect of such action; a change produced in some passive subject by the operation of an external cause. 効き目、効果。

² intent: aving the mind strenuously bent upon something; earnestly attentive, sedulously occupied, eager, assiduous; bent, resolved (*on, upon*). ～に一心不乱な、没頭している (*on*)。

³ dispute: the act of disputing or arguing against; active verbal contention, controversy, debate.

⁴ administer: *fig.* to dispense, furnish, supply, or give (anything beneficial, or assumed to be beneficial, to the recipient; extended humorously to a *rebuke*, a *blow*, etc.). ここでは、(ありがたいもの＝ビンタ)をお見舞いする、浴びせる。

⁵ with the other: with the other hand.

⁶ diabolical: [daɪəbəl'likəl] characteristic of or befitting the devil; devilish, fiendish, atrociously wicked or malevolent.

⁷ stout: (of persons) thick in the body, not lean or slender; usually in unfavourable sense, inclined to corpulence; often *euphemistically* = corpulent, fat.

⁸ scene: an exhibition of excited or strong feeling between two or more persons; a stormy encounter or interview. 互いに激しい感情をむき出しにすること、衝突、口論。

⁹ reed: one of the tall straight stalks or stems formed by plants of the genera *Phragmites* and *Arundo*. アシ、ヨシ。

¹⁰ chastise: [tʃæstáɪz] to inflict punishment or suffering upon, with a view to amendment; also simply, to punish, to inflict punishment (esp. corporal punishment) on.

¹¹ grimly: with a grim (= formidable in appearance or demeanour) look or air. (とてもかなわないと不安にさせるような) 恐ろしい表情で。

to repossess himself¹ of the key, which had dropped to the floor. ‘Go to Linton now, as I told you; and cry at your ease²! I shall be your father to-morrow—all the father you'll have in a few days³—and you shall have plenty of that⁴—you can bear plenty—you're no weakling—you shall have a daily taste⁵, if I catch such a devil of a temper in your eyes again!’

Cathy ran to me instead of Linton, and knelt down, and put her burning cheek on my lap⁶, weeping aloud. Her cousin had shrunk into a corner of the settle, as quiet as a mouse, congratulating himself, I dare say⁷, that the correction⁸ had lighted on another than him.

Mr Heathcliff, perceiving us all confounded, rose, and, expeditiously⁹ made the tea himself. The cups and saucers were laid ready. He poured it out, and handed me a cup.

‘Wash away your spleen¹⁰,’ he said. ‘And help¹¹ your own naughty pet¹² and mine. It is not poisoned, though I prepared it. I'm going out to seek your horses.’

Our first thought, on his departure, was to force¹³ an exit somewhere. We tried the kitchen door, but that was fastened outside; we looked at the windows—they were too narrow for even Cathy's little figure.

‘Master Linton,’ I cried, seeing we were regularly¹⁴ imprisoned; ‘you know what your

¹ repossess oneself: to regain possession of something. 取り戻す、再び手にする。

² at one's ease: in comfort, without anxiety or annoyance, unconstrained, unembarrassed. 思うさま、存分に。

³ all the father you'll have in a few days: = the only father you'll have in a few days.

⁴ that: = the slap.

⁵ you shall have a daily taste: 毎日ビンタを食らわせてやる。

⁶ lap: the front portion of the body from the waist to the knees of a person seated, considered with its covering garments as the place in or on which a child is nursed or any object held. (座っている人の) ひざ。スカートなどの腰から下の(垂れ下がって折り返しできる)部分に対応する。

⁷ I dare say: presumably. (p. 61 注 3, p. 107 注 6, p. 193 注 4 参照)

⁸ correction: the correcting (of a person) by disciplinary punishment; chastisement, properly with a view to amendment; but frequently in later use (now somewhat arch.) of corporal punishment, flogging. 体罰。

⁹ expeditiously: speedily, with expedition.

¹⁰ spleen: irritable or peevish temper; (arch.) gloominess and irritability; moroseness; melancholia.

¹¹ help: to serve (a person) with food at a meal. ‘to help a person to food (or drink)’ のかたちを取る。ここでは ‘to the tea’ が省略されている。

¹² your own naughty pet: おまえの聞き分けのないペットとは Catherine。‘mine’ が Linton。

¹³ force: to bring about, effect, or produce by force or effort. ‘force an exit’ は ‘force an entry’ (押し入る) の反対で、脱走する。

¹⁴ regularly: (*colloq.* chiefly with participles.) thoroughly, completely.

diabolical father is after¹, and you shall tell us, or I'll box² your ears, as he has done your cousin's.'

'Yes, Linton; you must tell,' said Catherine. 'It was for your sake I came; and it will be wickedly ungrateful if you refuse.'

'Give me some tea, I'm thirsty, and then I'll tell you,' he answered. 'Mrs Dean, go away. I don't like you standing over me. Now, Catherine, you are letting your tears fall into my cup! I won't drink that. Give me another.'

Catherine pushed another to him, and wiped her face. I felt disgusted at the little wretch's composure³, since he was no longer in terror for himself. The anguish he had exhibited on the moor subsided as soon as ever⁴ he entered Wuthering Heights; so I guessed he had been menaced with an awful visitation⁵ of wrath, if he failed in decoying⁶ us there; and, that accomplished, he had no further immediate fears.

'Papa wants us to be married,' he continued, after sipping some of the liquid. 'And he knows your papa wouldn't let us marry now; and he's afraid of my dying, if we wait; so we are to be married in the morning, and you are to stay here all night; and if you do as he wishes, you shall return home next day, and take me with you.'

'Take you with her, pitiful changeling!⁷' I exclaimed. '*You* marry! Why, the man is mad, or he thinks us fools, every one. And, do you imagine that beautiful young lady, that healthy, hearty girl, will tie herself to a little perishing monkey like you? Are you cherishing⁸ the notion that *anybody*, let alone⁹ Miss Catherine Linton, would have you for a husband? You want¹⁰ whipping for bringing us in here at all¹¹, with your dastardly¹

¹ be after: to be in pursuit of, trying to get or do (a thing).

² box: to strike (the cheek, ear, etc.) with the hand. 'box a person's ears' は、(日本語では「耳をなぐる」とはいわないから) 横っ面をなぐる(張る)に相当。

³ composure: composed condition of mind, feelings, or demeanour; tranquillity, calmness, collectedness. 平静さ。ここでは、落ち着き払った様子。

⁴ ever: added for emphasis to the conjunctions *as soon as*, *before*, *ere*, or (= *ere*). 強調語。

⁵ visitation: an affliction or punishment, as from God. (p. 21 注 5 参照)

⁶ decoy: to entice or allure (persons) by the use of cunning and deceitful attractions, *into* a place or situation, *away*, *out*, *from* a situation, *to do* something. おびき寄せる。

⁷ changeling: a child (usually stupid or ugly) supposed to have been left by fairies in exchange for one stolen; (arch.) a half-witted person, idiot, imbecile. ここは後者。

⁸ cherish: to entertain in the mind, harbour fondly, encourage, cling to (a hope, feeling, design, etc.). (p.327 注 8 参照)

⁹ let alone: not to mention. ～はいうまでもなく。

¹⁰ want: to have occasion for, need, require.

¹¹ at all: 肯定文中では、「まったく予想外のことが起こる」という含みがある。「まさか～しようとは」がよく当てはまる。(詳細については p. 42 注 12 参照)

puling² tricks; and—don't look so silly now! I've a very good mind to shake you severely, for your contemptible³ treachery⁴, and your imbecile⁵ conceit.'

I did give him a slight shaking, but it brought on⁶ the cough, and he took to⁷ his ordinary resource⁸ of moaning and weeping, and Catherine rebuked⁹ me.

'Stay all night? No,' she said, looking slowly round. 'Ellen, I'll burn that door down, but I'll get out.'¹⁰

And she would have commenced the execution of her threat directly, but Linton was up in alarm, for his dear self¹¹, again. He clasped her in his two feeble arms, sobbing—

'Won't you have¹² me, and save me—not let me come to the Grange? Oh! darling Catherine! you mustn't go, and leave, after all! You *must* obey my father—you *must*!'

'I must obey my own,' she replied, 'and relieve him from this cruel suspense¹³. The whole night! What would he think? He'll be distressed already.¹⁴ I'll either break or burn a way out of the house. Be quiet! You're in no danger—but, if you hinder me—

¹ dastardly: showing mean or despicable cowardice.

² puling: crying as a child, whining, feebly wailing.

³ contemptible: to be despised or held in contempt; worthy only of contempt; despicable.

⁴ treachery: deceit, cheating, perfidy; violation of faith or betrayal of trust; perfidious conduct. 裏切り。(p. 247 注 4 参照)

⁵ imbecile: [ím-bis-íl, -síl] fatuous, stupid, idiotic.

⁶ bring on: to produce, cause (illness, a state of things).

⁷ take to: to have recourse to; to resort to. (手段として) ～に頼る (訴える)。

⁸ resource: an action or procedure to which one may have recourse in a difficulty or emergency; an expedient, device, shift. 困ったときに使う (ここでは、いつもの) 手。

⁹ rebuke: to reprove, reprimand, chide severely.

¹⁰ I'll burn ... get out.: たとえあのドアを焼き払ってでもここから出ていくわ。'but' は 'unless' に相当し、「but' 以下の目的を達成しなければどうする = どんなことをしても目的を遂げる」、ということ。【参考】 'I'd burn the house down *but* I'd find it', i.e. if I did not find it (without doing so) = even though I should have to burn the house down, I'd find it. (家を焼き払ってでも必ず見つけ出す) という OED 記載の例文に一致する。

¹¹ for his dear self: わが身大切と、わが身かわいさに。

¹² have: to hold, possess, or accept in some relation, as of kindred or relative position. 血縁・姻戚関係を有する、結ぶ。ここでは、一緒になる (ことを受け入れる)。

¹³ suspense: a state of mental uncertainty, with expectation of or desire for decision, and usually some apprehension or anxiety; the condition of waiting, esp. of being kept waiting, for an expected decision, assurance, or issue. ここでは、待たされる身の不安。

¹⁴ He'll be distressed already.: きっともう心配なさっているわ。'will' は現在のことがらについての推量。'With the notion of futurity obscured or lost: = will prove or turn out to, will be found on inquiry to; may be supposed to, presumably does. (OED)' つまり、「あとで (確かめれば) そうとわかるだろうが」という未来が陰に隠れて「(現在) ～だろうと思う」ということ。【例】 研究社『ライトハウス英和第 2 版』の例文より: That'll be the mailman at the door. [ベルなどを聞いて] 玄関のあれは郵便配達の人だろう (玄関へ行けば確認できる)。It will be snowing in Boston now. 今ごろボストンでは雪が降っているだろう (問い合せれば確認できる)。

Linton, I love papa better than you!’

The mortal¹ terror he felt of Mr Heathcliff’s anger, restored to the boy his coward’s eloquence. Catherine was near distraught²—still, she persisted that she must go home, and tried entreaty, in her turn³, persuading him to subdue⁴ his selfish agony.

While they were thus occupied, our jailer re-entered.

‘Your beasts have trotted off,’ he said, ‘and—Now, Linton! snivelling again? What has she been doing to you? Come, come—have done⁵, and get to bed. In a month or two, my lad, you’ll be able to pay her back⁶ her present tyrannies⁷, with a vigorous hand⁸—you’re pining for pure love, are you not? nothing else in the world—and she shall have you! There, to bed! Zillah won’t be here to-night; you must undress yourself. Hush! hold your noise! Once in your own room, I’ll not come near you, you needn’t fear. By chance⁹ you’ve managed tolerably. I’ll look to¹⁰ the rest.’

He spoke these words, holding the door open for his son to pass; and the latter achieved his exit exactly as a spaniel¹¹ might which suspected the person who attended on it of designing a spiteful squeeze¹².

The lock was re-secured. Heathcliff approached the fire, where my mistress and I stood silent. Catherine looked up, and instinctively raised her hand to her cheek—his neighbourhood revived a painful sensation¹³. Anybody else would have been incapable of regarding the childish act with sternness, but he scowled on her and muttered—

¹ mortal: (of pain, grief, fear, and the like) such as might cause death; deadly in its effects.

² distraught: [dist’r ɔ:t] deeply agitated or troubled; driven to madness.

³ in one’s turn: in one’s due order in the series. (Often also used rhetorically to indicate an act duly or naturally following a similar act on the part of another, but without the notion of pre-arranged succession.) 自分の番が回って来て。ここでは、(Linton がひとしきりしゃべったあと) それにつづいて、今度は自分が。

⁴ subdue: to prevail over, get the better of. ～を克服する。

⁵ have done: to make an end. (p. 147 注 2 および p.239 注 7 参照)

⁶ pay back: to retaliate against or punish.

⁷ tyranny: (an instance of) arbitrary or oppressive exercise of power; unjustly severe use of one’s authority; despotic treatment or influence. 横暴なふるまい。

⁸ with a vigorous hand: with severity.

⁹ by chance: as it falls or fell out; without design. (これほどうまくやるとは思わなかったが) 結果として。

¹⁰ look to: to attend to, take care of, pay attention to.

¹¹ spaniel: a variety of dog characterized by large drooping ears, long silky hair, keen scent, and affectionate nature, some breeds of which are used for sporting purposes, esp. for starting and retrieving game, while others are favourite pet- or toy-dogs. スパニエル犬(猟犬または愛玩犬)。

¹² a spiteful squeeze: 意地悪くドアにはさんでしめつけること。

¹³ his neighbourhood revived a painful sensation: 彼が近くに来たので、さきほどぶたれた痛みがよみがえった。

‘Oh, you are not afraid of me? Your courage is well disguised¹—you seem damnably afraid!’

‘I *am* afraid now,’ she replied, ‘because, if I stay, papa will be miserable; and how can I endure making him miserable—when he—when he—Mr Heathcliff, *let* me go home! I promise to marry Linton—papa would like me to, and I love him—why should you wish to force me to do what I’ll willingly do of myself?’

‘Let him dare to force you!’² I cried. ‘There’s law in the land, thank God there is! though we *be* in an out-of-the-way place. I’d inform³ if he were my own son, and it’s felony without benefit of clergy!’⁴

‘Silence!’ said the ruffian. ‘To the devil⁵ with your clamour⁶! I don’t want *you* to speak. Miss Linton, I shall enjoy myself remarkably in thinking your father will be miserable; I shall not sleep for satisfaction. You could have hit on no surer way of fixing your residence under my roof, for the next twenty-four hours, than informing me that such an event would follow⁷. As to your promise to marry Linton; I’ll take care you shall keep it, for you shall not quit this place till it is fulfilled.’

‘Send Ellen, then, to let papa know I’m safe!’ exclaimed Catherine, weeping bitterly. ‘Or marry me now. Poor papa! Ellen, he’ll think we’re lost. What shall we do?’

‘Not he! He’ll think you are tired of waiting on him, and run off, for a little amusement,’ answered Heathcliff. ‘You cannot deny that you entered my house of your

¹ Your courage is well disguised.: 本当は度胸があるくせに、びくびくした顔をするとはたいしたもんだ、という皮肉。 *disguise*: to conceal or cloak the real state or character of (anything) by a counterfeit show or appearance.

² Let him dare to force you!: 無理強いできるものならさせてごらんなさい!

³ inform: to make an accusation. ここは、(たとえわが子でも) 訴え出ます。

⁴ benefit of clergy: 聖職者特権。the privilege of exemption from trial by a secular court, allowed to or claimed by clergymen arraigned for felony (abolished in 1827). ここは「教会の認可なき結婚 (marriage without the sanction of the church) すなわち重罪」と解する翻訳もあるが、PENGUIN版の巻末注は、‘Nelly’s point is that the crime is so grievous that there will be no exemption or escape from punishment.’ つまり「聖職者特権でも免れぬ重罪」と取っている。

⁵ to the devil: = go to the devil: to go to ruin or perdition (in the imperative, expressing angry impatience, and desire to be rid of the person addressed.).

⁶ clamour: loud shouting or outcry, vociferation; esp. the excited outcry of vehement appeal, complaint, or opposition

⁷ such an event: that your father would be miserable. ここは回りくどいいいかただが、「おまえの口からそうと聞いた以上、今後二十四時間、どうしてもこの家にいてもらうことに決まった」。
event: that which follows upon a course of proceedings; a consequence, result.

own accord¹, in contempt of² his injunctions to the contrary³. And it is quite natural that you should desire amusement at your age; and that you would weary of nursing a sick man, and that man, *only* your father. Catherine, his happiest days were over when your days began. He cursed you, I dare say, for coming into the world (I did, at least). And it would just do⁴ if he cursed you as *he* went out of it. I'd join him.⁵ I don't love you. How should I? Weep away. As far as I can see, it will be your chief diversion hereafter: unless Linton make amends for⁶ other losses⁷; and your provident⁸ parent appears to fancy he⁹ may. His letters of advice and consolation entertained me vastly. In his last, he recommended my jewel¹⁰ to be careful of his; and kind to her when he got her. Careful and kind—that's paternal¹¹! But Linton requires his whole stock of care and kindness for himself. Linton can play the little tyrant well. He'll undertake to torture any number of cats if their teeth be drawn, and their claws pared¹². You'll be able to tell his uncle fine tales of his *kindness* when you get home again, I assure you.'

'You're right there!' I said: 'explain your son's character. Show his resemblance to yourself; and then, I hope, Miss Cathy will think twice¹³ before she takes the cockatrice!¹⁴'

'I don't much mind speaking of his amiable qualities now,' he answered, 'because she must either accept him, or remain a prisoner, and you along with her, till your master dies. I can detain you both, quite concealed, here. If you doubt, encourage her to retract¹⁵ her word, and you'll have an opportunity of judging!'

¹ of one's own accord: 自分から進んで。(p. 170 注 2 および p. 188 注 1 参照)

² in contempt of: ～をないがしろにして。

³ his injunctions to the contrary: してはならぬという父親のいいつけ。 *to the contrary*: to the opposite effect; in opposition to, or reversal of, what is stated. 'his injunctions' にかかることに注意。【参考】 a rumor *to the contrary* それと反対のうわさ。(研究社『リーダーズ英和辞典』)

⁴ do: to be fitting or appropriate. (おまえが生まれたとき呪ったのなら) 自分の死ぬときに呪ってちょうどいい。

⁵ I'd join him.: I'd join him in cursing you. おれもいっしょに呪ってやろう。

⁶ make amends for: to compensate or make up for.

⁷ other losses: 'other losses than the loss of your father' (父のほかに失うもの) ということだろうから、財産などの諸損失。Edgar は二人が結婚すれば娘は共同相続人になるから (p. 304 参照) 安心できると思いこんでいた。

⁸ provident: foreseeing. 先に見える、先見の明ある。

⁹ he: = Linton.

¹⁰ my jewel: Linton. 'his' はもちろん 'his jewel = Catherine' のこと。

¹¹ paternal: characteristic of a father; fatherly. 父親らしい。

¹² pare: to trim by cutting off projecting, irregular, or superficial parts; to cut close to the edge so as to make even or neat.

¹³ think twice: to hesitate, change one's mind (about), decide against (something). 考えなおす。

¹⁴ cockatrice: [kɒ'kətrɪs, -trɪs] a serpent, identified with the basilisk, fabulously said to kill by its mere glance, and to be hatched from a cock's egg. (p. 253 注 5 *basilisk* 参照)

¹⁵ retract: to withdraw, recall, revoke, rescind (a decree, declaration, promise, etc.).

‘I’ll not retract my word,’ said Catherine. ‘I’ll marry him, within this hour¹, if I may go to Thrushcross Grange afterwards. Mr Heathcliff, you’re a cruel man, but you’re not a fiend; and you won’t, from *mere* malice, destroy, irrevocably², all my happiness. If papa thought I had left him, on purpose; and if he died before I returned, could I bear to live? I’ve given over³ crying; but I’m going to kneel here, at your knee; and I’ll not get up, and I’ll not take my eyes from your face, till you look back at me! No, don’t turn away! *do* look! You’ll see nothing to provoke you. I don’t hate you. I’m not angry that you struck me. Have you never loved *anybody* in all your life, uncle? *never*? Ah! you must look once—I’m so wretched—you can’t help being sorry and pitying me.’

‘Keep your eft’s⁴ fingers off, and move, or I’ll kick you!’ cried Heathcliff, brutally repulsing⁵ her. ‘I’d rather be hugged by a snake. How the devil can you dream of fawning on⁶ me? I *detest* you!’

He shrugged his shoulders—shook himself, indeed, as if his flesh crept⁷ with aversion; and thrust back his chair: while I got up, and opened my mouth, to commence a downright torrent of abuse; but I was rendered dumb in the middle of the first sentence, by a threat that I should be shown into a room by myself, the very next syllable I uttered.⁸

It was growing dark—we heard a sound of voices at the garden gate. Our host hurried out, instantly; he had his wits about him⁹; *we* had not. There was a talk of two or three minutes, and he returned alone.

‘I thought it had been your cousin Hareton,’ I observed to Catherine. ‘I wish he would arrive! Who knows but¹⁰ he might take our part?’

¹ within this hour: 文字どおりには「この一時間内に」だが、ここでは ‘without delay, forthwith’ (ただちに) という意味合いだろう。

² irrevocably: [irévəkəblɪ] so as not to admit of being called or brought back; beyond recall or recovery. 取り返しがつかぬほど。

³ give over: to leave off, finish, cease from (an action)

⁴ eft: a small lizard or lizard-like animal; a newt. イモリ。

⁵ repulse: to drive or beat back (an assailant); to repel by force of arms. 「敵を撃退する」というのはちょっとおおげさ。ここでは、ぐいと突きはねた。

⁶ fawn on: (of a dog, etc.) to show delight at the presence of; to lavish caresses on, to caress. じゃれる、機嫌を取る。

⁷ creep: (of the skin or flesh, less usually of the person himself) to have a sensation as of things creeping over the skin; to be affected with a nervous shrinking or shiver (as a result of fear, horror, or repugnance). むずむずする、身の毛がよだつ。

⁸ a threat ... I uttered: もう一言でもいったら、私ひとりだけ (ほかの) 部屋へ連れていくぞ、という脅し。

⁹ have one’s wits about one: to have one’s mental powers in full exercise, to be mentally alert.

¹⁰ but: (= but that) that ... not. つまり ‘Who knows (= no one knows) *that* he might *not* take our part?’ と考え、「彼が味方してくれないともかぎらない」。

‘It was three servants sent to seek you from the Grange,’ said Heathcliff, overhearing me. ‘You should have opened a lattice, and called out; but I could swear that chit¹ is glad you didn’t. She’s glad to be obliged to² stay, I’m certain.’

At³ learning the chance we had missed, we both gave vent to⁴ our grief without control; and he allowed us to wail on till nine o’clock; then he bid us go upstairs, through the kitchen, to Zillah’s chamber; and I whispered my companion to obey; perhaps, we might contrive to get through the window there, or into a garret, and out by its skylight⁵.

The window, however, was narrow, like those below, and the garret trap⁶ was safe from our attempts; for we were fastened⁷ in as before.

We neither of us lay down: Catherine took her station by the lattice⁸, and watched anxiously for⁹ morning—a deep sigh being the only answer I could obtain to my frequent entreaties that she would try to rest.

I seated myself in a chair, and rocked, to and fro, passing harsh judgment on¹⁰ my many derelictions¹¹ of duty; from which, it struck me then, all the misfortunes of my employers sprang¹². It was not the case¹³, in reality, I am aware; but it was in my imagination that dismal night; and I thought Heathcliff himself less guilty than I.

¹ chit: a person considered as no better than a child; now, mostly of a girl or young woman.

² be obliged to (do): to be forced (or compelled) *to do* something. 余儀なく～する、～せざるをえない。

³ at: introducing the occasion on which a fact or action ensues, and hence the occasioning circumstance, or cause. 原因を示す。ここは、チャンスを逃したと知って。

⁴ give vent to: to give outlet, expression, or utterance to (an emotion, faculty, etc.); to relieve in this way. (感情)を吐き出す、あらわにする。ここでは、抑えようもなく泣きくずれる。

⁵ skylight: a small opening in a roof, or in the ceiling of a room, filled in with glass, for admitting daylight. 天窓。なお、この定義からもわかるとおり、穴・開口部(くぼみ・へこみ・ひび割れも同じ)は前置詞 ‘in’ を取る。

⁶ trap: (= trap-door) a door, either sliding or moving on hinges, and flush with the surface, in a floor, roof, or ceiling, or in the stage of a theatre. (閉じると床や天井と同一平面をなす) はね上げ戸、落とし戸、引き戸。

⁷ fasten: to make fast (a door, etc.) with a latch, bolt, etc., or (an envelope, etc.) with a seal. Hence, to fasten (a person or animal) *in* or *out* (also with *up*). 天井の ‘trap’ がどうしても開かなかったのは、ただ閉じ込められたのではなく、「どの戸にも鍵をかけて」閉じ込められたから。

⁸ took her station by the lattice: (兵隊などが持ち場 (a position assigned to a man on duty) につくように) 窓際を場所に定めた。

⁹ watch for: to look or wait attentively and expectantly for.

¹⁰ pass harsh judgment on: ～にきびしい判断を下す。ここでは、自分の数々の怠慢ををきびしく責めること。

¹¹ dereliction: a morally wrong or reprehensible abandonment or neglect.

¹² spring: to take rise, to originate or proceed. ～から生ずる (from)。

¹³ the case: the actual state or position of matters; the fact. *it is not the case*: it is not the fact, it is not what actually is or happens.

At seven o'clock he came, and inquired if Miss Linton had risen.

She ran to the door immediately, and answered—

‘Yes.’

‘Here, then,’ he said, opening it, and pulling her out.

I rose to follow, but he turned the lock again. I demanded my release.

‘Be patient,’ he replied; ‘I’ll send up your breakfast in a while.’

I thumped¹ on the panels, and rattled² the latch angrily; and Catherine asked why I was still shut up? He answered, I must try to endure it another hour, and they went away.

I endured it two or three hours; at length, I heard a footstep, not Heathcliff’s.

‘I’ve brought you something to eat,’ said a voice; ‘open t’ door!’

Complying³ eagerly, I beheld Hareton, laden with food enough to last me all day.

‘Tak it!’ he added, thrusting the tray into my hand.

‘Stay one minute,’ I began.

‘Nay!’ cried he, and retired, regardless of any prayers I could pour forth to detain him.

And there I remained enclosed, the whole day, and the whole of the next night; and another, and another. Five nights and four days I remained, altogether⁴, seeing nobody but Hareton, once every morning, and he was a model⁵ of a jailer—surly, and dumb, and deaf to every attempt at moving his sense of justice or compassion.

¹ thump: to strike or beat with force or violence, with an abrupt dull noise; to knock or bump with force. ドンドンと強く叩く。

² rattle: To make (a thing or things) rattle (=to give out a rapid succession of short sharp sounds). ～を（動かして）ガチャガチャ（ガタガタ）いわせる。

³ comply: to act in accordance with, and fulfilment of, wishes, desires, requests, demands, conditions, or regulations. いわれたとおりにする。(p. 155 注 5、p. 353 注 10、p. 364 注 8 参照)

⁴ altogether: in all, in total amount. 合計で、合わせて。

⁵ model: a person or thing eminently worthy of imitation; a perfect exemplar of some excellence. 模範とするに足る人（もの）、鑑。

Chapter XIV (XXVIII)

On the fifth morning, or rather afternoon, a different step approached—lighter and shorter—and, this time, the person entered the room. It was Zillah; donned in her scarlet shawl, with a black silk bonnet on her head, and a willow basket swung to her arm.

‘Eh, dear! Mrs Dean,’ she exclaimed. ‘Well! there is a talk about you at Gimmerton. I never thought, but you were sunk in the Blackhorse marsh, and Missy with you, till master told me you’d been found, and he’d lodged¹ you here! What, and you must have got on an island², sure? And how long were you in the hole³? Did master save you, Mrs Dean? But you’re not so thin—you’ve not been so poorly⁴, have you?’

‘Your master is a true scoundrel!’ I replied. ‘But he shall answer for⁵ it. He needn’t have raised⁶ that tale—it shall all be laid bare!’⁷

‘What do you mean?’ asked Zillah. ‘It’s not his tale—they tell that in the village—about your being lost in the marsh; and I calls to Earnshaw, when I come in—’

“‘Eh, they’s queer things, Mr Hareton, happened since I went off. It’s a sad pity of that likely⁸ young lass, and cant⁹ Nelly Dean.’

‘He stared. I thought he had not heard aught¹⁰, so I told him the rumour.

‘The master listened, and he just smiled to himself, and said—

“‘If they have been in the marsh, they are out now, Zillah. Nelly Dean is lodged, at this minute, in your room. You can tell her to flit¹¹, when you go up; here is the key. The

¹ lodge: to provide with sleeping quarters or temporary habitation; to receive into one's house for the night. 人に（仮の）宿を提供する、泊める。

² island: an elevated piece of land surrounded by marsh.

³ hole: a deep place in a stream, pond, etc.

⁴ poorly: (colloq. *always predicative*) somewhat ill; unwell, indisposed. (p. 351 注 3 参照)

⁵ answer for: to meet the charge in regard to (an act) practically; to suffer the consequences, atone for, make amends. ここは、あの人には償いをして（責任を取って）もらうわよ。

⁶ raise: to cause, originate, give rise to, bring about, set going (a report or rumour, slander, etc.). ここでは、作り話をいいふらす。

⁷ lay bare: to uncover, open to view; to disclose.

⁸ likely: (now U.S. and dial.) good-looking, handsome.

⁹ cant: (*Sc.* and *north.* dial.) bold, brisk, courageous, hearty, lusty, lively, hale.

¹⁰ aught: anything.

¹¹ flit: to shift one's position, either in a material or immaterial sense; to be gone, depart, pass away, remove. (p. 49 注 8 参照)

bog-water got into her head, and she would have run home, quite flighty¹, but I fixed her, till she came round to her senses. You can bid her go to the Grange, at once, if she be able, and carry a message from me, that her young lady will follow in time to attend the Squire's² funeral.”

‘Mr Edgar is not dead?’ I gasped. ‘Oh! Zillah, Zillah!’

‘No, no—sit you down, my good mistress,’ she replied, ‘you're right³ sickly⁴ yet. He's not dead: Dr. Kenneth thinks he may last another day—I met him on the road and asked.’

Instead of sitting down, I snatched my outdoor things⁵, and hastened below, for the way was free.

On entering the house, I looked about for some one to give information of Catherine.

The place was filled with sunshine, and the door stood wide open, but nobody seemed at hand⁶.

As I hesitated whether to go off at once, or return and seek my mistress, a slight cough drew my attention to the hearth.

Linton lay on the settle, sole tenant⁷, sucking a stick of sugar-candy, and pursuing my movements with apathetic⁸ eyes.

‘Where is Miss Catherine?’ I demanded, sternly⁹, supposing I could frighten him into giving intelligence¹⁰, by catching him thus, alone.

¹ flighty: guided by whim or fancy rather than by judgement or settled purpose; of weak or disordered intellect, crazy, light-headed.

² squire: a country gentleman or landed proprietor, esp. one who is the principal landowner in a village or district. 地主 (様)。³ ‘Squire’ と大文字ではじまるのは ‘Squire Linton’ という敬称で呼ばれることがあったからだろう。

³ right: very.

⁴ sickly: *adj.* in a poor state of health; (of the mind) weak, disordered.

⁵ things: (pl.) *colloq.* articles of apparel; clothes, garments; esp. such as women put on to go out in, in addition to the indoor dress. (室内着に重ねて着る) 外出着。

⁶ at hand: Within easy reach; near; close by.

⁷ sole tenant: by himself, alone. *tenant: fig.* one who or that which inhabits or occupies any place

⁸ apathetic: unemotional; indifferent to what is calculated to move the feelings or excite attention. 無感情な、無関心な。(p. 171 注 4 参照)

⁹ sternly: with sternness of temper, aspect, utterance, etc.; severely, harshly.

¹⁰ intelligence: knowledge as to events, communicated by or obtained from another; information, news, tidings. (p. 182 注 2、p. 213 注 7)

He sucked on¹ like an innocent²,

‘Is she gone?’ I said.

‘No,’ he replied; ‘she's upstairs—she's not to go; we won't let her.’

‘You won't let her, little idiot!’ I exclaimed. ‘Direct me to her room immediately, or I'll make you sing out³ sharply.’

‘Papa would make you sing out, if you attempted to get there,’ he answered. ‘He says I'm not to be soft with Catherine—she's my wife, and it's shameful that she should wish to leave me! He says, she hates me, and wants me to die, that she may have my money, but she shan't have it; and she shan't go home! she never shall! she may cry, and be sick as much as she pleases!’

He resumed his former occupation, closing his lids, as if he meant to drop asleep.

‘Master Heathcliff,’ I resumed, ‘have you forgotten all Catherine's kindness to you, last winter, when you affirmed you loved her, and when she brought you books, and sang you songs, and came many a time through wind and snow to see you? She wept to miss⁴ one evening, because you would be disappointed; and you felt then, that she was a hundred times too good to you, and now you believe the lies your father tells, though you know he detests⁵ you both! And you join him against her. That's fine gratitude, is it not?’

The corner of Linton's mouth fell, and he took the sugar-candy from his lips.

‘Did she come to Wuthering Heights, because she hated you?’ I continued. ‘Think for yourself! As to your money, she does not even know that you will have any. And you say she's sick; and yet, you leave her alone, up there in a strange⁶ house. *You*, who have felt what it is to be so neglected! You could pity your own sufferings, and she pitied them, too, but you won't pity hers! I shed tears, Master Heathcliff, you see—an elderly woman, and

¹ on: continuously.

² innocent: one wanting in ordinary knowledge or intelligence; a simpleton, a silly fellow; a half-wit, an idiot.

³ sing out: to cry out.

⁴ miss: to omit the performance of (a customary or expected action); to fail or neglect to keep (an appointment).

⁵ detest: to feel abhorrence of; to hate or dislike intensely; to abhor, abominate. (p. 315 注 1 参照)

⁶ strange: (of a place or locality) other than one's own. よその、他人の。すでに何度も来ているのだから、‘unknown, unfamiliar’ は不適當。

a servant merely—and you, after pretending such affection, and having reason to worship her, almost, store every tear you have for yourself, and lie there quite at ease. Ah! you're a heartless, selfish boy!

'I can't stay with her,' he answered crossly. 'I'll not stay, by myself. She cries so I can't bear it. And she won't give over, though I say I'll call my father—I did call him once; and he threatened to strangle her, if she was not quiet; but she began again, the instant he left the room; moaning and grieving, all night long, though I screamed for¹ vexation that I couldn't sleep.'

'Is Mr Heathcliff out?' I inquired, perceiving that the wretched creature had no power to sympathize with his cousin's mental tortures.

'He's in the court,' he replied, 'talking to Dr. Kenneth who says uncle is dying, truly, at last—I'm glad, for I shall be master of the Grange after him—Catherine always spoke of it as *her* house. It isn't hers! It's mine—papa says everything she has is mine. All her nice books are mine—she offered to give me them, and her pretty birds, and her pony Minny, if I would get the key of our room, and let her out; but I told her she had nothing to give, they were all, all mine². And then she cried, and took a little picture from her neck, and said I should have that—two pictures in a gold case—on one side her mother, and on the other, uncle, when they were young. That was yesterday—I said *they* were mine, too; and tried to get them from her. The spiteful thing wouldn't let me; she pushed me off, and hurt me. I shrieked out—that frightens her—she heard papa coming, and she broke the hinges and divided the case, and gave me her mother's portrait; the other she attempted to hide; but papa asked what was the matter and I explained it. He took the one I had away, and ordered her to resign³ hers to me; she refused, and he—he struck her down, and wrenched it off the chain, and crushed it with his foot.'

'And were you pleased to see her struck?' I asked: having my designs in encouraging his talk⁴.

¹ for: (of an efficient or operative cause) in consequence of, by reason of, as the effect of. (Now chiefly after comparatives; otherwise usu. replaced by *from, of, through*.)

² all mine: (PENGUIN 版注 :) Since Edgar Linton has failed to tie up* his property in trusts (see p. 397), Linton is correct in his assertion since, upon her marriage to him, all her property becomes his. **tie up*: to invest or place (money or property) in such a way as to prevent it from being spent or alienated. (資金・財産を流用できぬよう拘束する)

³ resign: to relinquish, surrender, give up, or hand over (something *to* a person). (p. 287 注 12, p.363 注 1 参照)

⁴ having ... his talk: 話をうながしたのはねらいがありまして。designs: (pl.) a hostile or aggressive project or scheme having evil or selfish motives. たくらみ、陰謀。

‘I winked¹,’ he answered. ‘I wink to see my father strike a dog, or a horse, he does it so hard—yet I was glad at first—she deserved punishing for pushing me: but when papa was gone, she made me come to the window and showed me her cheek cut on the inside, against² her teeth, and her mouth filling with blood; and then she gathered up the bits of the picture, and went and sat down with her face to the wall, and she has never spoken to me since; and I sometimes think she can't speak for pain. I don't like to think so! but she's a naughty thing for crying continually; and she looks so pale and wild, I'm afraid of her!’

‘And you can get the key if you choose?’ I said.

‘Yes, when I am upstairs,’ he answered; ‘but I can't walk upstairs now.’

‘In what apartment is it?’ I asked.

‘Oh,’ he cried, ‘I shan't tell *you* where it is! It is our secret. Nobody, neither Hareton nor Zillah, are to know. There! you've tired me—go away, go away!’ And he turned his face on to his arm, and shut his eyes, again.

I considered it best to depart without seeing Mr Heathcliff; and bring a rescue³ for my young lady, from the Grange.

On reaching it, the astonishment of my fellow-servants to see me, and their joy also, was intense; and when they heard that their little mistress was safe, two or three were about to⁴ hurry up, and shout the news at Mr Edgar's door; but I bespoke⁵ the announcement of it, myself.

How changed I found him, even in those few days! He lay an image of sadness, and resignation⁶, waiting⁷ his death. Very young he looked: though his actual age was

¹ wink: to ‘shut one's eyes’ to something faulty, wrong, or improper. (p. 87 注 3, p. 181 注 7 参照)

² against: toward and into contact with; into direct collision with. ～に衝突して、当たって。

³ rescue: saving from danger or destruction, etc.; succour, deliverance. ‘bring a rescue’ 助けをよこす。

⁴ be about to (do): be on the point of (doing). まさに～しようとする。

⁵ bespeak: to arrange for, engage beforehand. (p. 375 注 11 参照)

⁶ lay an image of sadness, and resignation: 悲しみとあきらめそのものの姿で横たわっていた。‘to lie *asleep, sick, dead, in a fever*, etc.’ のように ‘lie+状態を表す補語’ の例。【類例】‘1887 E. BERDOE *St. Bernard* 68 The ... room where she *lay a cripple* for so many years. (*OED*)’ (かたわの体で寝ていた)。いずれの例も ‘to be in a prostrate or recumbent position’ (体を横たえた状態にある) ことは共通している。

⁷ wait: *vt.* to look forward (esp. with desire or apprehension) to (some future event or contingency); to continue stationary or quiescent, in expectation of (a person or thing, an event). (なにかが起こるの) を期待して待つ、(人・もの・出来事) をじっと待つ。現在ふつう ‘wait for’ を用い、他動詞としては ‘Now somewhat rare: usually superseded by *await* (*OED*)’。

thirty-nine, one would have called him ten years younger, at least. He thought of Catherine, for he murmured her name. I touched his hand, and spoke.

‘Catherine is coming, dear master!’ I whispered, ‘she is alive, and well; and will be here I hope to-night.’

I trembled at the first effects of this intelligence¹: he half rose up, looked eagerly round the apartment, and then sunk back in a swoon².

As soon as he recovered, I related our compulsory³ visit, and detention⁴ at the Heights: I said Heathcliff forced me to go in, which was not quite true; I uttered as little as possible against Linton; nor did I describe all his father's brutal conduct—my intentions being to add no bitterness, if I could help it, to his already overflowing cup⁵.

He divined that one of his enemy's purposes was to secure the personal property, as well as the estate, to his son, or rather himself; yet why he did not wait till his decease, was a puzzle to my master, because ignorant how nearly he and his nephew would quit the world together.

However, he felt that his will had better be altered—instead of leaving Catherine's fortune at her own disposal⁶, he determined to put it in the hands of trustees⁷, for her use during life; and for her children, if she had any, after her. By that means it could not fall to Mr Heathcliff should Linton die⁸.

Having received his orders, I dispatched a man to fetch the attorney⁹, and four more,

¹ intelligence: information, news. (p. 182 注 2、p. 213 注 7、p. 393 注 10 参照)

² in a swoon: 気を失って。 *swoon*: a fainting-fit.

³ compulsory: compelled, forced, enforced, obligatory.

⁴ detention: keeping in custody or confinement.

⁵ cup: *fig.* (chiefly in the sense derived from various passages of Scripture): something to be partaken of, endured or enjoyed; an experience, portion, lot (painful or pleasurable, more commonly the former). ここでは ‘his bitter cup’ (苦杯=苦い経験) をそれ以上苦くさせまいとしたこと。

⁶ disposal: power or right to dispose of, make use of, or deal with as one pleases; control, command, management: usually in phr. *at (in) one's disposal*. 処分権、自由裁量。

⁷ trustee: *Law. spec.* one to whom property is entrusted to be administered for the benefit of another. 受託者、管財人。

⁸ should Linton die: = if Linton should die.

⁹ attorney: [ətɔːrni] a person, esp. a lawyer, appointed to act for another in business or legal matters. 弁護士。【参考】ここでも区別されていないように、一般的には ‘lawyer’ と同義に使われるが、厳密に言えば、商業的・法律的事務の代理人 (attorney in fact, private attorney) と、事務弁護士 (attorney-at-law, public attorney) とがある。英国では後者の名称は 1873 年裁判法によって ‘barrister’ (法廷弁護士) より下級の ‘solicitor’ (事務弁護士) と改称された。

provided with serviceable¹ weapons, to demand² my young lady of her jailer. Both parties were delayed very late. The single servant returned first.

He said Mr Green, the lawyer, was out when he arrived at his house, and he had to wait two hours for his re-entrance: and then Mr Green told him he had a little business in the village, that must be done, but he would be at Thrushcross Grange before morning.

The four men came back unaccompanied³, also. They brought word that Catherine was ill, too ill to quit her room, and Heathcliff would not suffer them to see her.

I scolded the stupid fellows well, for⁴ listening to that tale, which I would not carry to my master; resolving to take a whole bevy⁵ up to the Heights, at daylight, and storm⁶ it, literally⁷, unless the prisoner were quietly surrendered⁸ to us.

Her father *shall* see her⁹, I vowed, and vowed again, if that devil be killed on his own door-stones in trying to prevent it!

Happily, I was spared¹⁰ the journey, and the trouble.

I had gone down stairs at three o'clock to fetch a jug of water; and was passing through the hall with it in my hand, when a sharp knock, at the front door, made me jump.

'Oh! it is Green,'—I said, recollecting myself—'only¹¹ Green,' and I went on, intending to send somebody else to open it; but the knock was repeated, not loud, and still importunately.¹²

¹ serviceable: capable of being used, worn, cleaned, repaired, etc. easily. 使いやすい、着やすい、手入れしやすい、など。ここでは「手ごろな」が適当。

² demand: to ask for (a thing) peremptorily, imperiously, urgently (*of or from* a person). ('demand a thing of a person' のかたちで、人に即刻ものを渡すよう要求する。)

³ unaccompanied: = not accompanied by (*or with*) Catherine. Catherine を連れずに、空手で。

⁴ for: in requital of. ~の罰として、(善行・悪事の) 報いとして。

⁵ bevy: [bévi] the proper term for a company of maidens or ladies, of roes, of quails, or of larks; a company of any kind. ここは後者。

⁶ storm: to make a vigorous assault on (a fortified position).

⁷ literally: actually; without exaggeration or inaccuracy. まさしく。

⁸ surrender: to give up (something) out of one's own possession or power into that of another who has or asserts a claim to it. (権利として要求する人に) 引き渡す。

⁹ His father shall see her: (この私が) きっと旦那さまをお嬢さんに会わせてさしあげる。

¹⁰ spare: to save or relieve (a person, one's feelings, etc.) from (something). 【参考】I was *spared* the trouble. その苦労はしないで済んだ。(研究社『リーダーズ英和辞典』)

¹¹ only: no one or nothing more or else than. ~以外ではない、~にほかならぬ。

¹² importunately: with pressing or persistent action or purpose; pressingly.

I put the jug on the bannister¹, and hastened to admit² him. myself.

The harvest moon³ shone clear outside. It was not the attorney. My own sweet little mistress sprung on my neck, sobbing,

‘Ellen! Ellen! Is papa alive?’

‘Yes!’ I cried—‘yes, my angel, he is! God be thanked⁴, you are safe with us again!’

She wanted to run, breathless as she was⁵, upstairs to Mr Linton's room, but I compelled her to sit down on a chair, and made her drink⁶, and washed her pale face, chafing⁷ it into a faint colour with my apron. Then I said I must go first, and tell of⁸ her arrival; imploring her to say, she should be happy with young Heathcliff. She stared, but soon comprehending why I counselled her to utter the falsehood, she assured me she would not complain.

I couldn't abide⁹ to be present at their meeting. I stood outside the chamber-door, a quarter of an hour, and hardly ventured near the bed, then.

All was composed¹⁰, however; Catherine's despair was as silent as her father's joy. She supported him calmly, in appearance; and he fixed on her features his raised eyes that seemed dilating¹¹ with ecstasy.

He died blissfully¹², Mr Lockwood; he died so. Kissing her cheek, he murmured,

¹ bannister (= banister) : (usually in *pl.*) slender upright posts or rails, esp. those guarding the side of a staircase, and supporting the handrail; often applied to the whole structure of uprights and handrail. ここでは後者。

² admit: to allow to enter, let in, receive (a person or thing).

³ harvest moon: the moon which is full within a fortnight of the autumnal equinox (22 or 23 Sept.), and which rises for several nights nearly at the same hour, at points successively further north on the eastern horizon. わが国では中秋の満月。

⁴ God be thanked!: 「ああ、よかった」、「まあ、うれしい」など。‘God be praised!’ とも。

⁵ breathless as she was: though she was breathless. 文脈によっては、‘as (= because) she was breathless’ の意味にもなる。

⁶ made her drink: made her drink some water.

⁷ chafe: to rub (esp. the skin to restore warmth or sensation). こする、こすって温める。

⁸ of: concerning, about, with regard to, in reference to.

⁹ abide: to bear, endure, tolerate, put up with; rarely (now never) in a simple affirmative sentence, but in such as ‘I cannot abide, I can scarcely abide, who can abide?’ (否定文・疑問文中で) 耐える、忍ぶ。

¹⁰ All was composed: 室内 (の二人) は平静そのものだった。 *all*: everything in a particular scene or sequence of events. *composed*: calm and self-possessed, tranquil.

¹¹ dilate: to become wider or larger; to spread out, widen, enlarge, expand.

¹² blissfully: in a blissful manner, happily, joyously.

‘I am going to her, and you darling child shall come to us;’ and never stirred or spoke again, but continued that rapt¹, radiant gaze, till his pulse imperceptibly² stopped, and his soul departed. None could have noticed the exact minute of his death, it was so entirely without a struggle³.

Whether Catherine had spent her tears, or whether the grief were too weighty to let them flow, she sat there dry-eyed till the sun rose—she sat till noon, and would still have remained, brooding over that deathbed, but I insisted on her coming away, and taking some repose.

It was well I succeeded in removing her, for at dinner-time appeared the lawyer, having called at Wuthering Heights to get his instructions how to behave. He had sold himself to Mr Heathcliff, and that was the cause of his delay in obeying my master's summons. Fortunately, no thought of worldly affairs crossed the latter's mind, to disturb him, after his daughter's arrival.

Mr Green took upon⁴ himself to order everything and everybody about the place. He gave all the servants but me, notice to quit. He would have carried⁵ his delegated⁶ authority to the point of insisting that Edgar Linton should not be buried beside his wife, but in the chapel, with his family. There was the will, however, to hinder that, and my loud protestations⁷ against any infringement⁸ of its directions.

The funeral was hurried over; Catherine, Mrs Linton Heathcliff now, was suffered⁹ to stay at the Grange, till her father's corpse had quitted¹⁰ it.

She told me that her anguish had at last spurred¹¹ Linton to incur the risk of¹² liberating her. She heard the men I sent, disputing at the door, and she gathered the

¹ rapt: transported with some emotion, ravished, enraptured.

² imperceptibly: in an imperceptible manner or degree; so as not to be perceived. いつの間にか。

³ struggle: a strong effort to continue to breathe, as in the death-agony or under conditions tending to produce suffocation. 最期の身もだえ。

⁴ take upon (or on): to undertake; to begin to handle or deal with.

⁵ carry: to exhibit, display.

⁶ delegated: entrusted or committed (to a deputy). 委任された。

⁷ protestation: a solemn or formal declaration of dissent or objection; a protest. (p. 149 注 2、p. 332 注 11 参照)

⁸ infringement: a breaking or breach (of a law, obligation, right, etc.); breach, violation.

⁹ suffer: to allow or permit a person, animal, or inanimate thing to be or to do so-and-so. (頻出。p. 185 注 13 など参照)

¹⁰ quit: to leave, go away or depart from (a place or person) (p. 257 注 5、p. 318 注 3 参照)。

¹¹ spur: (fig.) to incite, impel, or stimulate; to urge or prompt.

¹² incur the risk of: to run the risk of. ～という危険を冒す。

sense of Heathcliff's answer.¹ It drove her desperate—Linton, who had been conveyed up to the little parlour soon after I left, was terrified into fetching the key before his father re-ascended.

He had the cunning to unlock, and re-lock the door, without shutting it; and when he should have gone to bed², he begged to sleep with Hareton, and his petition was granted, for once.

Catherine stole out before break of day. She dare not try the doors, lest the dogs should raise an alarm; she visited the empty chambers, and examined their windows; and, luckily, lighting on³ her mother's, she got easily out of its lattice, and on to the ground, by means of the fir-tree, close by. Her accomplice⁴ suffered for his share⁵ in the escape, notwithstanding his timid contrivances⁶.

¹ gathered the sense of Heathcliff's answer: Heathcliff の返答の意味を察した。('gather' については p. 223 注 2 参照)

² when he should have gone to bed: いつものように寝るはずの時間になってもそうはせずに、ということ。【参考】「**should**+完了不定詞」(you should have gone) は、過去において当然行われるべきであったことが行われなかったことを表す。(『実例英文法』研究社)

³ light on (or upon): to happen to come upon, chance upon; to meet with or discover, esp. unexpectedly or by accident; to come across, whether as the result of search or not. ここでは、(空き部屋を回っているうちに) たまたま入ったのが亡き母の部屋だった。

⁴ accomplice: an associate in guilt, a partner in crime.

⁵ share: a part taken in (an action, experience, etc.). (共にあることにかかわって果たす) 役割。ここでは、逃亡に一枚加わって手助けしたこと。

⁶ contrivance: [kən'traɪvəns] a plan or scheme for attaining some end; an ingenious device or expedient; an artifice, a trick. 'timid contrivances' 小細工。

Chapter XV (XXIX)

The evening after the funeral, my young lady and I were seated in the library; now musing mournfully, one of us¹ despairingly², on our loss; now venturing conjectures as to the gloomy future.

We had just agreed the best destiny³ which could await Catherine, would be a permission to continue resident at the Grange, at least, during Linton's life: he being allowed to join her there, and I to remain as housekeeper. That seemed rather too favourable an arrangement to be hoped for, and yet I did hope, and began to cheer up⁴ under the prospect of retaining my home, and my employment, and, above all, my beloved young mistress, when a servant—one of the discarded⁵ ones, not yet departed—rushed hastily in, and said, ‘that devil Heathcliff’ was coming through the court, should he fasten the door in his face?⁶

If we had been mad enough to order that proceeding⁷, we had not time. He made no ceremony⁸ of knocking, or announcing his name; he was master⁹, and availed himself of¹⁰ the master's privilege to walk straight in, without saying a word.

The sound of our informant's¹¹ voice directed him to the library: he entered, and motioning him out, shut the door.

It was the same room into which he had been ushered, as a guest, eighteen years before:

¹ one of us: Catherine.

² despairingly: hopelessly.

³ destiny: that which is destined to happen to a particular person, country, institution, etc.: (in weakened sense): what in the course of events will become or has become of a person or thing. 運命、先行き。ここでは後者が適切。

⁴ cheer up: to pluck up heart, take courage. 元氣（勇氣）を出す。

⁵ discarded: dismissed from employment, discharged. 解雇された。

⁶ in a person's face: straight against; with no attempt at concealment. 鼻先で、目の前で。

⁷ proceeding: a particular action or course of action; a piece of conduct or behaviour; a transaction. 行為、処置。(p. 191 注 4、p. 320 注 12 参照)

⁸ ceremony: precise observance of conventional forms of deference or respect; formality, ceremoniousness. ここでは、ノックをしたり名を名乗ったりという手間はかけずに。

⁹ master: 身分を表す名詞が主格補語 (A は B なるの B) として用いられ、冠詞が省略された例 (省略されぬこともある)。

¹⁰ avail oneself of: to benefit oneself or profit by; to take advantage of, turn to account. ～を（うまく）利用する、～をいいことに（何々する）。

¹¹ informant: one who informs or tells a person of some fact or occurrence; one who gives information. ここでは Heathcliff が来たことを知らせた使用人。

the same moon shone through the window; and the same autumn landscape lay¹ outside. We had not yet lighted a candle, but all the apartment was visible, even to the portraits on the wall—the splendid head² of Mrs Linton, and the graceful one of her husband.

Heathcliff advanced to the hearth. Time had little altered his person either. There was the same man; his dark face rather sallow³, and more composed, his frame a stone⁴ or two heavier, perhaps, and no other difference.

Catherine had risen with an impulse⁵ to dash out, when she saw him.

‘Stop!’ he said, arresting her by the arm. ‘No more runnings away! Where would you go? I’m come to fetch you home; and I hope you will be a dutiful daughter, and not encourage my son to further disobedience⁶. I was embarrassed⁷ how to punish him, when I discovered his part in the business—he’s such a cobweb⁸, a pinch would annihilate him⁹—but, you’ll see by his look that he has received his due!¹⁰ I brought him down one evening, the day before yesterday, and just set him in a chair, and never touched him afterwards. I sent Hareton out, and we had the room to ourselves. In two hours¹¹, I called Joseph to carry him up again; and, since then, my presence is as potent¹² on his nerves, as a ghost; and I fancy he sees me often, though I am not near. Hareton says he wakes and shrieks in the night by the hour together¹³; and calls you to protect him from me; and whether you like your precious mate or not, you must come—he’s your concern¹⁴ now; I yield all my interest¹⁵ in him to you.’

¹ lie: to be spread out or extended to the view. 眼前に広がっている。

² head: a representation, figure, or image of a head. この場合、日本語では「顔」のほうが適切。

³ sallow: (of the skin or complexion) having a sickly yellow or brownish yellow colour.
(Heathcliffはこのとき 36～37 歳)

⁴ stone: 人の体重の単位としてはふつう 14 pounds (= 6.35 kg)。この小説の当時、地方によって pound (16 ounces = 453.6 grams) の重量が多少ちがった可能性もある。

⁵ impulse: sudden or involuntary inclination or tendency to act, without premeditation or reflection. ‘with an impulse’ は、(後先考えず) 衝動的に、思わず。

⁶ disobedience

⁷ embarrass: to perplex, throw into doubt or difficulty.

⁸ cobweb: (fig.) anything of flimsy, frail, or unsubstantial texture.

⁹ a pinch would annihilate him: ひとひねりすればあの世行き。

¹⁰ he has received his due: he has been treated with justice. 正当な扱いを受けた、つまり罰せられた。

¹¹ in two hours: 二時間が経って。 *in*: (of a limit of time) at the expiration of.

¹² potent: powerful, possessed of great power; having great authority or influence; mighty.
(Usually a poetic or rhetorical word, felt to be stronger than *powerful*.)

¹³ by the hour together: for hours on end. 何時間もつづけて。

¹⁴ concern: a matter or subject that affects or touches one, and that ought to engage one's active interest and attention. ここでは、気を配るべきこと (もの)、つまり、あいつのことはおまえの仕事だ。

¹⁵ interest: right or title to a share in something; share, part. ここは、おれの分はそっくりおまえにくれてやる。

‘Why not let Catherine continue¹ here,’ I pleaded, ‘and send Master Linton to her. As you hate them both, you’d not miss² them—they *can* only be a daily plague to your unnatural heart.’

‘I’m seeking a tenant for the Grange,’ he answered; ‘and I want my children about³ me, to be sure—besides, that lass owes me her services for her bread; I’m not going to nurture⁴ her in luxury and idleness after Linton has gone. Make haste and get ready now. And don’t oblige⁵ me to compel you.’

‘I shall,’ said Catherine. ‘Linton is all I have to love⁶ in the world, and, though you have done what you could to make him hateful to me, and me to him, you *cannot* make us hate each other! and I defy⁷ you to hurt him when I am by, and I defy you to frighten me.’

‘You are a boastful champion!’⁸ replied Heathcliff, ‘but I don’t like you well enough to hurt him⁹—you shall get the full benefit¹⁰ of the torment, as long as it lasts. It is not I who will make him hateful to you¹¹—it is his own sweet spirit. He’s as bitter as gall¹² at your desertion¹³ and its consequences—don’t expect thanks for this noble devotion. I heard him draw a pleasant picture to Zillah of what he would do, if he were as strong as I—the inclination is there¹⁴, and his very weakness will sharpen his wits¹⁵ to find a

¹ continue: to remain, stay, or abide (in a place).

² miss: to perceive with regret the absence or loss of; to feel the want of. ～がいないのをさびしがる。(p. 171 注 3 参照)

³ about: holding a position beside, being in common intercourse with, habitually connected with, in attendance on, in the suite of. (いつも) ～のそば近くに、身近に。

⁴ nurture: to feed or nourish; to support and bring up to maturity; to rear.

⁵ oblige: to constrain, esp. by moral or legal force or influence; to force, compel (*to do* something). したくないのに～させる。つまり、おれに(あまえを無理強いするような)面倒をかけるな。(p. 62 注 7, p. 114 注 5, p. 125 注 13 参照)

⁶ Linton is all I have to love: 私が愛するのは Linton だけ。このかたちは ‘all I have to say’ (申し上げる [いいたい] ことのすべて) に同じで、「～せねばならない」の意味ではない。

⁷ defy: to challenge (a person) to do something deemed impossible. できそうにないことをやってみろと挑む、つまり、やれるものならやってみなさいという。【例】I defy you to do this. これがきみにできるものか《できるものならやってみろ》(研究社『リーダーズ英和辞典』)

⁸ champion: one who fights on behalf of another, or on behalf of any cause. 他人(主義)のために(代って)戦う人、擁護者。

⁹ I don’t ... him: やつを痛めつけて(早く死なせ)気を楽しんでやるほどおまえを好きではない。

¹⁰ benefit: advantage, profit, good. 利点、利益。

¹¹ hateful to you: おまえに憎しみを抱く。「おまえにとって憎むべき」ではない。

¹² as bitter as gall: ‘gall’ (胆汁) は苦いものの代表。(p. 210 注 6 参照)

¹³ desertion: the action of deserting, forsaking, or abandoning, esp. a person or thing that has moral or legal claims to the deserter’s support. Catherine が Linton を残して逃亡したこと。

¹⁴ the inclination is there: そういう(もし強かったらこうもしてやるのという)気持はある。
inclination: a tendency or bent of the mind, will, or desires towards a particular object.

¹⁵ wits: powers of intelligent observation, keen perception, ingenious contrivance, or the like. ここでは、病弱なだけに知恵を働かせて力に代わる手段を見つけること。

substitute for strength.'

'I know he has a bad nature,' said Catherine; 'he's your son. But I'm glad I've a better, to forgive it; and I know he loves me and for that reason I love him. Mr Heathcliff, *you* have *nobody* to love you; and, however miserable you make us, we shall still have the revenge¹ of thinking that your cruelty arises from your greater misery! You are miserable, are you not? Lonely, like the devil, and envious² like him? *Nobody* loves you — *nobody* will cry for you, when you die! I wouldn't be you!³'

Catherine spoke with a kind of dreary⁴ triumph: she seemed to have made up her mind to enter into⁵ the spirit of her future family, and draw pleasure from the griefs of her enemies.

'You shall be sorry to be yourself presently,' said her father-in-law, 'if you stand there another minute. Begone, witch, and get your things!'

She scornfully withdrew.

In her absence, I began to beg for Zillah's place at the Heights, offering to resign⁶ mine to her; but he would suffer it on no account⁷. He bid me be silent, and then, for the first time, allowed himself a glance round the room and a look at the pictures. Having studied Mrs Linton, he said —

'I shall have that at home. Not because I need it, but —'

He turned abruptly to the fire, and continued, with what, for lack of a better word, I must call a smile —

¹ revenge: a particular act of repaying injuries or wrongs. ここでは 'thinking that ...' がそれに当たるので、「～と考えて恨みを晴らす」。

² envious: vexed or discontented at the good fortune or qualities of another.

³ I wouldn't be you!: あなた(みたいな人)にはなりたくないわ。「もしなれるとしたら(しても)、もし私が別の人間になるとしたら」などという条件が隠れている。【例】If you could be any animal what would you be? (もし動物になれるとしたら、なにになりたい?)

⁴ dreary: without liveliness, cheer, joy, or hope. 正々堂々と渡り合って勝利したわけではないから、*Webster 3rd* のこの定義が適切。つまり「(意気揚々としてではなく) 勝ったところでうれしくもなさそうに」ほどの意味だろう。

⁵ enter into: to be in tune with; to identify oneself with. (ここでは一家の家風に) 調子を合わせる、一体となる。

⁶ resign: to surrender, give up, or hand over (an office, position, etc.) *mine* = my place.

⁷ on no account: = not ... on any account. どうしても～しない。(p. 105 注 11、p. 303 注 5 参照)

'I'll tell you what I did yesterday! I got¹ the sexton², who was digging Linton's grave, to remove the earth off her coffin-lid, and I opened it. I thought, once, I would have stayed there³, when I saw her face again—it is hers yet—he had hard work to stir me⁴; but he said it would change, if the air blew on it, and so I struck one side of the coffin loose—and covered it up—not Linton's side, damn him! I wish he'd been soldered⁵ in lead—and I bribed the sexton to pull it away,⁶ when I'm laid there, and slide mine out too. I'll have it made so, and then, by the time Linton gets to us, he'll not know which is which.'

'You are very wicked Mr Heathcliff!' I exclaimed; 'were you not ashamed to disturb the dead?'

'I disturbed nobody, Nelly,' he replied; 'and I gave some ease to myself. I shall be a great deal more comfortable now; and you'll have a better chance of keeping me underground⁷, when I get there. Disturbed her? No! She has disturbed me, night and day, through eighteen years — incessantly⁸ — remorselessly⁹ — till yesternight — and yesternight I was tranquil. I dreamt I was sleeping the last sleep, by that sleeper¹⁰, with my heart stopped, and my cheek frozen against hers.'

'And if she had been dissolved¹¹ into earth, or worse, what would you have dreamt of then?' I said.

'Of dissolving with her¹², and being more happy still!' he answered. 'Do you suppose I dread any change of that sort? I expected such a transformation on raising the lid, but I'm better pleased that it should not commence till I share it. Besides, unless I had

¹ get: to induce, prevail upon (a person), succeed in causing (a thing), to do something; in weaker sense, to cause or set (a person) to do something for one. 人を説き伏せて～させる、～してもらう。ここは前者。

² sexton: a church officer having the care of the fabric of a church and its contents, and the duties of ringing the bells and digging graves. 教会の雑用係、(日本でいう) 寺男。齋藤秀三郎『英和中辞典』には「穴掘坊主」とも。

³ I thought ... there: そこにいつしよに眠りたいと思ったこともある (ほのおれだ。だからまだ生きているような顔を見て、おれはてこでも動こうとしなかった) と次につながる。

⁴ he had hard work to stir me: おれをどかそうとして手を焼いた。

⁵ solder: to unite or fasten by means of a metallic solder (*in, on, together, up, etc.*). ハンダづけする。なお 'lead' だが、古くは '*to lie, be wrapt in lead: to be buried in a lead coffin. (OED)*' として使われ、1578年の用例もあるので、鉛製の棺は実在した。

⁶ pull it away: (Cathyの棺桶から) 打ってゆるめておいた側の板を取り去る。死んだら自分の棺桶の(引き出せるように細工をした)側板を外して彼女と一体になるつもり。

⁷ keeping me underground: (幽霊となって地上に出現することなく) 地下に眠らせておくこと。

⁸ incessantly: without cessation; unceasingly. 絶え間なく。

⁹ remorselessly: without remorse. 容赦なく。

¹⁰ by that sleeper: Catherineのかたわらで。

¹¹ dissolve: to destroy the physical integrity; to disintegrate, decompose. 分解する、腐敗させる。

¹² of dissolving with her: I would have dreamt of dissolving with her.

received a distinct impression of her passionless¹ features, that strange feeling would hardly have been removed. It began oddly. You know, I was wild after she died, and eternally, from dawn to dawn, praying her to return to me—her spirit—I have a strong faith in ghosts; I have a conviction that they can, and do exist, among us!

'The day she was buried there came a fall of snow. In the evening I went to the churchyard. It blew bleak² as winter—all round was solitary: I didn't fear that her fool of a husband³ would wander up the den⁴ so late—and no one else had business to bring them there.

'Being alone, and conscious two yards of loose earth was the sole barrier between us, I said to myself—

"I'll have her in my arms again! If she be cold, I'll think it is this north wind that chills *me*; and if she be motionless, it is sleep.

' I got a spade from the toolhouse, and began to delve⁵ with all my might—it scraped⁶ the coffin; I fell to work with my hands; the wood commenced cracking about the screws, I was on the point of attaining my object, when it seemed that I heard a sigh from some one above, close at the edge of the grave, and bending down.—'If I can only get this off;' I muttered, 'I wish they may shovel in the earth over us both!' and I wrenched⁷ at it more desperately still. There was another sigh, close at my ear. I appeared⁸ to feel the warm breath of it displacing⁹ the sleet-laden wind. I knew no living thing in flesh and blood was by—but as certainly as you perceive the approach to some substantial body in the dark¹⁰, though it cannot be discerned¹¹, so certainly I felt that Cathy was there, not under

¹ passionless: calm; (rare) without suffering, painless. 穏やかな。

² bleak: cold, chilly; usually of wind or weather.

³ her fool of a husband: 彼女のまぬけな夫。この 'of' については p. 85 注 3 参照。

⁴ den: (Sc. local) a deep hollow between hills; a dingle. 深い谷間。

⁵ delve: (now chiefly north. and Sc.) to dig; to turn up with a spade; (arch.) to excavate.

⁶ scrape: to rub harshly on (a surface) in passing along or over it, so as to cause abrasion or produce a grating noise; to draw (something) roughly over a surface. こする、こすって耳ざわりな音を立てる。

⁷ wrench: to pull or tug (*at* something) with a turn or twist. ねじって引っばる。

⁸ appear: to be to the mind, or in one's opinion; to seem. (見る者・話者にとっては) ~のように思われる、~らしい。主語が 'I' の場合はわかりにくい、自分が自分自身を見ていうと取れば、ここは「(そのときの) おれは~らしかった、ようだった」。【参考】'I' を主語とする 'seem' の用例: I *seem* to see him still. 今も彼の姿が見えるようだ。I *seem* unable to finish this book. 《自分には》この本は読み終えられないように思われる。(研究社『リーダーズ英和辞典』)

⁹ displace: to oust (something) from its place and occupy it instead; to take the place of, supplant, 'replace'. ここは、みぞれまじりの風に代って暖かい息があたること。

¹⁰ as certainly ... dark: 暗がりの中では姿は見えなくとも確かに誰かが近くにいるとわかるように。

¹¹ discern: to recognize or perceive distinctly. 'though it cannot be discerned' だれと見分けはつかぬにせよ。

me, but on the earth.

‘A sudden sense of relief flowed from my heart through every limb. I relinquished¹ my labour of agony, and turned consoled² at once, unspeakably consoled. Her presence³ was with me; it remained while I re-filled the grave, and led me home. You may laugh if you will, but I was sure I should see her there⁴. I was sure she was with me, and I could not help talking to her.

‘Having reached the Heights, I rushed eagerly to the door. It was fastened; and, I remember, that accursed Earnshaw and my wife opposed my entrance. I remember stopping⁵ to kick the breath out of⁶ him, and then hurrying upstairs, to my room, and hers⁷—I looked round impatiently—I felt her by me—I could *almost* see her, and yet I *could not*! I ought to have sweat blood⁸ then, from the anguish of my yearning, from the fervour⁹ of my supplications to have but one glimpse! I had not one. She showed herself¹⁰, as she often was in life, a devil¹¹ to me! And, since then, sometimes more, and sometimes less, I've been the sport¹² of that intolerable torture! Infernal¹³—keeping my nerves at such a stretch¹⁴, that, if they had not resembled catgut¹⁵, they would long ago

¹ relinquish: to give up or give over, to abandon, desist from (an idea, action, practice, etc.).

² console: to comfort in mental distress or depression; to alleviate the sorrow of (any one); to free from the sense of misery.

³ presence: a divine, spiritual, or incorporeal being or influence felt or conceived as present. ここでは「存在感のある霊、幽霊」とするのが自然だろう。

⁴ I should see her there: Catherine の霊は Heathcliff を先導していた (led me home)。だから帰宅すれば、先に着いて待っているはずだった、ということ。

⁵ stop (to do): to pause, stay on the or one's way (to do something)。 (途中で) していることをやめて～する、～するためにいったんとどまる。

⁶ kick the breath out of: (蹴飛ばして) ～を息も絶え絶えにする。これに似た ‘knock the breath out of’ という熟語は、「～をあっと驚かせる」という意味で用いられるが、たぶん ‘exanimate: (obs.) to deprive of the appearance of life; to render breathless or unconscious; (fig. humorous.) to knock the breath out of..’ の最初の意味より「顔色なからしめる」に変化したものだろう。

⁷ hers: Catherine's room.

⁸ I ought to have sweat blood: 血の汗をかいたっておかしくはなかった。裏を返せば、「かくのがあたりまえで、かかなかったのはおかしい」つまり「当然」。ついでながら、‘I must have sweat blood’ (かいた覚えはないがああ状況では、きつとかいたにちがいない) なら「必然」。

⁹ fervour: warmth or glow of feeling, passion, vehemence, intense zeal.

¹⁰ show oneself: *refl.* (with compl. [adj. or n., also with *for* prefixed] or inf.): to exhibit oneself in a (specified) light or character; to manifest or exemplify a (specified) quality, etc., in one's behaviour. ～ぶり (であるところ) を見せる (発揮する)。

¹¹ devil: a human being of diabolical character or qualities; a malignantly wicked or cruel man.

¹² sport: an object or subject of amusement, diversion, jesting, mirth, etc.; a laughing-stock, plaything, toy. なぶりもの、翻弄されるもの。

¹³ infernal: (colloq.) as a term of strong execration or condemnation: ‘Confounded’, execrable, detestable.

¹⁴ at a stretch: (= at full stretch) to capacity; working fully or as hard as possible. ここでは「いつも神経を限度いっぱい緊張させている」こと。

¹⁵ catgut: the dried and twisted intestines of sheep, also of the horse and ass; used for the strings of musical instruments; also as bands in lathes, clocks, etc. ここは強靱なもののたとえ。

have relaxed to the feebleness of Linton's.

'When I sat in the house with Hareton, it seemed that on going out, I should meet her; when I walked on the moors, I should meet her coming in¹. When I went from home, I hastened to return, she *must* be somewhere at the Heights, I was certain! And when I slept in her chamber, I was beaten out of that²—I couldn't lie there; for the moment I closed my eyes, she was either outside the window, or sliding back the panels, or entering the room, or even resting her darling head on the same pillow as she did when a child. And I must open my lids to see. And so I opened and closed them a hundred times a-night—to be always disappointed! It racked³ me! I've often groaned aloud, till that old rascal Joseph, no doubt, believed that my conscience was playing the fiend⁴ inside of me.

'Now, since I've seen her, I'm pacified—a little. It was a strange way of killing—not by inches, but by fractions⁵ of hairbreadths, to beguile⁶ me with the spectre of a hope, through eighteen years!'

Mr Heathcliff paused and wiped his forehead—his hair clung⁷ to it, wet with perspiration; his eyes were fixed on the red embers of the fire, the brows not contracted⁸, but raised next the temples⁹, diminishing the grim aspect of his countenance, but imparting¹⁰ a peculiar look of trouble, and a painful appearance of mental tension towards one absorbing subject. He only half addressed me, and I maintained silence—I didn't like to hear him talk!

After a short period, he resumed his meditation on the picture, took it down, and leant it against the sofa to contemplate¹¹ it at better advantage; and while so occupied

¹ I should meet her coming in: 'on returning home' (家に戻ると)などが省略されている。

² I was beaten out of that: (打ち負かされて)部屋から追い出された(逃げ出した)。

³ rack: to inflict mental pain or torture on (a person); to torture, distract, lacerate (the mind, soul, etc.). (p. 200 注 1、p. 339 注 11 参照)

⁴ play the fiend (= play the devil): to act diabolically, do mischief, make havoc or ruin.

⁵ fraction: something broken off; a disconnected portion; a fragment, scrap, small piece (断片、小片); (arith.) one or more aliquot parts (約数) of a unit or whole number; an expression for a definite portion of a unit or magnitude (分数)。'by fractions of hairbreadths' は、髪の毛の幅の何分の一かずつ。

⁶ beguile: to delude, deceive, cheat.

⁷ cling: to adhere, stick fast, attach oneself firmly to, as by a glutinous (粘着性の) surface, or by grasping with prehensile organs. へばりつく。濡れた衣服が体に密着することにもいう。

⁸ contract: to draw the parts of (anything) together; to cause to shrink; to knit (the brow). (眉)をひそめる。

⁹ (the brows) raised next the temples: (眉は)こめかみ近くで引き上げられて。このとき目は見開いたかたちになるが、人間めったにそういう表情はしないから、一種の異様さが漂う。

¹⁰ impart: to communicate as knowledge or information; to make known, tell, relate.

¹¹ contemplate: to look at with continued attention, gaze upon, view, observe. (p. 180 注 10、p. 253 注 4 参照) 'at better advantage' は、よりよい条件で。

Catherine entered, announcing that she was ready, when her pony should be saddled¹.

‘Send that² over to-morrow,’ said Heathcliff to me, then turning to her he added, ‘You may do without your pony—it is a fine evening, and you’ll need no ponies at Wuthering Heights, for what journeys you take³, your own feet will serve you—Come along.’

‘Good-bye, Ellen!’ whispered my dear little mistress. As she kissed me, her lips felt like ice. ‘Come and see me, Ellen, don’t forget.’

‘Take care you do no such thing, Mrs Dean!’ said her new father. ‘When I wish to speak to you I’ll come here. I want none of your prying⁴ at my house.’

He signed her to precede him; and casting back a look that cut my heart, she obeyed.

I watched them from the window, walk down the garden. Heathcliff fixed Catherine’s arm under his, though she disputed⁵ the act, at first evidently, and with rapid strides⁶, he hurried her into the alley⁷, whose trees concealed them.

¹ when her pony should be saddled: 小馬に鞍を置いたら (出発できる)。

² that: = that picture.

³ for what journeys you take: = whatever journey(s) you take. どんな旅をするにしても。

⁴ pry: to look up, to look closely or curiously; to peep; to spy.

⁵ dispute: to encounter, oppose, contest, strive against, resist (an action, etc.).

⁶ stride: a long step in walking. 大股の足取り。

⁷ alley: a walk in a garden, park, shrubbery, maze, or wood, generally bordered with trees, or bushes; an avenue.

Chapter XVI (XXX)

I have paid a visit to the Heights, but I have not seen her since she left; Joseph held the door in his hand, when I called to ask after¹ her, and wouldn't let me pass. He said Mrs Linton was 'thrang²,' and the master was not in. Zillah has told me something of the way they go on³, otherwise I should hardly know who was dead, and who living.

She thinks Catherine haughty⁴, and does not like her, I can guess by her talk. My young lady asked some aid of her, when she first came, but Mr Heathcliff told her to follow her own business, and let his daughter-in-law look after herself, and Zillah willingly acquiesced⁵, being a narrow-minded selfish woman. Catherine evinced⁶ a child's annoyance at this neglect; repaid it with contempt, and thus enlisted my informant among her enemies, as securely⁷ as if she had done her some great wrong.

I had a long talk with Zillah, about six weeks ago, a little before you came, one day, when we foregathered⁸ on the moor; and this is what she told me.

'The first thing Mrs Linton did,' she said, 'on her arrival at the Heights, was to run upstairs without even wishing good-evening to me and Joseph; she shut herself into Linton's room, and remained till morning—then, while the master and Earnshaw were at breakfast, she entered the house and asked all in a quiver⁹ if the doctor might be sent for? her cousin was very ill.'

"We know that!" answered Heathcliff, "but his life is not worth a farthing¹⁰, and I won't spend a farthing on him."

¹ ask after: to inquire about (esp. a person). ～さんをご在宅か、お元気か? など。

² thrang (=throng): *Sc. and north. dial.* (of a person or persons) closely engaged in work or business; pressed; fully employed, busy.

³ the way they go on: 彼らのふるまい (行い)。 *go on*: to conduct oneself, behave.

⁴ haughty: [hó:ti] (of persons, their action, speech, etc.) high in one's own estimation; lofty and disdainful in feeling or demeanour; proud, arrogant, supercilious.

⁵ acquiesce: [ækwi'es] to agree tacitly to, concur in. (p.298 注 5 参照)

⁶ evince: to give tokens of possessing; to reveal the presence of (a quality, condition, feeling); to display, exhibit, manifest. ここでは、こどもっぽくふくれた顔をした。

⁷ securely: firmly.

⁸ foregather (= forgather): to encounter, meet; to meet with (accidentally). たまたま出会う、鉢合わせする。

⁹ quiver: an act of quivering; a tremble.

¹⁰ farthing: the quarter of a penny; the coin representing this value. (Until 17th c. chiefly a silver coin; subsequently of copper alloys; then of bronze.) 1961 年に廃止。

“But I cannot tell¹ how to do,” she said, “and if nobody will help me, he'll die!”

“Walk out of the room!” cried the master, “and let me never hear a word more about him! None here care what becomes of him; if you do, act the nurse; if you do not, lock him up and leave him.”

“Then she began to bother me, and I said I'd had enough plague with the tiresome² thing; we each had our tasks, and hers was to wait on Linton, Mr Heathcliff bid me leave that labour to her.

‘How they³ managed together, I can't tell. I fancy he fretted a great deal, and moaned hisselsn [= himself] night and day; and she had precious⁴ little rest, one could guess by her white face, and heavy⁵ eyes.—she sometimes came into the kitchen all wildered⁶ like⁷, and looked as if she would fain beg assistance; but I was not going to disobey the master—I never dare disobey him, Mrs Dean; and though I thought it wrong that Kenneth should not be sent for, it was no concern of mine, either to advise or complain; and I always refused to meddle.⁸

‘Once or twice, after we had gone to bed, I've happened to open my door again, and seen her sitting crying, on the stairs' top; and then I've shut myself in, quick, for fear of being moved to interfere. I did pity her then, I'm sure; still I didn't wish to lose my place, you know!

‘At last, one night she came boldly into my chamber, and frightened me out of my wits⁹ by saying—

“Tell Mr Heathcliff that his son is dying—I'm sure he is, this time.—Get up, instantly, and tell him!”

¹ I cannot tell: I do not know.

² tiresome: (colloq.) troublesome, disagreeable, unpleasant; irksome, annoying, vexatious.

³ they: Linton and Catherine.

⁴ precious: *adv.* (colloq.) extremely, very. 強調語。

⁵ heavy: overcome or dulled with weariness; drowsy, sleepy. (p. 346 注 11 参照)

⁶ wildered: [wɪldəd] (fig.) at a loss, perplexed, bewildered.

⁷ like: *dial. and vulgar*: (used parenthetically to qualify a preceding statement) = ‘as it were’, ‘so to speak’. いってみれば、まるで～みたい。【参考】*as it were*: as if it were so, if one might so put it, in some sort: a parenthetic phrase used to indicate that a word or statement is perhaps not formally exact though practically right. (正確にはそうではないかもしれないけれど)。また *COD 8th* によれば、*so to speak*: an expression of reserve or apology for exaggeration or neologism etc. (おおげさだったり、へんに聞こえたりするかもしれないけれど)。

⁸ it was ... meddle.: こっちは意見をしたり不平をいったりする立場じゃないから、いつも首を突っこまないことにしてたんです。

⁹ out of one's wits: mad, distracted. 気が動揺した。

‘Having uttered this speech, she vanished again. I lay a quarter of an hour listening and trembling—Nothing stirred—the house was quiet.

“She's mistaken,” I said to myself. “He's got over¹ it. I needn't disturb them.” And I began to doze. But my sleep was marred² a second time, by a sharp ringing of the bell—the only bell we have, put up³ on purpose for Linton, and the master called to me, to see what was the matter, and inform them that he wouldn't have that noise repeated.

I delivered Catherine's message. He cursed to himself, and in a few minutes, came out with a lighted candle, and proceeded to their room. I followed—Mrs Heathcliff was seated by the bedside, with her hands folded on her knees. Her father-in-law went up, held the light to Linton's face, looked at him, and touched him, afterwards he turned to her.

“Now—Catherine,” he said, “how do you feel?”

‘She was dumb.

“How do you feel, Catherine?” he repeated.

“He's safe, and I'm free,” she answered. “I should feel well⁴—but,” she continued, with a bitterness she couldn't conceal, “You have left me so long to struggle against death, alone, that I feel and see only death! I feel like death!⁵”

‘And she looked like it, too! I gave her a little wine. Hareton and Joseph, who had been wakened by the ringing, and the sound of feet, and heard our talk from outside, now entered. Joseph was fain⁶, I believe, of the lad's removal; Hareton seemed a thought⁷ bothered, though he was more taken up⁸ with staring at Catherine than thinking of

¹ get over: to recover from (a shock, injury, illness, etc.).

² mar: (with immaterial obj.) to impair fatally, ruin; (in mod. use with somewhat lighter sense) to detract from the perfection or completeness of. 台無しにする、そこなう。

³ put up: たぶん「取り付け」 というほどの意味なのだろうが、ひもを引いて鳴らす呼び鈴なのかどうか? ‘put up’ というからにはどんなタイプのものなのか気になるところ。

⁴ I should feel well: すっきりした気分といたいところですね。本来の私であれば、などの条件を言外にこめた仮定法。

⁵ I feel like death: ここは「死んだも同じ、死人になったような気分」ということ。‘like death (or like death warmed up): colloq. phr. indicating a feeling or appearance of extreme illness or exhaustion.’ という熟語もあるが、20 世紀に入ってからのものである。

⁶ fain: glad, rejoiced, well-pleased.

⁷ a thought: ほんの少しばかり。‘thought’: a very small amount, a very little, a trifle.

⁸ take up (with): to occupy or engage fully, engross (a person, his attention, mind, etc.). Chiefly in pass. (const. with, sometimes in); also in *Sc. and north. dial.* = to be taken with, take an absorbing or engaging interest in. ～にすっかり気を取られる、夢中になる。

Linton. But the master bid him get off to bed again—we didn't want his help. He afterwards made Joseph remove the body to his chamber¹, and told me to return to mine, and Mrs Heathcliff remained by herself.

‘In the morning he sent me to tell her she must come down to breakfast—she had undressed, and appeared going to sleep; and said she was ill; at which I hardly wondered. I informed Mr Heathcliff, and he replied,

“Well, let her be till after the funeral; and go up now and then to get her what is needful; and as soon as she seems better, tell me.”

Cathy stayed upstairs a fortnight, according to Zillah, who visited her twice a-day, and would have been rather more friendly, but her attempts at increasing kindness were proudly and promptly repelled.

Heathcliff went up once, to show her Linton's will. He had bequeathed the whole of his, and what had been her moveable property² to his father. The poor creature was threatened, or coaxed³ into that act, during her week's absence, when his uncle died. The lands, being a minor⁴, he could not meddle with. However, Mr Heathcliff has claimed, and kept them in his wife's right, and his also⁵—I suppose legally, at any rate, Catherine, destitute of cash and friends, cannot disturb⁶ his possession.

¹ his chamber: Heathcliff's chamber.

² moveable (= movable) property: 動産。

³ coax: to influence or persuade by caresses, flattery, or blandishment (*to do* a thing, *into* an action). いいくるめて～させる。(p. 87 注 1、p. 290 注 1、p. 343 注 2 参照)

⁴ minor: a person under (legal) age. (21 歳未満の) 未成年者。現在の英国では 18 歳未満。

⁵ his wife's right, and his also: his wife = Heathcliff's wife (Isabella) 次の his = Heathcliff's。ということだが、どうしてそうなるのか、ちょっとわかりにくいかもしれない。そこで、少し長くなるが、この作品中の相続問題について、ここでざっと整理しておこう。

先代の遺言状によれば、まず Edgar に息子がないときは、その死後彼の妹 Isabella が Linton 家の財産を相続することになる。ところが Isabella は Edgar より先に死んだため、その相続権はどうなるかという、Heathcliff と Isabella の間の息子 Linton も Edgar の娘 Catherine も単独では相続できないが、ふたりが結婚すれば共同相続人になるとされていた。なお遺言状には、結婚後 Linton が先に死亡した場合の Catherine の相続権を保証する条項はないという。

そこで Heathcliff は、自分にはもともと（亡妻 Isabella から引き継いだ）相続権はあるのだが、相続に際して予想されるいざこざを避けて確実に財産をわがものにするため、またいずれ Catherine 個人に属する動産をも横取りしようとして、Edgar 存命中に Linton と Catherine とを強引に結婚させようとした。

一方 Edgar 夫妻は、Heathcliff が Isabella を誘惑したときから、それが財産目当てだと気づいていたが、その後 Edgar は相続について特に手を打ってはいない。しかし死を目の前にした Edgar は、Linton と Catherine の結婚が強行されると、Heathcliff に対抗して娘の動産を（管財人に託して）確保すべく、はじめて遺言状に変更を加えようとしたが果たせなかった。

⁶ disturb: to interfere with the settled course or operation of; to put out of its course; to interrupt, derange, hinder, frustrate.

‘Nobody,’ said Zillah, ‘ever approached her door, except that once, but I ... and nobody asked anything about her. The first occasion of her coming down into the house, was on a Sunday afternoon.

‘She had cried out, when I carried up her dinner, that she couldn't bear any longer being in the cold; and I told her the master was going to Thrushcross Grange; and Earnshaw and I needn't hinder her from descending; so, as soon as she heard Heathcliff's horse trot off, she made her appearance, donned in black, and her yellow curls combed back behind her ears, as plain as a quaker¹, she couldn't comb them out².

‘Joseph and I generally go to chapel on Sundays,’ (the Kirk³, you know, has no minister, now, explained Mrs Dean, and they call the Methodists⁴ or Baptists⁵ place, I can't say which it is, at Gimmerton a chapel.) ‘Joseph has gone,’ she continued, ‘but I thought proper to bide⁶ at home. Young folks are always the better for an elder's overlooking⁷, and Hareton, with all his bashfulness⁸, isn't a model of nice behaviour. I let him know that his cousin would very likely sit with us, and she had been always used to see the Sabbath respected, so he had as good leave his guns and bits of in-door work alone⁹, while she stayed.

He coloured up at the news, and cast¹⁰ his eyes over his hands and clothes. The train-oil¹¹ and gunpowder were shoved out of sight in a minute. I saw he meant to give her his company; and I guessed, by his way, he wanted to be presentable¹²; so, laughing, as

¹ quaker: ふつうは Quaker と綴る。ここではその質素ぶりを引き合いに出したもの。

² comb out: to disentangle or dress (the hair) with a comb. 櫛を入れて髪を整える。Quaker 風にしようとしたわけではなく、誰もしてくれる者がいないから自分ではうまくいかず、そのままうしろにまとめたのだろう。

³ kirk: the Northern English and Scotch form of the word *church*, in all its senses. (p. 179 注 2 参照)

⁴ Methodist: (Oxford 大学の Charles Wesley らにより 1729 年に設立された ‘the Holy Club’ にはじまる) メソジスト派の信徒。‘method’+‘ist’ より。

⁵ Baptist: ‘baptism’ (洗礼式) は全身を水に浸し (浸礼)、信者に限って (つまり信仰の自覚のない幼児は除いて) 行われるべきとするバプティスト派 (浸礼派) の信徒。

⁶ bide: (arch.) to stay.

⁷ overlook: to watch over officially, keep an eye on, look after, superintend, oversee.

⁸ bashfulness: shyness.

⁹ had as good leave ... alone: (Catherine はずっと安息日を守ってきた人なのだから、あなたも) 銃 (の手入れ) や家の中の仕事に手をつけるのはよしたらどう。 *had as good (do)*: might as well (do). *leave alone*: to leave persons or things as they are, or to their own efforts; to abstain from interfering or having to do with.

¹⁰ cast: to direct or cause to fall (one's eyes, a glance, light, a shadow, a spell, etc.)

¹¹ train oil: oil obtained by boiling from the blubber (= fat) of whales, esp. of the right whale (セミクジラ) . 鯨油。

¹² presentable: suitable, by attire or appearance, to be presented or introduced into society or company; in proper trim; of decent appearance, fit to be seen. 人前に出ても恥ずかしくない。なおこの場面は、Nelly が Heathcliff のおめかしをしてやる場面 (pp. 81-82) そっくりである。

I durst not laugh when the master is by, I offered to help him, if he would, and joked at his confusion. He grew sullen, and began to swear.

‘Now, Mrs Dean,’ Zillah went on, seeing me not pleased by her manner, ‘you happen¹ think your young lady too fine for Mr Hareton, and happen you’re right—but I own, I should love well to bring her pride a peg lower.² And what will all her learning and her daintiness do for her, now? She’s as poor as you, or I—poorer—I’ll be bound³—you’re saving—and I’m doing my little, all that road⁴.’

Hareton allowed Zillah to give him her aid; and she flattered him into a good humour; so, when Catherine came, half forgetting her former insults, he tried to make himself agreeable, by the housekeeper’s account⁵.

‘Missis walked in,’ she said, ‘as chill as an icicle, and as high as a princess. I got up and offered her my seat in the armchair. No, she turned up her nose⁶ at my civility. Earnshaw rose too, and bid her come to the settle, and sit close by the fire; he was sure she was starved⁷.

“‘I’ve been starved a month and more,’ she answered, resting on the word⁸, as scornful as she could.

‘And she got a chair for herself, and placed it at a distance from both of us.

‘Having sat till she was warm, she began to look round, and discovered a number of books in the dresser⁹; she was instantly upon her feet again, stretching to reach them, but they were too high up.

‘Her cousin, after watching her endeavours a while, at last summoned courage to help

¹ happen: mayhap, perhaps, maybe, perchance.

² bring (a person) down a peg lower: to lower him a degree in his own or the general estimation, to humble, snub, mortify. 高慢な態度を少しは控えさせる。(a peg = a step, degree)

³ I’ll be bound: I feel certain.

⁴ road: (fig.) a way or course, esp. to some end. ‘all that road’ は、貯蓄のためにはずっと、というほどの意味。

⁵ by the house-keeper’s account: 家政婦の話では、いうところによれば。account: a particular statement or narrative of an event or thing; a relation, report, or description.

⁶ turn up one’s nose: to show disdain.

⁷ starve: (chiefly *pass. obs. exc. dial*) to cause to die of cold, to kill with cold; also hyperbolically, to benumb with cold. (p. 245 注 3, p. 326 注 5 参照)

⁸ resting on: (rare) to dwell upon (a word) と解せば、Hareton のいった ‘starved’ を、いやみたらしく強調し、長く引きのばして発音したものと考えられる。

⁹ dresser: a kind of kitchen sideboard surmounted by rows of shelves on which plates, dishes, and kitchen utensils are ranged. 食器棚。

her; she held her frock, and he filled it with the first¹ that came to hand.

“That was a great advance for the lad—she didn't thank him; still, he felt gratified that she had accepted his assistance, and ventured to stand behind as she examined them, and even to stoop and point out what struck his fancy² in certain old pictures which they contained—nor was he daunted³ by the saucy style in which she jerked⁴ the page from his finger; he contented himself with going a bit farther back, and looking at her, instead of the book.

She continued reading, or seeking for something to read. His attention became, by degrees, quite centred in the study of her thick, silky curls—her face he couldn't see, and she couldn't see him. And, perhaps not quite awake to what he did, but attracted like a child to a candle, at last he proceeded from staring to touching; he put out his hand and stroked one curl, as gently as if it were a bird. He might have stuck a knife into her neck⁵, she started round in such a taking⁶.

“Get away this moment! How dare you touch me! Why are you stopping there?” she cried in a tone of disgust. “I can't endure you! I'll go upstairs again if you come near me.”

Mr Hareton recoiled, looking as foolish as he could do; he sat down in the settle, very quiet, and she continued turning over⁷ her volumes, another half-hour—finally, Earnshaw crossed over, and whispered to me.

“Will you ask her to read to us, Zillah? I'm stalled⁸ of doing naught—and I do like—I

¹ the first that came to hand: 手近な（最初に手の届いた）本。あとに ‘her volumes’ とあるように、一冊ではない

² fancy: individual taste; an inclination, liking. *strike (catch, take) the fancy of* = *strike (catch, take) a person's fancy*: to please; to appeal to. ～の気に入る、興味をそそる。

³ daunt: to abate the courage of, discourage, dispirit; to put in awe, abash; to overcome with fear, intimidate, cause to quail.

⁴ jerk: to move (anything) by a sharp suddenly arrested motion, like that with which a whip is wielded; to thrust, pull, or shake by such a motion; to give a sudden thrust, push, pull, or twist to. ここは Hareton の指を払いのけるようにページをめくること。

⁵ He might ... neck: 結局は「まるで首にナイフを突き立てられたかのように」ということになろうが、齋藤秀三郎『英和中辞典』の解説にいう ‘might have’ に「意志動詞の合した」例だから、‘He might (= *could easily*) have struck a knife into her neck.’ 「(生意気な) 彼女の首にナイフを突き刺そうとすればできたのにそうはせず、そっと髪をなでたのだ。それを彼女は……」という含み。

⁶ taking: a disturbed or agitated state of mind; excited condition, passion. ここは、ひどく興奮（動揺）して。

⁷ turn over: to reverse (a leaf, or the successive leaves, of a book) in order to read (or write) on further; to read or search through, peruse (a book) by doing this. ページをめくって本を読む（ものを書く）。

⁸ stalled: glutted, satiated. あきあきした、うんざりした。

could like to¹ hear her! Dunnot [= Don't] say I wanted it, but ask of yourseln."

"Mr Hareton wishes you would read to us, ma'am," I said, immediately. "He'd take it very kind²—he'd be much obliged."

'She frowned, and looking up, answered,

"Mr Hareton, and the whole set of you, will be good enough to³ understand that I reject any pretence at kindness you have the hypocrisy to offer⁴! I despise you, and will have nothing to say to any of you! When I would have given my life for one kind word⁵, even to see one of your faces, you all kept off. But I won't complain to you. I'm driven down here by the cold, not either to amuse you, or enjoy your society."

"What could I ha' done?" began Earnshaw. "How was I to blame?"

"Oh! you are an exception," answered Mrs Heathcliff. "I never missed⁶ such a concern⁷ as you."

"But I offered more than once, and asked," he said, kindling⁸ up at her pertness, "I asked Mr Heathcliff to let me wake⁹ for you—"

"Be silent! I'll go out of doors, or anywhere, rather than have your disagreeable voice in my ear!" said my lady.

¹ could like to: (できれば) ~したいと思う、したい気分だ。'to feel inclined to' ほどの意味。

² kind: *a. (obs. exc. dial.)* grateful, thankful. あるいは、*as adv. (now colloq.)* = kindly: in a way that is pleasant or agreeable to the recipient or object; agreeably, pleasantly. すぐあとの 'be much obliged' は「恩に着る、ありがたい」で、同じ意味のことを言い換えたもの。

³ be good enough to (do): = be so good as to (do): (often in a request) be kind and do (in favour). ~してくださいませんか、くだされば助かります。

⁴ any pretence ... to offer: any pretence at kindness that you (have the hypocrisy to) offer. もっともらしい顔をして親切ぶること。

⁵ When I .. word: 親切なことばのひとつもかけてくれればうれしくて命だってあげもしただろうときには。

⁶ miss: to perceive with regret the absence or loss of; to feel the want of. ~がいなくて残念に思う、いてほしいと思う。(p. 171 注 3、p. 404 注 2 参照)

⁷ concern: (famil.) a material contrivance or object; esp. one that is complicated or cumbrous: usually with some amount of depreciation (esp. if applied to a person). (じゃまな、やっかいなもの、人、やつ。

⁸ kindle: to become inflamed, ardent, or warm; to glow with passion or excitement.

⁹ wake: to stay awake for the purpose of watching or tending; (obs. exc. dial.) to keep vigil (in church, by a corpse, etc.). [廃・方言] 寝ずの番(看病)をする、寝ずに遺体の番(通夜)をする。ここでは後者。'wake for you' は、あんたの代りに (Linton の) 通夜をする。

'Hareton muttered she might go to hell, for him! and unslinging¹ his gun, restrained himself from his Sunday occupations no longer.

He talked now, freely enough; and she presently saw fit to retreat to her solitude: but the frost had set in, and, in spite of her pride, she was forced to condescend² to our company, more and more. However, I took care there should be no further scorning at my good nature—ever since, I've been as stiff as herself—and she has no lover or liker among us—and she does not deserve one—for, let them say the least word to her, and she'll curl back³ without respect of any one⁴. She'll snap at⁵ the master himself; and as good as⁶ dares⁷ him to thrash her; and the more hurt she gets, the more venomous⁸ she grows.'

At first, on hearing this account from Zillah, I determined to leave my situation, take a cottage, and get Catherine to come and live with me; but Mr Heathcliff would as soon permit that, as he would set up Hareton in an independent house⁹; and I can see no remedy, at present, unless she could marry again; and that scheme, it does not come within my province¹⁰ to arrange.

Thus ended Mrs Dean's story. Notwithstanding the doctor's prophecy, I am rapidly recovering strength, and, though it be only the second week in January, I propose¹¹ getting

¹ unsling: to detach from a sling; to free from being slung or suspended. 吊ってある (かけてある) 所からはずす。

² condescend: [kɒndɪsɛnd] to come or bend down, so far as a particular action is concerned, from one's position of dignity or pride; to deign. ここでは「プライドを捨てて私たちといっしょにいる」。

³ curl back: = call back. (大声で) 言い返す。こう解さねば意味が通らない。他のテキストも 'curl back' だから、誤植ではなく方言 (確認しえたところでは、Hull の方言で curl = call)。

⁴ without respect of any one: 誰彼かまわず。without respect of: without consideration of, or regard to, something.

⁵ snap at: to utter sharp, tart, or cutting words or remarks; to speak or reply irritably or abruptly (at). ~にくってかかる。

⁶ as good as: practically, to all intents and purposes. 事実上、ほとんど。

⁷ dare: to challenge or defy (a person) to do something. ~できるものならしてみろと挑む。

⁸ venomous: (fig.) having the virulence of venom; rancorous, spiteful, malignant, virulent; embittered, envenomed.

⁹ would as soon A as B: (soon: more readily or easily. 主に 'would sooner A than B' のかたちを取る) 「B するくらいならいっそ A」(p. 146 注 5, p. 211 注 4 参照) とは一見ずいぶんちがうが、'I would as soon die as disgrace myself.' (恥を搔くならいっそ死ぬ) という例文は、「死ぬ (A) のはいやだ。しかし恥をかく (B) のはもっといやだ。ゆえにいっそ死ぬほう (A) がまし」ということだから、B にくらべて A が特に好ましいわけではない。(Hareton に竈を持たせるほどの気があるなら、私の計画などは簡単にゆるしてもくれましようが) という含みで、「もちろん Hareton に竈を持たせはしませんし、私の計画をゆるしてもくれません」ということだろう。

¹⁰ province: the sphere of a person or body of persons; duty, office, business, function, department.

¹¹ propose: to put before one's own mind as something that one is going to do; to design, purpose, intend (with *inf.* or *vbl. n.*).

out on horseback in a day or two, and riding over to Wuthering Heights. to inform my landlord that I shall spend the next six months in London; and, if he likes, he may look out for¹ another tenant to take the place, after October—I would not pass another winter here for much².

¹ look out for: to watch or search for; to be on the look-out for; to await vigilantly.

² for much: ‘would not’ と呼応して、たとえたくさんもらっても～しない。(p. 249 注 10 *for anything* 参照)

Chapter XVII (XXXI)

Yesterday was bright, calm, and frosty. I went to the Heights as I proposed; my housekeeper entreated¹ me to bear a little note from her to her young lady, and I did not refuse, for the worthy woman was not conscious of anything odd in her request.

The front door stood open, but the jealous² gate was fastened, as at my last visit; I knocked and invoked³ Earnshaw from among the garden beds; he unchained it, and I entered. The fellow is as handsome a rustic as need be seen⁴. I took particular notice of him this time; but then, he does his best, apparently, to make the least of his advantages⁵.

I asked if Mr Heathcliff were at home? He answered, no; but he would be in at dinner-time. It was eleven o'clock, and I announced my intention of going in, and waiting for him, at which he immediately flung down his tools and accompanied me, in the office of watchdog⁶, not as a substitute for the host.

We entered together; Catherine was there, making herself useful⁷ in preparing some vegetables for the approaching meal; she looked more sulky, and less spirited than when I had seen her first. She hardly raised her eyes to notice me, and continued her employment⁸ with the same disregard to common forms of politeness, as before; never returning my bow and good morning by the slightest acknowledgment.

‘She does not seem so amiable,’ I thought, ‘as Mrs Dean would persuade me to believe. She's a beauty, it is true; but not an angel.’

Earnshaw surlily⁹ bid her remove her things¹⁰ to the kitchen. ‘Remove them yourself,’ she said; pushing them from her, as soon as she had done; and retiring to a stool

¹ entreat: to make an earnest prayer or request to; to beseech, implore.

² jealous: suspiciously careful or watchful. (p.2 注 6、p. 8 注 5、p. 60 注 5、p. 159 注 7 参照)

³ invoke: to summon (a spirit) by charms or incantation; to conjure; also *fig.* ここでは比喩的に、ノックをして Hareton を呼び出した、つまり、ノックを聞いて Hareton が現れた。

⁴ as handsome a rustic as need be seen: 見るだけのことはあるハンサムな田舎者、つまり田舎者にしてはまず男前。

⁵ he does ... advantages: せっかくの取り柄をできるだけ生かすまいと（男前を台なしにして見せようと）がんばっているようだった。

⁶ in the office of watchdog: 番犬の役目として。

⁷ make oneself useful: 手伝う。

⁸ employment: that on which (one) is employed; business; occupation; a special errand or commission. 仕事。

⁹ surlily: with gloomy ill-humour or churlish moroseness. ぶっきらぼうに。

¹⁰ her things: the vegetables.

by the window, where she began to carve figures of birds and beasts, out of the turnip parings¹ in her lap.

I approached her, pretending to desire a view of the garden; and, as I fancied, adroitly² dropped Mrs Dean's note onto her knee, unnoticed by Hareton—but she asked aloud—

‘What is that?’ And chucked³ it off.

‘A letter from your old acquaintance, the housekeeper at the Grange,’ I answered, annoyed at her exposing my kind deed, and fearful lest it should be imagined a missive⁴ of my own.

She would gladly have gathered it up, at this information, but Hareton beat⁵ her; he seized, and put it in his waistcoat, saying Mr Heathcliff should look at it first.

Thereat⁶, Catherine silently turned her face from us, and very stealthily drew out her pocket-handkerchief and applied it to her eyes; and her cousin, after struggling a while to keep down his softer feelings, pulled out the letter and flung it on the floor beside her as ungraciously⁷ as he could.

Catherine caught, and perused it eagerly; then she put a few questions to me concerning the inmates, rational and irrational⁸, of her former home, and gazing towards the hills, murmured in soliloquy.

‘I should like to be riding Minny down there! I should like to be climbing up there!— Oh! I'm tired—I'm stalled⁹—Hareton!’

¹ paring: a thin portion pared off the surface of anything, usually as refuse or superfluous matter. むいた皮。

² adroitly: with ready skill; dexterously, cleverly.

³ chuck: to throw with the hand with little action of the arm; to throw underhand.

⁴ missive: (obs.) *gen.* a letter or epistle sent from one person to another. (p. 218 注 3 参照)。

⁵ beat: to get ahead of. ～に先んずる。

⁶ thereat: on the occasion or occurrence of that, thereupon, because of that. ここは齋藤秀三郎『英和中辞典』の「それを見て、其れを聞いて（など）」が適切。(p. 38 注 4 参照)

⁷ ungraciously: with lack of manners, discourteously.

⁸ the inmates, rational and irrational: かつて共に暮らした人々（理性あるもの）や動物たち（理性なきもの）。‘rational and irrational’ が Catherine の質問そのものにかかるとする解釈もあるけれど、語順から見てもこの場の状況から考えても不自然。すぐあとで Catherine が Minny をなつかしんでいることにも注意。【参考】家畜を「共住者」とする例文: ‘In those Countries, the Master and his Cattle are Inmates.’ (OED) ‘Wretched inmates!’ (犬に向かって。本書 p. 11 参照)

⁹ stalled: glutted, satiated. あきあきした、うんざりした。(p. 417 注 8 参照)

And she leant her pretty head back against the sill¹, with half a yawn and half a sigh, and lapsed into an aspect of abstracted² sadness, neither caring nor knowing whether we remarked her.

‘Mrs Heathcliff,’ I said, after sitting some time mute³, ‘you are not aware that I am an acquaintance of yours? so intimate, that I think it strange you won’t come and speak to me. My housekeeper never wearies of talking about and praising you; and she’ll be greatly disappointed if I return with no news of, or from you, except that you received her letter and said nothing.’

She appeared to wonder at this speech, and asked,

‘Does Ellen like you?’

‘Yes, very well,’ I replied unhesitatingly.

‘You must tell her,’ she continued, ‘that I would answer her letter, but I have no materials for writing, not even a book from which I might tear a leaf.’

‘No books!’ I exclaimed. ‘How do you contrive to live here without them? If I may take the liberty to⁴ inquire—Though provided with a large library, I’m frequently very dull at the Grange.—take my books away, and I should be desperate!’

‘I was always reading, when I had them,’ said Catherine; ‘and Mr Heathcliff never reads; so he took it into his head to destroy my books. I have not had a glimpse of one, for weeks. Only once, I searched through Joseph’s store of theology⁵, to⁶ his great irritation; and once, Hareton, I came upon a secret stock in your room ... some Latin and Greek, and some tales and poetry; all old friends—I brought the last⁷ here—and you gathered them,

¹ sill (= window-sill): the piece of wood- or stone-work forming the lower horizontal part of a window-opening. 窓の下枠。

² abstracted: withdrawn from the contemplation of present objects; absent in mind.

³ mute: not emitting articulate sound; silent.

⁴ take the liberty (*to do* or *of doing* something): to go so far beyond the bounds of civility or propriety, be so presumptuous as to (etc.). 失礼ながら～する。(p. 167 注 7 参照)

⁵ theology: the study or science which treats of God, His nature and attributes, and His relations with man and the universe; ‘the science of things divine’ (Hooker); divinity.

⁶ to: indicating result, effect, or consequence: so as to produce, cause, or result in. たとえば ‘to my vexation’ は、不愉快なことが結果として ‘vexation’ をもたらしたわけで、文頭にくれば、ふつう「いまいまいしいことには（これこれの不愉快なことがあった、など）」と訳される。ここでは、「私が本をひっかけ回したので Joseph はひどく腹を立ててしまった」。

⁷ the last: (Latin and Greek ではなく) こちらのほう。‘some tales and poetry’ でひとくくり。

as a magpie gathers silver spoons, for the mere love of stealing!¹ They are of no use to you—or else² you concealed them in the bad spirit, that as you cannot enjoy them, nobody else shall. Perhaps *your* envy counselled³ Mr Heathcliff to rob me of my treasures? But, I've most of them written on my brain and printed in my heart, and you cannot deprive me of those!

Earnshaw blushed crimson when his cousin made this revelation⁴ of his private literary accumulations⁵, and stammered an indignant denial of her accusations.

'Mr Hareton is desirous of increasing his amount of knowledge,' I said, coming to his rescue. 'He is not *envious* but *emulous*⁶ of your attainments—He'll be a clever scholar in a few years!'

'And he wants *me* to sink into a dunce⁷, meantime⁸,' answered Catherine. 'Yes, I hear him trying to spell and read to himself, and pretty blunders⁹ he makes! I wish you would repeat Chevy Chase¹⁰ as you did yesterday; It was extremely funny. I heard you ... and I heard you turning over the dictionary, to seek out the hard words, and then cursing, because you couldn't read their explanations¹¹!'

The young man evidently thought it too bad that he should be laughed at for his ignorance, and then laughed at for trying to remove it¹². I had a similar notion, and, remembering Mrs Dean's anecdote of his first attempt at enlightening the darkness¹³ in

¹ as a magpie...stealing: カササギ(magpie)の習性について—its habits of pilfering and hoarding are proverbial, and it is popularly regarded as a bird of ill omen. (*OED*)

² or else: ここは直前の文も含めて解釈する。つまり「あなたはただ盗みがおもしろくて本を集めたのよ—だって本に用なんてないんですからね—でなければ、自分が読めないものだから、だれにも読ませまいと意地悪をして隠したんだわ」

³ counsel: to advise. 'your envy' が勧めた、とは「あなたのねたましそうな顔を見て Heathcliff は私から宝物(本)を奪う気になった」、ということ。

⁴ revelation: disclosure of facts made by a person; exposure of something previously disguised or concealed. 隠しごとをあばくこと。

⁵ accumulation: an accumulated mass; a heap, pile, or quantity formed by successive additions. (追加しつづけているうちに) たまったもの、蓄積してまとまった量になったもの。'private literary accumulations' こっそり貯めこんだ本。

⁶ emulous: desirous of rivalling, imitating, obtaining (of). ～に負けまいとする、を得ようとする。

⁷ dunce: one who shows no capacity for learning; a dull-witted, stupid person; a dullard, blockhead. (p. 311 注 8、p. 352 注 5 参照)

⁸ meantime: while something is going on, 'at the same time', 'all the while'.

⁹ blunder: a gross mistake; an error due to stupidity or carelessness.

¹⁰ Chevy Chase: a 15th-century English Ballad describing the battle of Otterburn (August 1388) between the Percys and the Douglases.

¹¹ you couldn't read their explanations: 辞書を引いても単語の定義がむずかしくて読めない。

¹² it: his ignorance. 'and then laughed at' は 'and then (he should be) laughed at'.

¹³ enlighten the darkness: (無知の) 暗闇を (知の) 光で照らす、つまり無知から抜け出そうとすること。

which he had been reared, I observed,

‘But, Mrs Heathcliff, we have each had a commencement, and each stumbled¹ and tottered² on the threshold³, and had our teachers scorned⁴, instead of aiding us, we should stumble and totter yet.’

‘Oh!’ she replied, ‘I don’t wish to limit his acquirements⁵ ... still, he has no right to appropriate⁶ what is mine, and make it ridiculous to me with his vile⁷ mistakes and mispronunciations! Those books, both prose and verse, are consecrated⁸ to me by other associations⁹, and I hate to have them debased and profaned¹⁰ in his mouth! Besides, of all¹¹, he has selected my favourite pieces that I love the most to repeat, as if out of deliberate malice!’

Hareton’s chest heaved in silence a minute; he laboured under a severe sense of mortification¹² and wrath, which it was no easy task to suppress.

I rose, and, from a gentlemanly idea of relieving his embarrassment, took up my station in the door-way, surveying¹³ the external prospect, as I stood.

He followed my example, and left the room, but presently reappeared, bearing half-a-dozen volumes in his hands, which he threw into Catherine’s lap, exclaiming,

¹ stumble: to make a slip in speech or action; to blunder through inadvertence or unpreparedness. (歩いてつまずくより) とちる、へまをする、つまずく。

² totter: to walk or move with unsteady steps; to go shakily or feebly; to toddle; also, to walk with difficulty; to reel, stagger. おぼつかない足取りで (よたよた、よろよろ、よちよち) 歩く。

³ threshold: in reference to entrance, the beginning of a state or action, outset, opening. (建物の敷居・入口より、ものやことの) はじめ、入口。

⁴ had our teachers scorned: if our teachers had scorned.

⁵ acquirement: that which is acquired; the result of acquiring for oneself; gain, or attainment. Usually a personal attainment of body or mind, as distinct from an acquisition or material and external gain, and opposed to a natural *gift* or *talent*. 学問・技芸など自分で身につけたもの。

⁶ appropriate: to take possession of for one’s own. (p. 32 注 13 参照)

⁷ vile: wretchedly bad or inferior.

⁸ consecrate: [kəˈnsəkreɪt] to render sacred; to make an object of veneration or cherished regard; to hallow, sanctify. 聖化する、崇拝する。ここでは、尊重するほどの意味。

⁹ associations: an idea or recollection linked in the mind or memory with some object of contemplation, and recalled to the mind in connexion with it. ものにまつわる思い出。

¹⁰ profane: to treat (what is sacred) with irreverence, contempt, or disregard; to desecrate, violate; to defile, pollute.

¹¹ of all: designating the (nominally) least likely or expected example (*you of all people!*) という *COD 8th* の定義がわかりやすい。「よりもよって、まさか〜とは」という気持。

¹² mortification: the feeling of humiliation caused by a disappointment, a rebuff or slight, or an untoward accident; the sense of disappointment or vexation. (p. 312 注 13 参照)

¹³ survey: to look at from, or as from, a height or commanding position; to take a broad, general, or comprehensive view of; to view or examine in its whole extent. ここは、外の景色を見渡した。

‘Take them! I never want to hear, or read, or think of them again!’

‘I won't have them now!’ she answered. ‘I shall connect¹ them with you, and hate them!’

She opened one that had obviously been often turned over², and read a portion in the drawling³ tone of a beginner; then laughed, and threw it from her.

‘And listen,’ she continued provokingly⁴, commencing a verse of an old ballad in the same fashion.

But his self-love would endure no further torment—I heard, and not altogether disapprovingly, a manual check given to her saucy tongue⁵—The little wretch had done her utmost to hurt her cousin's sensitive though uncultivated feelings, and a physical argument⁶ was the only mode he had of balancing the account⁷ and repaying its effects on the inflicter⁸.

He afterwards gathered the books and hurled them on the fire. I read in his countenance what anguish it was to offer that sacrifice to spleen⁹—I fancied that as they consumed¹⁰, he recalled the pleasure they had already imparted¹¹; and the triumph, and ever increasing pleasure he had anticipated from them—and I fancied I guessed the incitement¹² to his secret studies, also. He had been content with daily labour and rough

¹ connect: to associate in idea; to view or think of as connected. 連想する。

² turn over: to reverse (a leaf, or the successive leaves, of a book) in order to read (or write) on further; to read or search through, peruse (a book) by doing this. ページをめくって本を読む (熟読する)。

³ drawl: to speak slowly, by affectedly prolonging the words. (p. 157 注 1 参照)

⁴ provokingly: in an irritating manner; so as to cause irritation; exasperatingly; to a provoking degree. いらいらさせるほど。(p. 359 注 1 参照)

⁵ a manual check ... tongue: ビンタをはって、生意気な口を黙らせたこと。

⁶ a physical argument: 腕力にものをいわせること。

⁷ balance the account: 精算する。

⁸ repay its effects on the inflicter: いわんとすることは理解できるが、‘repay’ の用法がわかりにくい。OED には ‘to avenge (a thing) on a person’ (何々の恨みを誰々に晴らす) という定義もあるが、大変まれな廃用法とされるため疑問がある。しかしここではそうだとし、「its effects」つまり ‘the effects of the infliction upon him’ (彼女の仕打ちによって受けた苦痛) を ‘the inflicter’ (加害者=彼女) に晴らす」と考えておく。

⁹ spleen: irritable or peevish temper. 癪癪。(p. 383 注 10 参照)

¹⁰ consume: to burn away, become burned to ashes. 燃えて灰になる。

¹¹ impart: to give a part or share of; to make another a partaker of; to bestow, give, communicate. (分け) 与える。

¹² incitement: that which incites or rouses to action; an inciting cause or motive; stimulus, incentive, ‘spur’. その気にさせる原因、動機。

animal enjoyments, till Catherine crossed his path¹—Shame at her scorn, and hope of her approval were his first prompters² to higher pursuits; and instead of guarding him from one, and winning him to the other, his endeavours to raise himself had produced just the contrary result.

‘Yes, that's all the good that such a brute as you can get from them³!’ cried Catherine, sucking her damaged lip, and watching the conflagration⁴ with indignant eyes.

‘You'd *better* hold your tongue now!’ he answered fiercely.

And his agitation precluding⁵ further speech, he advanced hastily to the entrance, where I made way for him to pass. But, ere he had crossed the door-stones, Mr Heathcliff, coming up the causeway, encountered him and laying hold of his shoulder, asked—

‘What's to do⁶ now, my lad?’

‘Naught, naught!’ he said, and broke away⁷, to enjoy his grief and anger in solitude.

Heathcliff gazed after him and sighed.

‘It will be odd, if I thwart⁸ myself,’ he muttered, unconscious that I was behind him. ‘But when I look for his father in his face, I find *her* every day more. How the devil is he so like? I can hardly bear to see him.’

He bent his eyes to the ground, and walked moodily in. There was a restless, anxious expression in his countenance I had never remarked there before, and he looked sparer in

¹ cross a person's path: (= cross the path of) to meet him in his way, to come in the way of; often implying obstruction or thwarting. ここでは特に妨害の意味はなく、Catherine が彼の前に現れる(までは)。

² prompter: one who moves or incites to action; an instigator, mover. ここは人ではないので、「誘い水」あたりが適当。

³ them: the books.

⁴ conflagration: a great and destructive fire; the burning or blazing of a large extent or mass of combustible matter, e.g. of a town, a forest, etc. これもおおげさな表現。

⁵ preclude: to exclude, prevent, frustrate. ‘to close or shut up (a passage, etc.) against any attempt to pass’ (通れないように道をふさぐ) から。ここは、興奮のあまりそれ以上口がきけなくなつて。

⁶ What's to do?: なにがあった、どうした? (p.183 注 7、p.251 注 4、p. 355 注 3 参照)

⁷ break away: to start away with abruptness and force; to go off abruptly. ここでは、逃げるように立ち去つた。

⁸ thwart: to prevent the accomplishment of (a purpose); to foil, frustrate, balk, defeat. 毎日 Hareton の顔を見ていると、憎い Hindley ではなく、ますますその妹 Cathy の面影が浮んでくるので、復讐の心がくじけがちになることをいう。

person¹.

His daughter-in-law, on perceiving him through the window, immediately escaped to the kitchen, so that I remained alone.

'I'm glad to see you out of doors again, Mr Lockwood,' he said, in reply to my greeting, 'from selfish motives² partly: I don't think I could readily supply your loss³ in this desolation. I've wondered, more than once, what brought you here.'

'An idle whim, I fear, sir,' was my answer, 'or else an idle whim is going to spirit⁴ me away—I shall set out for London, next week, and I must give you warning⁵, that I feel no disposition⁶ to retain Thrushcross Grange, beyond the twelve months I agreed to rent it. I believe I shall not live there any more.'

'Oh, indeed; you're tired of being banished from the world, are you?' he said. 'But, if you be coming to plead off⁷ paying for a place you won't occupy, your journey is useless—I never relent in exacting⁸ my due, from any one.'

'I'm coming to plead off nothing about it!' I exclaimed, considerably irritated. 'Should you wish it, I'll settle with you now,' and I drew my notebook⁹ from my pocket.

'No, no,' he replied coolly; 'you'll leave sufficient behind, to cover your debts, if you fail to return ... I'm not in such a hurry—sit down and take your dinner with us—a guest that is safe from repeating his visit, can generally be made welcome—Catherine, bring the things in—where are you?'

¹ sparer in person: 体が以前よりやせた。 *person*: the living body of a human being. (p. 213 注 14 参照)

² from selfish motives: (あなたの回復を喜ぶのは) こちらの勝手な都合から。

³ your loss: あなたを失うこと。露骨に言えば 'your death'、つまり屋敷の借り手がなくなってしまうこと。

⁴ spirit away: to take away, carry off, by some mysterious means or power; to transport with speed. 同じ 'idle whim' (気まぐれ) が今度は自分を神隠しにしていまいそうだ、ということ。

⁵ warning: notice of the termination of a business relation, given by one of the parties to the other; esp. by a landlord to a tenant, a master to a servant, an employer to an employee, or vice versa. ここでは 'vice versa' (その反対) で、'by a tenant to a landlord' に該当。

⁶ disposition: the state or quality of being disposed, inclined, or 'in the mind' (to something, or to do something); inclination (sometimes = desire, intention, purpose). ～しようという気持、意向。

⁷ plead off: 結局は家賃 (rent) をまけてくれということだろうが、「paying' (支払い) を勘弁してくれという」とも取れる。'plead off' は辞書に見当たらないが、「(～を口実に) 断る」という意味で使われることがある。

⁸ exact: to demand and enforce the payment of (fees, money, taxes, tolls, penalties, etc.); to extort. 取り立てる。ここでは、いただくべきものはどなたからもきっちりいただいています。

⁹ notebook: a book in which promissory notes are entered, registered, recorded, etc. 約束手形帳。

Catherine re-appeared, bearing a tray of knives and forks.

‘You may¹ get your dinner with Joseph,’ muttered Heathcliff aside, ‘and remain in the kitchen till he is gone.’

She obeyed his directions very punctually² – perhaps she had no temptation to transgress³. Living among clowns and misanthropists, she probably cannot appreciate a better class of people, when she meets them.

With Mr Heathcliff, grim and saturnine⁴, on the one hand, and Hareton, absolutely dumb, on the other, I made a somewhat cheerless meal, and bid adieu early – I would have departed by the back way to get a last glimpse of Catherine, and annoy old Joseph; but Hareton received orders to lead up my horse, and my host himself escorted me to the door, so I could not fulfil my wish.

‘How dreary life gets over in that house!’⁵ I reflected, while riding down the road. ‘What a realization⁶ of something more romantic than a fairy tale it would have been for Mrs Linton Heathcliff, had she and I struck up an attachment⁷, as her good nurse desired, and migrated together into the stirring atmosphere of the town!’

¹ may: ~しなさい。(p. 275 注 6 参照)

² punctually: with careful attention to, or insistence upon, points or details of conduct; with strict observance of rule or obligation; strictly, scrupulously, carefully, punctiliously. 忠実に（現在では ‘with strict observance of the appointed time’ の意味で使われるのがふつう）。

³ no temptation to transgress: すぐ次の文章からわかるように、いいつけに背いてまで残りたいというほどの関心を Lockwood には抱いていなかった。

⁴ saturnine: sluggish, cold, and gloomy in temperament.

⁵ How dreary life gets over in that house!: あの家にいたら人生はまっくらになるぞ！ ‘get over’ とひとくくりにせず、‘life gets dreary+over in that house’ と取るべきだろう。 *get*: (with adjective) to become. *over*: on the other side of something intervening, e.g. a sea, river, street; hence, merely, on the other side of some space, at some distance. つまり Heathcliff 家の内と外、むこう側とこちら側との隔たりを意識したものとしておく。

⁶ realization: (a case or instance of) the action of making real or investing with reality; the process of becoming or being made real; conversion into real fact. (夢の) 実現。 ‘for Mrs Linton Heathcliff’ としているところが微笑を誘う。

⁷ strike up an attachment: 親密な間柄 (恋仲) になる。 *strike up*: to start, set afoot (a friendship, an acquaintance, a conversation, trade, etc. with another).

Chapter XVIII (XXXII)

1802.—This September, I was invited to devastate¹ the moors of a friend, in the North; and, on my journey to his abode, I unexpectedly came within fifteen miles of Gimmerton. The hostler², at a roadside public-house³, was holding a pail⁴ of water to refresh my horses, when a cart of very green oats, newly reaped, passed by, and he remarked—

‘Yon’s frough Gimmerton, nah! They’re allas three wick after other folk wi’ ther harvest.’⁵

‘Gimmerton?’ I repeated, my residence in that locality had already grown dim and dreamy. ‘Ah! I know! How far is it from this?’

‘Happen⁶ fourteen mile’ o’er th’ hills, and a rough road,’ he answered.

A sudden impulse seized me to visit Thrushcross Grange. It was scarcely noon, and I conceived⁷ that I might as well pass the night under my own roof, as in an inn.⁸ Besides, I could spare a day easily, to arrange matters with my landlord, and thus save myself the trouble of invading the neighbourhood again⁹.

Having rested a while, I directed my servant to inquire the way to the village; and, with great fatigue to our beasts, we managed the distance in some three hours.

I left him there, and proceeded down the valley alone. The grey church looked greyer,

¹ devastate: to lay waste, ravage, waste, render desolate. ここでは、狩猟することをおおげさにいったもの。あとに獲物一匹残すまいという気構えなのだろう。

² hostler: (= ostler) [ɒ'slə(r)] a man who attends to horses at an inn; a stableman, a groom. 馬丁。

³ public-house: an inn or hostelry providing accommodation (food and lodging, or light refreshments) for travellers or members of the general public; usually licensed for the supply of ale, wines, and spirits. 宿屋。現在では ‘a tavern’ (酒場) を指す。

⁴ pale: a vessel, usually of cylindrical or truncated obconical (倒円錐形の) shape, made of wooden staves hooped with iron, or of sheet-metal, etc., and provided with a bail or hooped handle; used for carrying milk, water, etc. (取っ手のついた木製の) 手桶。

⁵ Yon’s ... harvest: Yon’s (= that’s) from Gimmerton, now! They’re always three weeks after other folk with their harvest.

⁶ happen: mayhap, perhaps, maybe, perchance. (p. 416 注 1 参照)

⁷ conceive: to take into one’s head; to imagine, fancy, think. ここは ‘think’。「受胎する、子を宿す」という意味より、ある考えが頭に生ずることをいう。

⁸ might as well: implying the equivalence or equal result of one action in comparison with another. ‘might as well A as B’ のかたちで、A も B いずれも同じこと (どうせ同じことなら A するがよからう)。 (p. 217 注 3 参照)

⁹ I could ... again: 家賃支払いなどについて地主 (Heathcliff) と取り決めるのに一日費やすのはたやすいし、そうすればまたこのあたりまで出直す手間が省ける。

and the lonely churchyard lonelier. I distinguished¹ a moor sheep cropping² the short turf on the graves. It was sweet, warm weather—too warm for travelling; but the heat did not hinder me from enjoying the delightful scenery above and below; had I seen it nearer August, I'm sure it would have tempted me to waste a month among its solitudes. In winter, nothing more dreary, in summer, nothing more divine, than those glens³ shut in by hills, and those bluff, bold swells of heath.⁴

I reached the Grange before sunset, and knocked for admittance; but the family had retreated into the back premises⁵, I judged by one thin, blue wreath⁶ curling⁷ from the kitchen chimney, and they did not hear.

I rode into the court. Under the porch⁸ a girl of nine or ten sat knitting, and an old woman reclined on the house-steps, smoking a meditative⁹ pipe.

'Is Mrs Dean within?' I demanded of¹⁰ the dame¹¹.

'Mistress Dean? Nay!' she answered, 'shoo [= she] doesn't bide here; shoo's up at th' Heights.'

'Are you the housekeeper, then?' I continued.

¹ distinguish: to perceive distinctly or clearly (by sight, hearing, or other bodily sense); to 'make out' by looking, listening, etc.; to recognize. 一服して午後早くに宿を出発し、約三時間かかって到着したのなら午後四時半過ぎか。まだ明るかったからはっきり見えたのである。

² crop: to pluck off, remove, or detach (any terminal parts of a plant); said of animals biting off the tops of plants or herbage in feeding.

³ glen: a mountain-valley, usually narrow and forming the course of a stream. (p. 133 注 8 参照)

⁴ bluff, bold swells of heath.: なんだかな丘のつづくさまに目を奪われる荒野。'heath' は(低木の heath が生えている)荒地。'swell' はゆるやかな台形状に隆起した土地や横長のなんだかな丘をいう。'bluff' を「険しい、切り立った」ではなく '**presenting a broad flattened front**' (横長で平らな正面を見せる)と取れば、金の延べ棒を横から見たかたちが想像できる。'bold' は '**standing out to the view; striking to the eye**' (際立った、人目を引く)。荒野だの原野だのといっても、冬はともかく夏はすばらしいとあるように、けっして年中寒々しい景色ではないはずだ。《この項は想像のみを頼りにして書いたため、あるいは見当ちがいがああるかもしれない》

⁵ premises: (pl.) a house or building with its grounds or other appurtenances. ここでは屋敷の奥・裏手。(p. 356 注 4 参照)

⁶ wreath: something resembling or comparable to a twisted or circular band; esp. a coil of a spiral column of smoke, steam, or the like. らせん状に立ち上る煙。

⁷ curl: to move in spiral convolutions or undulations.

⁸ porch: an exterior structure forming a covered approach to the entrance of a building. 建物の入口前にある屋根つき玄関。

⁹ meditative: (of actions, manner, appearance, etc.) accompanied by meditation; indicative of meditation. ここは、物思いにでもふけているようにパイプをふかしていること。

¹⁰ demand (of): to ask, inquire, make inquiry. of the person asked. つまり、('of' のあとに質問を受ける相手を置いて、その) 人にたずねる。

¹¹ dame: [deim] an elderly woman.

‘Eea, Aw [= I] keep th’ hahse,’ she replied.

‘Well, I’m Mr Lockwood, the master—Are there any rooms to lodge me in, I wonder?¹ I wish to stay all night.’

‘T’maister!’ she cried in astonishment. ‘Whet! whoiver knew yah wur coming? Yah sud ha’ send word! They’s nowt norther dry nor mensful² abaht t’ place, nowt there isn’t.’³

She threw down her pipe and bustled⁴ in, the girl followed, and I entered too; soon perceiving that her report was true, and, moreover, that I had almost upset her wits by my unwelcome apparition⁵.

I bid her be composed—I would go out for a walk; and, meantime, she must try to prepare a corner of a sitting-room for me to sup⁶ in, and a bed-room to sleep in—No sweeping and dusting, only good fires and dry sheets were necessary.

She seemed willing to do her best; though she thrust the hearth-brush into the grates in mistake for the poker; and malappropriated⁷ several other articles of her craft⁸; but I retired, confiding in her energy for a resting-place against⁹ my return.

Wuthering Heights was the goal of my proposed excursion. An after-thought brought me back, when I had quitted the court.

‘All well at the Heights?’ I inquired of the woman.

¹ wonder: to be desirous to know or learn. ‘I wonder’ はしばしば知りたいことを示す疑問文の後に置かれ、この場合、‘I wonder if there are any rooms to lodge me in.’ に同じ。

² mensful = menseful: (Sc. and north. dial.) proper, decorous; neat, tidy; discreet.

³ What! ... isn’t!: What! whoever knew you were coming? You should have sent word! There’s naught neither dry nor mensful about the place, naught there isn’t! なんとまあ、旦那が来なさるとはなあ。先に知らせてくださりやよかったに。ここにやあ風を通した（湿気のない）部屋もきちんと片づいた部屋も、まるでありやしませんがな。

⁴ bustle: to bestir oneself or display activity with a certain amount of noise or agitation, to be fussily active: usually implying excessive or obtrusive show of energy. ここは、あわてふためいて中に入った。

⁵ apparition: (of a visitor) the action of appearing or becoming visible. 姿を現すこと。

⁶ sup: to eat one’s supper; to take supper.

⁷ malappropriate: to misapply. 誤用する。OEDは例文としてこの文章のみを挙げている。

⁸ craft: an art, trade, or profession requiring special skill and knowledge; esp. a manual art, a handicraft; sometimes applied to any business, calling, or profession by which a livelihood is earned. ‘articles of her craft’ (大工にとってのノミ・カンナのような) 商売道具。

⁹ against: in preparation for, in time for.

‘Eea, fr owt Ee know,’¹ she answered, skurrying² away with a pan³ of hot cinders.

I would have asked why Mrs Dean had deserted the Grange; but it was impossible to delay her at such a crisis⁴, so, I turned away and made my exit, rambling leisurely along with the glow of a sinking sun behind, and the mild glory of a rising moon in front; one fading, and the other brightening, as I quitted the park, and climbed the stony by-road⁵ branching off to Mr Heathcliff’s dwelling.

Before I arrived in sight of it, all that remained of day was a beamless, amber⁶ light along the west; but I could see every pebble on the path, and every blade of grass, by that splendid moon.

I had neither to climb the gate, nor to knock—it yielded⁷ to my hand.

That is an improvement! I thought. And I noticed another, by the aid of my nostrils; a fragrance of stocks and wallflowers⁸, wafted⁹ on the air, from amongst the homely¹⁰ fruit-trees.

Both doors and lattices were open; and, yet¹¹, as is usually the case¹² in a coal district, a fine, red fire illuminated the chimney¹³; the comfort which the eye derives from it, renders the extra heat endurable. But the house of Wuthering Heights is so large, that the

¹ Eea, f’r owt Ee know!: Yes, for aught (= anything) I know! *for aught (or all) I know* = as far as I am aware. (よくは知らないが) 私の知る限りでは、たぶん。

² skurry (= scurry): to go rapidly, move hurriedly (*off, away*).

³ pan: a vessel, of metal or earthenware, for domestic uses, usually broad and shallow, and often open; the contents of a pan, a panful. ここでは、おき火を運ぶのだから、柄のついた鍋 (フライパン類似の容器)。

⁴ crisis: a vitally important or decisive stage in the progress of anything. 大事なとき、瀬戸際。

⁵ by-road: a road which is not a main road; a side road which does not form the highway between towns or places of importance; an out-of-the-way, little-frequented road.

⁶ amber: of the colour and clearness of amber (琥珀), amber-coloured; of a clear yellowish brown.

⁷ yield: to submit to some physical action or agent (e.g. pressure, friction, heat, etc.) so as to be affected by it. (押せば開く、叩けば凹む、曲げればたわむ、など) 外力を受けて変化する。【例】 The door *yielded* to her pressure. 彼女が押すとドアが開いた。(ランダムハウス英和第2版)

⁸ stocks and wallflowers: アラセイトウとニオイアラセイトウ (どちらもアブラナ科)。

⁹ waft: to pass through the air or through space; to float upon, come or go with the wind or breeze.

¹⁰ homely: commonplace.

¹¹ yet: in spite of that, for all that, nevertheless, notwithstanding. 戸も窓も開けっ放しなのに。

¹² as is usually the case: ふつうにあることだが、ふつうなのだが。‘as is often the case’ (よくあることだが) も同様の意味。

¹³ chimney: (obs. exc. dial) a fireplace or hearth. 「方言」とはあるが、暖炉。または a *chimney-piece*: (= *mantlepiece*) the ornamental structure, usually of stone or marble, with moulding, carving, etc., over and around the open recess of a fireplace. を指していると思われる。

inmates have plenty of space for withdrawing out of its influence; and, accordingly, what inmates there were had stationed themselves not far from one of the windows. I could both see them and hear them talk before I entered; and looked and listened in consequence¹, being moved thereto by a mingled sense of curiosity, and envy that grew as I lingered².

‘Con·trary!’³ said a voice as sweet as a silver bell—‘That for the third time, you dunce! I’m not going to tell you again—Recollect⁴, or I’ll pull your hair!’

‘Contrary, then,’ answered another, in deep but softened tones. ‘And now, kiss me for minding⁵ so well.’

‘No; read it over first correctly, without a single mistake.’

The male speaker began to read—he was a young man, respectably dressed, and seated at a table, having a book before him. His handsome features glowed with pleasure, and his eyes kept impatiently wandering from the page to a small white hand over his shoulder, which recalled⁶ him by a smart slap on the cheek, whenever its owner detected such signs of inattention.

Its owner stood behind, her light, shining ringlets⁷ blending, at intervals, with his brown locks, as she bent to superintend⁸ his studies; and her face—it was lucky he could not see her face, or he would never have been so steady⁹—I could, and I bit my lip, in spite, at having thrown away the chance I might have had, of doing something besides staring at its smiting¹⁰ beauty¹¹.

¹ in consequence: as a result or inference, consequently.

² linger: to stay on or hang about in a place beyond the proper or usual time. すでに何度も登場した単語だが、この辺で念のため。

³ Con·trary!: もちろんこの単語の第2音節の発音について注意しているところ。

⁴ recollect: to call or bring back (something) to one's mind; to recall the knowledge of (a thing, person, etc.); to remember.

⁵ mind: (now dial.) to remember. (ふつう ‘of, on, upon’ と共に)

⁶ recall: to summon or bring back (the attention, mind, etc.) (to a subject).

⁷ ringlet: a curled lock or tress of hair. 巻き毛 (の房)。

⁸ superintend: to have or exercise the charge or direction of (operations or affairs); to look after, oversee.

⁹ steady: (of a person or his mind) not easily perturbed or discomposed; balanced. (ほかのことに気を奪われず) 落ち着いた。

¹⁰ smiting: striking.

¹¹ I bit ... beauty: ‘in spite’ は「くやしくて」、‘the chance’ は ‘of doing something’ につづく。‘besides’ は ‘prep. other than, else than: in negative and interrogative (formerly sometimes in affirmative) sentences, capable of being rendered by ‘except, excluding.’ (～とは別に、～のほか)に)。したがって「そのはっとするほど美しい顔をみつめるほかになにかやりようもあつただろうに、そのチャンスを捨ててしまったくやしさに、私は唇を噛んだ」ということ。

The task¹ was done, not free from further blunders, but the pupil claimed a reward, and received at least five kisses, which, however², he generously returned. Then, they came to the door, and from their conversation, I judged they were about to issue³ out and have a walk on the moors. I supposed I should be condemned in Hareton Earnshaw's heart, if not by his mouth, to the lowest pit in the infernal regions if I showed my unfortunate person in his neighbourhood then⁴, and feeling very mean and malignant⁵, I skulked round to seek refuge in the kitchen.

There was unobstructed admittance on that side also⁶; and, at the door sat my old friend, Nelly Dean, sewing and singing a song, which was often interrupted from within, by harsh words of scorn and intolerance, uttered in far from musical accents.

‘Aw’d rayther, by th’ haulf, hev ‘em swearing i’ my lugs frough morn tuh neeght, nur hearken yah, hahsiver!’⁷ said the tenant of the kitchen, in answer to an unheard speech of Nelly’s. ‘It’s a blazing shaime, ut Aw cannut oppen t’ Blessed Book, bud yah set up them glories tuh sattān, un’ all t’ flaysome wickednesses ut iver wer born intuh t’ warld! Oh! yah’re a raight nowt; un’ shoo’s another; un’ that poor lad ‘ull be lost, atween ye.’⁸ Poor lad!’ he added, with a groan; ‘he’s witched, Aw’m sartin on’t! O, Lord, judge ‘em, fur they’s norther law nur justice amang wer rullers!’⁹

¹ task: a portion of study imposed by a teacher; a lesson to be learned or prepared.

² however: 何度もキスされたらうれしいはずなのに、なぜ ‘however’ なのかちょっとわかりにくい、ここはあくまでも Lockwood の視点なのだから、「少なくとも五回はキスされたが、(それはちと多すぎるにもかかわらず) されたほうはされたほうで、やはりそれに対してたっぷりお返しした」と考える。

³ issue: to go or come out; to flow out; to come forth, sally out (often with *out* or *forth*).

⁴ if I ... then: そんな(間の悪い)ときに運悪く彼の前に姿を見せたら。

⁵ feeling very mean and malignant: (自分の失恋が決定的になったので)まことにみつともなくもあり Hareton を呪いたくもある気分で。 *mean*: destitute of moral dignity or elevation; ignoble, small-minded. *malignant*: keenly desirous of the suffering or misfortune of another, or of others generally.

⁶ There was ... also: そちらもまた(開いており)勝手に入ることができた。 *admittance*: the action of admitting, letting in, or giving entrance; permission to enter.

⁷ Aw’d rayther ... hahsiver!: I’d rather, by the half, have them swearing in my lugs (= ears) from morning to night, nor (= than) hearken (= listen to) you howsoever! おまえの歌を聞かされるくらいなら、朝から晩まで耳のそばでばちあたりなことをわめかれたほうがずっとましだわい。 *by the half*= by half: much, considerably, far. *hahsiver*(= howsoever) はよくわからないが、(まったくなんぼましだか!) というほどの強調か。

⁸ It’s a blazing ... atween ye.: It’s a blazing shame, that I cannot open the Blessed Book (= Bible), but you set up them (= those) glories to satan, and all the flaysome (= fearful) wickednesses that ever were born into the world! Oh! you’re a right naught; and she’s (she = Catherine) another; and that poor lad will be lost, between you. ‘cannot open...but~’ は、わしが聖書を開こうとすりゃ、きまっておまえは~してじゃましくさる。

⁹ Aw’m sartin ... rullers!: I’m certain of it. O, Lord, judge them, for there’s neither law nor justice among our rulers!

‘No! or we should be sitting in flaming fagots¹, I suppose,’ retorted the singer. ‘But wisht, old man, and read your Bible, like a Christian, and never mind me. This is “Fairy Annie’s Wedding”—a bonny² tune—it goes to a dance.’³

Mrs Dean was about to recommence when I advanced, and recognizing me directly, she jumped to her feet, crying—

‘Why, bless you, Mr Lockwood! How could you think of returning in this way? All’s shut up at Thrushcross Grange. You should have given us notice!’

‘I’ve arranged to be accommodated⁴ there, for as long as I shall stay,’ I answered. ‘I depart again to-morrow. And how are you transplanted⁵ here, Mrs Dean? tell me that.’

‘Zillah left, and Mr Heathcliff wished me to come, soon after you went to London, and stay till you returned. But step in, pray! Have you walked from Gimmerton this evening?’

‘From the Grange,’ I replied; ‘and, while they make me lodging room there, I want to finish my business with your master, because I don’t think of having another opportunity in a hurry.’⁶

‘What business, sir?’ said Nelly, conducting me into the house. ‘He’s gone out at present, and won’t return soon.’

‘About the rent,’ I answered.

‘Oh! then it is with Mrs Heathcliff you must settle,’ she observed, ‘or rather with me. She has not learned to manage her affairs yet, and I act for⁷ her; there’s nobody else.’

¹ fagot = faggot: a bundle of sticks, twigs, or small branches of trees bound together (for use as fuel); with special reference to the practice of burning heretics alive, esp. in phrase *fire and faggot*. ここは、「そうですとも。もし (law and justice が) あれば、あたしたちは (異端者として裁かれ) 火あぶりの薪の上にいるでしょうよ」。

² bonny: beautiful. (p. 52 注 10 参照)

³ it goes to a dance: ダンスに合う、ダンスの曲にぴったり。go: (of a song) to admit of being sung; also, to follow the measure of, to adapt itself to (a tune).

⁴ accommodate: to furnish or supply with suitable room and entertainment; to make room for, entertain suitably; to receive as an inmate.

⁵ transplant: to convey or remove from one place to another.

⁶ not ... in a hurry: (colloq.) not very soon. すぐには～ない。

⁷ for: in place of, instead of. 「代理」を表す。(p. 31 注 2 参照)

I looked surprised.¹

‘Ah! you have not heard of Heathcliff’s death, I see!’ she continued.

‘Heathcliff dead?’ I exclaimed, astonished. ‘How long ago?’

‘Three months since—but, sit down, and let me take your hat, and I’ll tell you all about it. Stop, you have had nothing to eat, have you?’

‘I want nothing. I have ordered supper at home. You sit down too. I never dreamt of his dying! Let me hear how it came to pass². You say you don’t expect them back for some time—the young people?’

‘No—I have to scold them every evening, for their late rambles—but they don’t care for me. At least, have a drink of our old ale—it will do you good—you seem weary.’

She hastened to fetch it, before I could refuse, and I heard Joseph asking, whether ‘it warn’t a crying scandal that she should have fellies at her time of life. And then, to get them jocks out uh t’ Maister’s cellar!’³ He fair shaamed to ‘bide still and see it.’⁴

She did not stay to retaliate⁵, but re-entered in a minute, bearing a reaming⁶ silver pint,⁷ whose contents I lauded⁸ with becoming⁹ earnestness. And afterwards she furnished me with the sequel¹⁰ of Heathcliff’s history. He had a ‘queer’ end, as she expressed it.

*

I was summoned to Wuthering Heights, within a fortnight of your leaving us, she said; and I obeyed joyfully, for Catherine’s sake.

¹ I looked surprised.: 私はびっくりした顔をした ‘look’については p. 369 注 4 参照。

² come to pass: to happen, take place in the course of events, come about, occur.

³ it warn’t ... cellar!.: it wasn’t a crying scandal that she should have fellies (= followers*) at her time of life? And then, to get them jocks (unknown. prob. jugs) out of the Master’s cellar!

**follower*: (colloq.) a man who courts a maidservant; esp. one who calls at the house to see her.

⁴ He fair ... see it.: He fair (= quite) ashamed to abide (= remain) still and see it. (旦那の死んだあとも) 生き残ってこんなざまを目にするような男 (自分) はひどく恥ずかしいこったわい。

⁵ retaliate: (of injury, insult, etc.) to make return or requital. ここでは「いい返す」。

⁶ reaming: (chiefly Sc.) frothing, foaming. 泡立つ。

⁷ pint: a vessel containing a pint; a pint-pot. (1 pint = 0.57 ℓ)

⁸ laud: to praise.

⁹ becoming: befitting, suitable, having graceful fitness.

¹⁰ sequel: the ensuing narrative, discourse, etc.; the following or remaining part of a narrative, etc. 話のつづき。

My first interview with her grieved and shocked me! she had altered so much since our separation. Mr Heathcliff did not explain his reasons for taking a new mind about my coming here; he only told me he wanted me, and he was tired of seeing Catherine: I must make the little parlour my sitting-room, and keep her with me. It was enough if he were obliged¹ to see her once or twice a day.

She seemed pleased at this arrangement; and, by degrees, I smuggled² over a great number of books, and other articles, that had formed her amusement at the Grange; and flattered myself³ we should get on⁴ in tolerable comfort.

The delusion did not last long. Catherine, contented at first, in a brief space grew irritable and restless. For one thing, she was forbidden to move out of the garden, and it fretted⁵ her sadly to be confined to its narrow bounds, as Spring drew on⁶—for another, in following⁷ the house, I was forced to quit her frequently, and she complained of loneliness; she preferred quarrelling with Joseph in the kitchen, to sitting at peace in her solitude.

I did not mind their skirmishes⁸; but Hareton was often obliged to seek⁹ the kitchen also, when the master wanted to have the house to himself; and, though, in the beginning, she either left it at his approach, or quietly joined in my occupations, and shunned remarking, or addressing him—and though he was always as sullen and silent, as possible—after a while, she changed her behaviour, and became incapable of letting him alone; talking at him; commenting on his stupidity and idleness; expressing her wonder how he could endure the life he lived—how he could sit a whole evening staring into the fire and dozing.

‘He’s just like a dog, is he not, Ellen?’ she once observed, ‘or a cart-horse? He does his

¹ oblige: to force, compel (*to do* something). 食事時などいやでも顔を合わせるからこういう。(p. 62 注 7 以下頻出)

² smuggle: to convey, etc., in a stealthy or clandestine manner. ‘over’ は、「国境を越えて」密輸するイメージ。

³ flatter oneself: to be pleased with the belief, idea, or suggestion *that*. (p. 160 注 4 参照)

⁴ get on: to fare (in some specified way, or with suggestion of some success or progress). やっていく、暮らす。

⁵ fret: to distress oneself with constant thoughts of regret or discontent; to vex oneself, chafe, worry. (p. 180 注 3、p. 327 注 10、p. 346 注 9 参照)

⁶ draw on: to advance, approach, draw nigh.

⁷ in following the house: 家事に追われて。follow: to engage in, occupy oneself with.

⁸ skirmish: an irregular engagement between two small bodies of troops, esp. detached or outlying portions of opposing armies; a petty fight or encounter. (比喩的に) ちょっとした喧嘩、いい争い。

⁹ seek: (arch.) to go to, visit, resort to (a place).

work, eats his food, and sleeps, eternally! What a blank¹, dreary² mind he must have! Do you ever dream, Hareton? And if you do, what is it about? But, you can't speak to me!

Then she looked at him; but he would neither open his mouth, nor look again³.

'He's perhaps, dreaming now,' she continued. 'He twitched⁴ his shoulder as Juno twitches hers. Ask him, Ellen.'

'Mr Hareton will ask the master to send you upstairs, if you don't behave!⁵' I said. He had not only twitched his shoulder, but clenched his fist, as if tempted to use it.

'I know why Hareton never speaks, when I am in the kitchen,' she exclaimed, on another occasion. 'He is afraid I shall laugh at him. Ellen, what do you think? He began to teach himself to read once; and, because I laughed, he burned his books and dropped⁶ it—was he not a fool?'

'Were not you naughty⁷?' I said; 'answer me that.'

'Perhaps I was,' she went on, 'but I did not expect him to be so silly. Hareton, if I gave you a book, would you take it now? I'll try!'

She placed one she had been perusing on his hand; he flung it off, and muttered, if she did not give over he would break her neck.

'Well, I shall put it here,' she said, 'in the table drawer, and I'm going to bed.'

Then she whispered me to watch whether he touched it, and departed. But he would

¹ blank: empty, without contents, void, bare.

² dreary: dismal, gloomy; repulsively dull or uninteresting.

³ again: (obs. or arch.) in reaction or reciprocal action; in return, in reply, in response, back; either of an action returned, or one done in return for it. つまりここは 'look back' (向こうが見たのでこっちも見ろ、見返す) だから「ふたたび、もう一度」の意味ではなく、Hareton は最初から一度も Catherine を見ていないことに注意。

⁴ twitch: to draw up (a limb, etc.) sharply or with a jerk; to move (the skin, etc.) spasmodically or convulsively. ピクリ (ピクピク) と動かす。

⁵ behave: (= behave oneself) to conduct oneself well, or (in modern use) with propriety. 行儀をよくする、行動 (口) をつつしむ。

⁶ drop: to cease to keep up, or have to do with; to have done with. (p. 94 注 4、p. 317 注 1 参照)

⁷ naughty: (of actions, conduct, places, things, etc.) characterized by moral badness or wickedness; bad, wrong, blameworthy, improper. In mod. use as a term of mild or playful censure. こどもが 'naughty (wayward, disobedient, given to doing wrong)' なのとはちがう。

not come near it, and so I informed her in the morning, to her great disappointment¹. I saw she was sorry for his persevering sulkiness and indolence²—her conscience reproved her for frightening him off improving himself—she had done it effectually.³

But her ingenuity⁴ was at work to remedy the injury; while I ironed, or pursued other such stationary⁵ employments as I could not well do in the parlour—she would bring some pleasant volume, and read it aloud to me. When Hareton was there, she generally paused in an interesting part, and left the book lying about⁶—that she did repeatedly; but he was as obstinate as a mule, and, instead of snatching at her bait, in wet weather he took to⁷ smoking with Joseph, and they sat like automatons⁸, one on each side of the fire, the elder happily too deaf to understand her wicked⁹ nonsense, as he would have called it¹⁰, the younger doing his best to seem to disregard it. On fine evenings the latter followed¹¹ his shooting expeditions¹², and Catherine yawned and sighed, and teased me to talk to her, and ran off into the court or garden, the moment I began; and as a last resource¹³, cried and said she was tired of living, her life was useless.

Mr Heathcliff, who grew more and more disinclined to society¹⁴, had almost banished Earnshaw from his apartment. Owing to an accident, at the commencement of March, he became for some days a fixture¹⁵ in the kitchen. His gun burst while out on the hills by himself; a splinter¹⁶ cut his arm, and he lost a good deal of blood before he could reach

¹ to her great disappointment: (その結果) 彼女は大いに失望した (この ‘to’ については、p. 423 注 6 参照)。

² indolence: laziness.

³ effectually: so as adequately to answer the purpose. ねらいどおりに。

⁴ ingenuity: [ɪndʒɪnjʊːɪti] capacity for invention or construction; skill or cleverness in contriving or making something (material or immaterial). 工夫の才。

⁵ stationary: having a fixed station or place. ‘stationary employments’ は「(アイロンがけなど) 決まった場所でする仕事」。

⁶ lie about: to be left lying carelessly or in disorder. 無造作に (乱雑に) 置いてある。

⁷ take to: to devote or apply oneself to; to adopt or take up as a practice, business, habit, or something habitual. ～に身を入れる、精を出す。‘ここでは「(習慣として) ～するようになる」。

⁸ automaton: [ɔ:tə'mætən] a piece of mechanism having its motive power so concealed that it appears to move spontaneously; a living being whose actions are purely involuntary or mechanical. からくり仕掛け (のように動く人)。

⁹ wicked: ['wɪkɪd] bad in moral character, disposition, or conduct; practising or disposed to practise evil; morally depraved.

¹⁰ as he would have called it: 挿入的に「(もし聞こえたら) そういったでしょうが」。

¹¹ follow: to engage in, occupy oneself with.

¹² expedition: a journey, voyage, or excursion made for some definite purpose.

¹³ resource: an action or procedure to which one may have recourse in a difficulty or emergency; an expedient, device, shift. ‘as a last resource’ は「最後の手段として (挙句のはてに)」。

¹⁴ society: association or intercourse *with* or *between* persons, etc. 人づきあい。

¹⁵ fixture: a person or thing permanently confined to or established in a particular place or position. ここでは、台所に居着いてしまったこと。(p. 11 注 4、p. 47 注 6 参照)

¹⁶ splinter: a rough (usually a comparatively long, thin, and sharp-edged) piece of wood, bone, stone, etc., split or broken off, esp. as the result of violent impact. (銃身の) 破片。

home. The consequence was that, perforce¹, he was condemned² to the fire-side and tranquillity, till he made it up³ again.

It suited Catherine to have him there: at any rate, it made her hate her room upstairs more than ever; and she would compel me to find out business below, that she might accompany me.

On Easter Monday⁴ Joseph went to Gimmerton fair with some cattle; and, in the afternoon, I was busy getting up⁵ linen in the kitchen—Earnshaw sat, morose as usual, at the chimney corner, and my little mistress was beguiling⁶ an idle hour with drawing pictures on the window panes, varying her amusement by smothered⁷ bursts of songs, and whispered ejaculations, and quick glances of annoyance and impatience in the direction of her cousin, who steadfastly smoked, and looked into the grate.

At a notice that⁸ I could do with⁹ her no longer, intercepting¹⁰ my light, she removed to the hearthstone. I bestowed little attention on her proceedings¹¹, but, presently I heard her begin—

‘I’ve found out, Hareton, that I want—that I’m glad—that I should like you to be my cousin, now, if you had not grown so cross to me, and so rough.’¹²

Hareton returned no answer.

¹ perforce: compulsorily, of necessity. やむなく。(p. 26 注 2 参照)

² condemn: (fig.) to doom or devote to some (unkind) fate or condition; (in pass.) to be doomed by fate to some condition or to do something. (受動態で) ~の憂き目を見る。‘the fire-side and tranquillity’ は、炉辺でじっとしていること。

³ make up: to make good; to supply (a deficiency). ‘it’ = the blood he had lost.

⁴ Easter Monday: ‘Easter’ は 3 月 21 日以降最初の日曜日をいうが、しばしば ‘Easter Sunday’ にはじまる一週間をも指す。

⁵ get up: to dress (linen), make ready for wearing. 仕上げる、仕立てる。ここでいう ‘linen’ はテーブルかけ (table-linen) のたぐいであろう。

⁶ beguile: to divert attention in some pleasant way from (anything painful, or irksome); to wile away. 気を紛らす。

⁷ smothered: (of sound) suppressed, rendered indistinct.

⁸ At a notice that ...: (私が) ~だといったので、~というのを聞いて。‘at’ は原因を示す (p. 310 注 1 参照)。

⁹ do with: to get on with, put up with, manage with.

¹⁰ intercept: to stop the natural course of (light, heat, water, etc.); to cut off (light) from anything. 明かりが来なくて困るから、もうここにはいないでください、ということ。

¹¹ proceeding: a particular action or course of action; a piece of conduct or behaviour; a transaction; (most usually in pl.) doings, actions, transactions. (p. 191 注 4, p. 320 注 12, p. 402 注 7 参照)

¹² I should ... so rough.: 仮定法過去完了。過去の事実と反することが条件節で、現在の事実と反することが帰結節で述べられている例。そんなにむっつりした顔をしたり荒っぽくしたりしていなかったら、あなたがいとこでいてくれてうれしいでしょうに。

‘Hareton, Hareton, Hareton! do you hear?’ she continued.

‘Get off wi’ ye!’ he growled, with uncompromising¹ gruffness.

‘Let me take that pipe,’ she said, cautiously advancing her hand, and abstracting² it from his mouth.

Before he could attempt to recover it, it was broken, and behind the fire. He swore at her and seized another.

‘Stop,’ she cried; ‘you must listen to me, first; and I can’t speak while those clouds are floating in my face.’

‘Will you go to the devil!’ he exclaimed ferociously, ‘and let me be³!’

‘No,’ she persisted, ‘I won’t—I can’t tell what to do to make you talk to me, and you are determined not to understand. When I call you stupid, I don’t mean anything—I don’t mean that I despise you. Come, you shall take notice of⁴ me, Hareton—you are my cousin, and you shall own⁵ me.’

‘I shall have naught to do wi’ you, and your mucky⁶ pride, and your damned, mocking tricks!’ he answered. ‘I’ll go to hell, body and soul, before I look sideways⁷ after you again! Side out o’ t’ gait⁸ now; this minute!’

Catherine frowned, and retreated to the window-seat chewing her lip, and endeavouring, by humming an eccentric⁹ tune, to conceal a growing tendency to sob.

‘You should be friends with your cousin, Mr Hareton,’ I interrupted, ‘since she repents of

¹ uncompromising: unyielding, unbending; stiff, stubborn.

² abstract: to withdraw, deduct, remove, or take away (something).

³ let be: to leave undisturbed, not to meddle with. ‘let me (or *her*, etc.) be’ のかたちで。

⁴ take notice of: to give heed to, bestow attention on (the person or thing). ここでは、私の話をちゃんと聞いて。

⁵ own: to call (a thing or person) one’s own; to acknowledge as one’s own. ‘you shall own me.’ は「私をいどこだといってちょうだい」。

⁶ mucky: dirty, filthy, muddy.

⁷ sideways: in a lateral or sideward direction; towards one side; obliquely. ここでは、斜めからでも（ちらっとでも）おまえを見るくらいなら地獄に堕ちたほうがまし。

⁸ Side out of t’ gait.: (PENGUIN 版注 :) Get out of the way.

⁹ eccentric: (of actions, movements, and things in general) irregular, anomalous, proceeding by no known method, capricious.

her sauciness! It would do you a great deal of good—it would make you another man to have her for a companion.’

‘A companion!’ he cried; ‘when she hates me, and does not think me fit to wipe her shoon¹! Nay! if it made me a king, I’d not be scorned for seeking her good will any more.’

‘It is not I who hate you, it is you who hate me!’ wept Cathy, no longer disguising her trouble. ‘You hate me as much as Mr Heathcliff does, and more.’

‘You’re a damned liar,’ began Earnshaw; ‘why have I made him angry, by taking your part then, a hundred times? and that², when you sneered at, and despised me, and—Go on plaguing me, and I’ll step in yonder, and say you worried me out of the kitchen!’³

‘I didn’t know you took my part,’ she answered, drying her eyes; ‘and I was miserable and bitter at⁴ everybody; but now I thank you, and beg you to forgive me, what can I do besides?’⁵

She returned to the hearth, and frankly extended her hand.

He blackened, and scowled like a thunder cloud, and kept his fists resolutely clenched, and his gaze fixed on the ground.

Catherine, by instinct, must have divined it was obdurate⁶ perversity, and not dislike, that prompted this dogged⁷ conduct; for, after remaining an instant, undecided, she stooped, and impressed on his cheek a gentle kiss.

The little rogue⁸ thought I had not seen her, and drawing back, she took her former

¹ shoon: shoe(s).

² and that: しかもそれは。この ‘that’ は指示代名詞 (demonstrative pronoun)。³ ‘and that’ のかたちで、すぐ前に述べたことを強調するために用いられる。

³ I’ll step in ... kitchen!: つまり、あっち (Heathcliff のいる the house) へ行つて、おまえがうるさくしておれを台所から追い出した、といいつけてやる。

⁴ at: introducing what is at once the exciting cause and the object of active emotions: e.g. *envy*, *hate*, *wrath*. ある感情を引き起こす原因でもあれば、その感情を向ける対象でもあるものを示す (たとえば愚者を見て腹が立ち怒りを向けるなど)。ここは、だれを見ても腹が立った。【例】 1742 RICHARDSON *Pamela* IV. 47 He brought it to me himself, and was angry at me. (*OED*)

⁵ what can I do besides?: (感謝して赦しを乞う) ほかにどうすればいいというの? *besides*: other than mentioned, otherwise, else.

⁶ obdurate: hardened, or hardening oneself, against persuasion, entreaty, the sentiment of pity, etc.; stubborn, obstinate, unyielding, inflexible. かたくなな。

⁷ dogged: having the persistency or tenacity characteristic of various breeds of dogs; obstinate, stubborn; pertinacious.

⁸ rogue: [rəʊg] one who is of a mischievous disposition. いたずらもの。

station by the window, quite demurely¹.

I shook my head reprovingly²; and then she blushed, and whispered—

‘Well! what should I have done, Ellen? He wouldn't shake hands, and he wouldn't look—I must show him some way that I like him, that I want to be friends.’

Whether the kiss convinced Hareton, I cannot tell; he was very careful, for some minutes, that his face should not be seen; and when he did raise it, he was sadly puzzled where to turn his eyes.

Catherine employed³ herself in wrapping a handsome book neatly in white paper; and having tied it with a bit of ribband⁴, and addressed⁵ it to ‘Mr Hareton Earnshaw,’ she desired me to be her ambassadress⁶, and convey the present to its destined⁷ recipient.

‘And tell him, if he'll take it, I'll come and teach him to read it right,’ she said, ‘and if he refuse it, I'll go upstairs, and never tease him again.’

I carried it, and repeated the message, anxiously watched by my employer. Hareton would not open his fingers, so I laid it on his knee. He did not strike it off either. I returned to my work: Catherine leaned her head and arms on the table, till she heard the slight rustle of the covering being removed, then she stole away, and quietly seated herself beside her cousin. He trembled, and his face glowed—all his rudeness, and all his surly harshness had deserted him—he could not summon courage, at first, to utter a syllable, in reply to her questioning look, and her murmured petition⁸.

‘Say you forgive me, Hareton, do! You can make me so happy, by speaking that little word.’

He muttered something inaudible.

¹ demurely: gravely, modestly, meekly, quietly; with a gravity, meekness, or modesty that is affected or unnatural. ここは、澄ました顔をして。

² reprovingly: in a reproving manner. とがめるように、いけませんねというように。

³ employ: (ref.) to busy or occupy oneself. (再帰的に) ～ (の仕事を) する、～に忙しい (in)。

⁴ ribband: (= riband) a ribbon.

⁵ address: to write directions for delivery (esp. the name and address of the intended recipient) on (an envelope, packet, etc.).

⁶ ambassadress: a female ambassador or messenger.

⁷ destined: intended, designed.

⁸ petition: a supplication or request.

‘And you’ll be my friend?’ added Catherine, interrogatively¹.

‘Nay! you’ll be ashamed of me every day of your life,’ he answered. ‘And the more², the more you know me, and I cannot bide³ it.’

‘So you won’t be my friend?’ she said, smiling as sweet as honey, and creeping⁴ close up.

I overheard no further distinguishable⁵ talk; but, on looking round again, I perceived two such radiant countenances bent over the page of the accepted book, that I did not doubt the treaty⁶ had been ratified⁷, on both sides, and the enemies were, thenceforth, sworn⁸ allies.

The work⁹ they studied was full of costly¹⁰ pictures; and those, and their position, had charm enough to keep them unmoved, till Joseph came home. He, poor man, was perfectly aghast¹¹ at the spectacle of Catherine seated on the same bench with Hareton Earnshaw, leaning her hand on his shoulder; and confounded at his favourite’s endurance of her proximity¹². It affected him too deeply to allow an observation¹³ on the subject that night. His emotion was only revealed by the immense sighs he drew, as he solemnly spread his large Bible on the table, and overlaid it with dirty bank-notes from his

¹ interrogatively: by way of interrogation; as a question.

² the more: the more ashamed of me you’ll be.

³ bide: to tolerate, endure, put up with. (p. 156 注 8、p. 184 注 5 参照)

⁴ creep: (of persons and things). to advance or come on slowly, stealthily, or by imperceptible degrees. ‘creeping close up’ は「(Hareton の) すぐそばまでにじり寄って」。

⁵ distinguishable: capable of being perceived by the senses or the mind; discernible, perceptible. 目で見分けられる、耳で聞き分けられる、知覚できる。

⁶ treaty: a contract between two or more states, relating to peace, truce, alliance, commerce, or other international relation; also, the document embodying such contract. ここは、わざとおおげさに「条約は批准された」としたもの。

⁷ ratify: to confirm or make valid (an act, compact, promise, etc.) by giving consent, approval, or formal sanction (esp. to what has been done or arranged for by another).

⁸ sworn: that has taken or is bound by an oath. ‘sworn allies’ は、条約を批准したとあるのだから「盟邦」が適切。

⁹ work: a literary or musical composition (viewed in relation to its author or composer). ここでは、ようするに「本」のこと。

¹⁰ costly: of great price or value; sumptuous. ここでは ‘fine, splendid’ ほどの意味。台所の間取りはわからないが、Nelly は窓と暖炉の間あたりで仕事をしていたと思われるから、炉辺の二人の読んでいる本の挿絵が ‘costly’ であるといえるほどはつきり見えたかどうかはやや疑問。一人称による語りという形式のはらむ問題であろう。

¹¹ aghast: affrighted, frightened, terrified. esp. in mod. usage, seized with the visible or physical signs of terror or horror; struck with amazement.

¹² proximity: the fact, condition, or position of being near or close by; nearness, neighbourhood. (p. 289 注 5 参照)。

¹³ observation: an utterance as to something observed; a remark in speech or writing in reference to something. (p. 373 注 13 参照)

pocket-book, the produce of the day's transactions. At length, he summoned Hareton from his seat.

'Tak these in tuh t' maister, lad,' he said, 'un' bide theare; Aw's gang up tuh my awn rahm. This hoile's norther mensful nor seemly fur us—we mun side aht and seearch another!'¹

'Come, Catherine,' I said, 'we must 'side out' too—I've done my ironing, are you ready to go?'

'It is not eight o'clock!' she answered, rising unwillingly, 'Hareton, I'll leave this book upon the chimney-piece, and I'll bring some more to-morrow.'

'Ony books ut yah leave, Aw sall tak' intuh th' hahse,' said Joseph, 'un' it 'ull be mitch if yah find 'em agean; soa, yah muh plase yerseln!'²

Cathy threatened that his library should pay for³ hers; and, smiling as she passed Hareton, went singing upstairs, lighter of heart, I venture to say, than ever she had been under that roof before; except, perhaps, during her earliest visits to Linton.

The intimacy⁴, thus commenced, grew rapidly; though it encountered temporary interruptions. Earnshaw was not to be civilized with a wish⁵; and my young lady was no philosopher, and no paragon⁶ of patience; but both their minds tending to the same point—one loving and desiring to esteem; and the other loving and desiring to be esteemed—they contrived in the end to reach it.

You see, Mr Lockwood, it was easy enough to win Mrs Heathcliff's heart; but now, I'm glad you did not try—the crown⁷ of all my wishes will be the union of those two; I shall

¹ Tak these ... another!: Take these in to the master, lad, and bide (= remain) there. I'm going up to my own room. This hole (= a term of contempt or depreciation for any place) is neither mensful (= decent) nor seemly (= proper) for us—we must side out (= get out), and search another!

² Ony books ... yourseln!: Any books that you leave, I shall take into the house, and it will be much (= great) if you find them again; so, you may please yourself! 'the house = the family sitting-room' へ持ってって隠したのをみつけたらてえしたもんだ (まずみつかるまい) が、まあ好きにするがええ。

³ pay for: to make amends for, atone for; (more usually) to suffer or be punished for. への報いを受ける。おまえの本も同じ憂き目を見る、ということ。

⁴ intimacy: intimate friendship or acquaintance; familiar intercourse; close familiarity; an instance of this.

⁵ with a wish: 望んだから (といって)。

⁶ paragon: a pattern or model of excellence. 手本、鑑。

⁷ crown: (fig.) that which crowns anything; the crowning, consummation, completion, or

envy¹ no one on their wedding-day—there won't be a happier woman than myself in England!

perfection. ここでは、最高の望み。

¹ envy: to feel displeasure and ill-will at the superiority of (another person) in happiness, success, reputation, or the possession of anything desirable. 他人のほうが幸福だ（有名だ、望むものを所有している）として不満に思う、悪意を抱く。

Chapter XIX (XXXIII)

On the morrow of that Monday, Earnshaw being still unable to follow his ordinary employments, and, therefore, remaining about the house, I speedily found it would be impracticable to retain my charge¹ beside me, as heretofore².

She got down stairs before me, and out into the garden, where she had seen her cousin performing some easy work; and when I went to bid them come to breakfast, I saw she had persuaded him to clear a large space of ground from currant³ and gooseberry bushes, and they were busy planning together an importation of plants from the Grange.

I was terrified at the devastation⁴ which had been accomplished in a brief half hour: the black currant trees were the apple of Joseph's eye⁵, and she had just fixed her choice of a flower bed in the midst of them!

'There! That will be all shewn⁶ to the master,' I exclaimed, 'the minute it is discovered. And what excuse have you to offer for taking such liberties⁷ with the garden? We shall have a fine explosion on the head of⁸ it: see if we don't! Mr Hareton, I wonder you should have no more wit, than⁹ to go and make that mess at her bidding!¹⁰

'I'd forgotten they were Joseph's,' answered Earnshaw, rather puzzled, 'but I'll tell him I did it.'

¹ charge: thing or person entrusted to the care or management of any one. (p. 269 注 13, p. 347 注 5, p. 374 注 8 参照)

² heretofore: before this time; before now; in time past; formerly. これまでのように。

³ currant: [kárənt] the small round berry of certain species of *Ribes* (*R. nigrum*, *R. rubrum*) called Black and Red Currants. グーズベリー (gooseberry) と同じユキノシタ科スグリ属。

⁴ devastation: the action of devastating, or condition of being devastated; laying waste; wide-spread destruction. 庭がすっかり荒らされたこと。

⁵ the apple of one's eye: that which is cherished with the greatest regard. なによりも大切にしているもの。

⁶ shewn: = shown. *show*: (now arch.) to communicate, announce, declare, narrate, state, tell (a fact, story, news, etc.) つまり Joseph によって伝えられる、いいつけられるということ。

⁷ take liberties with: (= take a liberty with) to use freedom in dealing with (rules, facts, etc.). ～に勝手なまねをする、～を勝手にいじるなど。【参考】 **take liberties with** rules or facts (規則・事實などを) 勝手に変更 (など) する。(齋藤秀三郎『英和中辞典』)

⁸ on the head of it: 'about it' であろう。【参考】 'there is no doubt at all *on the head of it*,' i.e. about it, in regard to it. (1910 P.W. JOYCE *English as We Speak it in Ireland*)

⁹ you should have no more wit than ...: ～するほどおろかだ (とはねえ)。

¹⁰ at one's bidding: 人にいわれるままに。 *bidding*: a command, order, injunction. この 'at' は、ある事実・行為の「原因」を示す。少し前にある 'terrified at' などの 'at' はある感情をもたらした原因。

We always ate our meals with Mr Heathcliff. I held the mistress's¹ post in making tea and carving²; so I was indispensable at table. Catherine usually sat by me; but to-day she stole nearer to Hareton, and I presently saw she would have no more discretion in her friendship, than she had in her hostility.³

'Now, mind you don't talk with and notice⁴ your cousin too much,' were my whispered instructions as we entered the room; 'It will certainly annoy Mr Heathcliff, and he'll be mad at you both.'

'I'm not going to,' she answered.

The minute after, she had sidled⁵ to him, and was sticking primroses in his plate of porridge.

He dared not speak to her, there, he dared hardly look⁶; and yet she went on teasing, till he was twice on the point of being provoked to laugh; and I frowned, and then, she glanced towards the master, whose mind was occupied on other subjects than his company, as his countenance evinced⁷, and she grew serious for an instant, scrutinizing⁸ him with deep gravity. Afterwards she turned, and re-commenced her nonsense; at last, Hareton uttered a smothered laugh.

Mr Heathcliff started; his eye rapidly surveyed our faces. Catherine met it with her accustomed look of nervousness, and yet defiance, which he abhorred.

¹ mistress: the female head of a household or family. 家事をしきる女性、一家の主婦。

² carve: to cut up meat at table. 食卓で肉を切り分ける。【参考】The host *carved* for all the guests. 主人はお客全員に肉を切って分けた。(ライトハウス英和辞典第2版)

³ no more ... hostility: 憎しみを表すにも(つつしみがなかったのと同じに)親しみを表すにもつつしみがなかった。【参考】[比較] (a) I am **no more** mad **than** (= *as little* mad *as*) you are. 君も同様發狂しては居らぬ。(b) I am **not more** mad **than** (= *not so* mad *as*) you are. 僕も發狂しては居るが君程ではない。(齋藤秀三郎『英和中辭典』)

⁴ notice: to treat (a person) with some degree of attention, favour, or politeness. 顔を見るだけとはかぎらず、粥の皿にサクラソウを挿したりして気のあるところを見せることも含まれるだろう。

⁵ sidle: [sáidl] to move or go sideways or obliquely; to edge along, esp. in a furtive or unobtrusive manner, or while looking in another direction; to make advances in this manner. 横(斜め)方向に移動する、(あっちを見てこっちにこっそり)にじり寄る。

⁶ dared hardly look: ろくに見ることもできなかった。【参考】(1) ('dare' は)打消、疑問には概して助動詞扱いにし、次に続く Infinitive の "to" を省き、三人稱単數に "s" を加へず(つまり 'dare to do' は 'dare not do' となる) (2) "hardly," "scarcely" (殆ど無し)は詰り "not" を加減して斯く云ふに過ぎず。(齋藤秀三郎『英和中辭典』)

⁷ evince: to show clearly; to make evident or manifest.

⁸ scrutinize: to examine methodically and with close attention. 綿密細心に調べる、吟味する。

‘It is well you are out of my reach,’ he exclaimed. ‘What fiend possesses you to¹ stare back at me, continually, with those infernal eyes? Down with them!² and don't remind me of your existence again. I thought I had cured³ you of laughing.’

‘It was me,’ muttered Hareton.

‘What do you say?’ demanded the master.

Hareton looked at his plate, and did not repeat the confession.

Mr Heathcliff looked at him a bit, and then silently resumed his breakfast, and his interrupted musing.

We had nearly finished, and the two young people prudently⁴ shifted wider asunder⁵, so I anticipated no further disturbance during that sitting⁶; when Joseph appeared at the door, revealing by his quivering lip, and furious eyes, that the outrage⁷ committed⁸ on his precious shrubs was detected⁹.

He must have seen Cathy and her cousin about the spot before he examined it, for while his jaws worked like those of a cow chewing its cud¹⁰, and rendered his speech difficult to understand, he began:

‘Aw mun hev my wage, and Aw mun goa! Aw *hed* aimed tuh dee, wheare Aw'd sarved fur sixty year; un' I thowt I'd lug my books up intuh t' garret, un' all my bits uh stuff, un'

¹ What fiend possesses you to ...?: ～とは一体どんな悪魔に取り憑かれたんだ（どういうつもりだ）？

² Down with them!: その目を伏せろ（そんな目で見るのはやめろ）！ ‘down with’ は ‘put’ などの動詞が省略されたかたちで、ふつう命令文。【例】 ‘Down with your sails.’ (帆を下ろせ) ‘Down with the tyrant!’ (暴君を倒せ!) など。(p. 251 注 15 参照)

³³ cure: to heal, restore to health (a sick person *of* a disease). 人の病気を治す。ここでは悪い笑い癖を病気に喩えたもの。

⁴ prudently: with prudence, circumspection, discretion, or practical wisdom; discreetly, wisely, judiciously.

⁵ asunder: (of two or more things) apart or separate from each other. (p. 109 注 9, p. 166 注 12, p. 227 注 3 参照)

⁶ sitting: a spell of remaining seated. 席に着いている間、その場。

⁷ outrage: an act of wanton cruelty or violence..

⁸ commit: to do (something wrong or reprehensible); to perpetrate, be guilty of (a crime, offence, etc.).

⁹ detect: to discover, find out, ascertain the presence, existence, or fact of (something apt to elude observation). (見逃しがちなものを) 発見する、みつける。

¹⁰ chew one's (or the) cud: (of certain quadrupeds) to bring back into the mouth and masticate the food which has been coarsely bruised and swallowed into a first stomach; to ruminate. 反芻する。比喩的にも用いられる。

they sud hev t' kitchen tuh theirseln; fur t' sake uh quietness. It wur hard tuh gie up my awn hearthstun, bud Aw thowt Aw *could* do that! Bud, nah, shoo's taan my garden frough me, un' by th' heart! Maister, Aw cannot stand it! Yah muh bend tuh th' yoak, and ye will—Aw'm noan used to't and an ow'd man doesn't sooin get used tuh new barthens—Aw'd rayther arn my bite, an' my sup, wi' a hammer in th' road!¹

'Now, now, idiot!' interrupted Heathcliff, 'cut it short! What's your grievance? I'll interfere in no quarrels between you and Nelly—she may thrust you into the coal-hole for anything I care².'

'It's noan Nelly!' answered Joseph. 'Aw sudn't shift fur Nelly—Nasty, ill nowt as shoo is, thank God! *shoo* cannot stale t'sowl uh nob'dy! Shoo wer niver soa handsome, but whet a body mud look at her baht winking. It's yon flaysome, graceless quean, ut's witched ahr lad, wi' her bold een, un' her forrard ways—till—Nay! it fair brusts my heart! He's forgotten all E done for him, un' made on him, un' goan and riven up a whole row ut t' grandest currant trees, i' t' garden!'³ and here he lamented outright, unmanned by a sense of his bitter injuries, and Earnshaw's ingratitude and dangerous condition.

'Is the fool drunk?' asked Mr Heathcliff. —'Hareton, is it you he's finding fault with?'⁴

'I've pulled up two or three bushes,' replied the young man, 'but I'm going to set 'em again.'

¹ Aw mun ... th' road!: I must have my wage, and I must go! I had aimed to die, where I'd served for sixty year(s); and I thought I'd lug (= drag) my books up into the garret, and all my bits of stuff, and they should have the kitchen to themselves; for the sake of quietness. It was hard to give up my own hearthstone, but I thought I could do that! But, now, she's taken my garden from me, and by the heart!* Master, I cannot stand it! You may bend (= yield) to the yoke (=humiliation, oppression), and you will—I'm not used to it and an old man doesn't soon get used to new burdens—I'd rather earn my bite (= food), and my sup (=drink), with a hammer in (= on) the road! (土方をして) *'she's taken my garden from me, and by the heart' は'take a man *by the hand*' (人の手を取る)と同じ用法と取り、「わしから庭を取り上げよった。それも 'the heart' (庭の heart たる大切なスグリ) に手をつけて」と解しておく。

² for anything I care: (～したって) おれの知ったことではない。

³ Aw sudn't ... t' garden!: I shouldn't shift (= remove) for Nelly—Nasty, ill naught as she is, thank God! she cannot steal the soul of nobody! She was never so handsome, but what* a body might look at her baht** winking. It's that flaysome, graceless queen, that's witched our lad, with her bold eyes, and her forward ways—till—Nay! It fair bursts my heart! He's forgotten all I've done for him, and made on him, and gone and riven up a whole row of the grandest currant trees, in the garden! **never so handsome, but what ...*: 'not (or never) so' に呼応する 'but (= but that, or but what)' はわかりにくい、たとえば 'He is *not such* a fool *but* he can tell that.' は、ふつう「それくらいわからぬほどの馬鹿じゃない」と訳されるが、「たいして馬鹿じゃないからそれくらいわかるさ」とも取れる。ここでは、ビクリして目をパチパチさせる (もし古い意味の残る方言だとして「目をつぶる」) ことなく見られる、つまり、男の目がくらむほどの美人じゃなかった、ということであろう。 ***baht*: (Yorkshire dial.) without.

⁴ find fault with: to express dissatisfaction with, criticize unfavourably, censure.

‘And why have you pulled them up?’ said the master.

Catherine wisely put in her tongue.

‘We wanted to plant some flowers there,’ she cried. ‘I’m the only person to blame, for I wished him to do it.’

‘And who the devil gave *you* leave¹ to touch a stick² about the place?’ demanded her father-in-law, much surprised. ‘And who ordered *you* to obey her?’ he added, turning to Hareton.

The latter was speechless; his cousin replied—

‘You shouldn’t grudge³ a few yards of earth, for me to ornament, when you have taken all my land!’

‘Your land, insolent slut!⁴ You never had any!’ said Heathcliff.

‘And my money,’ she continued, returning his angry glare, and meantime, biting a piece of crust⁵, the remnant⁶ of her breakfast.

‘Silence!’ he exclaimed. ‘Get done, and begone!’

‘And Hareton’s land, and his money,’ pursued the reckless⁷ thing. ‘Hareton and I are friends now; and I shall tell him all about you!’

The master seemed confounded a moment, he grew pale, and rose up, eyeing her all the

¹ leave: permission asked for or granted to do something. (p. 262 注 4、p. 300 注 7、p. 364 注 4 参照)

² stick: **a.** (now rare) a slender branch or twig of a tree or shrub esp. when cut or broken off. **b.** twiggy bough or long rod stuck in the ground for a plant to ‘run’ upon, more definitely **bean-stick, pea-stick.** いずれにせよ、ここでは「枝一本」というほどの意味であろう。

³ grudge: to be unwilling to give, grant, or allow (something); to begrudge.

⁴ slut: a woman of dirty, slovenly, or untidy habits or appearance; a foul slattern; a woman of a low or loose character. (p. 212 注 6、p. 294 注 3 参照)

⁵ crust: the hard outer part of a loaf or roll of bread; a portion of this external part such as belongs to a single slice of bread. パンのかたまりなら皮、スライスなら耳。

⁶ remnant: (with *the*) that which remains or is left of a thing or things after the removal of a portion; the remainder, rest, residue.

⁷ reckless: careless in respect of the consequences of one’s actions; lacking in prudence or caution. むこうみずな。

while, with an expression of mortal¹ hate.

‘If you strike me, Hareton will strike you!’ she said, ‘so you may as well² sit down.’

‘If Hareton does not turn you out of the room I’ll strike him to hell,’ thundered Heathcliff. ‘Damnable witch! dare³ you pretend⁴ to rouse him against me? Off with her! Do you hear? Fling her into the kitchen! I’ll kill her, Ellen Dean, if you let her come into my sight again!’

Hareton tried, under his breath⁵ to persuade her to go.

‘Drag her away!’ he cried savagely. ‘Are you staying to talk?’ And he approached to execute his own command.

‘He’ll not obey you, wicked man, any more,’ said Catherine, ‘and he’ll soon detest you as much as I do!’

‘Wisht! wisht!’ muttered the young man reproachfully. ‘I will not hear you speak so to him – Have done.’

‘But you won’t let him strike me?’ she cried.

‘Come then!’ he whispered earnestly.

It was too late – Heathcliff had caught hold of her.

‘Now, *you* go!’ he said to Earnshaw. ‘Accursed witch! this time she has provoked me, when I could not bear it; and I’ll make her repent it for ever!’

He had his hand in her hair; Hareton attempted to release her locks, entreating him not to hurt her that once. His black eyes flashed, he seemed ready to tear Catherine in pieces,

¹ mortal: (of enmity, hatred, and the like) pursued to the death, unappeasable; ‘deadly’.

² may as well: ～しても損はない。ここは「座ったほうが身のためよ」。(p. 140 注 13 参照)

³ dare: to have boldness or courage (to do something); to be so bold as. (followed by inf. without to). 大胆 (生意気) にも～する。【例】**How dare you** lay hands on me? 貴様は能も (此の身體に手を掛け居つたな)。(齋藤秀三郎『英和中辭典』)

⁴ pretend: to aspire to; to take upon one, to undertake; to venture, presume; to attempt, endeavour, try. (あえて、大胆にも) ～しようとする (to do)。【参考】‘dare’ とともに用いられた例: **1869 BROWNING *Ring & Bk.* x. 1781 Dost thou dare pretend to punish me** For not desecrating sunshine at midnight? – *OED*. (真夜中に日の光を見ぬからとて、私を罰しようとしてもいうのか?)

⁵ under one’s breath: in a low voice or whisper.

and I was just worked up¹ to risk coming to the rescue, when of a sudden, his fingers relaxed, he shifted his grasp from her head, to her arm, and gazed intently in her face— Then he drew his hand over his eyes, stood a moment to collect himself² apparently, and turning anew to Catherine, said with assumed calmness,³

‘You must learn to avoid putting me in a passion⁴, or I shall really murder you, some time! Go with Mrs Dean, and keep with her, and confine your insolence to her ears. As to Hareton Earnshaw, if I see him listen to you, I’ll send him seeking his bread where he can get it! Your love will make him an outcast⁵, and a beggar—Nelly, take her, and leave me, all of you! Leave me!’

I led my young lady out; she was too glad of her escape, to resist; the other followed, and Mr Heathcliff had the room to himself, till dinner.

I had counselled Catherine to get hers upstairs, but as soon as he perceived her vacant seat, he sent me to call her. He spoke to none of us, ate very little, and went out directly afterwards, intimating that he should not return before evening.

The two new friends established⁶ themselves in the house, during his absence, where I heard Hareton sternly check⁷ his cousin, on her offering a revelation⁸ of her father-in-law's conduct to his father.

He said he wouldn't suffer⁹ a word to be uttered to him, in his disparagement¹⁰; if he were the devil, it didn't signify¹¹; he would stand by¹² him; and he'd rather she would

¹ work up: to stir up, arouse, excite, incite (the mind, imagination, etc., or the person) to or into a state or action. (p. 243 注 10 参照)

² collect oneself: to recover oneself from surprise or a disconcerted or distracted state; to compose oneself.

³ with assumed calmness: 平静を装って。 *assumed* *adj.* pretended, ‘put on.’

⁴ passion: an outburst of anger or bad temper.

⁵ outcast: a person ‘cast out’ or rejected; an abject; a castaway; one rejected or cast off by his friends or by society; an exile; a homeless vagabond.

⁶ establish: to settle (a person) in or at a place; (refl.) to obtain a secure footing; also in weaker sense, to take up one's quarters. (再帰的に) ここでは、「居間に腰を据えた」ほどの意味。

⁷ check: (formerly arch. or dial. now colloq.) to rebuke, reprove, reprimand. 結局は止めたことになるが、叱ったというほうが近いと思う。‘on her offering ...’ は ‘when she offered ...’ に同じ。

⁸ revelation: a striking disclosure of something previously unknown or not realized. (p. 424 注 5 参照)

⁹ suffer: to allow or permit a person, animal, or inanimate thing to be or to do so-and-so. (頻出。p. 119 注 13 など参照)

¹⁰ a word in his disparagement: Heathcliff をけなすようなことば。

¹¹ signify: to be of importance or consequence; to have significance; to avail or matter

¹² stand by: to support, assist, protect, defend (a person, a cause, etc.); to uphold the interests of, take the side of, be faithful or loyal to. 「(協力者として) かたわらに立つ」という意味から。

abuse himself, as she used to, than begin on Mr Heathcliff¹.

Catherine was waxing cross at this; but he found means to make her hold her tongue, by asking, how she would like *him* to speak ill of her father? and then she comprehended that Earnshaw took the master's reputation home² to himself: and was attached by ties stronger than reason could break—chains, forged³ by habit, which it would be cruel to attempt to loosen.

She showed a good heart, thenceforth, in avoiding both complaints and expressions of antipathy concerning Heathcliff; and confessed to me her sorrow that she had endeavoured to raise⁴ a bad spirit between him and Hareton—indeed, I don't believe she has ever breathed a syllable, in the latter's hearing, against her oppressor, since.

When this slight disagreement was over, they were friends again, and as busy as possible, in their several⁵ occupations, of pupil and teacher. I came in to sit with them after I had done my work, and I felt so soothed, and comforted to watch them, that I did not notice how time got on. You know, they both appeared in a measure⁶, my children: I had long been proud of one, and now, I was sure, the other would be a source of equal satisfaction. His honest, warm, and intelligent nature shook off rapidly the clouds of ignorance and degradation in which it had been bred; and Catherine's sincere commendations acted as a spur⁷ to his industry⁸. His brightening mind brightened his features, and added spirit and nobility to their aspect—I could hardly fancy it the same individual I had beheld on the day I discovered my little lady at Wuthering Heights, after

¹ begin on [upon] a person: (colloq.) to attack or assail a person. 【参考】 c1825 MRS. SHERWOOD *Houlston Tr.* II. xxxii. 4 All the company *began upon* her, and bade her mind her own affairs. (OED) (一同そろって彼女を攻撃し、余計な世話は焼くなといった) 手元の辞書中この語義がみつかったのは、ほかに三省堂『新クラウン英語熟語辞典 増補新版』のみ。begin on [upon] 「1 ... に着手する」のほかに、「2 《口》 ... を攻撃する、襲う: All *began upon* her. みな彼女を攻撃した」とある (OED から引いたのかもしれない)。

² home: to the very heart or root of a matter; into close and effective contact; so as to touch, reach, or affect intimately; closely, directly, effectively, thoroughly, out and out. ここでは、Heathcliff の評判をわがことのように気にかけていたこと。

³ forge: to shape by heating in a forge and hammering; to beat into shape. 鍛えて造る。

⁴ raise: to cause, originate, give rise to, bring about, set going. Used with a variety of objects, as a strife, dissension, or other disturbance (among or between persons, in a place, etc.). (人を不仲にさせるなど、よからぬことを) 引き起こす。

⁵ several: belonging, attributed, or assigned distributively to certain individuals referred to; different for each respectively. めいめいの。

⁶ in a measure: to a certain extent, in some degree, somewhat. ある程度、いくぶん。

⁷ spur: a stimulus, incentive, or incitement (to some quality, course of action, etc., or to do something).

⁸ industry: diligence or assiduity in the performance of any task, or in any effort; close and steady application to the business in hand; exertion, effort.

her expedition to the Craggs¹.

While I admired, and they laboured, dusk drew on, and with it returned the master. He came upon² us quite unexpectedly, entering by the front way, and had a full view of the whole three, ere we could raise our heads to glance at him.

Well, I reflected, there was never a pleasanter, or more harmless sight; and it will be a burning shame³ to scold them. The red firelight glowed on their two bonny heads, and revealed their faces, animated with the eager interest of children; for, though he was twenty-three and she eighteen, each had so much of novelty⁴ to feel, and learn, that neither experienced, nor evinced⁵ the sentiments of sober, disenchanted maturity.⁶

They lifted their eyes together, to encounter Mr Heathcliff—perhaps, you have never remarked⁷ that their eyes are precisely similar, and they are those of Catherine Earnshaw. The present Catherine has no other likeness to her, except a breadth of forehead, and a certain arch of the nostril that makes her appear rather haughty, whether she will, or not.⁸ With⁹ Hareton the resemblance is carried¹⁰ further: it is singular¹¹ at all times—then it was particularly striking: because his senses were alert, and his mental faculties awakened to unwonted¹² activity.

I suppose this resemblance disarmed Mr Heathcliff: he walked to the hearth in evident agitation, but it quickly subsided, as he looked at the young man; or, I should say, altered

¹ Craggs: PENGUIN 版の他の箇所では ‘Craggs’ と表記されている。誤植か。

² come upon: 〜の前に（不意に）現れる、やってくる。軍隊なら ‘to attack, esp. suddenly or by surprise’（奇襲する）。

³ burning shame (or disgrace, etc.): the prevailing idea is now perhaps ‘flagrant, flaming, conspicuous’; but there is often a mixture of notions derived from other senses, such as those of branding, stigmatizing; torturing as an inward fire; causing the cheeks to glow, etc.（面目まるつぶれで身を焼くような、頬がかつかとほてるような）とんでもない恥さらし。

⁴ novelty: the quality or state of being novel; that which is novel, new, or hitherto unknown. ここは、二人ともこれから始めて味わって知ることだからで。

⁵ evince: to give tokens of possessing; to reveal the presence of (a quality, condition, feeling); to display, exhibit, manifest.

⁶ the sentiments of sober, disenchanted maturity: 夢からさめて落ち着きをそなえた大人の感情。

⁷ remark: to observe, take notice of, perceive.

⁸ whether she will, or not: 当人にそのつもりがあるかどうかはともかく。

⁹ with: in the matter of, in regard to, towards, to, at, upon, about, concerning.

¹⁰ carry: to bear as a character, mark, attribute, or property; to exhibit, display. ‘carry the resemblance (of)’ は「(〜に) 似ている、そっくりに見える」【参考】なお ‘carry’ には ‘to have or keep in the mind’（記憶にとどめる）という意味もある。例: ‘make yourself master of its details, and try if you cannot *carry the resemblance* in your memory.’ (DICKENS *All the Year Round* Vol. IV)（そいつの特徴をすっかり飲みこんで、それらしい顔を頭に入れておくといい）。

¹¹ singular: remarkable; extraordinary, unusual, uncommon.

¹² unwonted: not wonted, usual, or habitual. いつにない。

its character¹, for it was there yet.

He took the book from his hand, and glanced at the open page, then returned it without any observation²; merely signing Catherine away—her companion lingered very little behind her³, and I was about to depart also, but he bid me sit still.

‘It is a poor conclusion, is it not?’ he observed, having brooded⁴ a while on the scene he had just witnessed. ‘An absurd termination to my violent exertions?’⁵ I get levers⁶ and mattocks⁷ to demolish⁸ the two houses, and train⁹ myself to be capable of working like Hercules, and when everything is ready, and in my power, I find the will to lift a slate of either roof has vanished! My old enemies have not beaten me—now would be the precise time to revenge myself on their representatives¹⁰—I could do it¹¹; and none could hinder me—But where is the use? I don’t care for¹² striking, I can’t take the trouble to raise my hand! That sounds as if I had been labouring the whole time, only to exhibit a fine trait¹³ of magnanimity¹⁴. It is far from being the case—I have lost the faculty¹⁵ of enjoying their destruction, and I am too idle to destroy for nothing¹⁶.

‘Nelly, there is a strange change approaching—I’m in its shadow at present—I take so little interest in my daily life, that I hardly remember to eat, and drink—Those two, who

¹ its character: the character of his agitation.

² observation: an utterance as to something observed; a remark in speech or writing in reference to something. (p. 373 注 13、p. 445 注 13 参照)

³ lingered very little behind her: (ぐずぐずせず) すぐに彼女のあとを追って出ていった。

⁴ brood: to meditate moodily, or with strong feeling, *on* or *over*.

⁵ exertion: the action of exerting oneself; vigorous action; effort; an instance or mode of exerting oneself. 奮闘努力。

⁶ lever: a crowbar, handspike, or the like. かなてこ、バールのたぐい。

⁷ mattock: an agricultural tool (of which there are several varieties) used for loosening hard ground, grubbing up trees, etc. つるはしの一種。

⁸ demolish: to destroy (a building or other structure) by violent disintegration of its fabric; to pull or throw down, pull to pieces, reduce to ruin.

⁹ train: to bring by a course of diet and exercise to the required state of physical efficiency for a race or other athletic feat. ここでは (Hercules [hák:ju:liz] なみの力業がこなせるように) 身体を鍛えること。なおこの文章が現在時制なのは「出来事の進行を(眼前の動作のように描写)説明する場合」(研究社『実例英文法』)に相当する。

¹⁰ representative: one who represents another as agent, delegate, substitute, successor, or heir. ここでは「後継ぎ」。

¹¹ I could do it.: やらうと思えばできる。

¹² care for: to have a regard, liking, or inclination for (a thing)

¹³ trait: a particular feature of mind or character; a distinguishing quality; a characteristic.

¹⁴ magnanimity: nobility of feeling; superiority to petty resentment or jealousy; generous disregard of injuries. 度量の大きさ。

¹⁵ faculty: ‘The power of doing anything’ (J.). *OED* に引用符付きで (J.) と注記されているのは Samuel Johnson (1709-84) の辞書からの引用。この種の単語の場合、特にわかりやすい。

¹⁶ for nothing: in vain, to no purpose. むだに。

have left the room, are the only objects which retain a distinct material appearance¹ to me, and, that appearance causes me pain, amounting to agony. About *her* I won't speak; and I don't desire to think; but I earnestly wish she were invisible—her presence invokes only maddening sensations. *He* moves me differently; and yet if I could do it without seeming insane, I'd never see him again!² You'll perhaps think me rather inclined to become so,' he added, making an effort to smile, 'if I try to describe the thousand forms of past associations, and ideas he awakens or embodies³—But you'll not talk of what I tell you, and my mind is so eternally secluded in itself, it is tempting⁴, at last, to turn it out to another.

'Five minutes ago, Hareton seemed a personification⁵ of my youth, not a human being—I felt to him⁶ in such a variety of ways, that it would have been impossible to have accosted⁷ him rationally.'

'In the first place, his startling likeness to Catherine connected him fearfully with her—That, however, which you may suppose the most potent⁸ to arrest my imagination, is actually the least—for what is not connected with her to me? and what does not recall her? I cannot look down to this floor, but her features are shaped in the flags! In every cloud, in every tree—filling the air at night, and caught by glimpses in every object, by day I am surrounded with her image! The most ordinary faces of men, and women—my own features—mock⁹ me with a resemblance. The entire world is a dreadful collection of memoranda¹⁰ that she did exist, and that I have lost her!

¹ the only objects that retain a distinct material appearance: はっきりとしたかたちをとどめて見えるのはあの二人だけ。

² if I ... again!: おれが狂って見えずにすむものなら、あいつの顔だってもう二度とは見まい。つまり Catherine はただうとましいだけだが、Hareton にはもっと別な複雑で離れがたい思いがあるから、顔を見られなくなったら半狂乱になるだろう、ということ。このあとを読めば、Hareton は青年期に苦闘した Heathcliff の分身的存在でもあることがわかる。

³ embody: to give a concrete form to (what is abstract or ideal). (かたちのないもの) をかたちにしてみせる、具体化する。

⁴ tempting: seductive, attractive, alluring, inviting.

⁵ personification: the embodiment of a quality, idea, or other abstraction, in a real person; an impersonation, 'incarnation' (of something). ここは、おれの若い頃そっくりそのままというのをとおげさに「化身」といったもの。

⁶ I felt to him: 彼について (対して) どんな感情が湧く、どう思う、ということ。feel: to have the sensibilities excited; esp. to have sympathy with, compassion for (a person, his sufferings, etc.).

⁷ accost: to make up to and speak to; to address. 近寄って声 (ことば) をかける。

⁸ potent: powerful, possessed of great power; having great authority or influence; mighty. (p. 298 注 4, p. 403 注 12 参照)

⁹ mock: to attack or treat with ridicule, contempt, or derision.

¹⁰ memorandum (pl. memoranda): 'a note to help the memory' ここは、(～を) 思い出させるものの。

Well, Hareton's aspect¹ was the ghost of my immortal love, of my wild endeavours to hold my right, my degradation, my pride, my happiness, and my anguish—

‘But it is frenzy² to repeat these thoughts to you; only it will let you know, why, with a reluctance to be always alone, his society is no benefit, rather an aggravation³ of the constant torment I suffer—and it partly contributes⁴ to render me regardless how he and his cousin go on together. I can give them no attention, any more.’

‘But what do you mean by a *change*, Mr Heathcliff?’ I said, alarmed at his manner, though he was neither in danger of losing his senses, nor dying, according to my judgment he was quite strong and healthy; and, as to his reason, from childhood, he had a delight in dwelling on dark things, and entertaining⁵ odd fancies—he might have had a monomania⁶ on the subject of his departed idol⁷; but on every other point his wits were as sound as mine.

‘I shall not know that, till it comes,’ he said, ‘I’m only half conscious of it now.’

‘You have no feeling of illness, have you?’ I asked.

‘No, Nelly, I have not,’ he answered.

‘Then, you are not afraid of death?’ I pursued.

‘Afraid! No!’ he replied. ‘I have neither a fear, nor a presentiment⁸, nor a hope of death—Why should I? With my hard constitution, and temperate⁹ mode of living, and

¹ aspect: the look which one wears; expression of countenance; countenance, face.

² frenzy: (fig.) agitation or disorder of the mind likened to madness; a state of delirious fury, rage, enthusiasm, or the like; also, wild folly, distraction, craziness.

³ aggravation: a making heavier, graver, or more heinous; the fact of being increased in gravity or seriousness. 悪化させること。

⁴ contribute: (*to contribute to* or *contribute to do* (anything): to do a part in bringing (it) about; to have a part or share in producing. への (～する) 一因となる。

⁵ entertain: to keep, hold, or maintain in the mind with favour; to harbour; to cherish

⁶ monomania: a form of insanity in which the patient is irrational on one subject only; (in popular use) an exaggerated enthusiasm for or devotion to one subject. 偏執狂。

⁷ idol: (fig.) any thing or person that is the object of excessive or supreme devotion, or that usurps the place of God in human affection; a person so adored..

⁸ presentiment: a mental impression or feeling of a future event; a vague expectation resting on no definite reason, but seeming like a direct perception of something about to happen; an anticipation, foreboding (most commonly of something evil). (悪い) 予感。

⁹ temperate: [tɛmpərət] moderate and self-controlled as regards the indulgence of appetites or desires; abstemious, sober; continent; in late use *spec.* moderate or abstemious in the use of alcoholic drinks. 節度ある、酒をほどほどにする。

unperilous occupations¹, I ought to, and probably *shall*, remain above ground, till there is scarcely a black hair on my head—And yet I cannot continue in this condition!—I have to remind myself to breathe—almost to remind my heart to beat! And it is like bending back a stiff spring² ... it is by compulsion³, that I do the slightest act, not prompted by one thought⁴, and by compulsion, that I notice anything alive, or dead, which is not associated with one universal⁵ idea ... I have a single wish, and my whole being, and faculties⁶ are yearning to attain it. They have yearned towards it so long, and so unwaveringly⁷, that I'm convinced it *will* be reached—and *soon*—because it has devoured my existence—I am swallowed up in the anticipation⁸ of its fulfilment.

'My confessions have not relieved me, but, they may account for⁹ some, otherwise unaccountable phases of humour¹⁰ which I show. O, God! it is a long fight, I wish it were over!'

He began to pace the room, muttering terrible things to himself; till I was inclined to believe, as he said Joseph did, that conscience had turned his heart to an earthly hell—I wondered greatly how it would end.

Though he seldom before had revealed his state of mind, even by looks, it was his habitual mood, I had no doubt: He asserted it himself—but not a soul¹¹, from his general bearing¹², would have conjectured the fact. You did not, when you saw him, Mr Lockwood

¹ unperilous occupations: 「危険のない（あれこれの）活動（仕事）」ということだが、「ふだん危ないことはしていない」とでもしなければ日本語にならない。*unperilous*: free from danger. occupation: (with pl.) a particular action or course of action in which one is engaged, esp. habitually or statedly; an employment, business, calling.

² bending back a stiff spring: 固いバネを逆に曲げる。

³ by compulsion: むりやり。

⁴ the slightest ... thought: ここは「the slightest act that is not prompted by one thought」あるひとつの思いにせき立てられてすることでなければ、ほんのささいなことであっても 'by compulsion' むりにも（しなければできない）」と解する。すぐあとの「anything alive, or dead, which is not associated with one universal idea」すべてに及ぶあるひとつの思いとは無縁のものなら、生命があろうとなかろうとなんであれ 'by compulsion' むりにも（注意しなければ気がつかない）」に対応する。

⁵ universal: affecting, concerning, or involving all. すべてに影響する（関わる）。

⁶ faculty: (of persons) an ability or aptitude, whether natural or acquired, for any special kind of action. （身体的あるいは精神的な諸々の）能力。（p. 457 注 15 参照）

⁷ unwaveringly: 'firmly' ほどの意味。

⁸ anticipation: the action of looking forward to, expectation.

⁹ account for: to give a satisfactory reason for, to explain.

¹⁰ otherwise unaccountable phases of humour: （いままで語った）ほかには説明のつかぬ気分のありよう。

¹¹ soul: a person, an individual.

¹² bearing: the carrying of oneself (with reference to the manner); carriage, deportment; behaviour, demeanour.

—and at the period of which I speak, he was just the same as then¹, only fonder of continued solitude, and perhaps still more laconic² in company.

¹ then: when you saw him.

² laconic: in speech and writing; brief, concise, sententious. 口数の少ない。

Chapter XX (XXXIV)

For some days after that evening, Mr Heathcliff shunned¹ meeting us at meals; yet he would not consent, formally², to exclude Hareton and Cathy. He had an aversion to yielding so completely to his feelings, choosing, rather, to absent himself—And eating once in twenty-four hours seemed sufficient sustenance³ for him.

One night, after the family were in bed, I heard him go down stairs, and out at the front door: I did not hear him re-enter and, in the morning, I found he was still away.

We were in April then, the weather was sweet and warm, the grass as green as showers and sun could make it, and the two dwarf⁴ apple trees, near the southern wall, in full bloom.

After breakfast, Catherine insisted on my bringing a chair, and sitting, with my work, under the fir trees, at the end of the house⁵; and she beguiled⁶ Hareton, who had perfectly recovered from his accident, to dig and arrange her little garden, which was shifted to that corner by the influence of Joseph's complaints.

I was comfortably revelling⁷ in the spring fragrance around, and the beautiful soft blue overhead, when my young lady, who had run down near the gate to procure⁸ some primrose roots for a border, returned only half laden, and informed us that Mr Heathcliff was coming in.

‘And he spoke to me,’ she added, with a perplexed countenance.

‘What did he say?’ asked Hareton.

¹ shun: to avoid (in mod. prose use always to avoid persistently or habitually) from repugnance, fear, or caution; to keep away from (a person or his society, a place, etc.). (p.166 注 1、p. 258 注 8、p. 314 注 5、p. 369 注 3 参照)

² formally: explicitly, expressly. はっきりと (口に出して)。つまり食卓で二人に会いたくはないのだが、そうはっきりいうのがいやで、自分が顔を出さなかった。

³ sustenance: means of sustaining life; food, victuals; nourishment.

⁴ dwarf: used as the specific or trivial name (種名・種小名) of plants and animals of a height or size much below the average of their kind. (もともと) 小さい種類の (矮性の)。あるいは単に「非常に小さい (of unusually small stature or size; diminutive)」という意味でも。

⁵ the house: ここでは「家」そのものを指す。

⁶ beguile: to win the attention or interest of (any one) by willing means; to wile (one) on, or into any course. ことば巧みに～させる。(p. 280 注 8、p. 409 注 6 参照)

⁷ revel: to enjoy oneself greatly, to take intense pleasure or delight, in something.

⁸ procure: to obtain by care or effort; to gain, win, get possession of, acquire.

‘He told me to begone¹ as fast as I could,’ she answered. ‘But he looked so different from his usual look that I stopped a moment to stare at him.’

‘How?’ he enquired.

‘Why, almost bright and cheerful—No, almost nothing²—*very much* excited, and wild³ and glad!’ she replied.

‘Night-walking amuses him, then,’ I remarked, affecting⁴ a careless manner. In reality, as surprised as she was; and anxious to ascertain the truth of her statement, for to see the master looking glad would not be an every-day spectacle⁵, I framed⁶ an excuse to go in.

Heathcliff stood at the open door; he was pale, and he trembled; yet, certainly, he had a strange, joyful glitter in his eyes, that altered the aspect of his whole face.

‘Will you have some breakfast?’ I said, ‘You must be hungry, rambling about all night!’

I wanted to discover where he had been; but I did not like to ask directly.

‘No, I’m not hungry,’ he answered, averting⁷ his head, and speaking rather contemptuously, as if he guessed I was trying to divine⁸ the occasion⁹ of his good-humour.

I felt perplexed—I didn’t know whether it were not a proper opportunity to offer a bit of admonition¹⁰.

¹ to begone: 立ち去れという。‘Begone’ はすでに登場しているように、ふつうは命令文で用いるから ‘Begone as fast as you can!’ (さっさと消え失せろ) といったのである。本例のような用法について、*OED*は「たいして理由もなくこれを不定詞に拡張したもの」とする。

² almost nothing: 「ほとんどなににもない」ではなく、「ほとんどどうのといった段ではなく（ほとんどどころか）、とても～だ」。

³ wild: highly excited or agitated.

⁴ affect: to put on a pretence of; to assume a false appearance of, to counterfeit or pretend. ここは、何気ない風を装って。

⁵ spectacle: a thing seen or capable of being seen; something presented to the view, esp. of a striking or unusual character; a sight.

⁶ frame: to contrive (a plot, etc.); to devise, invent, fabricate (a rule, story, theory, etc.). ‘frame an excuse to ...’ ～する口実をこしらえる。(p. 165 注 9、p. 348 注 8 参照)

⁷ avert: to turn away (the face, eyes, thoughts). (顔を)そむける、(目を)そらす。

⁸ divine: to make out by sagacity, intuition, or fortunate conjecture (that is, in some other way than by actual information); to conjecture, guess. (p. 299 注 11、p. 332 注 2、p. 373 注 7 参照)

⁹ occasion: a reason, ground.

¹⁰ admonition: the action of admonishing; authoritative counsel; warning, implied reproof. (それとなく) 意見 (注意、忠告) すること。

‘I don't think it right to wander out of doors,’ I observed, ‘instead of being in bed: it is not wise, at any rate, this moist season. I dare say you'll catch a bad cold, or a fever—you have something the matter¹ with you now!’

‘Nothing but what I can bear²,’ he replied, ‘and with the greatest pleasure, provided you'll leave me alone—get in, and don't annoy me.’

I obeyed; and, in passing, I noticed he breathed as fast as a cat.

‘Yes,’ I reflected³ to myself, ‘we shall have a fit of illness.⁴ I cannot conceive⁵ what he has been doing.’

That noon, he sat down to dinner with us, and received a heaped-up⁶ plate from my hands, as if he intended to make amends⁷ for previous fasting.

‘I've neither cold, nor fever, Nelly,’ he remarked, in allusion to⁸ my morning's speech. ‘And I'm ready to do justice to the food⁹ you give me.’

He took his knife and fork, and was going to commence eating, when the inclination¹⁰ appeared to become suddenly extinct¹¹. He laid them on the table, looked eagerly towards the window, then rose and went out.

We saw him walking, to and fro, in the garden, while we concluded our meal; and

¹ matter: the circumstance or state of things which actually involves or concerns some person or thing, esp. one which calls for remedy or explanation. ‘you have something the matter with you’ は「あなたはどこかお加減が悪い」。

² nothing but what I can bear: 「耐えられること以外のなにものでもないではない」のだから、結局は「たいしたことではない」。

³ reflect: to ponder, meditate on.

⁴ we shall have a fit of illness: ‘a fit of illness’ (突然病に襲われること)に見舞われる可能性があるのは、もちろん「私たち」ではなく、夜歩きしている Heathcliff だから、「そのうち病気に倒れる (のを見ることになる) でしょうよ」ということ。

⁵ conceive: to imagine.

⁶ heaped-up: 山盛りにした。

⁷ make amends: to compensate, as *for* injury, loss, or insult. (～の) 埋合わせをする (for)。

⁸ in allusion to: ふと～にふれて (言及して)。allusion: a passing or incidental reference.

⁹ do justice to the food: うまいものをうまいうまいとたくさん食う、満喫する。do justice to: to treat a thing in a manner showing due appreciation’ (p. 89 注 5 参照)

¹⁰ inclination: The condition of being mentally inclined or disposed to something, or an instance of such condition; a tendency or bent of the mind, will, or desires towards a particular object. (なにかをしようという) 気 (になっていること)。

¹¹ extinct: of things comparable to a fire or light (e.g. life, hope, passion, disease, etc.): quenched: that has ceased to burn or shine. (灯が消えるように) 消えた。

Earnshaw said he'd go, and ask¹ why he would not dine; he thought we had grieved him some way.

‘Well, is he coming?’ cried² Catherine, when her cousin returned.

‘Nay,’ he answered; ‘but he's not angry; he seemed rare³ and pleased indeed; only, I made him impatient by speaking to him twice; and then he bid me be off to you; he wondered how I could want the company of anybody else.’⁴

I set his plate, to keep warm, on the fender⁵, and after an hour or two, he re-entered, when the room was clear, in no degree⁶ calmer—the same unnatural—it was unnatural—appearance of joy under his black brows; the same bloodless hue; and his teeth visible, now and then, in a kind of smile; his frame shivering, not as one shivers with chill or weakness, but as a tight-stretched cord vibrates—a strong thrilling, rather than trembling⁷.

I will ask what is the matter, I thought, or who should?⁸ And I exclaimed—

‘Have you heard any good news, Mr Heathcliff? You look uncommonly animated.’

‘Where should good news come from to me?’ he said. ‘I'm animated with hunger; and, seemingly⁹, I must not eat.’

¹ Earnshaw said he'd go, and ask ...: もちろん ‘go and ask ...’ とひとつづきのほうがわかりやすい。実際テキストによっては ‘Earnshaw said he'd go and ask ...’ と、コンマがない。PENGUIN 版テキストは初版によるため、句読点の打ち方や段落分け、Joseph の方言の表記など第 2 版によるテキストとは異なることが多い。そのままではわかりにくいと判断した姉 Charlotte がかなり手を入れたのだろう。しかし作者の書きぐせにもまた味があるはずだし、段落分けについては、個人的には息の長い第 2 版よりも PENGUIN 版のほうが読みやすいと思う。

² cry: to utter the voice loudly and with exclamatory effort, whether under the influence of emotion, as indignation, fear, pain, surprise, or merely in order to be heard afar, or above any noise that would prevent the ordinary speaking voice from being heard or distinguished. ここは、まだ少し離れていた Hareton にはっきり聞こえるように大きな声でいったこと。

³ rare: (colloq.) splendid, excellent, fine.

⁴ he wondered ... else.: ‘anybody else than Catherine’ つまり、おまえには Catherine がいるのに、どうしておれなんかと一緒にいたがるのかわからん、ということ。

⁵ fender: a metal frame placed in front of a fire to keep falling coals from rolling out into the room. 炉格子。暖炉の前面を囲う金属製の格子枠なのだろうが、皿を置いたとあるからには上端に置けるだけの平面部分があったはず。どんな構造なのか、実物を見なければわからない。

⁶ in no degree: by no means, in no respect.

⁷ thrilling, rather than trembling: ‘thrill’ は ‘emotion’ について、‘tremble’ は ‘body’ についていう。それぞれ ‘as a tight-stretched cord vibrates’ と ‘as one shivers with chill or weakness’ に対応する。

⁸ or who should?: 私でなくてだれが（聞くというのか）？

⁹ seemingly: so far as one can judge by circumstances. 状況から判断するかぎり、見たところでは。「空腹のおかげで元気がいいんだから、食わんほうがよさそうだ」ということ。

‘Your dinner is here,’ I returned; ‘why won’t you get it?’

‘I don’t want it now,’ he muttered, hastily¹. ‘I’ll wait till supper. And, Nelly, once for all², let me beg you to warn Hareton and the other away from me. I wish to be troubled by nobody—I wish to have this place to myself.’

‘Is there some new reason for this banishment?’³ I inquired. ‘Tell me why you are so queer, Mr Heathcliff. Where were you last night? I’m not putting the question, through⁴ idle⁵ curiosity, but—’

‘You are putting the question through very idle curiosity,’ he interrupted, with a laugh. ‘Yes, I’ll answer it. Last night, I was on the threshold of hell. To-day, I am within sight of my heaven—I have my eyes on it⁶—hardly three feet to sever⁷ me! And now you’d better go—You’ll neither see nor hear anything to frighten you, if you refrain from prying⁸.’

Having swept the hearth and wiped the table, I departed more perplexed than ever.

He did not quit the house again that afternoon, and no one intruded on his solitude, till, at eight o’clock, I deemed it proper, though unsummoned, to carry a candle, and his supper to him.

He was leaning against the ledge of an open lattice, but not looking out; his face was turned to the interior gloom. The fire had smouldered⁹ to ashes; the room was filled with the damp, mild air of the cloudy evening, and so still, that not only the murmur of the beck¹⁰ down Gimmerton was distinguishable, but its ripples¹¹ and its gurgling¹² over the

¹ hastily: with quickness of temper; in sudden anger. 怒りっぽく、うるさそうに。

² once for all: once as a final act; once and done with. (頼むのは) もうこれっきりにするが。

³ banishment: the action of peremptorily sending away; a state of enforced absence; dismissal.

⁴ through: indicating cause, reason, or motive: in consequence of, by reason of, on account of, owing to; from; for. ここでは「動機」。

⁵ idle: worthless, of no value, vain, frivolous, trifling. つまらぬ。

⁶ I have my eyes on it.: 現にそれが見えている。

⁷ sever: to keep distinct or apart by an intervening space or barrier.

⁸ pry: to inquire into or investigate closely. 穿鑿する。

⁹ smoulder: to burn and smoke without flame. くすぶる。‘smouldered to ashes’ は、くすぶって(その結果)灰になった、つまり火の気がなくなっていた。

¹⁰ beck: a brook or stream. (p. 133 注 12、p. 189 注 9 参照)

¹¹ ripple: a light ruffling of the surface of water, such as is caused by a slight breeze; a wavelet; a mark, appearance, or movement resembling or suggestive of a ripple on water. ここではさざ波が立てる音。

¹² gurgle: (of water or other liquid) to flow in a broken irregular current, with intermittent low noises, as water from a bottle, or a stream among stones. ゴボッゴボッと音を立てて流れる。

pebbles, or through the large stones which it could not cover¹.

I uttered an ejaculation of discontent² at seeing the dismal³ grate, and commenced shutting the casements, one after another, till I came to his.

‘Must⁴ I close this?’ I asked, in order to rouse⁵ him, for he would not stir.

The light flashed on his features, as I spoke. Oh, Mr Lockwood, I cannot express what a terrible start⁶ I got, by the momentary view! Those deep black eyes! That smile, and ghastly⁷ paleness! It appeared to me, not Mr Heathcliff, but a goblin⁸; and, in my terror, I let the candle bend towards the wall, and it left me in darkness.

‘Yes, close it,’ he replied, in his familiar voice. ‘There, that is pure awkwardness⁹! Why did you hold the candle horizontally? Be quick, and bring another.’

I hurried out in a foolish state of dread, and said to Joseph—

‘The master wishes you to take him a light, and rekindle the fire.’ For I dare not go in myself again just then.

Joseph rattled some fire into the shovel, and went; but he brought it back, immediately, with the supper tray in his other hand, explaining that Mr Heathcliff was going to bed, and he wanted nothing to eat till morning.

We heard him mount the stairs directly; he did not proceed to his ordinary chamber, but turned into that with the panelled bed—its window, as I mentioned before, is wide enough for anybody to get through, and it struck me, that he plotted¹⁰ another midnight excursion,

¹ through the large stones which it could not cover: 水の上に顔を出した大きな石の間を。

² I uttered an ejaculation of discontent: つまり「まあ、いけない!」とでもいったのである。

³ dismal: (of a character or aspect that causes gloom and depression) depressingly dark, sombre, gloomy, dreary, or cheerless. ‘dismal grate’ 火の気のない火格子 (または「暖炉」そのもの)。
grate: a frame of metal bars for holding the fuel in a fireplace or furnace; hence, the fireplace itself.

⁴ must: (dial.) in questions = may, shall. 「方言」のラベルはあるが、「ここも閉めなくちゃいけませんか」ではおかしいから、まさしく ‘Shall I close this?’ だろう。

⁵ rouse: to cause to start up from slumber or repose; to awaken from sleep, meditation, etc.

⁶ start: a sudden involuntary movement of the body, occasioned by surprise, terror, joy or grief, or the recollection of something forgotten. ギクリ (ビクリ、ドキッ、ハッ) とすること。

⁷ ghastly: [gá:stli] like a spectre, or a dead body; death-like, pale, wan.

⁸ goblin: a mischievous and ugly demon.

⁹ awkwardness: lack of skill or dexterity; clumsiness. 不器用、へたくそ。

¹⁰ plot: (now always in evil sense) to plan, contrive, or devise (something to be carried out or accomplished); to lay plans for. (よからぬことを) たくらむ、計画する。

which he had rather¹ we had no suspicion of.

‘Is he a ghoul² or a vampire?’ I mused. I had read of such hideous, incarnate³ demons. And then, I set myself⁴ to reflect, how I had tended him in infancy; and watched him grow to youth; and followed him almost through his whole course⁵; and what absurd nonsense it was to yield to that sense of horror.

‘But where did he come from, the little dark thing, harboured by a good man to his bane?⁶’ muttered superstition⁷, as I dozed into unconsciousness. And I began, half dreaming, to weary⁸ myself with imagining some fit parentage for him; and repeating my waking⁹ meditations, I tracked his existence over again, with grim variations¹⁰; at last, picturing his death and funeral; of which, all I can remember is, being exceedingly vexed at having the task of dictating¹¹ an inscription for his monument¹², and consulting the sexton about it; and, as he had no surname, and we could not tell his age, we were obliged to content ourselves with the single word, ‘Heathcliff.’ That came true¹³; we were¹⁴. If you enter the kirkyard, you’ll read on his headstone only that, and the date of his death.

Dawn restored me to common-sense¹⁵. I rose, and went into the garden, as soon as I

¹ had rather: would rather. (*rather*: *adv.* more willingly; by preference or choice) ここは、私たちには感づかれない。

² ghoul: [gu:l] an evil spirit supposed (in Muslim countries) to rob graves and prey on human corpses.

³ incarnate: [ɪnkɑːnət] clothed or invested with flesh; in a human (or animal) bodily form.

⁴ set oneself: to apply oneself to a piece of work, a task, or employment. Most often (and now always) const. inf. (努めて) ~しようとする、専念する。

⁵ course: the continuous process (of time), succession (of events); progress onward or through successive stages. 経過、歩み。

⁶ harboured by ... bane: 善人 (Earnshaw) に保護され、その恩人を不幸に導いた。 *bane*: ruin; woful or hapless fate.

⁷ muttered superstition: ‘superstition’ がそうつぶやいた、ということ。

⁸ weary: to fatigue or tire with toil, sickness, watching, sustained mental effort, etc. ここは、あの子にお似合いの両親はどんなだったろうかと、疲れるほどあれこれ想像をめぐらす。

⁹ waking: belonging to, characteristic of, one who wakes or is awake. 「目ざめている人の」とは、ここでは「‘unconsciousness’ に陥っていないときの」。つまり、ふだんつくづく考えているあれこれのことをまどろみの中で繰り返した。

¹⁰ with grim variations: いろいろぞっとするような変化をつけてみながら。他人には不明の時期について、いろいろ想像をとっかえひっかえして Heathcliff の生涯をたどってみたことをいうのだろう。特に嵐が丘出奔後の行方不明中に財産を築いた謎には、恐ろしい想像をする余地がある。

¹¹ dictate: to put into words which are to be written down; to utter, pronounce, or read aloud to a person (something which he is to write).

¹² an inscription for his monument: 墓碑銘。

¹³ That came true: 実際そのとおりになりました。 *come true*: to be verified or realized in actual experience; to be fulfilled.

¹⁴ we were: = we were obliged ‘Heathcliff.’

¹⁵ common-sense: good sound practical sense; combined tact and readiness in dealing with the every-day affairs of life; general sagacity. ここは「いつもの自分」あたりが適切だろう。

could see¹, to ascertain if there were any footmarks under his window. There were none.

‘He has stayed at home,’ I thought, ‘and he’ll be all right, to-day!’

I prepared breakfast for the household², as was my usual custom, but told Hareton, and Catherine to get theirs, ere the master came down, for he lay late³. They preferred taking it out of doors, under the trees, and I set a little table to accommodate⁴ them.

On my re-entrance, I found Mr Heathcliff below. He and Joseph were conversing about some farming business; he gave clear, minute directions concerning the matter discussed, but he spoke rapidly, and turned his head continually aside, and had the same excited expression, even more exaggerated⁵.

When Joseph quitted the room, he took his seat in the place he generally chose, and I put a basin⁶ of coffee before him. He drew it nearer, and then rested his arms on the table, and looked at the opposite wall, as I supposed⁷, surveying one particular portion, up and down, with glittering, restless eyes, and with such eager interest, that he stopped breathing, during half a minute together.⁸

‘Come now,’⁹ I exclaimed, pushing some bread against¹⁰ his hand. ‘Eat and drink that, while it is hot. It has been waiting¹¹ near an hour.’

¹ as soon as I could see: 明るく (なつてあたりが見えるように) になるとすぐに。

² household: the inmates of a house collectively; an organized family, including servants or attendants, dwelling in a house. ここは「みな」でいいだろう。

³ lay late: to be in one's bed for the purpose of sleeping or resting. 「昨夜は遅くにお休みになったから」とする翻訳もあるが、‘lie’ は横になっている状態をいうのだし、時制の一致から考えても、「(今朝は) 遅くまでお休みだからあなたたちは先にお食べなさい、といいました」が適切。前の晩には夕食も取らず ‘Mr Heathcliff was going to bed, and he wanted nothing to eat till morning.’ (p. 467) とあるから、就寝が遅かったとはいえない(夜歩きしたかどうかは別問題)。

⁴ accommodate: to have or make room for; to suit. 単純に ‘to suit’ と取れば、‘a little table to accommodate them’ は、二人にぴったりの小さなテーブル。

⁵ exaggerate: to intensify, aggravate (conditions, etc.), abnormally.

⁶ basin: a circular vessel of greater width than depth, with sloping or curving sides, used for holding water and other liquids, especially for washing purposes. (p.18 注 3 参照)

⁷ as I supposed: 私の推測したところでは、つまり、どうやら～らしかった。

⁸ together: (in reference to time, less commonly to space.) without intermission, continuously, consecutively, uninterruptedly, ‘running’, ‘on end’.

⁹ come now: as a call or appeal to a person to bethink himself, implying impatience, remonstrance, or, more usually, mild protest or deprecation on the speaker's part. (いらだちや、たしなめる気持ちをこめて) まあまあ、さあさあ、これこれ、など。‘Come’ や ‘Come, come’ も同じ。

¹⁰ against: (with *push, press, lean, hang, stand, lie*, etc.) supported by; in contact with. 「接触」だから、パンを手に押しつけた。

¹¹ wait: (of a thing) to remain in readiness for some purpose; to remain for a while neglected. 用意できているのにそのままにされている。ここは、食事が手つかずになっていること。

He didn't notice me, and yet he smiled. I'd rather have seen him gnash¹ his teeth than smile so.

'Mr Heathcliff! master!' I cried. 'Don't, for God's sake, stare as if you saw an unearthly vision.'

'Don't, for God's sake, shout so loud,' he replied. 'Turn round, and tell me, are we by ourselves?'²

'Of course,' was my answer, 'of course, we are!'

Still, I involuntarily³ obeyed him, as if I were not quite sure.

With a sweep of his hand, he cleared⁴ a vacant space in front among the breakfast things, and leant forward to gaze more at his ease⁵.

Now, I perceived he was not looking at the wall, for when I regarded him alone, it seemed, exactly, that he gazed at something within two yards' distance. And, whatever it was, it communicated, apparently, both pleasure and pain, in exquisite⁶ extremes⁷, at least, the anguished, yet raptured expression of his countenance suggested that idea.

The fancied⁸ object was not fixed, either; his eyes pursued it with unwearied vigilance⁹; and, even in speaking to me, were never weaned¹⁰ away.

I vainly reminded him of his protracted abstinence¹¹ from food; if he stirred to touch

¹ gnash: [næʃ] to strike together or 'grind' the teeth, esp. from rage or anguish.

² by oneself: without companion; alone, singly, in isolation. (p. 68 注 11、p. 85 注 10、p. 179 注 6 参照)

³ involuntarily: without exercise or co-operation of the will. そのつもりはないのに、思わず。

⁴ cleared: to free or rid (a place or thing of any things by which it is occupied, accompanied, or encumbered, so as to leave the former clear or void). ここは、目の前のじゃまな食器類を手で払いのけて見通しをよくした。

⁵ at one's ease: in comfort, without anxiety or annoyance, unconstrained, unembarrassed. ここでは、「視界を妨げられずに」という意味で「楽に」だから、「落ち着いて」あたりが適切。

⁶ exquisite: (of pain, pleasure, etc.) intense, acute, keen.

⁷ in extremes: in the utmost or highest degree.

⁸ fancied: formed or portrayed by the fancy; existing only in the fancy; imaginary.

⁹ vigilance: watchfulness against danger or any action on the part of others; alertness or closeness of observation. 'with unwearied vigilance' 飽かずに見逃すまいとして。

¹⁰ wean: to detach (a person) from some accustomed object of pursuit or enjoyment. 赤ん坊を乳離れさせるように、慣れ親しんだものから人を引き離す。

¹¹ abstinence: the action or practice of abstaining or refraining; forbearance. ここは、しばらく食事を取っていないこと。Heathcliff は前日絶食している。

anything in compliance with my entreaties, if he stretched his hand out to get a piece of bread, his fingers clenched, before they reached it, and remained on the table, forgetful of their aim.

I sat a model¹ of patience, trying to attract his absorbed attention from its engrossing² speculation³; till he grew irritable, and got up, asking why I would not allow him to have his own time⁴ in taking his meals? and saying that, on the next occasion, I needn't wait, I might⁵ set the things down, and go.

Having uttered these words, he left the house⁶, slowly sauntered down the garden path, and disappeared through the gate.

The hours crept anxiously by: another evening came. I did not retire to rest till late, and when I did, I could not sleep. He returned after midnight, and, instead of going to bed, shut himself into the room beneath. I listened, and tossed about⁷; and, finally, dressed and descended. It was too irksome⁸ to lie up⁹ there, harassing my brain with a hundred idle misgivings.

I distinguished Mr Heathcliff's step, restlessly measuring¹⁰ the floor, and he frequently broke the silence by a deep inspiration¹¹, resembling a groan. He muttered detached¹² words, also; the only one I could catch was the name of Catherine, coupled with some wild term of endearment, or suffering¹³; and spoken as one would speak to a person present—

¹ model: a person or thing eminently worthy of imitation; a perfect exemplar of some excellence.

² engrossing: that fully occupies or absorbs the attention, faculties, etc.

³ speculation: contemplation of a profound, far-reaching, or subtle character. 深く物思いにふけること。

⁴ time: the length of time sufficient, necessary, or desired for some purpose. 'have his own time in taking his meals' は「たっぷり時間をかけて食事を取る」だから、ここは「飯を食うときくらいゆっくりさせたらどうだ」ということ。

⁵ might: 'You *may* set the things down, and go.' といったのだから、結局「命令法代用」で、(次からは給仕はせんでいい) 食事を置いたらさっさと行くんだ」(p. 275 注 6 参照)。

⁶ the house: 'the family sitting-room' とも「家」そのものとも取れる。

⁷ toss about: to fling or jerk oneself about; to move about restlessly. しきりに寝返りを打つ。(p. 129 注 2, p. 173 注 3, p. 341 注 8 参照)

⁸ irksome: distressing, painful.

⁹ lie up: to go into or remain in retirement or retreat; to take to one's bed or keep one's room as an invalid. ここでは、(自分の部屋で) ベッドにじっとしている、ほどの意味。

¹⁰ measure: (chiefly poet.) to travel over, traverse (a certain distance, a tract of country). ちょっととおおげなことばか。

¹¹ inspiration: the action, or an act, of breathing in or inhaling

¹² detached: disconnected, disengaged, separated. つながりのない、ばらばらの。

¹³ coupled with ... suffering: はっきり聞き取れたのは 'Catherine' の名だけなのだからしかとはわからぬものの、いっしょに口にしたのは愛情を、またあるときは苦痛を示すことばだったと、声の調子から見当をつけたのだろう。

low and earnest, and wrung¹ from the depth of his soul.

I had not courage to walk straight into the apartment; but I desired to divert him from his reverie², and, therefore fell foul of³ the kitchen fire; stirred it, and began to scrape the cinders. It drew him forth sooner than I expected. He opened the door immediately, and said—

‘Nelly, come here—is it morning? Come in with your light.’

‘It is striking four,’ I answered; ‘you want a candle to take upstairs—you might have lit one at this fire.’⁴

‘No, I don’t wish to go upstairs,’ he said. ‘Come in, and kindle *me* a fire, and do anything there is to do about the room.’

‘I must blow the coals red first, before I can carry any,’ I replied, getting a chair and the bellows⁵.

He roamed⁶ to and fro, meantime, in a state approaching⁷ distraction⁸: his heavy⁹ sighs succeeding each other so thick¹⁰ as to leave no space for common breathing between.

‘When day breaks, I’ll send for Green,’ he said; ‘I wish to make some legal inquiries of him, while I can bestow a thought on those matters, and while I can act calmly. I have not written my will yet, and how to leave my property, I cannot determine! I wish I could annihilate it from the face of the earth.’

‘I would not talk so, Mr Heathcliff,’ I interposed. ‘Let your will be a while—you’ll be spared to repent of your many injustices, yet!’¹¹ I never expected that your nerves would

¹ wring: to squeeze out; to bring out (words, etc.) with effort. ここは「絞り出す」でいいだろう。

² reverie: a fit of abstracted musing; a ‘brown study’ or day-dream. 夢想。

³ fall (or run) foul of: to clash, come into conflict with; to make an attack. ここは、かまどの火を相手にして大きな音を立てたこと。

⁴ you might ... this fire: このかまどの火で蝋燭をお点けになればよかったのに、ということだが、お点けしましょうかという遠回しの提案とも取れる。

⁵ bellows: an instrument or machine constructed to furnish a strong blast of air. ふいご。単複同形。

⁶ roam: to wander, rove, or ramble; to walk about aimlessly, esp. over a wide area.

⁷ approaching: coming near in quality or character.

⁸ distraction: violent perturbation or disturbance of mind or feelings, approaching to temporary madness.

⁹ heavy: grave, severe, deep, profound, intense.

¹⁰ thick: (of actions) occurring in quick succession; rapid, frequent. ひっきりなしの。

¹¹ you’ll be spared ... yet!: これからもっと生きて非道な行いの数々を悔やむことになりますよ。

be disordered — they are, at present, marvellously so, however; and, almost entirely, through¹ your own fault. The way you've passed these three last days might knock up a Titan. Do take some food, and some repose. You need only look at yourself, in a glass, to see how you require both. Your cheeks are hollow, and your eyes blood-shot, like a person starving with hunger, and going blind with loss of sleep.'

'It is not my fault, that I cannot eat or rest,' he replied. 'I assure you it is through no settled designs². I'll do both, as soon as I possibly can³. But you might as well bid a man struggling in the water, rest within arm's length of the shore!⁴ I must reach it first, and then I'll rest. Well, never mind, Mr Green⁵; as to repenting of my injustices, I've done no injustice, and I repent of nothing—I'm too happy, and yet I'm not happy enough. My Soul's bliss⁶ kills my body, but does not satisfy itself.'

'Happy, master?' I cried. 'Strange happiness! If you would hear me without being angry, I might offer some advice that would make you happier.'

'What is that?' he asked. 'Give it.'

'You are aware, Mr Heathcliff,' I said, 'that from the time you were thirteen years old, you have lived a selfish, unchristian life; and probably hardly had a Bible in your hands, during all that period. You must have forgotten the contents of the book, and you may not have space⁷ to search it now. Could it be hurtful to send for some one—some minister⁸ of any denomination⁹, it does not matter which, to explain it, and show you how very far you have erred¹⁰ from its precepts¹, and how unfit you will be for its heaven, unless a change

¹ through: (indicating cause, reason, or motive) in consequence of, by reason of, on account of, owing to; from; for. 理由を示す。(p. 374 注 1、p. 466 注 4 参照)

² design: a plan or scheme conceived in the mind and intended for subsequent execution.

³ as soon as I possibly can: (いまの状態ではできまいが) もしできるものならすぐにも。

⁴ you might ... the shore: 水の中でもがいているやつが岸边にもう手が届くところまで来たのに、そこで休めというようなものだ。'might as well' については p. 217 注 3 参照。

⁵ never mind, Mr Green: Mr Green のことはかまわんでいい (もう呼びにやらなくていい)。*mind*: (in negative, interrogative, and conditional sentences) (not) to care for, trouble oneself or be concerned about.

⁶ bliss: perfect joy or felicity, supreme delight; blessedness.

⁷ space: (obs.) time, leisure, or opportunity for doing something. Chiefly in **to have (or give) space (to do or of)**. 'obsolete' (廃用の) というラベルが付いており、*OED* には 1637 年までの用例しか収録されていないが、まさにこの意味であろう。

⁸ minister: In the rubrics of the Book of Common Prayer (英国教の祈禱書) the word denotes the clergyman, or any of a number of clergymen, engaged in conducting worship on a particular occasion. (英国教の) 牧師。

⁹ denomination: a religious sect or body having a common faith and organization, and designated by a distinctive name. 宗派。

¹⁰ err: (chiefly fig. and now arch.) to go astray; to stray *from* (one's path or line of direction). (比喩的に) 道から外れる。

takes place before you die?’

‘I’m rather obliged² than angry, Nelly,’ he said, ‘for you remind me of the manner that I desire to be buried in—it is to be carried to the churchyard, in the evening. You and Hareton may, if you please, accompany me—and mind, particularly, to notice that the sexton³ obeys my directions concerning the two coffins! No minister need come; nor need anything be said over me—I tell you⁴, I have nearly attained *my* heaven, and that of others is altogether unvalued, and uncoveted⁵ by me!’

‘And supposing you persevered⁶ in your obstinate fast⁷, and died by that means, and they refused to bury you in the precincts⁸ of the kirk⁹?’ I said, shocked at his godless¹⁰ indifference¹¹. ‘How would you like it?’¹²

‘They won’t do that,’ he replied: ‘If they did, you must have me removed¹³ secretly; and if you neglect it, you shall prove, practically, that the dead are not annihilated!’¹⁴

¹ precept: a general command or injunction; an instruction, direction, or rule for action or conduct; esp. an injunction as to moral conduct. 教え。

² oblige: (pass.) to owe or feel gratitude. (受動態で) ありがたく思う。ふつうちよつとしたこと (‘small services’) についていう。

³ sexton: a church officer having the care of the fabric of a church and its contents, and the duties of ringing the bells and digging graves. (p. 406 注 2 参照)

⁴ I tell you.: I assure you. そうともたしかに〜だ、という強調の挿入句。 *tell* (often parenthetically in expressions of emphasis.) to assert positively to; to assure (a person).

⁵ uncoveted: not desired.

⁶ persevere: [pə:si:vɪə] to continue steadfastly in a course of action (formerly, also, in a condition, state, or purpose), esp. in the face of difficulty or obstacles; to continue staunch or constant. Const. in, with.

⁷ fast: an abstinence from food. 断食、絶食。

⁸ precinct: [pri:sɪŋkt] the space enclosed by the walls or other boundaries of a particular place or building, or by an imaginary line drawn around it; spec. the ground (sometimes consecrated) immediately surrounding a religious house or place of worship.; (esp. in *pl.*) often applied more vaguely to the region lying immediately around a place, without distinct reference to any enclosure. 宗教施設の「境内」のこともあれば、隣接する周囲の土地を指すこともある。なおここは、自殺者を教会の墓地に埋葬するのが禁止されていたことを指す。

⁹ kirk: the Northern English and Scotch form of the word *church*, in all its senses. (p. 179 注 2, p. 415 注 3 参照)

¹⁰ godless: not recognizing or worshipping God; irreligious, ungodly.

¹¹ indifference: absence of feeling for or against; hence *esp.* absence of care for or about a person or thing; want of zeal, interest, concern, or attention; unconcern, apathy.

¹² How would you like it?: そんなことになったらどう思いますか、そうなのでもいいんですか？

¹³ have me removed secretly: 人を頼んでこっそりおれの遺体を移すんだ。Nelly 自身が遺体を運ぶわけではないからこういう。

¹⁴ if you ... annihilated!: おれのいうとおりにしないと、死人は消えてなくなるものじゃないことを、実際におまえの前に現れて教えてやるからな。‘prove’ は ‘(arch.) to find out, learn, or know by experience.’ (身をもって知る) と解すべき。 *practically*: in practice; as a matter of fact, actually.

As soon as he heard the other members of the family stirring¹ he retired to his den², and I breathed freer—But in the afternoon, while Joseph and Hareton were at their work, he came into the kitchen again, and with a wild look, bid me come and sit in the house—he wanted somebody with him.

I declined, telling him plainly³, that his strange talk and manner frightened me, and I had neither the nerve⁴, nor the will to be his companion, alone.

‘I believe you think me a fiend!’ he said, with his dismal laugh, ‘something too horrible to live under a decent roof!’

Then turning to Catherine, who was there, and who drew behind me at his approach, he added, half sneeringly—

‘Will *you* come, chuck⁵? I’ll not hurt you. No! to you, I’ve made myself worse than the devil.⁶ Well, there is *one* who won’t shrink from my company. By God, she’s relentless! Oh, damn it! It’s unutterably too much for flesh and blood⁷ to bear, even mine.’

He solicited the society of no one more. At dusk, he went into his chamber—through the whole night, and far into the morning, we heard him groaning, and murmuring to himself. Hareton was anxious to enter, but I bid him fetch Mr Kenneth, and he⁸ should go in, and see him.

When he came, and I requested admittance and tried to open the door, I found it locked; and Heathcliff bid us be damned. He was better, and would be left alone⁹; so the doctor went away.

¹ stir: to move about in a place, to ‘be about’; chiefly in *pres. pple.** (often *spec.* = out of bed, up and about). **pres. pple.*: present participle (現在分詞)

² den: a place of retreat or abode (likened to the lair of a beast); (colloq.) a small room or lodging in which a man can seclude himself for work or leisure. 自分の居場所、いつものところ。

³ plainly: without concealment, disguise, or reserve; openly, candidly, frankly.

⁴ nerve: courage or coolness in exciting or dangerous circumstances; boldness, assurance.

⁵ chuck: a familiar term of endearment, applied to husbands, wives, children, close companions.

⁶ No! ... devil: (Catherine に向かって) いやか! おまえには、悪魔よりもむごくあたってきたからな。 *worse*: more wicked, depraved or vicious; more cruel, unkind, or ill-conditioned.

⁷ flesh and blood: human nature with its emotions and infirmities. ここでは、身体ではなく感情・精神についていう。「人間の神経」としてもいいだろう。【例】1844 DICKENS *Mart. Chuz.* vii, There are certain things which *flesh and blood* cannot bear. (*OED*) ふつうに ‘mankind; an individual man or men.’ を指すこともある。

⁸ he: Mr Kenneth.

⁹ He was ... alone: ‘He told us that he was better ...’ ということ。

The following evening was very wet, indeed it poured down, till day-dawn; and, as I took my morning walk round the house, I observed the master's window swinging open¹, and the rain driving straight in.

He cannot be in bed², I thought, those showers would drench³ him through! He must either be up, or out. But, I'll make no more ado⁴, I'll go boldly, and look!

Having succeeded in obtaining entrance with another key, I ran to unclosethe panels⁵, for the chamber was vacant—quickly pushing them aside, I peeped in. Mr Heathcliff was there—laid on his back. His eyes met mine so keen, and fierce, I started; and then, he seemed to smile.

I could not think him dead—but his face and throat were washed with rain; the bed-clothes dripped, and he was perfectly still. The lattice, flapping to and fro, had grazed⁶ one hand that rested on the sill—no blood trickled from the broken skin, and when I put my fingers to it, I could doubt no more—he was dead and stark!⁷

I hasped⁸ the window; I combed his black long hair from his forehead; I tried to close his eyes—to extinguish, if possible, that frightful, life-like gaze of exultation⁹, before any one else beheld it. They would not shut¹⁰—they seemed to sneer¹¹ at my attempts, and his parted lips, and sharp, white teeth sneered too! Taken with another fit of cowardice, I

¹¹ swinging open: ここでは、すぐあとに ‘The lattice, flapping to and fro, ...’ とあるように、開いた窓がバタバタと風に揺れていたこと。 *swing*: to turn in alternate directions, or in either direction (usually horizontally), around a fixed axis or point of support

² He cannot be in bed: ベッドにいるはずはない。基本中の基本ではあるが、この場合は ‘ability’ ではなく ‘possibility’。

³ drench: to wet through and through with liquid falling or thrown upon the object.

⁴ ado: fuss; action or work forced upon one, labour, trouble, difficulty. ‘make no more ado’ は、余計に騒ぎ立てない。

⁵ panel: a distinct compartment of a wainscot, door, shutter, side of a carriage, etc., consisting usually of a thinner piece of board or other material, normally rectangular, set in the general framework. ここではわきへ押しやったとあるから、ベッドの前に仕切りとして置かれた衝立のことだろう。複数形になっているのは、仕切り枠を介してパネルを何枚か連ねたものだから。

⁶ graze: to touch (a surface) lightly in passing; esp. to roughen or abrade (the skin or a part of the body) in rubbing or brushing past. かすめてすり傷をつける。

⁷ stark: rigid, stiff (in death). いわゆる死後硬直の状態にある。

⁸ hasp: to fasten with, or as with, a hasp. 掛け金で締める。

⁹ exultation: the action or state of exulting or rejoicing greatly; triumph, joyousness, rapturous delight; an instance of the same.

¹⁰ would not shut: どうしても閉じなかった。過去の拒絶を表す ‘would not’ で、物も主語になる。

【例】The baggage just **wouldn't** fit in the car trunk. その手荷物はどうやっても車のトランクに収まらなかった。(旺文社『実践ロイヤル英文法』)

¹¹ sneer: to smile scornfully or contemptuously; to express scorn, derision, or disparagement in this way (*adv.*).

cried out for Joseph. Joseph shuffled¹ up, and made a noise, but resolutely refused to meddle with him.

‘Th’ divil’s harried² off his soul,’ he cried, ‘and he muh hev his carcass intuh t’ bargain, for ow’t Aw care!’³ Ech! what a wicked un⁴ he looks girning at death!’ and the old sinner grinned in mockery⁵.

I thought he intended to cut a caper⁶ round the bed; but suddenly composing himself, he fell on his knees, and raised his hands, and returned thanks⁷ that the lawful master and the ancient stock⁸ were restored to their rights.

I felt stunned by the awful event; and my memory unavoidably recurred⁹ to former times with a sort of oppressive sadness. But poor Hareton, the most wronged, was the only one that really suffered much. He sat by the corpse all night, weeping in bitter¹⁰ earnest. He pressed its hand, and kissed the sarcastic¹¹, savage face that every one else shrank from contemplating¹²; and bemoaned¹³ him with that strong grief which springs naturally from a generous heart, though it be tough as tempered¹⁴ steel.

Kenneth was perplexed to pronounce of what disorder the master died. I concealed the fact of his having swallowed nothing for four days, fearing it might lead to trouble¹⁵, and then, I am persuaded¹⁶ he did not abstain on purpose; it was the consequence of his strange illness, not the cause.

¹ shuffle: to move the feet along the ground without lifting them, so as to make a scraping noise; to walk with such a motion of the feet; to go with clumsy steps or a shambling gait. (p. 43 注 2 参照)

² harry: (obs. or dial.) to drag.

³ he muh ... Aw care!: he might have his carcass into the bargain*, for owt (= anything) I care! ついでに死体もいっしょに持ってけばよかったに。*into the bargain: over and above what is stipulated or expected; moreover, besides.

⁴ un: (dial.) one.

⁵ in mockery: あざけて。mockery: derision, ridicule; a derisive utterance or action.

⁶ cut a caper: to dance in a frolicsome way, to act fantastically.

⁷ returned thanks: 神に感謝した、感謝の祈りを捧げた。return: to give or render (thanks).

⁸ stock: a line of descent; the descendants of a common ancestor, a family, kindred. 家系、家柄。

⁹ recur: to return, go back, in thought, memory, or discourse (to a subject, time, etc.).

¹⁰ bitter: expressing or betokening intense grief, misery, or affliction of spirit. ‘in bitter earnest’ すっかり悲しみに暮れて。

¹¹ sarcastic: marked by contempt or disgust; bitterly cutting or caustic. 人を侮る、辛辣な。

¹² contemplate: to look at with continued attention, gaze upon, view, observe. (p. 180 注 10、p. 253 注 4、p. 409 注 11 参照)

¹³ bemoan: to moan for; to lament, weep for.

¹⁴ tempered: that has been brought to the required degree of hardness and elasticity, as steel.

¹⁵ fearing it might lead to trouble: ‘trouble’ とは埋葬に関してもめること。(p. 474 注 8 参照)

¹⁶ I am persuaded: I am convinced. 確信している。

We buried him, to the scandal of¹ the whole neighbourhood, as he wished. Earnshaw and I, the sexton, and six men to carry the coffin, comprehended² the whole attendance.

The six men departed when they had let it down into the grave: we stayed to see it covered. Hareton, with a streaming³ face, dug green sods⁴, and laid them over the brown mould himself: at present it is as smooth and verdant⁵ as its companion mounds—and I hope its tenant sleeps as soundly. But the country folks, if you ask them, would swear on the Bible that he *walks*⁶. There are those who speak to⁷ having met him near the church, and on the moor, and even within this house—Idle tales⁸, you'll say, and so say I. Yet that old man by the kitchen fire affirms he has seen two on 'em, looking out of his chamber window, on every rainy night since his death—and an odd thing happened to me about a month ago.

I was going to the Grange one evening—a dark evening threatening⁹ thunder—and, just at the turn of the Heights, I encountered a little boy with a sheep and two lambs before him, he was crying terribly, and I supposed the lambs were skittish¹⁰ and would not be guided.

'What is the matter, my little man?' I asked.

'They's Heathcliff and a woman, yonder, under t' Nab,' he blubbered¹¹, 'un' Aw darnut pass 'em.'¹²

¹ to the scandal of: への反感を買って、～を憤慨させて。 *scandal*: offence to moral feeling or sense of decency.

² comprehend: to take in, contain, comprise, include. ここは、野辺の送りをしたのは Earnshaw 以下～がすべてでした。(p. 211 注 2 参照)

³ streaming: (of a liquid, a river, etc.) flowing copiously. ここでは涙についていう。

⁴ sod: a piece or slice of earth together with the grass growing on it. 芝土。

⁵ verdant: green with vegetation; characterized by abundance of verdure.

⁶ walk: (of a ghost, spectre, fiend) to be seen walking, to appear; (of a dead person) to 'come back' as a ghost. (幽霊が、または死者が幽霊となって) 出る。

⁷ speak to: to speak in confirmation of or in reference to.

⁸ idle tales: くだらぬ (らちもない) 話。

⁹ threaten: (*fig.* of things, conditions) to give ominous indication of (impending evil); to presage, portend. よくないことが起こりそうなことを示す。'a dark evening threatening thunder' 雷の鳴り出しそうな暗い晩。

¹⁰ skittish: (of horses, etc.) disposed or apt to start or be unruly without sufficient cause; given to shying or restiveness through high spirits or playfulness. わけもなく (または活発すぎて) 暴れ、いうことを聞こうとしない。

¹¹ blubber: to weep effusively; to weep and sob unrestrainedly and noisily. (p. 54 注 13、p. 356 注 3 参照)

¹² They's ... pass 'em.: There's Heathcliff and a woman, yonder, under the nab (= hill or summit), and I daren't pass them.

I saw nothing; but neither the sheep nor he would go on, so I bid him take the road lower down.

He probably raised¹ the phantoms from thinking, as he traversed the moors alone, on the nonsense he had heard his parents and companions repeat—yet still, I don't like being out in the dark, now—and I don't like being left by myself in this grim house—I cannot help it, I shall be glad when they leave it, and shift to the Grange!

‘They are going to the Grange, then?’ I said.

‘Yes,’ answered Mrs Dean, ‘as soon as they are married; and that will be on New Year's day.’

‘And who will live here then?’

‘Why², Joseph will take care of the house, and, perhaps, a lad to keep him company. They will live in the kitchen, and the rest will be shut up.’

‘For the use of such ghosts as³ choose to inhabit it,’ I observed.

‘No, Mr Lockwood,’ said Nelly, shaking her head. ‘I believe the dead are at peace, but it is not right to speak of them with levity⁴.’

At that moment the garden gate swung to⁵; the rambles were returning.

‘*They* are afraid of nothing,’ I grumbled⁶, watching their approach through the window. ‘Together they would brave⁷ Satan and all his legions.’

As they stepped onto the door-stones, and halted to take a last look at the moon, or,

¹ raise: to cause (a spirit) to appear. ここは、気のせいで幽霊を見た。

² why: ここでは、そんなことお聞きにならなくても Joseph がいるじゃありませんか、という気持ちをこめて、「あら、それでしたら」。(p. 50 注 1 参照)

³ as:= that, who, which. ‘such (or same) as’ の ‘as’ は関係代名詞として機能する。なお標準英語では廃れたが、現在でも英国方言や米国では、‘as’ 単独でも ‘that, who, which’ の意味でふつうに使われる (OED)。例: It's he *as* lives in the great stone house.

⁴ with levity: 軽々しく、不謹慎に。 *levity*: ant of serious thought or reflexion; frivolity; unbecoming or unseasonable jocularity.

⁵ to: (expressing contact) so as to come close against something; esp. with vbs. forming phrases denoting shutting or closing. ここではバタリと閉まった。(詳細は p. 163 注 6 参照)

⁶ grumble: to utter dull inarticulate sounds; to mutter, mumble, murmur. 不平とはいえないが、多少のくやしさとねたましさをにじませてつぶやいたのだろう。

⁷ brave: to meet or face (danger) with bravery; to encounter, defy.

more correctly, at each other, by her light, I felt irresistibly impelled to escape them again; and pressing a remembrance¹ into the hand of Mrs Dean, and disregarding her expostulations at my rudeness, I vanished through the kitchen, as they opened the house-door, and so, should have confirmed Joseph in his opinion of his fellow-servant's gay² indiscretions³, had he not⁴, fortunately, recognized⁵ me for a respectable character, by the sweet ring⁶ of a sovereign⁷ at his feet.

My walk home was lengthened by a diversion⁸ in the direction of the kirk. When beneath its walls, I perceived decay had made progress, even in seven months—many a window showed black gaps deprived of glass; and slates jutted⁹ off, here and there, beyond the right line of the roof, to be gradually worked off¹⁰ in coming autumn storms.

I sought, and soon discovered, the three head-stones¹¹ on the slope next the moor—the middle one, grey, and half buried in heath—Edgar Linton's only harmonized by the turf, and moss creeping up its foot—Heathcliff's still bare.

I lingered round them, under that benign¹² sky; watched the moths fluttering among the heath, and hare-bells¹³; listened to the soft wind breathing through the grass; and wondered how any one could ever imagine unquiet slumbers¹⁴, for the sleepers in that quiet earth.

THE END

¹ remembrance: an article serving to remind one person of another; a keepsake, souvenir; a token. ここでは、いわゆる「気持」として渡す金。

² gay: licentious; dissipated; wanton. (婉曲的に) みだらな、ふしだらな。

³ indiscretion: an indiscreet or imprudent act or step. (Sometimes a euphemism for a transgression of social morality.) (たとえば男女間の) 不謹慎 (無分別) な行為。

⁴ had he not: if he had not (recognized me for a respectable character). おなじみの倒置。

⁵ recognize: to treat or acknowledge (*as, for*). ここでは、私が立派な人物であると認める。

⁶ ring: a ringing sound or noise; the resonance of a coin or glass vessel by which its genuineness or wholeness is tested. チャリンという金貨の音。

⁷ sovereign: a gold coin minted in England from the time of Henry VII to Charles I, originally of the value of 22s. 6d. but subsequently worth only 10s. or 11s.

⁸ diversion: a turning aside of one's course. 脇へそれること、寄り道。

⁹ jut: to project or protrude (properly as a prominence beyond the main line).

¹⁰ work off: to take off or away by a gradual process. ここは、あちこちまっすぐな屋根の線から外れて突き出たスレートは、やがて秋の嵐にさらされれば少しずつはがれ落ちてしまいそうだった。

¹¹ head(-)stone: an upright stone at the head of a grave; a gravestone. (注 181 注 2、p. 238 注 12 参照)

¹² benign: (of weather, soil, climate, etc.) mild, salubrious, genial, kindly.

¹³ hare-bell: the wild hyacinth, *Scilla nutans*. イトシャジン。いわゆる blue bell のひとつ。

¹⁴ slumber: (chiefly poet.) sleep, repose. 時に 'slumbers' と複数形で単数扱い。

付 記

1. テキストについて

インターネットで入手したテキスト（West Virginia University 提供）を、原作初版を底本とする PENGUIN CLASSICS 版（1995 年発行）と対照し、ミスタイプを訂正しつつすべて後者に合わせるところから作業を開始した。読みやすさに配慮して、文と文との間は 2 スペースとし、段落と段落との間には一行空白行を置いた。

テキストの書き換えにあたっては、何度か注意して見直したつもりだけれど、人間のやることだから、いくつかミスが残っているかもしれないことをお断りしておく。

なぜそんな面倒なことをしたかという、一般には作者の姉 Charlotte が手を入れた第 2 版にもとづくテキストが流布しているけれど、PENGUIN 版とは句読点、段落分け、方言の表記にかなり相違があり、執筆時の作者の息づかいがいくぶん伝わりにくくなっているのではないかと考えたからである。

2. 辞書・参考書について

辞書名が必要と考えた場合を除き、煩雑になるためいちいち明記していないが、語義はほとんど OED (Oxford English Dictionary Second edition on CD-ROM Version 4.0) からの引用である。そのほかに利用した主な辞書は次のとおり（カッコ内は略語）。

Webster's International Dictionary (Webster 3rd)

Random House Compact Unabridged Dictionary Special Second Edition (RH 2nd)

The Concise Oxford Dictionary Eighth Edition (COD 8th)

なお辞書による表記のちがいをできるだけ統一するため、またスペースの制約に対処するため、オリジナルの表記に若干変更を加えたところがあることをお断りしておきたい。発音表記は電子版『リーダース英和辞典 第 2 版』のフォントを主に利用し、発音が幾とおりかあってどれを採用するか迷ったときは COD 8th に従った。

英和辞書・文法参考書については、すべて注に書名を明記したのでここでは省略するが、名辞書の誉れ高い齋藤秀三郎『英和中辞典』（岩波書店）にはあらためて感心させられたこと、また内容がすぐれているだけでなく、驚くほど索引の充実した高校生用文法参考書『表現のための 実践ロイヤル英文法』（旺文社）にはずいぶんお世話になったことを特に記しておきたい。

またイギリスの方言については、インターネットのいくつかのサイトを参考にさせていただいた。まるで暗号か判じ物のような方言の解釈など、身近に助言者のいない身にとって、インターネットはおおいに助けになった（しかしサイトや記事によっては、ある日突然アクセスできなくなることがあるのは残念である）。

翻訳では、河野一郎先生訳（中公文庫版）およびインターネット上で公開されていたもの（現在アクセスできず確認できないためご紹介できないが、相当実力のある方の訳である）を参考

にさせていただいた。当然のことながら、これらのすぐれた翻訳によって教えられることのほうが圧倒的に多く、いくら感謝してもしたりない思いである。

3. 略語について

たいていの辞書に共通するので見当がつくだろうから、ここには頻出するものだけを挙げる(わかりにくいものについては注に付記しておいた)。

arch.	古語	colloq.	口語
dial.	方言	inf.	不定詞
obs.	廃用	pass.	受動態
refl.	再帰的		

4. 最後に

注釈の方針としては、学習用英和辞書を捨てずに身近に備えている高校卒業程度の読者が、根気さえあれば必ず読破できることを目指した。そのため、たとえわかりきった基本的事項や基本単語であってもおろそかにせず、できるだけいねいに注をつけたつもりである。

OED などの英語辞書の語義を載せたのは、英和辞書ではわかりにくい微妙な含みを味わうためにも、語彙を増やすためにも有効と考えたからであり、同じ単語・熟語に何度も重ねて注をつけたのは、記憶を定着する助けになると考えたからである。

「私注」だから注釈者の勝手な解釈も含まれているが、特に翻訳書の解釈と相違する場合には、できるだけその根拠を示しておいた。当然早とちりあるいは考えすぎによる誤りもあろうかとは思いますが、〇×式のテストではなく、まして文学を相手にする以上、それは避けられないと考え、あえて恥をさらすことにした次第である。またおもしろおかしくする必要はまったくないけれど、小説の注が読んで退屈するようなものであってはいけないから、読みやすさを大切にすることを、気むずかしいアカデミック派のみなさまにはぜひご理解いただきたいと思う。

結局注釈者は忙しくて時間のない読者に代ってせっせと辞書を引いただけにすぎないけれど、これほど詳細な注釈書はわが国に少なくともそうたくさんはないはずだと自負している。たとえ十万人に一人であっても、このささやかな私注によって 19 世紀英文学の傑作のひとつである『嵐が丘』を味読していただけるとすれば幸いである。

もちろんこの種の仕事に完成ということはありませんから、今後とも訂正に努めて改訂版を upload していきたいと考えている(2014 年 5 月 5 日を基準に、ファイルのタイムスタンプでご判断いただきたい)。

もしお気づきの点があれば、電子メールでご連絡いただければまことにありがたいと思う。

(2014 年 5 月 5 日記)

※注釈者への連絡先：nobuyuki-hitomi@nifty.com